

# God's Will and the World

Sun Myung Moon

---

## Foreword

The Reverend Sun Myung Moon is a man with a burning desire to communicate the word of God. Thus, throughout his life he has spoken at every opportunity, like an overflowing spring, about God -- His heart, His will, His history of anguish -- and about what men and women must do to help their Heavenly Father inaugurate a world of love. He has given deep talks not just at formal public gatherings but in virtually every conceivable situation -- over the breakfast table, while traveling in an automobile, at the gunwale of a fishing boat.

During his 40 years of public ministry, in fact, Reverend Moon has shared so much that by this time he has probably set a historical record worldwide for volume of information communicated. The Unification Church in Korea, for example, is planning to publish a set of 200 volumes of his recorded speeches.

The 38 discourses in this book were carefully chosen by Reverend Moon -- while serving a grossly unjust sentence in federal prison in Danbury, Connecticut -- to convey the quintessence of the Unification movement's teaching on God's will and heart. They also are particularly relevant to understanding the present providential era and the mission, significance and heart of Reverend Moon himself.

How does Reverend Moon view God? Unlike many people today, he does not see God as merely a human concept or phenomenon. God is a living God who is actively a part of our lives, and the affairs of the world cannot be considered without taking His presence into account.

Through study of the Bible and through his personal prayer and revelation, Reverend Moon came to realize that not only is God a real Father, but his heart is filled with intense pain because we have often not understood His situation and have acted in ways that brought suffering to ourselves and others. In other words, God is truly our Parent who loves all human beings as His children. He suffers with our hardships, rejoices with our deeds of goodness, and unceasingly guides our growth toward the full potential of the divine image. Since the day he discovered that God's heart grieves over the miserable situation of this world, Reverend Moon has prayed in tears. If you ever have a chance to hear him pray, though you may not understand the Korean words, you would surely perceive the depth of his communication with God.

Today, Christianity is divided into countless sects and denominations, each with its distinctive doctrines and rites. But how many Christians are fervently seeking after the will of God at this critical time? Jesus was desperate to accomplish God's will, because he knew God's suffering and His seriousness to rescue His lost children from the satanic realm. Motivated by love and compassion, Christ devoted himself

completely to the task of building the Kingdom of Heaven.

With a heart still burdened with sorrow over the suffering of God's children, Jesus appeared to Reverend Moon many years ago while he was deep in prayer and asked him to take responsibility for God's will in the present age. Knowing that the ways of God are not the ways of the world, Reverend Moon accepted this call feeling that he could expect to meet with misunderstanding and persecution. Therefore, he is not motivated by a desire to please society, but only to proclaim God's will and heart.

Reverend Moon is an exuberant speaker. Whether addressing members at formal religious services, church administrative meetings, birthday celebrations, or even around a campfire, his speaking has a great flowing power, ranging over the broadest scope of human and divine experience. It is not uncommon for his sermons to begin early in the morning and last throughout the day. His talks are always characterized by a great deal of give and take with his audience, sometimes sharing delightful humor, other times a profound seriousness and repentance, always a great vision and ideal.

In talking to members, he seeks to inspire deep faith and religious dedication and help them persevere in the midst of trials. The speeches in this collection were given in a variety of contexts, as will be evident from the text. Some were spoken during evangelistic campaigns, others on anniversaries of significant church accomplishments. Still others were addressed to newly engaged couples. These messages were all given in Korean or Japanese. For those delivered in the United States and Europe, Reverend Moon spoke in Korean with an interpreter at his side translating his words into English.

Beyond the challenge his message presents to conventional thought, proper comprehension of these words, removed from their source as they are by interpreter, translator, two or three editors, and probably a lot of atmosphere, requires something special. Throughout the talks printed here, Reverend Moon often refers to that special element: a pure and open heart and a discerning mind, both guided and protected by sincere prayer.

Please bear in mind that there may be some error due to the difficulties of translating spiritual concepts. However, I would like to express my appreciation to the translating and editing team that prepared these speeches for inclusion in this volume and to all who assisted in the considerable task of its rapid production.

May God grant you the inspiration in reading and reflecting upon this book that He has granted us in its preparation. New York, New York

July 1985,  
Reverend Chung Hwan Kwak  
Director of International Education  
Unification Church

# God's Will and the World

Sun Myung Moon

---

## Chapter 1 Restoration and Blessing February 2, 1969 Tokyo, Japan

No one has ever realized that human history has been a history of restoration. The great accomplishment of the Unification Church has been to regard the events of history as a process of restoration. It is God who is the basis of this historical background. He has been in charge of all history up to the present and made all history develop. Because of God's will, individuals, families, tribes and nations have been given missions of restoration, and through them, history has progressively developed. Therefore, the main question of history must be, when will this history of restoration be completed? When will the purpose of restoration be accomplished?

The completion of restoration means the restoration of all the unaccomplished or unfulfilled standards, for example, the standard that was not accomplished by Adam due to his fall, and the standard that was not fulfilled by Jesus. These have to be restored through indemnity. This is the mission of the Unification Church. I am leading the way and all the Unification Church members throughout the world are to follow. It is my mission to let all the members work to restore these unaccomplished standards. It is your mission to do so according to my direction.

The man who has this important mission should be greater than Adam, and should accomplish the standard in place of Jesus. The woman who is related to this man should go beyond Eve and be accepted as the new spouse of Jesus. The mission of the Unification Church is to give birth to such a man and such a woman.

Jesus was crucified. Therefore, all the earthly foundation was completely lost. What Jesus did not accomplish should be indemnified by each one of us. In this way, each of us should go beyond Jesus.

### ***The path of opposition***

In order for us to indemnify what was lost, we must accomplish a standard in this world by going through all the historical struggles. Therefore, we are to be persecuted by everyone, and eventually we have to win them all over. Without this type of suffering course, restoration through indemnity cannot be done.

So far, this has been the path of the Unification Church. It has always been hit and persecuted, but we never protested. On the individual, family, tribal and national levels, we have been persecuted and found ourselves in utmost loneliness. And we have had to console God in this kind of situation. This has been the whole history of the Unification Church. You should know that. No one can understand it; only I know it fully. Jesus was opposed even by his three main disciples. The three disciples

symbolize and represent three nations in the world. Therefore, when we pioneered our way on the worldwide level, we had to be opposed and persecuted by three nations. But even in the midst of these struggles, we had to set up indemnity conditions on the worldwide level. This is how we made a victorious standard through the first seven-year course, which ended in 1967. We are now in the second seven-year course, which started in 1968.

The reason why we must be victorious in such a path of indemnification is because we have to restore the standards lost by the fall of Adam and Eve and at the time of Jesus. We have to indemnify everything, both internally and externally. The Principle you are now studying records all that has been accomplished throughout history, but even this book cannot yet describe how to indemnify it all. I am struggling now in order to pioneer that course victoriously.

Now in Korea, the Unification Church cannot be defeated by any force; our church cannot be eradicated from this earth. I have perfectly accomplished a victorious standard, a victorious foundation. Even if the evil side strikes the Unification Church, God can protect it, and Satan cannot accuse it. This is the precious realm of victory which has been accomplished in the past 21 years centered upon my course.

It is a great joy for all history, the world and the cosmos that in the Last Days, the living Christ, whom God sought during the 4,000 years of Old Testament history and the 2,000 years since Jesus' ascension, has completed the lost standard. No other gospel could be more wonderful than this.

Nothing could be happier than this opportunity to fulfill both the vertical indemnity conditions and the horizontal indemnity conditions on earth. Restoration through indemnity must be done in a reverse way. In Adam's family, fallen Adam is to be restored through the unity between Cain and Abel. Therefore, unless we restore Cain and Abel, we cannot welcome the True Parents as the Messiah. Therefore, the Lord of the Second Advent, who is one with God's heart, had to go through the thorny path and crucifixion of Jesus. Through utmost suffering he had to solve all the problems and become a living sacrifice in order to obtain victory. Otherwise, the foundation of restoration cannot be made. Thus, the Messiah's first path was one of persecution from all directions.

That kind of persecution has not been experienced in Japan. But in Korea, such difficult circumstances were endured in order that God's will might be fulfilled on the worldwide level centering upon my mission. Therefore, the Unification Church began its course in prison. Where did the early Christian church start? It also began in prison. The history of the Christian church, or the second Israel, started from a suffering position of persecution and imprisonment. In order to restore this, we have to indemnify it. Therefore, the Unification Church made its debut in a prison, so that God could work directly with our church. The difference is that when Jesus was imprisoned, his disciples escaped and were scattered. But now you should do the reverse.

Even in the face of a terrible, desperate situation, we all should unite with each other and stand boldly in the face of death. It took as many as 21 years to come up from the bottom, to go through God's providence of salvation. Originally, if the central religion in the chosen nation had accepted the Messiah, restoration would have taken only seven years. Since we could not gain that acceptance, we had to go through a

course of 21 years, You know something of the first seven-year course after 1960, but not its full background.

Behind this course was the history of God's family and the history of a God-centered tribe. In order for you to understand this history, you should receive the Blessing. I cannot reveal this background unless you receive and inherit the victorious standard of the Blessing. When you know that course completely, you will feel how bitter the history of restoration has been. Therefore, we have to realize how precious the Blessing is.

### ***Inherit Jesus tradition***

If we desire the Blessing, we should concentrate first on how to live solely for God's will. When Jesus prayed in Gethsemane, he prayed that not his own will but God's will be done. He did not choose the path of the cross because of his own will. Unless, like Jesus, you are confident of being able to overcome the problems of life and death, you cannot welcome or walk the path of restoration. Are you confident enough to dedicate your life for God's will? If you take this course, you should know you cannot go alone; you must be able to relate to all people, and be able to console those who are going to follow you on this path.

Are you really ready to sacrifice your life! You cannot think, "I am a young girl with a beautiful face; I can be welcomed anywhere I go, and I have no particular defects. A girl like myself cannot do sacrificial work." Or, "I am a man with a great physical body and handsome appearance, with a great family. Whatever I want I can get very easily, So, as such a wonderful man, I cannot do such rigorous sacrificial work." What's more, you should not be bitter about walking a sacrificial path.

When Jesus was shouldering the cross, he could have deplored his situation, saying, "I should not have to do this kind of thing. I have not yet married, even though I am a 33 year old man. My mission and my value have not yet been realized." But Jesus could not think that way. Death was not a problem for him; he was ready to sacrifice his life, and the weight of the cross that he was shouldering could not deter him. Although he fell down physically, he didn't waver internally, because of his great stamina. No other man in history has ever had such a strong determination connected with God, and because of Jesus' great strength, human history took a new direction. This became God's new starting point on earth.

Two thousand years have passed since that time, but the spirit of Jesus has not passed away. Instead, it has been inherited by millions of people. How happy we can be today--to inherit such an important mission--the tradition of Jesus! Therefore, it doesn't matter if we lose our lives. We should cry out in the darkness of death and shatter that darkness by the light of God's heart. We should make that light shine throughout all the world. We must become that kind of man or woman. This is the challenge. Originally, the fall of man meant death; salvation means the overcoming of death. If we are determined to be saved, we should be willing to be bold. If we succeed, the world will head in a new direction. We should be excited! Are you confident that you can overcome the problems of life and death? I have faced issues of life and death many, many times--hundreds, thousands, even tens of thousands of times. Although I may face suffering and pain, although my legs may be cut off and my eyes extracted, and even if I'm beheaded, I am still strongly determined to

complete that course I started. My conviction is absolute.

### ***The victory that God desires***

The other day, a group of about 50 people from Japan came to Korea and visited the Holy Ground in Pusan. It is right next to a cemetery, in a stony place where no one lives. On that site I built a small hut of cardboard and mud many years ago. It was far from a glorious place, but even when I was sleeping there, I was walking the path of filial piety before God as His son. My quest was a deep, internal standard that no one else had been able to attain. At that time, I had no external possessions. I had no money. I had a beard and an unwashed face, so I looked dirty, and I wore an assortment of Western and Oriental clothes. But everywhere I went, I spoke about very big things, things that were bigger than a cannon, more explosive than an atomic bomb--so huge that everybody was surprised and ran away. I have endured tremendous hardship all my life, but you may not be able to understand it. It would take as much as 50 years to explain it. But my conclusion is that no matter how much suffering you may experience in your activities, and no matter how much you are persecuted by your environment, you should be able to always remain standing before the face of God.

Although Jesus left the earth through the cross, the standard of filial piety he impressed upon God's heart remained, and God had to respond to it. Although Jesus did not seek a reply from God, nevertheless, God's heart could not help but reach out to him. Jesus was the first true child of God after 4,000 years of biblical history.

There are about 300 people gathered here. If you all are determined to do the same thing as Jesus, the 43 provinces of Japan will be restored. Victory comes out of the internal determination made at the outset of a venture, not somewhere midway. You should understand this.

Even if you can get victory over hundreds of life and death situations, you need still more determination before you can win the eternal victory that God has sought, a place out of Satan's reach. You may wonder if your suffering in the midst of a bitter environment will help the restoration process. But I have already calculated these factors exactly, so that what the Unification Church teaches can move history and become the true history. I am teaching what no one else was able to imagine.

In Japan, everybody is talking about the Unification Church. They are wondering why these young people seem to be wasting their youth, walking the path of suffering. Some of you had even entered the University of Tokyo and were admired by your relatives; however, because you joined the

Unification Church, your families were devastated. There are many of you who are in that situation. But if you are going to be great men and women, you should work on the stage of the entire world. No matter how you may suffer in Japan, that suffering is not enough for you to be able to enter the ideal realm of God.

What is the Unification Church? It is the church whose quest is to establish the standard whereby we may enter the ideal realm of God. Therefore, now that you know this, you have to focus upon that greater value in your life.

## ***The path of persecution***

In the time of Jesus, the three main apostles, the 12 apostles; the 70 and 120 disciples all became faithless. Therefore, in the end Jesus had to go to the cross. We have to indemnify this and resolve to return to God at the risk of our lives. Otherwise, the course of restoration is impossible. We have to go through the path of persecution and take responsibility at the national level. We have to be determined to restore all things perfectly within three generations. Three generations are needed because three is a principled number, and the four position foundation develops in three stages. With this kind of determination we have to endure persecution and overcome all obstacles.

Jesus came as the True Parent or True Father, but Judas betrayed him. In his act of betrayal, all mankind was represented. Through him, all human beings, as the offspring of traitors, betrayed their True Parent. Hence, we must make an indemnity contribution to indemnify the act of having sold the True Parent.

For 30 pieces of silver, one man banished the True Parent from this earth and completely frustrated God's providence of 4,000 years. At that moment, Satan prevailed on the earth. To indemnify this we have to offer this amount of money symbolized by the number three for four years, as the price for having sold the True Parent. The four years represent East, west, South and North. In Korea, this means we must give 3,000 won [\$30] every year for four years. That money should be earned through your sweat and tears, and when you earn that money you should think about God's will more than your own life. That money should be donated to God with this heart.

Also, Jesus' three disciples should have united with him, but instead they deserted him. The 12 apostles, and 70 and 120 disciples were also faithless. Therefore, in the course of indemnity, we have to restore all of this, Thus, we each must and three spiritual children, and, centering upon them, find 12, then 70 and then 120 followers. This is what I have been doing for the last 21 years. Because Jesus could not accomplish this on the earth, he and God were overcome with sorrow. The mission of the Unification Church is to solve these sorrows. This is our formula course. We have to restore our tribes, establishing our position as new ancestors. And we have to restore Japan, Asia and the rest of the world, thus developing God's providence of restoration on a worldwide level.

## ***The Holy Wedding***

For the Holy Wedding in 1960, we had to set up all the indemnity conditions of the 4,000 biblical years before Jesus and the 2,000 year History after Jesus. The content of that Holy Wedding was worldwide and cosmic, but in actuality, very few people witnessed it. At that time, we still faced unimaginable persecution.

The preparation period from 1953 to 1960 was a time of fierce persecution. During that time, more than 3 million people, three major Christian denominations, and three governments in Korea opposed us. In spite of this, we had to bring forth victory by establishing indemnity conditions. That was the background of my Holy Wedding in 1960. That wedding day determined the destiny of the Unification Church. It was a great event: for the world and the cosmos. All the vertical indemnity conditions on the worldwide level were restored horizontally an earth through my mission, because I

had brought victory both spiritually and physically. One requirement was to restore three disciples before any own Blessing--representing the three disciples who deserted Jesus 2,000 years ago.

Adam and Eve fell as a betrothed couple. Therefore, restoration cannot be done by one person alone, salvation cannot be completed by a man alone. Neither can a woman go to heaven alone. Therefore, a man and a woman together must solve the problem. To establish the standard of Adam and Eve as True Parents on this earth, we had to set up the condition centered on the engagement of three disciples. God's aim was to restore Adam's family, but Cain's and Abel's failure shifted the dispensation to Noah's family. Through Noah's family, all human beings in the world were judged by the flood, in order to eradicate Satan's invasion at the fall. This was God's providence for salvation on this earth. Later, responsibility was shifted to the family of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and still later to Moses and then Jesus. So we can see that God's providence for salvation has been prolonged several times. Therefore, we must indemnify that path. In order to indemnify the standard of Adam's family and establish the True Parents, we must first restore Adam's three children.

Jesus absolutely needed three disciples, symbolizing the three archangels in the Garden of Eden, Because these archangels did not all unite with Adam and Eve completely and serve them, the fallen world came into being, In order for perfect True Parents to accomplish their position, they need three disciples, equivalent to the three archangels, who can serve them completely. Unless this is done, Satan cannot be eradicated from this earth.

The whole history of Cain-type people disobeying Abel-type people is restored through the Lord's three disciples. They represent the three archangels in the spirit world and Cain in the three major providential periods-that is, in the Old Testament, New testament and Completed Testament periods-or Cain in Adam's family, Cain at Jesus' time and Cain at the time of the Second Coming. To indemnify completely this kind of history, the Lord of the Second Advent, representing Jesus, who in turn represents the first Adam, must raise up three chief disciples who represent the three Cains.

In the spiritual world, there are three archangels. In the physical world, three spiritual children need to follow their Abel absolutely; three disciples need to remain faithful in spite of persecution. This standard was established in April 1960.

Since the course of restoration is the reversal course, those who are in the position of children should be blessed first. Three disciples or three children are to establish that requirement.

The blessing of 12 disciples

After engaging the three disciples who signified the resurrection of Adam's three sons--Cain, Abel and Seth--the True Parents stood in the position of substantial parents, as declared in the Holy Wedding of 1960. God had resentment toward Adam's family, but the True Parents were able to forge a unity between parents and three children for the first time on earth. This was done in 1960 in Korea. That, therefore, was the historical event which began a new history.

In April 1960, the first stage of Blessing centering upon the number 12 took place.

Historically, this is the equivalent of restoring Jesus' 12 disciples. The Bible talks about 12 gates to heaven; the number 12 is central in the history of Israel. Only by indemnifying this history can the ideal of Christianity, which has operated only a spiritual mission, take root here on this earth both spiritually and physically.

God's great sorrow has been that since the fall He could not maintain any foothold on this earth on the individual level, family level, or national level. In order to heal this sorrow, we should first accomplish restoration on the individual and family levels.

There were 12 families from Adam to Noah's time, including Cain and Abel, Shem and Ham, There are also 12 families from Noah to Abraham's time, including Isaac and Jacob. The resurrection of 12 people in the Blessing means the resurrection of all the ancestors from the time of Adam to Abraham. In other words, a vertical indemnity condition was horizontally accomplished. Therefore, although there were 10 generations from Adam to Noah, providentially there were 12 generations when Cain and Abel are included. Therefore in the substantial realm, 12 disciples were blessed as an indemnity condition.

This brought the victory to the second position, which Satan has always been accusing. Noah's family represented Adam's, since I established the foundation to resurrect Noah's family, I was able to resurrect the 12 generations from Adam to Noah, including Cain and Abel. The resurrection of those in the spiritual world and the liberation of the spiritual world was accomplished through my foundation on earth.

### ***Three kinds of families***

The standard for restoring Adam's family, Noah's family and Jacob's family could be established only with the blessing of Jacob's family. For the first time in human history, at the Blessing of the 36 Couples, this vertical relationship was completely established horizontally. The first, second and third groups of families to be blessed are regarded, respectively, as Adam's family, Noah's family and Jacob's family. Adam's family was represented by the first 12 blessed couples, those who had been previously married, centering upon their own desires, Noah's family was represented by the second 12 blessed couples, those who had not been married but who had been seeking marriage and love. Jacob's family was represented by the third 12 blessed couples, those who had been pure. Through this Blessing of 36 Couples, the fortune of the Unification Church and the foundation of the unity of heaven and earth was determined, This brought horizontal victory to the vertical history, which has been filled with many failures that have caused God so much agony. This victory has also linked the spiritual world to the physical world. Now God has a foothold on the earth.

Now that God could dwell on earth, the development on the worldwide level on this earth could begin. In the seven years after 1960, God's coming to the earth was to be completed. This required the restoration of children.

In the past, Cains could not obey Abels, prolonging human history for thousands of years. In order to indemnify this, Cain and Abel should be united in one family at this time. This was indemnified through the Blessing of the 72 Couples, 36 representing Cain's family and 36 representing Abel's family. Through this Blessing, the four position foundation that our ancestors could not establish was realized, and Satan

was forced to retreat.

Following the Blessing of 72 Couples, the Blessing of 124 Couples established the standard of worldwide development centering upon the True Parents. The 124 Couples symbolize the heads of all the nations of the world; For Jesus to begin spiritual restoration on the worldwide level, he needed 120 disciples. In the same way, as head of the Unification Church, I had to start my substantial course with 124 Blessed Couples. This I accomplished within 21 years.

After finding the people whom He was seeking, God undertook the restoration of all things. The establishment of the Holy Grounds means the blessing of all things. Thus 120 Holy Grounds were established in 40 nations throughout the world in 1965. This was the turning point of our fortune.

### ***Declaration of Gods Day***

One of the most wonderful days is Parents' Day, We fallen men were unable to have parents in whom God could rejoice. But since our True Parents were restored, joy has returned to God and man. Next, we established Children's Day. Until now, mankind has not been able to celebrate these wonderful days because we could not fulfill the course of restoration. But now the great gospel has been accomplished historically.

Finally, God's Day was declared on Jan. 1, 1968. The declaration of God's Day made God's presence on earth possible and assured the daily advancement of the Unification Church. Now we can work toward the liberation of the spiritual world as well as the earthly world, and, also the liberation of hell centered upon the truth of the Principle. Because God's Day has been declared, we can return to a situation where hell and Satan have no hold. When God's Day was declared, my mission was completed. For many years, I had been persecuted by Korea and by the established churches, just as Jesus had been persecuted by leaders of Judaism, through his new gospel, Jesus had to pioneer a formula course to gain acceptance by Judaism and remove its failures.

Trying to establish a new, second Judaism occupied his three year public ministry. This involved raising the dispensation from the individual level to the family level, and from there to the tribal and national levels, Jesus wanted to establish the eternal victorious standard both spiritually and physically so that Israel might be liberated from Satan. Nevertheless, he was prevented from doing so. Just as Jesus was persecuted by leaders of Judaism, I was persecuted by the established churches here, and in the midst of this, I had to fight to restore everything. In 1945, the situation was such that I had to go to Pyongyang, the capital of North Korea, into Satan's camp. I had to leave Seoul and my homeland, which God had been blessing and where He had a certain foundation, and go to the headquarters of God's enemy. Unless I overcame the condition of Satan's accusation in this situation, I could not start a second time. This is the reason why I had to live in prison in a communist country.

In prison I had to gain 12 disciples to restore the situation of Jesus, who was completely deserted by all his disciples while he was in prison. In this way, a new history was able to start from prison. After accomplishing this condition, I was able to return to the South, where I still had to endure all kinds of accusation and opposition

from the established churches. We labored for many years to establish a new movement capable of surpassing all the established churches, in order to fulfill God's providence. This is the Unification Church in Korea.

A few months ago, or, Sept, 10, 1968, we opened the Academy House and invited all the Christian leaders. Those who responded were leaders of the Christian churches who strongly opposed the Unification Church. About 40 people came. All of them looked very arrogant, yet I welcomed them boldly. Actually, I was so happy that such a time had come. These Christian leaders had been fighting the Unification Church for many years; they used to think that we were insignificant, poor and miserable people, But now they could see that Reverend Moon was not the man they had imagined. This time they were able to welcome me and acknowledge the Unification Church.

The Unification Church has become a serious challenge to Korea. We are a most feared group and I am regarded: as an awesome leader. Established Christianity could not meet the challenge of the Unification Church, They could not defeat the theory of our church. Therefore, they are now advising each other not to deal with the Unification Church.

### ***Foundation of victory***

Through enduring persecution, we have pioneered the way of restoration. Even though the entire world is against us, we will be bold. No matter how many times we may die for God, we will definitely do God's will. This has been a riddle for the established churches. I have solved all the insoluble historical problems that had confronted God for 6,000 biblical years of history.

Success has been made. Even if I should die now, the Unification theory will prevail in the world. No matter how much the entire country, of Japan is mobilized against us, Unificationism will never be defeated. Does God need Japan? He does not need it for itself. He needs it because He needs the world, the spiritual world, the earthly world and the cosmos. God created the world environment first, preparing every-thing for this time. Therefore, if we do our small part now, the entire world will move. we are living in such a period.

You young people should never presume that God does not exist. God certainly exists, but He is not God in the abstract but God at work in our lives. He is not just a being of feelings but a being of practice. How wonderful this is!

### ***Standard of Blessing***

Unless we complete the course of restoration on the individual, family, tribal, national, and cosmic levels, thus establishing a standard which Satan cannot accuse, we will not be able to establish the condition for the Blessing.

In 1960 we reached the top level of the growth stage, from which Adam and Eve had fallen. In order for True Parents to attain the realm of perfection a period of seven years was needed, representing seven stages. That constituted the first seven-year course. When we enter the standard of perfection we go into the realm of God's direct dominion Direct dominion means to be in a direct relationship with God both internally and externally; that it is the standard of dominion both in heart and in life. In

1960 the Blessing was attained, but not the true: level of perfection; the world was still in the realm of Satan's dominion. Therefore, Satan could attack the holy True Family. Nevertheless, we have overcome all opposition during these seven years, establishing Parents' Day, Children's Day, Day of All Things, and finally God's Day. Therefore the standard of perfection was completely established on earth.

God has been seeking the day when a bridegroom and a bride could meet, overcoming the opposition of Satan. For the past 2,000 years of Christian history, the bridegroom was Jesus working in heaven, and the Holy Spirit, representing the feminine aspect of God, was working on the earth.

But through the Unification Church, heaven and earth have been completely united, removing Satan's existence as an obstacle between heaven and earth. The ultimate purpose of religious people has been accomplished. If this tribe grows day by day, it will constitute a nation and then expand to the level of the world. Hence, a new nation, a third Israel, will be created.

Although you are Japanese, you are no longer children of Japanese ancestors, but God's children in a new blood lineage. The Unification Church has made this possible. We stand in a different place. This is the victorious realm that takes away Satan's accusation. In what position are you standing? Unless you have reached the perfection level of the growth stage you are not qualified to become blessed. At the fall, one man and one woman were driven out of the Garden of Eden. Therefore, in the course of restoration, one man and one woman have to overcome a hostile environment. This the meaning of the Blessing.

My own God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day, and Day of All Things have been declared on the worldwide level and on the cosmic level. You can be blessed and can participate in that kind of realm, but you have not gone through the same path as I did. Actually, as true ancestors of a new lineage, you have to establish your own Parents' Day. Also, you should establish your own Children's Day, Day of All Things, and God's Day. All of those things the members of the Unification Church should do. This is the reason why we started the second seven-year course. Although you are the descendants of the fall, you should surpass the standard of Adam and me, marching forward boldly by subjugating Satan's accusation. This is what is meant by total advancement. Not only ourselves, but the entire world that should be doing that. Both men and women and old and young should do that. The second seven-year course is the period of total advancement.

### ***I sacrificed my relatives***

During my 21-year course, I only regret that I have not yet been able to convey the truth and witness to my relatives. Such was also Jesus' regret. I could not speak about my own mission to my relatives. Of course, my parents and brothers and sisters were able to feel that I was some kind of a great man, doing something great. But I have never been able to speak about the precious meaning of the Principle to them. This has been my agony. I could not give love to my parents or my own brothers and sisters, even though they were physically very close to me. Instead, I had to love the people on the side of Cain more than my own relatives. Because of this, however, the Unification Church has been able to advance. Unless you love that way, you cannot win the heart of your Cain. Without Cain, Abel cannot stand. Unless you raise people who have much more filial piety toward you than your own physical

children, you cannot do the work of restoration through indemnity. But to do so means great suffering. Unless you love people without eating and sleeping, you will not be able to dominate them with love.

I have been in those circumstances and have been attempting to create the victorious foundation that way.

You are different from me, however. In the second seven-year course, you can give your precious things directly to your own relatives, parents, and brothers, so that you can become the messiahs to your own relatives. During the second seven-year course you should be the messiah of your tribe, and you should accomplish with your relatives that Jesus and I could not do. And by achieving victory in your own tribe, centering upon your parents and your brothers and sisters, you can complete everything. You can do that on the individual level, family level, tribal level, national level. And you can open the way to the entire world that way. The starting point and mission of the second seven-year course is to do what Jesus wanted to do 2,000 years ago, to reveal God's will to Mary and Joseph, and let them Participate fully in his dispensation. I was in a position to do that, but if I had loved my own relatives first, then God's providence of restoration would not have advanced. Always, a beloved people have to be sacrificed and are asked to shoulder the cross. God's providential course has shown us that we must sacrifice our own beloved children, family, and tribe, and love Satan's families, Satan's tribes first.

God loves and blesses his enemies. When Jesus was crucified, he prayed to God, "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do." Jesus could say that because he knew God's heart.

The course of restoration cannot be achieved by the power of the fists, but by the power of heart. The completion of the indemnity must be done that way. We must know that. We must attain the Blessing, which Jesus did not attain. That way perfect restoration and blessing can be attained.

## **Chapter 2**

### **The Ideal Spouse**

#### **February 4, 1969 Tokyo, Japan**

The search for the ideal spouse has been a problem throughout history, Not only in today's world, but also in future history, it is and will be important. To begin with, let's think of what the absolute standard of an ideal spouse is.

Is it natural for a beautiful woman to be linked with a handsome man? Actually, it isn't. According to the Principle, marriage should be a vital part of the process of restoration. Since the true spouse, or husband and wife relationship that God intended, was lost, the world has become such a troublesome one. How can we restore it?

A man would welcome having a woman with whom he could be happy. Likewise, a woman would like to have a man with whom she could rejoice. In addition, their relationship should be one in which God and all things could find happiness. All the environment, all the existing things, would become excited to see such a couple, and

would naturally respond to them, Birds would sing to the couple and butterflies would fly joyfully around them. In this phenomenal world, God rejoices, man rejoices, and all things rejoice--down to the smallest insects. If our ancestry had started from this position, we would have had an ideal world.

A girl has an image of a boy whom God loves, and a boy has the image of a girl who is also beloved of God. When they praise or uplift each other, God also rejoices and all things rejoice. The standard of joyfulness depends upon whether they can embrace each other in heart and have the kind of value in which heaven and earth together can rejoice. A man and woman who embrace each other are themselves the place where the universe can unite, and are God's ideal image. This was God's hope for the original world of creation.

However, because of the fall, the first man and woman cut their relationship with God and with all things. They came to have a self-centered attitude about love, to embrace each other and have a relationship as they wished without the blessing of God. Anyone who thinks this way, even today, is actually trapped in Satan's territory and is controlled by the power of Satan. You must understand this.

This problem is especially noticeable in Japan, which has now become more Westernized. There are many young people among the members here, so you must understand the reality of restoration through life in our group, where we live as brothers and sisters. You must hang on firmly to your purity.

The reason why God's will was not accomplished was because of the fall between man and woman, Therefore, a man by himself cannot correct or restore history to follow God's will. A man and a woman must cooperate and work together for God's will, and from that point we can deal with social and national problems as an issue of restoration. Without this cooperation, we cannot restore either the nation world or cosmos, This is our conclusion. Only a man and woman who take responsibility for true cooperation and accomplish it faithfully can form a relationship with each other through God's love. Until now, this has only been a hope in God's mind.

The fall took place in the intermediate stage of growth. The beginning of the fallen world is the result of Adam and Eve embracing each other under the control of the archangel's love. The history of the world, which has been passing through a long process of restoration, has become the history of agony. We must restore it.

### ***The absolute standard of love***

Who is the owner of love? Who is the host of love? Speaking from a man's position, there is no love without a woman. And a woman would say love isn't possible without a man. But this is a reciprocal relationship that cannot by itself be an absolute standard of love. Without God a reciprocal relationship cannot be ideal.

The owner of love, the host of love who is standing in the absolute position, is God. Anyone who steals this Godly love without following God's will is a thief. Such a person is a criminal like those who violated the Garden of Eden. You must understand this.

The human race, which has inherited the blood lineage of ancestors who fell, has

entered into the period when it must reap the fruits of the seeds that it once sowed. Look at the way young people have come to be promiscuous without hesitation. In Japan, as well, there are many young people who behave this way; some of them are not even 20 years old. This symbolizes that the time of autumn is coming, when we have to harvest on the world level the seeds that were sown. When this time comes, God will be declared non-existent unless there emerges someone who can establish a new man-woman relationship, an ideal reciprocal relationship. It is an incredible gospel for the world that someone who can establish the foundation for ideal spouses has appeared at one corner of the earth and has become a sensation. This is the good news over which God rejoices.

You women of the Unification Church should not let just some man off the street grab your heart, which you have been cultivating so carefully. Don't be misled. Truly speaking, if your faith has deepened, and if you have had some spiritual experiences, you cannot act carelessly. Love comes from God, and to build unprincipled relationships without God's approval is satanic. To push God aside and to love each other--this is the satanic world.

If there are some who have been longing for each other, they must repent from the time they heard this speech. Our ancestors sinned and brought terrible consequences upon the world. Therefore, if you marry someone of your own choice, apart from God, you will, far from being regarded as good ancestors later on, bring about further damage. It is never permissible to love each other in such a situation. You must put everything into God's hands. If you enter a marriage, you must be able to make love with God at the center and seeing His smiling face. Such a relationship is truly the joy of God. Originally, the act of love would not have been a shameful thing at all, but the most precious and sacred experience. But man violated God's Principle, and history has viewed this relationship as an evil and sinful act that we should be ashamed of.

We must welcome True Parents on the earth in order to create a new history and become new ancestors; the original standard must start from True Parents. So the young people of the Unification Church, both in Japan and in the United States, are longing to see me. Are you the same?

I don't feel so good. Some of you new members have been doing many things, haven't you? You don't care whether you are writing love letters or dating. And you wink without any hesitation, just as if you were buying a pencil or something on the street. Should such a person receive the Blessing? I don't like that. According to the original standard of the Blessing, there could be no such terrible circumstances at all. Viewed from the Principle, you have no qualifications to be blessed. Therefore, as the descendants of fallen man, you must restore the original standard.

Because of the fall, God lost His children, His son and daughter who had received God's abundant love. Also, the relationship between man and woman (the husband and wife relationship centered upon God) was lost, and from the children's point of view, they lost the chance to experience having True Parents. By one action of the fall, three relationships were destroyed. Therefore, the point is how to indemnify these three types of heart at one time according to the principle of restoration through indemnity, and how to set a standard that God can accept. First of all, we must restore the standard that we love God as His true son and true daughter. Then at a

certain age, after having passed through this process, we can become husband and wife centered upon God's love. Furthermore, we must have children of pure goodness, thus fulfilling the four position foundation that brings joy to God,

### ***Consciousness as God's child***

When you first join the Unification movement and begin a life of faith, the first point is to restore the consciousness that you are truly the son or daughter of God, as well as restoring the children's position centered upon God's love. Unless you feel in your heart that you are loved by God, and unless you are so proud of these great words of God as to be eager to declare so throughout the universe, you cannot stand tall as God's son or daughter. You must have an absolute confidence that comes by trusting completely in God's authority.

Do you have such a standard that you can charge forward to Satan's base with full confidence and authority as a heavenly son despite many obstacles? Do you have this standard or not? You must pass through the process by which you can subjugate Satan, who violated Adam and Eve. Otherwise, you cannot set the standard to be blessed. What's more, you cannot become heavenly children unless you have such a standard as to seek after Satan on the world level, or at least you are able to take responsibility on the national level for three countries. If we think about that point, it's not an easy task.

Fortunately, the ideal couple that mankind has sought has been established. God and all creation are now rejoicing over the advent of the True Parents of eternal value. However, countless people were sacrificed throughout the ages to lay the foundation for them to come. How precious is their value! When you become husband and wife, a wife must regard her husband as an embodiment of God. In this case, the wife would stand in the position of her husband's daughter. The husband should then raise her up, thus restoring the daughter's position, which God lost.

Through the fall, God lost three things. Therefore, the husband must restore one of them, namely, the position of God's daughter. From the wife's point of view, her husband is like her father. She must believe in him more than she does her own father. Through him she should find much greater value than she has ever experienced in her life. She cannot restore the ideal reciprocal standard that Satan destroyed unless she restores such a standard of heart. Secondly, a husband facing his wife must feel as if he were his wife's son. He should have a bubbling heart toward his wife, as if he were a child facing his own mother. And from his wife's side, she should find within herself a mother's heart toward her husband, loving him completely as if he were her own child,

Thirdly, you cannot set conditions for restoration unless you become totally one as husband and wife, having such a heart that you absolutely need each other day and night, and you cannot bear to spend even a day without your spouse.

The fall began with a woman. How old was she? Sixteen. She was underage. A woman forfeited the standard of parents whom God should trust. Strictly speaking, therefore, following the principle of restoration, a person who is supposed to become a true mother should not be older than 20. This is the Principle. Because of this reason, I welcomed my wife as a young person and loved her as if she were my

daughter. From my side, my Holy Wedding had to be held before I passed the age of 40.

Then what period was the first seven years? It was the period when I raised Mother. I was supposed to educate Mother about heavenly family tradition and law. I did not do this in a careless way, but prayed about it so much every night before sleeping. Mother did not know it. In this way, I restored three things substantially: the daughter who was lost as a result of the fall, her reciprocal standards, and the standard of True Parents in front of God. This is the path that everyone should go as a fallen person.

You may decide to set some reciprocal standard by yourself, but you alone can never determine the heavenly, earthly and cosmic standard. The person who is qualified to set the standard of heaven is the Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah. That standard is the very final point of liberation that all people have longed for throughout history. Therefore, when the person with that standard appears, those who are in touch with their original mind and have a pure spirit will be naturally attracted to him without explanation from the moment they meet him.

### ***Three stages in the restoration of heart***

Let me repeat, unless we restore these three positions heartistically, the standard of the Blessing is not achieved. Centering upon God there is the heart of parents looking down to the children, the heart of children looking up to their parents, and the reciprocal heart of husband and wife, who are confident to initiate these three points of heart, To just expect the Blessing itself violates God's Principle. Those of you who think you have achieved the heavenly standard, please raise your hand. In Japan, there is nobody qualified to be blessed.

In any situation, there is one thing to consider in your life of faith-indemnity. That is your opportunity to make an offering for the sake of your resurrection. Therefore, we must be grateful for any chance to make conditions of indemnity.

How can we set indemnity conditions? You will not understand unless you learn from me, If in the past Japan had had a person who wanted to understand the meaning of indemnity conditions and had bought that understanding in exchange for all of Japan, then he might already have unified the world. There could be no greater business deal than that in the whole world, Whether Japan will buy it now or not--this is the problem. We can see the same story in the Bible, Even if you gain the entire world, but lose your life, what good is it? You cannot buy your life back at any price.

Therefore, we seek the answer, because we desire life, Love affairs are not permitted in our movement between men and women. Do you miss such an affair? [No!] Tell the truth! Do you miss it? [No!] You understand this point without being taught in detail because your original mind has been sharpened,

When you clearly understand these internal values, you feel tremendous regret for certain actions in your past, such as writing love letters with your own hands, because in doing so, your hands were moving according to Satan's desire to entice someone further from God, However many times you may cry, your tears will have no end. At the time, you never imagined the consequences of what you were doing with your body. It was stained by the dirty blood of Satan. In order to clean that out, you feel like cutting yourself open to let that impurity drain away. However, you cannot let

yourself die in that way. Therefore, you need to make certain conditions to cleanse it. Hands and bodies used by Satan should be thrown out, How can you become recreated by God's love? Certainly, trying to maintain a dirty relationship is out of the question. Have you acquired this kind of heart yet?

In a sense, Eve would have become the future wife of God. This is because once Adam became one with God, and God's spirit dwelled within him, then Adam would be the embodiment of God Himself. Therefore, for God, his wife was violated by Satan. We have not subdued the one who hurt God. So God has been persevering with a hope to restore His ideal of creation in the midst of deep sorrow. When you think about that, you cannot just steal God's wife for your own sake and have children who do not care about Heavenly Father at all, But this is the reality of the fallen world today, and the current relationship between Satan and God. Viewed from that perspective, Satan is both our enemy and God's enemy. You are from the fallen world. Therefore, if you decide to go the path of restoration, it's better to finish it quickly. "whatever it takes, I want to reach the top." With such a burning desire you must be determined to find your original self.

### ***Seek after God's heart***

Those who have fasted for one week, raise your hand. Anyone who has never experienced fasting cannot understand the feeling at three minutes to midnight on the seventh day, even if somebody explains it to him by writing hundreds of books. To write and explain the taste of honey is not the same as tasting it, therefore, if a person wants to believe in the path of the cross, it's better to so the path of the cross substantially, One who does not understand God's heart must put himself in a position to discover it. One should persevere through any hardship to seek after God's heart. The fact that we are the descendants of fallen man, whose heart is separated from God's heart, is intolerable to God. Furthermore, to create some theory centered upon man or to speak about some self-centered reciprocal standard, etc., is out of the question.

What we are taught in the Principle is the realm of the heart. Our standard of heart is beyond that of our ancestors in the fallen world. Therefore, if You commit the fall again after you understand it, your situation will be more dreadful than that of Satan, who fell at the perfection level of the growth stage. Even Satan will curse those who do so. Then how can they find salvation? You must understand that is a fearful fate. Committing the fall after understanding the Principle results in repeating fallen love in the presence of True Parents and Heavenly Father.

The fall of our ancestors took place at a time when the new history under True Parents and Heavenly Father had not begun yet. But to fall now when we are beyond the limited understanding of past history is far more serious; therefore, if you do so, you are worse than Satan.

I'm sure this is the first time you have understood this issue clearly, isn't it? Therefore, women, especially women, must be very careful. Faithful women in the Unification Church are standing in the position of Eve before the fall. The purer your faith is, the more the men around you will come after you. These men want to see you so badly they cannot sleep--such will be their yearning. In the case of men, as well, if they have pure faith, then women in the secular world become attracted to

them. This is exactly the same situation as when Satan came to have a burning desire for Eve, and when fallen Eve tried to tempt Adam.

When you experience these things, you come to substantially understand that this Principle is the eternal truth. Otherwise, the Principle has no value. You must overcome all temptations to the very end. Once you hear this truth, you can understand what kind of standard you have. You may think, "Now that Father has come, we can be blessed. Let's get ready. Because Father is a person who can understand human situations very well, I'm sure he will ignore my mistakes." You might think this way, but I am not obligated to.

The Bible says that a woman who has a baby is unfortunate. How do those who have an inseparable relationship with their husband, children, or parents get out of their situation? In order to free people from such confinement, God allows the spread of democracy and liberalism, It is common practice for people to divorce these days; children do not hesitate to oppose their parents; neither do they oftentimes appreciate their parents' hard work. Of course, God does not like to see these things happen, but if they allow for people to more freely respond to the greater purpose of God's will without restrictions, then these actions can be justified.

### ***Confessing everything***

To be blessed, you must pay indemnity. If you have something stained in the past, you must wash it away. But you cannot do so by your own power. You need assistance. In order to get help from a lawyer, you have to confess the whole situation, in detail, including whatever you have at the bottom of your heart. If you do so, a lawyer will defend you standing in the position of yourself. Otherwise, you cannot be saved, Likewise, I can become a lawyer who intercedes for you. Therefore, even if you may not want to speak out, you must confess to me every secret, even the things that nobody else knows.

Do you say you have many things inside that you don't like? I don't like them any more than you do. Strictly speaking, my mission is not to deal with this kind of matter. But I must accept this position in order to give the Blessing. You are the stained one; however, you can be blessed only when such a condition is made that your stains are erased and you become clean. Otherwise, since you are totally in chaos, you are not qualified to receive anything like the Blessing. Isn't that true? Blue-eyed Americans or dark-skinned Africans--all people are the same. If they do not go through such a process, I will not recognize them.

I am aware of many things--the spiritual world comes to me and tells me to listen to them. Listening to them reveals troublesome things, all of them are about abuses of either money or the relationship between men and women. I understand everything, I don't want to listen to those kinds of things, but they want me to solve these problems by all means. So things that were hidden in the darkness are now exposed in the sunlight. This means that Satan's camp is being broken into pieces. Therefore, the standard of departure for the new world can be established. In Japan as well, problems between men and women are coming out little by little as a result of rumors about the Blessing. If they make selfish promises, I know it. Even if they do not want to be exposed, anyway, they have to confess to me. Those who look at each other as more than just a brother and sister are in the same position as Satan. You are never

allowed to do this kind of thing. If you have even a little of this tendency, you must cut it off.

Until now, I have taken responsibility and carried your burden so that you could set conditions of indemnity for your Blessing, to build a true family. Although I fulfilled this responsibility, if you violate Heavenly Law, it is a dreadful thing that will burden tens of generations of your descendants. If any of you who understand the heart of the Principle concerning the fall decide to get married on your own anyway and have children, who can take responsibility for you breaking the standard of the Principle? Even God does not take this responsibility.

In the Old Testament, they killed those who committed the sin of fornication and adultery by stoning them. Is there anything we can do for those who are worse than that? Who pays the indemnity after all? You yourself must, absolutely, Man lost the ability to have dominion because of the fall. Therefore, no matter how much others give advice, you must decide what is true and do it. Whatever the path others may go, you should be busy going on your own path. You have no time to be distracted by what they are chattering about beside you. In this way, you should always feel pressed by the urgency of restoration work, You have no time to sleep at night. You have no time to eat meals sitting in a chair. You should be people who have such an intense heart of restoration,

Since God has been persevering until now, longing to reverse the history of 6,000 years, you have no qualification to stand in front of God unless you pay indemnity in the first seven-year period. How can you reduce the history of 6,000 years into seven years and indemnify it, and how can you inherit it heartistically? Do you think it's an easy job? Restoration is a long, long course, which you cannot finish even if you do your best from your youthful days. So you must study hard and do everything in your power to accomplish your responsibility.

You cannot imagine how much indemnity I have paid to reach this point, I have been so serious. Prison is not the problem, torture is not the problem, being beheaded is not the problem. I have been working silently for many years at the risk of my life, longing for the time to come when I could clarify everything at once. My seriousness inspired God, and God could not but sympathize with me. Therefore, even if I keep silent, mediums in the world are beginning to work for my sake, They are mobilizing the spiritual world for success in every corner of the world.

### ***Our mass weddings***

Now, let's think about the wedding ceremony. We have been dealing with the history of indemnity. why do we hold mass weddings? Don't you want to know?

If the Blessing had taken place in the Garden of Eden, that would have been the biggest event in the cosmos. In the case of Jesus, as well, he should have had a wedding celebrated by the entire nation of Israel. we have mass weddings in order to indemnify according to the Principle what could not be achieved on the cosmic level in the Garden of Eden. Therefore, at the time of the 430 Couples Blessing, the wedding was sensational news around the world. It caused a controversy everywhere. Therefore, it was the same as if we had held the wedding ceremony on the world level. God's wedding ceremonies must be this way. If we let all the people

of Seoul see our Blessing, it is the same as if we invite tens of millions of people.

The wedding ceremony of the Unification Church has certain conditions. Wedding ceremonies until now have been self-centered, but we must indemnify this through public ceremonies that bring joy to God. Also, within our wedding rites, each part of the ceremony is a specific indemnity condition for the sake of restoration, This is necessary because of the Principle. The Principle clearly explains that our Blessing has surpassed the standard of bride and bridegroom which Jesus could not accomplish, and our Blessing eases Heaven's resentment over the fall. Do you know one condition of indemnity that I discovered? It is the indemnity donation. It is a condition to give a donation that you earn by pouring out your sweat, and it is not given at one time but over four years. You may wonder how I could determine such a condition, My understanding must be a mystery to you.

If God gave the solution, it could not become an indemnity condition. The history of 6,000 years has been prolonged because Adam did not know what he was supposed to know, and what he was supposed to solve by himself. Therefore, I had to think it out by myself, It is a cosmic and historical success that I solved the issue of indemnity within my lifetime, set the standard of history, and carried it out, Therefore, I am the victor, Saints who passed into the spiritual world, and Jesus, Confucius and many others--all of them came to admire me. Because of this, the spiritual world will become unified.

Hell ,will also be liberated. Truly, this will all take place. If you cannot believe it, go to the most famous medium in Japan and ask about Reverend Moon; you, will clearly understand. The organization in the spiritual world supporting us is connected to the earth, Accordingly, when one, two, three nations come to stand up for God, the world will be restored on their foundation, Having this kind of hope, we march forward.

Also, when you are blessed in marriage, you have the period of separation for 40 days as an indemnity condition, You must do this as indemnity not on the level of only Jesus' spiritual resurrection, but for the purpose of entering into the sphere of resurrection in substantial life while still on the earth.

You must pass through a certain course of restoration before being able to love each other in the position of husband and wife. In order to win the victory for such a difficult path of indemnity, from now on you must never think about having a selfish relationship with someone of the opposite sex, nor should you arouse such thoughts or initiate such a conversation. The Blessing always involves a certain indemnity. There is no question about it, Concerning indemnity, there is no room for clemency, Therefore, the Unification Church is a fearful place, This is not a threat, but the conclusion of the Principle.

Within the realm of the Principle, there cannot be one iota of tolerance for sin. God's pain cannot be fulfilled unless we overcome sin. And if we overcome it, Satan cannot accuse us, Therefore, I would have the right, if I so chose, to strike Satan by the same means that Satan used against goodness. If I chose to apply the same strategy by which Stalin purged his country of religion, and if I decided to curse one-third of the universe--well, I have the qualifications to do so, but it is not our way, Nevertheless, the key point is that each person is responsible for his own restoration through indemnity. This is the Unification Church.

---

### **Chapter 3**

## **What We Should Do in Our Lifetime**

### **September 27, 1970--Seoul, Korea**

There are many people among those of you gathered here today who are different in age--some are in their 30's and 40's and others in their 60's. You should not be reluctant to grow old. You should not lose your hope even if the life you have been living up until now has not reached the level of your ideal. Instead, you should reflect on your entire life in order to make more effort and preparation to offer yourself for the sake of the race, nation and world.

Young people who are 20 or 30 may have great hope for the future of the nation and for the sake of the history of the human race. However, to have hope itself is not enough; the point is that you should not be controlled by the environment, but rather you should control it. You should give influence to the environment, console lonely people, give power to the powerless, and present the hope for the future. Therefore, you should think deeply about what kind of life you should lead.

If the members of the Unification Church are given such a heavenly mission to offer themselves for the sake of the world, what kind of life should we live? This is a serious problem.

At this point, you should become a person who can resurrect history. Let's think about our ancestors who lived their life in this country and passed away. Do you suppose they desired their country to be a weak country? No, they certainly hoped for this nation to be much stronger and more prosperous. If that is the case, then when can we realize the ideal on earth that our ancestors have been longing for? We must create conditions on the earth by which we can realize their hope.

Accordingly, we must give hopeful stimulation to the nation and hold firm subjectivity. But whether we have already become such a person or not is a serious problem.

You must think, "I must succeed. I must be a success at least in my field." We need to stand confidently, harmonizing with our surroundings. Looking at the present situation from this viewpoint, what kind of strategy should we develop? This is another problem. Should we take a conventional strategy? Should we begin this spiritual battle by declaring: "We have enough numbers and power so let's have a fight"? Can we have such an attitude at this time? We haven't reached that level yet.

Then what strategy should we take? There is only one strategy to accomplish our goal. That is the surprise attack.

Then when should we do it? Should we attack in broad daylight? Nobody would do that. Actually, it is natural to do it at midnight. There are several kinds of midnight. If there are quiet midnights and stormy midnights, then we should carry out our

operation at a stormy midnight-one that everyone hates and when nobody wants to move. Such a path is not a simple path. Rather, it is a path that requires us to climb up to the summit of a steep mountain. This is a thorny path. It is in climbing the steepest path that we determine our life and death. Nobody except a commando could succeed on such a path. Then who can become such a special attack corps in this country today? There is no one except members of the Unification Church.

### ***Conviction to die for the cause***

What kind of spiritual attitude should we have in order to dash forward on this path? We can die in the course of attacking the enemy camp. This conviction is good. Then we will certainly be resurrected if we die. We must face the situation with such a confident attitude.

We cannot fulfill a perilous mission without such a firm attitude. Absolute faith is imperative. We must persevere, having faith to the end. We must march forward along this path with hope no matter how long it takes. In case we cannot fulfill this mission in our generation, we must leave a will and have our descendants accomplish it. Our mission is to fulfill the mandate of heaven, which has been left unaccomplished.

From this viewpoint, the path the Unification member should walk is never a simple one. You must be aware of our destiny, which is to win a victory through incredible miracles that nobody can imagine. So we should reflect upon our life and critique ourselves.

Either you are leading the Unification Church or you are following its leaders. We must live for this noble cause and die for it. We must concentrate all our efforts. We know very well that many sacrifices have to be made walking this path, but we must fight to the last person.

Let's say all of us become a sacrifice and the last person is about to die. What should he do at that time? He should not die with the enemy, but with Heavenly Father. This kind of person is a wise man. Jesus lived such a life. Jesus walked his life with Heavenly Father in all circumstances.

This kind of path is the only one by which we can deeply implant the heavenly tradition in the satanic world and thereby allow them to inherit our historical accomplishments. Everything is contained in the attitude of Jesus when he died saying, "Not my will be done, but Your Will." Therefore, we must walk a path to match his standard. This must be the most correct path.

Because Jesus walked such a path, his ideal has been pursued through-out history and has profoundly influenced today's world. Because Jesus did so, then Christianity could not help but develop as a world religion. Such a religion would never perish. We must clearly understand that such a religious path is the only path that creates the foundation for victory and firmly holds the ties of-tradition. Our church was established for the sake of the world. It was established for the purpose of bearing the problems of the world, which are a heavy burden indeed.

The 38th Parallel divides this country. But if there is a bigger problem than the 38th Parallel, we must be determined to solve it. The most serious issue is not the 38th

Parallel in our country; you should never forget that the problem of the 38th Parallel between us and both China and the Soviet Union still remains. The Korean 38th Parallel has been created as a kind of preparatory training in order to remove the 38th Parallels with China and the Soviet Union in the future. If we can solve the 38th Parallel in this country, and if we can solve the second and third 38th Parallels on the worldwide level, we will be able to have subjectivity over the new world and will be able to offer a clear direction for it. In this way we can muster the power to completely break through communism on the worldwide level.

Communism has been invading other nations on the worldwide level up until now by using camouflage tactics. We must clearly know that behind this force is Satan. Communism has been forming its system of activities centering upon evil. This is certainly the work of Satan. Are we able to gain the victory against such a Satan? This is the question.

We must clearly know how important it is to contribute toward the world, history and cosmos, rather than to the success of ourselves as an individual or nation. All people are the same in the sense that they live their lives by eating food, but the problem lies in what kind of life we are living. The important thing to consider is what we are going to leave behind us at the end of our life. And if we leave something, it should not be for the sake of just one nation. We must leave something based on the Unification tradition, and it must be on the worldwide level. It must be something that the entire human race of 30 billion people would welcome with open arms.

### ***Communists have begun to worry***

Today, even communists are very much aware of our determination. They are beginning to harbor anxiety. According to the degree of their anxiety, they plan their second and third strategy. However, we should never be defeated. In order to win, we must be superior in all points from the first to the last drawing our power from God. If we can do so, the solution will be pretty simple.

Because things are-not accomplished so simply in reality, it means our strategy must be that we can win even if we are defeated. How is it possible to win when we are defeated? This is the strategy of Heavenly Father.

Seen from the historical point of view, good people have always been beaten. Look at the saints. If we see only that point, they appear as defeated people. However, saints have never been defeated; they always win the final victory. This is the strategy of heaven. Jesus used the same strategy. Accordingly, the path we are going to walk can never be a simple one. We walk a path that is full of pain and suffering. A person who tries to walk an easy path is certainly a traitor to heaven.

In our Unification Church, those who worked for the sake of their own benefit all disappeared. If people work silently for the sake of nation and world, whether other people are looking at them or not, they become bound deeply to each other without the need for promises in words. Therefore, in prayer, also, it is most important to pray in a place that nobody knows, and to do your sincere best. This kind of person is the one who stays until the end. Such a person becomes a treasure in the heart of God.

The Unification Church is making a desperate effort to create such people. We are making such an effort in order to create a quality of faith that can represent tens of

millions of people. We can liberate heaven only when we practice this kind of life.

A person who climbs up to the top of the mountain to shed tears and cry out for the sake of heaven is a more serious person than one who prays for the peace of the world. In this sense Jesus' prayer at Gethsemane was a most serious one, more so than any other prayer. If there is such a person, then heaven cannot but embrace him and have deep concern for that person. We must know that this kind of person is the object of hope for the entire human race. Heaven works centering upon this kind of person. Someone who lives for the sake of himself cannot leave a light for others. But a person who lives for the sake of the nation, the sake of the world, and the sake of heaven is able to enter into the sphere of resurrection.

Only one thing remains to the last and that is heaven. Those who live for the sake of heaven are able to live to the last.

## **Chapter 4**

### **Change of Blood Lineage; The Real Experience of Salvation by the Messiah October 13,1970--Seoul, Korea**

What is the ultimate purpose of God's providence? It is the completion of salvation, which means complete perfection. No one seeks incompleteness in anything.

Human beings have fallen and have inherited a satanic blood lineage. Who is Satan? Satan is the enemy of God's love. Originally, God created Adam with the goal of making him the perfect substantial manifestation of God. Adam was to be God's substantial body. No one but God the Creator can have complete dominion over all things. That is because in order to have complete dominion it is necessary to have complete knowledge. Only God knows all things completely; therefore, complete dominion is possible only by God. Adam himself is a created being, and it is impossible for a created being to have complete dominion over the creation. Therefore, God made Adam in His image so that He might live directly in him. In other words, God intended to make Adam stand in the position of God's resonator and wanted to control the universe directly through him.

#### ***The creation of Adam***

How could God work through the form of Adam? God created all things with forms, but the invisible God does not have any form. In terms of largeness, God is infinitely large, and in terms of smallness, God is infinitely small. Material things, no matter what kind of form they may have, cannot receive direct dominion from God. Therefore, in the created world of material things, God created man, who has personality or spirit, to be the master. God must have dominion not only over all earthly things, but also over the infinite spiritual world. Archangels and all other spiritual beings are invisible substantial beings. A certain central form is also necessary in order to have dominion over the invisible substantial world. Then where was that form available? It was only through Adam that God could have such a form. Accordingly, through Adam's form, God planned to have dominion over both the spiritual world and the physical world, with Adam as the center. That was the purpose of creation. Therefore, God had to have a substantial relationship with the substantial being, Adam, in order to have dominion over all things.

Adam's perfection would represent the perfection of God's Hyung Sang [visible, external form]. The body of Adam and his personality or spirit were the same type as that of God, who is the center of the

incorporeal realm. Without a form, God could not have dominion over the world of form. With that idea, God created Adam.

God's second goal was to achieve perfect unity between Himself and Adam. What bonds them? Man is the horizontal representative of God the vertical being. The central point of their connection, which is called love, is the string which connects people to eternity. Human beings who- have physical bodies are supposed to unite with God through love, and when they do, they have united with infinite love, enjoying the greatest happiness. The ideal world or the world of goodness is based upon that realm of happiness. There you observe the world feeling total unity with God.

Mankind is longing for the original ideal of creation, a world of harmony. This desire is centered on love. Therefore, in order to fulfill it, you must live in an environment of love. You must feel and experience love throughout your life. It is God's purpose for man to become united with God through love. It -is through love that God and man can become united. That is God's purpose of creation.

### ***Resurrection of love***

God wanted men and women to have the feeling of love for each other. He wanted them to perfectly fulfill the purpose of creation and to experience love in a free and natural way. That is the reason why He wanted to unite with man centering upon love. However, man took the opposite course through the fall, and the central point for connection was taken by the archangel. As a result, the whole universe became a mass of confusion. The central point, love, which should have been connected to God, was actually bound to Satan. The motivation for connection became opposite to God's motivation. Therefore, in man, the standard of the conscience and the standard of the flesh are opposed to each other. People have related to each other centered upon Satan's love, not God's love.

For that reason, mankind has been suffering through 6,000 biblical years up till now in order to be liberated from the bondage of Satan's love. God has been prevented from entering the inner mind of people directly to recover the necessary central point, so He has had to adopt an indirect method to penetrate their conscience. In history, therefore, God sent prophets, saints, and sages, hoping that through them fallen man would receive His love and truth. That has been the history of restoration up until now. God's providence has centered on the recovery of love. Its goal is to restore people whose conscience is indwelt by God. It aims at unity through God's love.

God created the sphere of the chosen nation of Israel and through 4,000 years of biblical history, He guided the chosen people. He then taught them to expect the Messiah, centering upon their faith, Judaism, which was in the position of Abel to the nation of Israel. Together the nation and Judaism were to erect the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. If unity had been made on the national level, based upon the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance, then the foundation for the Messiah would have been completed naturally. God suffered greatly for 4,000 years, hoping that the foundation would be laid. The chosen people of Israel, too, were seeking the national foundation.

Yet, from the principled point of view, God had to send Jesus to the earth when the time was right, even if the foundation was not completed. If Judaism and Israel had become one, Jesus could have taken the position of True Parents because he would have stood upon the substantial foundation for the Messiah. Since he could not take the position of True Parents, he could not accomplish the change of blood lineage centering upon new love. That is the principled explanation.

### ***The necessity for the Messiah***

Then why do we need the Messiah? What is his purpose? He comes for the purpose of salvation. In order to be saved, man must go back to the point which connects us to God's love. How are we to accomplish that? People have inherited satanic blood and have become substantial beings who have nothing to do with God's blood lineage. We are completely opposite from the realm of God's love, and this must be indemnified. Man's original sin must be removed; the blood lineage from Satan must be changed. But fallen people cannot do it by themselves; therefore, the Messiah is necessary.

Who has to do the work of eliminating the satanic blood lineage deep within man, which was inherited through generation after generation? If there is anybody who can do that, it is the True Parents. True Parents must become one with the love of God, establish a good reciprocal standard with Him, and love the world as if it is theirs. Otherwise it is absolutely impossible to remove fallen nature and original sin. Therefore, parents of evil and parents of goodness have to struggle and compete with each other for love, but the love of the True Parents will endure. Satanic love will be removed from man; the blood lineage will be changed.

### ***The way of Jesus***

Jesus wanted to establish that standard in his lifetime. In order to do he proclaimed at the start his of three-year public ministry:

'He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; and he who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me.' (Matt. 10:37-38)

The Messiah may be able to remove the satanic blood, but you must obey and follow him so that he can do that.

Everybody has to carry his own cross. If you cannot fulfill that standard, you cannot be saved. You must be willing to face death itself. By establishing that absolute standard, your evil blood lineage can be cleansed. In order to have it cleansed, we must work and take action, not just talk about it or have feelings about it. We must do strong things, such as fasting and prayer, thus going through the boundary of life and death.

The first battle for Jesus was to go over this boundary, cherishing God's love more than his own physical life, and establishing the condition in which he could not be accused. He had to endure terrible persecution within Joseph's family and fast and pray for 40 days. Even though he still had life and feeling within him, the incredible course he went through led him to the brink of death. Always he had to maintain unity with God's love in the midst of that life-and-death battle. With total determination to leave nothing unaccomplished, Jesus endured that suffering. He established victory on his own individual level, but his challenge was how to connect this with all of human history and how to reenact all past situations and set a victorious foundation, resolving all past failures, in order to stand as the Messiah.

### ***Foundation of love***

Where is the change of blood lineage done? On the individual level, man has to go beyond the boundary of life and death. The individual has to go through life and death situations for the sake of God and the future dignity of man. That becomes the standard of faith.

God created man with His original ideal that man would unite with His love. Man must long for God's love, even forgetting about his own life. Unless you sense the heart of that love, you cannot cross the boundary of death. Therefore, a perfect religion starts not from affirmation but from negation. It is

complete negation! We must consider life itself as something of little value if we want to confront Satan. That is what everybody is required to do in order to live a life of faith.

But in Jesus' case, it was not enough to stand on the individual level; he also had to stand on the level of history. For that purpose he had to go through all the courses of history in order to reverse the direction of history. No past victorious foundation was offered to him. History could only be restored through his life of public ministry. For 30 years Jesus developed the standard of public heart to establish the foundation of love centering on God's heart in the world. He worked to reestablish the foundation of love lost since the time of Adam.

In history, love started from parents of evil. So the course must be reversed by going back to the original ideal family of True Parents centering on God. In order to do that, God chose certain representatives in history, in the stages of formation, growth, and completion, to represent history and the world. History had to develop in this reversal course.

### ***Teaching of resurrection***

What does that history mean? A person is born through a man's seed going into a woman. Where does the way of reversal begin? It is within the woman's womb. The condition must be established so that history is reversed in the womb. For complete restoration, the starting point is the seed which exists in the body of a male. The condition must be established in which the seed within a male is united with God's love. Without establishing that condition, complete reversal of the blood lineage cannot be established. For the conception of a pure child, God worked in history through certain families.

Religion must follow God's way. That is why a world-level religion must teach the necessity for rebirth. Therefore, Christianity has become a world religion both in concept and in reality. It teaches that everybody must be reborn, just as Jesus told Nicodemus,

'Unless one is born anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God.' John 3:3)

The foundation of resurrection has not been understood so far. You must establish the condition to inherit the heart of history; otherwise the start and motivation for resurrection is not fulfilled. You must understand that.

Then for the blood lineage to be reversed, conditions must be established so that the seed which is going to become a future child enters the bone marrow of Adam and connects with God's love. Otherwise, you cannot be born anew as God's child. This teaching is founded on the Bible, which is God's word.

### ***Love for Jesus***

Christians know that Jesus is Lord and that he is the source of love. They want to unite with him and receive that love. But they cannot do so by simply reading the Bible. It is only when they yearn and long for Jesus that they can become a part of him. If they are truly close to Jesus, then when he feels sad, they feel sad. The emotions or feelings of a man do have an influence upon the seed in his flesh. When a man feels happy, that feeling of happiness affects his own seed. Likewise, when he feels sad, that feeling of sadness affects his seed.

Then what does it really mean to believe in Jesus? Jesus is a man. He was like the original Adam before the fall. So after all, Jesus is the spiritual father. Without uniting with your father, you cannot be reborn. Christianity is the only religion that teaches people to long for Jesus and love him and

welcome him as a bride welcomes her bridegroom. We should want to penetrate Jesus even to the marrow of his bone.

This teaching has a deep meaning, which has two dimensions. Because people in the world all came from the seeds of Adam, many people are anxious to go back to the original Adam. The Holy Spirit is the feminine aspect of God which is urging us to go back to Jesus, the unfallen Adam. Thus, all Christians must become part of the seed in Jesus' body in order to become his children, reborn through the Holy Spirit.

How many Christians have held this faith? They have never understood this, never even dreamed of it. It has been thought that just through believing in Jesus unconditionally, one can enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

But from the viewpoint of the Principle, restoration is much more difficult. Even if people say they want to go back to Jesus, they can't just idolize him, but must actually become part of his flesh and bone marrow. Think how difficult it has been for God to accomplish this in history.

There have been so many satanic realms, legions of enemies blocking God from accomplishing His will. God could not defeat the satanic realm all at once but had to make sacrifices step by step, going through many struggles. How many people have faith to the extent that they actually want to go into the flesh and body of Jesus? You cannot enter the body of Jesus except through heart and love. Only love can connect us with Jesus, not the truth nor righteousness. Before life there is love. Man is born through parental love. Without that love there is nothing that can connect us to God, but with love it is completely possible. Love goes beyond history, transcending time and space.

Why do I tell you these things so clearly? This is the time in the course of restoration when you have to take the first step toward a new world, centering on the heart of God. Therefore, it is a very important period, not only the period of changing the blood lineage, but the time of change in your life. You must take the first steps on the foundation of clear understanding; otherwise you will be accused by Satan, who will say, "Hey, where did you come from?" You should be able to say, "I came from the Garden of Eden before the fall, from God's own bosom." You must be able to give a testimony, saying, "By myself I am not worthy to stand here, but because of the approval of the person who stood here, I am standing here. The building was built by a world-famous architect, but ownership can be transferred. I have been given the ownership." If you speak to Satan that way, he will have to surrender.

### ***The way of rebirth***

We have to go into Jesus and connect with God's love, establishing the condition to unite with the flesh and body of True Parents. You have to follow the path of love of Jesus and the Holy Spirit, loving and longing for each other. Otherwise you cannot be reborn. The Holy Spirit is in the position of the spouse of Jesus. The child must go through the love of the spiritual parents in order to receive rebirth. Only through the pathway of male-female love can there be birth or rebirth. There is no question about it. For that purpose, you must be moved by the Holy Spirit to feel great love and affection for Jesus. This is the work of the Holy Spirit. Jesus is the bridegroom, and the Holy Spirit is the bride. Through the experience of joyful oneness, the original love which was lost can be regained and resurrection is experienced. This is a very important matter.

This has been God's purpose throughout the course of history; this is why Jesus bore the cross. Because of the great difficulty of restoration it has taken 6,000 years; otherwise, it would not have taken even six days. Man himself had to seek this truth and restore his personal authority in the world, based upon self-awareness. Otherwise, he could not return to God.

Are you joyful that a man like True Father was born in such a world of despair? You may think so, but I am not so joyful. I have always been fighting at the risk of my life; you must not forget that. Difficult things in this world can usually be accomplished, if you just make effort. But what I have been doing can never be easily achieved; it cannot be done through physical power or by violence. It must be done in accordance with the Principle, which is an iron rule.

It is very difficult to aim at the one goal of restoration without deviating from the central point. Restoration is even more difficult than the original creation of heaven and earth. I have set up the condition of indemnity for an internal foundation which you have never dreamt of; there is a realm of peace now which you can acquire without being aware of it. In this respect, I have achieved a universal victory by sacrificing throughout my life.

The realm of total perfection cannot be achieved without a condition for restoring fallen Eve. The Holy Spirit and Jesus must give rebirth centering upon original love. In order for Jesus to be born, God in His providence prepared a certain historical foundation of heart. That providence must involve the womb of a woman. It is there that the solution to the problems of history must be found, so there must be a fight, a struggle. As a result of the fall, history started from struggle.

In Adam's family, Abel and Cain fought. For restoration Cain was supposed to take the position of younger brother Unless the elder brother becomes the younger brother, there can be no separation from Satan. So there must be a struggle for restoration. Esau and Jacob had to struggle in this way. They succeeded in setting up the proper condition of subjugation, but their struggle started when they were adults, namely, after they were 30 or 40 years old. God still needed a victory prior to adulthood. Thus the fight had to start from within the mother's womb.

### ***Tamar***

If you can understand about Tamar, you can understand the whole Principle. Whom did Tamar have a relationship with? Her father-in-law. How could a baby born out of such a relationship inherit the blood lineage of Israel?

Actually, the mother of King Solomon was Bathsheba, originally the wife of Uriah before King David stole her. Then how could the child from that union become King Solomon? Bathsheba was in the providential position of Eve in the Garden of Eden, before the fall. David was in the position of Adam, and Uriah was in the position of the archangel. The archangel distracted the spouse of Adam with love and stole her away, making her fall. A reversal course is needed in order to indemnify that; therefore a person in the position of the archangel's wife had to be restored to the position of Eve. Therefore, the child who was born on the foundation of that reversal could be born as a child of heavenly love, a child of glory. Solomon was such a child of glory.

The woman named Tamar had a relationship with her father-in-law, Judah. According to the law in those days, a woman who committed adultery had to be stoned to death. Tamar's first husband had died, and then her second husband had died also; but she knew God loved the blood lineage of her husband. She knew she had to protect and continue that blood lineage. For Tamar, her personal dignity was not a factor. She was only concerned about preserving the blood lineage which God loved. Since she loved that blood lineage, she stood in a providential position and she was able to establish the proper condition of heart. With such a heart, she had a relationship with her father-in-law. [Twins were conceived. At the time of birth, one baby's hand emerged, but was withdrawn. The two boys struggled, and the other baby was actually born first. See Genesis 38:27-30. This represented the younger brother gaining the victory over the older brother in the womb, even before birth.]

The standard of victory gained in the womb of Tamar was handed down from generation to generation through the tradition of Israel, the descendants who believed in Judaism. Why did they have to establish a foundation for the Messiah at the national level? Because there were already many nations in the satanic world, God had to establish a national standard with which to deal with them. God's side had to stand in the position of Abel on the national level. For that purpose, God guided the Israelites and helped them develop their victorious foundation on the national level.

## ***Mary***

There was another girl who regarded the historical significance of her actions to be more important than her own dignity or her own social environment. She regarded God's will as the highest priority. That girl was Mary. Mary maintained the standard of victory and Satan could not accuse her. So on the foundation established by Mary, Jesus was conceived. It was that victorious foundation which qualified Jesus to be born from God. Without coming on such a historical foundation, nobody could be qualified to be the Messiah.

Therefore, Jesus said, 'I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but by me' (John 14:6)

Because he was born from that unique victorious blood lineage, he could be the only begotten son, beloved by God. This is logical. If you do not believe in Jesus, you cannot go back to God. That is the absolute truth, but so far, nobody has been able to understand the true meaning of this. There are many religions, but only Christianity can stand in the absolute position of true son. All other religions stand in the position of servants or adopted sons.

## ***Jesus***

Since Jesus was born in this way, could he be in a position to be accused by Satan? No, he could not. Therefore, both in heaven and on earth, angels were mobilized to welcome and attend him at his birth. From then, the new world was begun. On the internal, religious level, Judaism was in the archangel position, and on the external, national level Pontius Pilate was in the archangel position. If Jesus' family had fully supported him, and especially if John the Baptist had followed him, then Judaism could have completely united with Jesus, for John was known as a prophet. If they had all cooperated and if Judaism and the nation of Israel were united with Jesus, then influencing Rome would not have been a problem. If Jesus' followers had been able to establish a nation, they would have influenced the entire Roman civilization. The whole Mediterranean world could have been under the guidance of Jesus. If that had happened, the unification of the whole world would have followed.

Jesus wanted to build the Kingdom of Heaven on earth in that way, but he was given no foundation to do so. As a result, so many sacrifices had to be made during the past 2,000 years, and now the time has come for the Lord of the Second Advent to appear.

Christianity today is in the position of the second Israel, but it has no nation on earth. The Jewish people have also undergone persecution for the past 2,000 years. The Jewish people should have established a God-centered nation centering upon Jesus, but they did not. Therefore they were scattered all over the world and then they went through terrible persecution. Part of my mission is to rescue them. Since Jesus was abandoned by 12 disciples, the Jewish people now have to achieve victory through confrontation with more than 12 Islamic nations of the world.

Jesus was born in the nation of Israel, but Christianity cannot claim any nation. God created the earth, but is there any nation which is God's? No. Everything that was built up by the first Israel fell apart and was lost. The Jews were scattered and driven away. Christians also had to be persecuted.

There are many political and cultural spheres, yet there are no unifying cultural values on earth. The Christian people were persecuted by governments and sovereignties in this world because there was no law to protect them. Religion came to be separated from politics. Originally, however, religion and politics were to be united. The separation between religion and politics became necessary in order to protect religion. Now there are many complicated problems to solve.

God wants to plant His footprints on earth. No matter how vast the universe is, one beginning point is essential. Therefore, He must start from some point, and now is the time to start. That is why I selected and blessed the Holy Grounds, where we go to pray and make offerings.

God created the earth through His absolute authority. Let's think about going back to the origin. This world was to be established in the name of God and True Parents; so all things started from Adam and Eve, who were to be the original True Parents and one with God. They were to have authority over the archangel and live forever in joy. Therefore, we must become one, centered upon True Parents.

You must register as a citizen of a restored nation centered upon God, but you don't have such a nation. There is no foundation upon which you can declare clearly against the satanic world that you have your own country. You must understand that. You are supposed to be registered as the citizens of Heaven. That sovereignty may be either big or small, but whether it is big like America or very small, the authority of one vote is the same.

### ***Israelites without a nation***

Unification Church members are like the Israelites; they are a chosen people without a nation. Therefore they have to suffer: but no matter what, they have to overcome and occupy the original nation. We must establish one nation under God's sovereignty; for that purpose we have been passing through the course of suffering.

What is our hope? Our hope is to someday restore God's sovereignty and build a nation which we can be proud of and register ourselves as citizens of that nation. How soon can we achieve it? We must pour everything we have into the fulfillment of that purpose; that is the Principle. When we register as citizens, we want to offer everything we have to the nation. Our position will be determined by order of registration. Those who register first will stand in the position of the first ancestors; those who register second will stand in the position of the second ancestors, and so on. They will come to establish the authority in that restored sovereign nation.

Then what will a citizen of that nation be like? Will the Japanese people become those citizens? Will the American people become those citizens? You have to help the Unification Church develop. Japan is designated as the Eve nation, but she cannot become the Eve nation by doing nothing. Everybody must become united with a patriotic spirit in order to prosper. If that-kind of foundation had been established at the time of Jesus, then would Jesus have had to die? If Jesus had come on the foundation which we now have in the Unification Church, he would never have been crucified.

### ***Lord of the Second Advent***

Tragically, Jesus died a miserable death. The seed within Jesus' bone marrow was connected spiritually to God and produced spiritual salvation, but from the Principle point of view Jesus must come again to fulfill his mission. The Messiah absolutely must come again into this world. The worldwide Christian foundation has been laid for that purpose. God has been working through history and now He is preparing the democratic world to be in the superior position in the struggle against the communist world.

Within the democratic realm, Christianity stands in the spiritual position of the second Israel on the world level. That is the Principle point of view. Centering on the worldwide foundation of Christianity and the other religions including Judaism, God's foundation is being made.

The Christian foundation has come through three stages. The first was Catholicism, but Catholicism did not complete its mission, so Protestantism emerged as the development on the growth level. From the Principle point of view, Catholicism is relatively an Old Testament-type faith while Protestantism is a New Testament-type faith. Thus Protestantism insists on the importance of the words of truth. What is the central purpose of these words? It is to point to the Lord of the Second Coming. That is why the words have been taught on a worldwide foundation. But the substance of the truth has to be imbued with heart, otherwise it cannot stand in front of God. Those who occupy the central position within the Christian tradition at this time must have the Christian truth but also the content of heart. That is the Unification Church.

### My mission

In order for the Unification Church to establish the worldwide foundation, it must be welcomed by Protestantism, which has a New Testament-type responsibility. If Protestantism welcomes the Unification Church and they are united, then the foundation is made from the formation stage, to the growth stage and to the perfection stage. If the Christian churches become united, it would be as if Israel and Judaism had united into one country. So if Christianity becomes united, the democratic countries will naturally become united. Then the world can stand in the sphere of salvation.

Fourteen years after World War I world communism became a problem. Why 14 years? If a solution is not found to a problem within 14 years, then there will be even greater problems and seven years of struggle. If you look at the political situation of the world from the Principle point of view it is very interesting, but I will not talk about it in detail.

By myself, I have the mission to establish the foundation of unity with Protestantism, but I could not do it in the past. Instead, it opposed me. Human history began with the elder brother hitting the younger brother. In order to receive the younger brother, the older brother must trust in God and know Him in the true sense. If you continue to cling to the traditional teachings with which you were raised, it will be difficult for you to accept a new expression of truth. I was put in the position to be opposed by the churches, so I was put in a position just like that of Jesus, who was persecuted by the religious leaders. I stood in the position to inherit Jesus' mission and had to follow the path of struggle for the sake of righteousness. For the past 20 years I had to fight to indemnify the history of the previous 2,000 years.

### ***Going north***

Where could I start to pay that indemnity? It could not be done in the southern part of Korea; it was necessary to go to the North. To go to North Korea means to go to the headquarters of Satan. I had to go to the communist world, the worldwide satanic realm, prepared to die. It was just like Christianity trying to penetrate and convert Rome. After the early Christians had been persecuted by the leaders of Judaism, they spread to Rome and finally dominated Rome after a struggle of 400 years. Christianity established the horizontal foundation for freedom in Rome.

In the same way, I had to go to the North and there struggle against communism. I established a foundation there and brought many people into the truth. I had to go through many difficulties, such as prison life. When I was imprisoned I knew my disciples must not be like the disciples of Jesus; they must not run away from me, no matter how terrible the communist government was. There had to be a certain number of disciples who were that determined.

When Jesus was arrested, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth was lost. Therefore I had to restore disciples from within the prison and establish the foundation to restore the mission of Jesus. Jesus' mission was not to restore only individuals; originally his disciples should have established their own families, starting with the three central apostles. So the purpose of Jesus' coming was not just to get individual disciples. The disciples were necessary in order to indemnify the conditions for the perfection of Cain in three ages, representing three ages of archangels opposing God's providence.

### ***The position of the three disciples***

Jesus was in the position of Abel. Peter, James and John stood in the position of Cain and were supposed to indemnify the failure of Cain, who did not obey God. If those three disciples had offered their lives together with Jesus, then Jesus would not have had to die and go to the spiritual world so early; he could have continued to work on earth along with the Holy Spirit. If that had happened, then Christianity would have spread to the world level in 600 years. But Jesus died. If the husband goes into the spiritual world, the bride must pray with utmost seriousness; otherwise she cannot meet the bridegroom. If Jesus had not died on the cross and the disciples had united, then it would be like Cain and Abel uniting; together they could welcome God. It is the Principle. They could have established the horizontal foundation for God on the earth.

Jesus wanted to indemnify the pain of God, who had much grief at the time Eve was lost. Jesus came to restore that situation, centering upon Mary, but it was not completed. God lost the women of three generations-grandmother, mother, and spouse. If those three generations of women are not restored, then there can be no children who are truly united as Cain and Abel under True Parents. Therefore it is necessary to have three women in that position pay indemnity. Without establishing the horizontal foundation of the Eve nation, restoration is not done. Jesus had to die because that condition was not met. Japan also must fulfill that condition, otherwise its restoration cannot be accomplished soon.

Twenty years ago, I came back to the South with three women disciples and one young man, Reverend Won Pil Kim. At that time I made a new start with the Unification Church. The Principle is not something we simply have in our mind. It must be based on practice. I escaped from the communist sphere and started anew, establishing the foundation in the South. That is the way the Unification Church began and developed.

Since Jesus was opposed by the leaders of Judaism, the Unification Church had to follow the same path and achieve victory. Restoration must reverse past failure, so we have established the family foundation. The established Christian churches have opposed us. I wanted to establish the Abel position within the Christian sphere. The Unification Church was born second; therefore it is in the Abel position. Abel has grown up, and now he has an external foundation with which to meet the elder brother. The Unification Church is trying to unite with established Christianity and restore the unity of brotherhood which we lost 20 years ago. When the elder brother and the younger brother become united, their family becomes united naturally. Therefore I suffered a lot to establish the individual foundation of Abel.

I have been going the way of sacrifice and suffering. By successfully going through that process and safeguarding it, we have come to the point where we are recognized by our nation. Now, no matter how much established Christianity may oppose us, we stand in this superior position. The established Korean Christian churches are in the position of Judaism 2,000 years ago, and they are turning in a positive way. This symbolizes the Israelites centering upon Judaism becoming united with Jesus.

The Korean government has become more cooperative than before, so we are extending our hands in friendship. The Unification movement must promote the Victory Over Communism (VOC) activities.

Korea must do VOC work. The Korean nation must be united with our movement in this way; otherwise, there is no way it can survive.

### ***The change of blood lineage***

In the course of restoration I started from the position of servant of servants, like a beggar in prison. Restoration must start from the position of beggar or prisoner. From the lowest miserable position we have come up to this point. Until our position reaches the national level I will not appear officially in public places.

From the Principle point of view, I first have to lay the national indemnity foundation. I have become a man of victory, so from now on we will see the horizontal foundation on the national level. That horizontal foundation must be done through Japan; that is the Principle formula.

Many prophets and pioneers in Japan had to make sacrifices in the past. For what purpose did they do that? It is, of course, necessary to establish a nation in the masculine position, but their sacrifices were to establish an Eve nation. The Eve nation should be filled with gratitude to be suffering for the sake of the Adam nation. That is the historical task of Japan.

Who is qualified to change your blood lineage? Nobody else can do it; you must know that in order to do this, I have had to bear the cross of the heart, an incredible cross. But now that the foundation has been established, you can receive it without much suffering or effort. You are given the Blessing, which means you are given the way to the new blood lineage. You are standing on the foundation of thousands of years of God's suffering, as well as my own suffering. When you get married you become engrafted; by being engrafted you come to have a different blood lineage. This is what I have done so far.

Many people were born in the past and have already gone into the spiritual world. How much difference exists between those people and ourselves? There is a vast difference in terms of the standard of faith, like the difference between heaven and earth. Through the Blessing, you have been given the most precious heavenly grace, but if you misuse it there is no way to go; even Satan will claim a higher position than you.

Satan became Satan at the growth level. In your case, if you fall during the completion stage, Satan will tell you, "You must become my servants." That's how Satan will judge you. That's the worst situation, so it's very serious. Your marriage is not just an ordinary marriage of this world. Far from it. It is most precious, centering upon the heart of heaven and earth. You must perfect your heart within your family, centered upon God's love, and you must perfect your personality with glory and joy. Perfected man and perfected woman must unite to fulfill their responsibility and their purpose. In the process of fulfilling that purpose, everything you do should be done with gratitude. The original world would have been the world of heart and gratitude. If you stand on that foundation, there can be no chance of falling.

Those of us who stand on the foundation of restoration are required to go forward to fulfill the purpose of the world. In the days ahead you must experience God's feelings and the heart which God had before creation. You should go forward with gratitude toward the fulfillment of the purpose of creation. Although you may suffer, the suffering is not just for its own sake. You will receive more blessings, which are accumulated secretly in heaven, by going the way of suffering. Therefore, be grateful.

Husband and wife, united with hearts of love, must establish their family beyond any levels of the past, dedicated toward the goal for the future. Otherwise you cannot enter the eternal Kingdom of Heaven where God dwells. That is the ultimate goal and God's purpose of creation. It sounds like a

dream, but it is attainable. Therefore, you must promise me that you will go toward that goal of the ideal family. Those of you who want to become like that, raise both your hands and pledge. Let us pray.

Heavenly Father, we now realize what kind of original family You have been looking for. We also realize that from now on we are destined to work toward that ideal family with all our hearts and all our strength. Please guide us and bless us, so that we can live a pure life, with a purified blood lineage, to become people who are embraced deeply in Your eternal love. When we realize how much suffering You have been going through in the process of history in order to restore this heart, we have nothing to say to You. Father, please purify those of us who pledge ourselves in front of You, raising both of our hands, with the determination that we will offer everything to You. We are really grateful to You for the grace and love with which You have been protecting and guiding us so far.

We thank You, Heavenly Father, for having taught such a wonderful heavenly secret. We now stand in the situation which people in the secular world cannot even dream about, and we don't know what to offer You in return. Father, we now clearly realize that we must wholeheartedly offer ourselves to You on Your altar as substantial offerings. When we think of how much You have been suffering, we can never fully express our heart of gratitude. Also, we are truly grateful to our True Parents for giving us such a blessing and grace. We pray that from now on we really will go forward with determination and gratitude. Please guide us and encourage us, so that we can help each other, knowing that without our spouses we tend to fail. We have to protect each other, pray for each other; we have to become truly the most intimate friends, intimate, closely related brothers and sisters, parents and children, so that we can become qualified to build the world of original love and great glory.

We have now heard about something very awesome, that is, the change of blood lineage. It is a fearful thing, when we think of how difficult the course of restoration has been. We have come here totally ignorant, but we have been following You. We have been going this way filled with a stubborn attitude, thinking that all the glory should belong to us. When we think of the past, how foolish we have been. The more we understand, the more we realize, and we feel ashamed of ourselves. We really don't have any place to hide; everything belongs to heaven, everything is True Parents. We need nothing more.

We now understand this, so we would like to deepen that faith, and we would like to become a husband and wife who can help each other establish the lifelong foundation of victory, leaving a foothold of glory for you. God, please remember us and embrace our children and embrace us as Your eternal children; feed us and embrace us as our parent.

Father, please bless us and guide us so that we can become true a man and true woman, and true husband and true wife, and establish a truly God centered four position foundation, centered upon Your love and heart. I Father, we realize that how our spouse looks physically is not the point. His or her physical shape \* not important. The important thing is how much we can be vertically connected in heart with You and how close we can get to You. That is what matters.

So even without our understanding, please guide us, Father; help us and guide us so that we can help each other, support each other, and save each other and pass through this satanic world of evil. Please purify both our hands with which we are now pledging. Please purify us as couples. Please sanctify us as those who are promised to enter the Heavenly Kingdom. No matter how much suffering there may be ahead, we will never forget how much You have been suffering, how many tears You shed, and we will help each other and comfort each other. Please guide us so that we can become true husband and wife. We will keep deep in our mind what we have heard today. Please bless us so that we can become true ancestors and fulfill our mission. If we cannot fulfill, then we will have to hand down our task to our descendants from generation to generation.

Father, once again we ask You to guide us and protect us so that we can become truly worthy to serve as pioneers of the creation of the world of heart, the creation of new ideal families. We know that without You everything will be in vain, everything \* impossible. We must not perpetuate a tragic history. Let us stand in the position to leave everything joyful behind us. Please protect us, Heavenly Father, and please bless us so that we can become a true family, a true husband, a true wife. We leave everything up to You. Please guide us, in the name of our True Parents we pray. Amen.

## **Chapter 5**

### **Victory or Defeat and the Present Time**

#### **December 5, 1971--Seoul, Korea**

There are many sorrowful people around us, and there are many who are not sorrowful. Our families, cities and nations are either sorrowful or they are not. Some are developing and others are not; some are smiling and others crying. In this way everyone is different, yet everybody feels sorrow and solitude and everybody seeks the whole.

Everyone also seeks joy, glory and happiness. The same is true with every family, society and even every nation. Everyone tries to avoid sorrow, seeking glory, and for that purpose everyone endures hardships. The same is true with the world. If there is a being who controls the whole, then that being should definitely be the same as human beings.

Love wasn't meant to be given in a lonely, suffering place but in a free, glorious place. God's heart is such that He wants to give His utmost love in such a receptive environment. On earth, is there any human being who can do that? We have to think about it. That utmost love is not to be given only to a certain individual; rather it is to be given to families and to the whole world. This is the essence of love. The nature of love is such that it is given to two people rather than one person, and it is given to three people rather than two people, and to 10 people. Thus, the force of love reaches toward the whole world rather than toward a certain nation. This is the way love works. Therefore, it is possible for love to flow toward human beings here on earth.

The ultimate goal of love should be the greatest thing. A parent with many children would be able to understand this deep heart. Such a person cannot have an enemy. All human beings have to receive love. If you think that you alone should receive love and not the world, then this way of thinking would be destructive.

God's desire is not confined to a certain individual. Heaven seeks the whole. Hence, the distinction between public life and private life. Public life is for the sake of the whole. Therefore, to serve the expectations of the whole is to lead a public life. Joy only for yourself cannot exist; it would be chased away by the joy of the whole. I think God is that way. Therefore, those who are wise live for the future, not only for the present. Hence the necessity of faith. Once you have faith, hope can exist.

Victory should not be confined to the individual level; it should be for the whole. It is not good to think that you are you and I am I. The truth is that you are me and I am you. We need to attain that level of awareness. Individual victory can only bring forth individual joy.

However, if individual victory is dedicated to the whole, then it can belong to the whole. Therefore, individual sacrifice can bring about public victory. We should think that after the whole Korean nation of 30 million people smiles because of happiness, then each of us can smile. The greater the extent of sacrifice, the greater the value. By the following this principle, the world can prosper.

Sacrifice for others always accompanies the path of love. We cannot walk that path by any other method. We cannot rejoice as individuals. In this sense, victory cannot exist in religion. Of course we exist as individuals, but we as individuals exist for the sake of our nation and for the sake of the whole world. We must understand that clearly.

### ***Be a public person***

We as individuals should symbolize the world. Hence, individuals should live for the public. It is in this way that God's love expands infinitely. We must not live only for the sake of the Unification Church but for the sake of our nation and for the sake of the world. Although we may have to sacrifice ourselves, we must walk this path. This is the way we as individuals should live. When you see a beautiful sunset, do you want to see it only by yourself? In your truest heart you would want everyone to see such a beautiful thing. So the eternal Kingdom of heaven cannot exist only within an individual. It can exist only within the whole. That is why religion, especially Christianity, is strong. No one can remove its power.

Needless to say, it's not easy to walk a religious path. You have to become miserable people. However, human history develops through such miserable people. We have to have ambition of the highest dimension. Even when you collapse as an individual, you can collapse with hope that your situation will bring about development. The Unification Church must serve the world; otherwise the church will perish. In this way we must establish a new civilized world, a new civilized thought. We must create an ideology representing heaven and earth. If we succeed in doing that, even if heaven and earth are destroyed, the ideology will remain forever.

When we endure suffering for the sake of our nation, we must be proud of it. It may be painful at one point, but it creates a love that no one can remove. Jesus died on the cross; however has the love of heaven that brought forth his crucifixion disappeared from the earth? No! Despite the fact that God's love for mankind allowed Him to give His most beloved son to be crucified, that deep love did emerge again on the earth, didn't it? This is the love of True Parents. It is a love so profound, a love we cannot imagine. It is able to bring forth a new resurrection:

We must know this clearly: Until we see our nation of 30 million people victorious, we must endure this miserable environment and fight. Even though it may be the path of death, we must go on. With that kind of conviction, we can live.

At first glance, the Unification Church seems to be walking the path of death: The reason is because our church lives for the sake of the nation. We cannot leave our nation when it may perish. We must do our utmost to work for the nation. We must become the center of

activity for the whole nation. Otherwise, we cannot help but perish. We stand at the crossroads to determine whether we become victors or losers. It will not be determined 10 years from now; it is determined at this moment. Unless you can overcome the present moment, you will not be able to become the victor. Those who cannot conquer the present will not be able to bring forth victory in the future. We must overcome the present difficulties to liberate God. We must therefore be victorious now. We need to clearly realize how God's destiny depends upon us. We have to save our nation and the world. We must also save God. This kind of victory for humanity cannot be obtained in a comfortable room. A day of joy would be very difficult for us if we were to live in such a comfortable way.

### ***We are all seeking the Heavenly Kingdom***

We must not fight with the established churches; rather, we must do our utmost to establish the Kingdom of Heaven, which they also are seeking. Our purpose is to establish the kingdom. Is the Heavenly Kingdom realized? No, we still have to establish it. We must not stop or become frustrated. We cannot live only for the sake of our own families; we must live for something greater. We can't stay where we are at this moment. We don't have to worry about saving ourselves; rather, we have to save the nation and the world. We need that kind of thinking. Even if we are hungry, we must march forward. Even though we face difficulties, we should accomplish what we have to do. We should walk together with history, and participate in the creation of a new history. For the sake of heaven's purpose, heaven's sorrow and heaven's dignity, we must be active.

We are now marching forward. We cannot sleep now. We have to fight together with those who are fighting for the sake of the world. Then we will discover we aren't alone in the battle. We are fighting vertically together with the saints in the spirit world. It is, of course, not an easy fight but a difficult one.

However, we must not fail. Many times we may tremble when walking this path; it's a very serious path. In order to fight against communism and Satan, we must march forward, transcending the national dimension.

Someone may live in this world, but that does not mean he lives only for himself. He belongs to his family and his nation. That is the case at least with the democratic world. We as individuals live surrounded by our families and our nation, but now the individual is the center, with God's providence surrounding him. Which family and which nation is the center? No one knows, truly. Man does not know. Then, who does know?

According to the Bible, only Heavenly Father knows. The center of God's providence, which only God knows, is nothing else but the Lord of the Second Advent. Therefore, all people are destined to unite with this individual and his family and live together with him. Centering upon this one man, all people will realize what is good and what is evil. Therefore, we must unite with that center and do our utmost to eradicate evil. We must be trained. Whether we can do it or not will determine whether all individuals, all nations and all humanity live or die. All human beings must abandon the evil world to unite with this

good center. The Lord of the Second Advent clearly knows whether God's kingdom will perish or not and whether Satan's world will perish or not. The reason is because he knows all the secrets concerning God's kingdom and Satan's kingdom. He must be the one who can establish God's kingdom by going through the struggles between God's kingdom and Satan's kingdom.

If you desire to establish God's kingdom, you must not think that you want to stay with Satan. If you live for God's purpose, you should absolutely overcome evil.

Jacob fought 21 years and defeated an angel. Afterward, he received the name Israel, which means the victor. Anyone who desires to establish God's kingdom should go this kind of path.

Moses, too, fought for that purpose. He fought for 120 years. Before God hits the power of evil, we must accomplish the desire of God. If God could handle the evil world by Himself, then why would He need any help from man? Therefore, we must represent God, destroy evil, and bring forth the day of victory. We must not perish.

If Jacob, when he was wrestling with the angel, had thought that he could not fight anymore, and if he had wanted someone to help him, then what would have happened? God would have been disappointed with him. But Jacob fought by himself and became victorious. Thus, he was able to receive the title Israel. In order to gain this kind of victory, Jacob's thigh bone was broken. We must remember Jacob fought with the angel at the risk of his life. He never gave up until he obtained the victory. We, too, must be strong that way.

### ***You must defeat Satan***

In order for us to be able to enter heaven, we must show proof that we have overcome Satan. Without that kind of certificate, we cannot go to heaven. When we try to overcome Satan, he does not just let us; rather, he resists and opposes until the end. Because Satan resists this way, God must be concerned about it. When we walk God's path, we have to face all kinds of difficulties. Did you ever see a woman delivering a baby? When a woman gives birth, she does so with her utmost effort, being ready to die. We, the Unification members, are now in this kind of situation, so we must not retreat. : :

Americans are now saying they will withdraw their troops from Vietnam and Korea, but we must not retreat. Instead we should be ready to march forward to the enemy. Why do we want to defeat our enemies?

Because we want to make God rejoice. Our purpose is to bring forth joy to God. We must defeat Satan in order for God to rejoice. He has been fighting for 6,000 years to remove Satan. But we cannot do this all by ourselves. It is impossible to do alone. Therefore, we must defeat God's enemy by becoming one with a nation.

We must defeat communism, and nothing else but Unification thought can do it. Who can deny it? We must overcome communism. Until we can see the day of communism's

defeat, we cannot give up. This is our conviction. We must defeat Satan, who is trying to block a glorious future. For that purpose, our tactics now are to surround the enemy. In order to surround the enemy, we have to pay a great sacrifice. We have to go through a severe war, so all of you should be ready. In this miserable situation we should bring victory. When God's side becomes victorious in the future, who will rejoice most? It will certainly be Reverend Moon Why? Because Reverend Moon has not been able to sleep at all because of this fight. When victory is brought forth, the one who rejoices most is the one who suffered most.

We must absolutely not become losers. My prayer, therefore, is really serious. In this sense, your prayer and my prayer are different. With the destiny of the entire world at stake, how can we think of our own situation? The Unification Church must not perish. We must fight courageously in order to make this nation of 30 million people survive. If you stop because of your individual situation, you will end up a loser You cannot do such a thing. Once you have taken God's responsibility, of course, you may have to walk a miserable path and you may be disappointed, but you cannot stop or retreat. If we cannot accomplish this, our descendants will have to do it. We have to have this kind of determination. This kind of thought is the most fearful. Anyway, we must go forward and stop OUI enemy. We must be ready to die. When I started this path, I was ready to die. I am sorry that during my life I did not have any military experience. But I believe that I am a man of courage who is always ready to sacrifice his life for the sake of goodness, and I am always ready to go to the front line.

Who made the Unification Church? Who created the fortune and destiny of the Unification Church? Did you? Did history? It's not you; history did it. We must clearly know that we can work only because of the foundation laid by the great saints of the past who sacrificed themselves, shedding blood for thousands of years. We must take responsibility for history. That is the path of the Unification Church.

We must become the subject of history, or symbols of history. If we are to solve these difficult problems, we must become co-workers and fight. We cannot do that by sitting inside a room. Those who ruin the beautiful hope of history by sitting around will be left behind forever. Let's not become those who let this happen. When we see the Unification Church from an historical standpoint, we realize that this kind of phenomenon never happened in the past, and it will never happen in the future. So far what has human history sought? It has sought to meet with the True Parents.

Because mankind did not have True Parents, it had to walk the path of misery throughout history. The Christian idea of the Messiah needs nothing else to be fulfilled but the True Parents. Even other religions, all kinds of religions, have been seeking the True Parents.

### ***Christianity actually awaits True Parents***

In the Unification Church, I am called Father. In communist North Korea, Satan is trying to do the same thing. There, Kim Il Sung is called Father now, but there cannot be two Fathers. South Korea is so precious because True Parents came there, but then who will

choose the True Parents? The people should. There cannot be two pairs of True Parents. There is only one true set of True Parents. The one and only True Parents of mankind are the hope of history and starting point of the new history. It is eternal life and love. Therefore, you must know every detail of the hearts of True Parents and unite with them.

What kind of attitude do the True Parents have to take toward the children? Because the children are good children, selected from the evil world, the parents should meet them with God's infinite love. The True Parents' attitude toward the children should be different from that of the parents in this world toward their children. There should also exist a basic attitude that children should have toward the True Parents whom they serve. You should become the champions of filial piety as representative children selected from all the nations and from your own nation. If you try to escape this responsibility, then it will be remembered with sorrow by all generations to come. But if there emerge children of filial piety who are ready to serve True Parents, and if they unite with each other, then they will never perish.

The people who have this quality of heart are you. Unfortunately, you people cannot just do whatever you want, or say whatever you like. At this time, that kind of freedom is not allowed. I, myself, the head of the Unification Church, am not allowed to say anything I want: When I pray I say, "Heavenly Father," and thereafter I cannot say anything. And in that position I stay overnight. I become so sorrowful that I cannot face Heavenly Father, and I cannot pray. This is because I am so sorry for Him, but you all have very independent thinking. Some of you are proud of yourselves, and many of you are trying to promote yourselves, but that is no good. A child of real filial piety would not say anything. He would just be silent, doing his own portion of responsibility and raising his face in front of the True Parents. Otherwise you could not be a child of filial piety.

In the Unification Church we are trying to be this way. The world regards us as heretical now, but the day will come when people won't be able to say anything critical of our church. On that day the Unification Church will be raised up. Therefore, you have to be serious, day by day. You have to regard your daily life as precious. You should be earnest, and you should walk proudly, step by step. In the process of becoming a child of filial piety, you might even become crippled. But that kind of man will shine in the future like the sun. That kind of man will become a focal point. In order to obtain this kind of glory, you must walk without saying anything, and while being silent you must not excuse yourself.

When you are told to climb, you should climb. When you are told to go down, you should go down. We Unification Church members must not make excuses. If your standard is very clear, then you don't have to make any excuse. When you all become like that, then the Unification Church will absolutely not perish. The present situation of our country is very urgent. Christianity already predicted the coming of this situation 2,000 years ago. Then who will be responsible for this nation? The Unification Church and its members. Suppose that we have to repair the clothes of a destroyed country. Then I am the needle and you are the string. Unless the string is attached to the needle, the clothes cannot be repaired. The needle alone cannot work. Although the needle is important, nevertheless,

the string is also important. You have to clearly understand this. You and I should have the relationship of the string and needle and repair the clothes of the destroyed country and the world.

If this nation perishes, there will be no place for the Unification Church to go. In this sense as well, we have to protect this nation. We must not be fearful of communism. We must courageously practice what we have already been determined to do. We have nothing; we are naked. But we can surpass communism when we Unification members do things that even the nation cannot do. Then heaven will protect us. Here lies the key to victory or defeat. We must become soldiers in order to see victory. We must not become losers who taste sorrow. From this angle we have to analyze and criticize ourselves, and now we have to be ready to overcome difficulties for the sake of victory. When you always worry about the nation, you cannot help but become sorrowful people.

If you worry about the nation and world from the bottom of your heart, then you must love the Republic of Korea and the world more than you love me. If you are that way, you will never perish.

You must not become a person who cannot accomplish his own responsibility. Therefore, in order to accomplish our portion of responsibility, we must double our efforts. We must not perish. We cannot perish. We must overcome all the various difficulties we face today. Everything should be mobilized to save the world. Of course, money might be needed and there might be a time when materials are necessary. Nevertheless, we have to march forward courageously. Wherever I may go, I will pray for you all. Therefore, please overcome the difficulties of the present moment.

## **Chapter 6**

### **Defense of the Unified Front**

#### **January 1, 1972 -- Washington, D.C.**

This year's motto is: "Defense of the Unified Front." I feel honored to come to the United States and welcome the New Year and God's Day.

Last year, the motto was "The Security of the Foundation of Unification." We worked hard for one year with this motto, and we have accomplished many things and received much blessing from God.

The democratic world is currently facing a very critical time. We know very well that it is threatened by communism. Not only the United States, but all of the democratic world -- Asia, Western Europe, all nations, organizations and churches -- are threatened by this ideology.

The free world is standing on the front line in order to carry out its external responsibility to defeat communism: However, if it becomes threatened and cannot fulfill its mission, those who bear the internal mission will have to fulfill the external one as well. In the democratic world, among the many religions, Christianity must be the choice to fulfill this internal mission.

But if we ask whether present-day Christians have a thought system capable of overcoming the communist system, and are devoting themselves fully to help society and world, the answer is disappointing. If established Christianity cannot fulfill this mission, then another religious movement must rise up which can. This is, of course, the Unification movement. We have a responsibility to shield Christianity and all religions from the threat of communism.

So far, the Unification Church has been developing foundations in order to help Christianity and the democratic world cope with the communist world. Looking at the present situation from God's point of view, this unified front is clearly the final front-line force upon which God can rely, on the world level. Therefore, we have to defend this unified front not just for the sake of any one church but in order to take responsibility for saving all of Christianity, religion, and the entire democratic world. This is why our motto this year is "Defense of the Unified Front."

### ***God's will is our priority***

Externally speaking, our mission is for the world. We also have an internal providential world-level mission. The Principle does not allow us to accomplish just one part of the whole; achieving the internal victory is not enough; we must complete the external victory as well.

Then, which is more important -- internal things or external things? We should attach more importance to the internal things, since internal issues are for the sake of God, while external issues are for the sake of man. God's will takes priority.

God's will is for progress to begin with an individual who becomes one with God, and continue with a family who unites internally with that individual. It continues with a clan that is one internally with the family, a tribe that is one with the clan, and eventually a nation that is one with the tribe or race.

In all past ages, the goal of the dispensation has been to find the completely God-centered nation. Someone who can fulfill his total responsibility would also be capable of mobilizing a nation. Hence, for 4,000 biblical years God prepared for a truly responsible person who could become one with Him internally, and then take responsibility for a family, clan, tribe and nation. Jesus Christ came as the central person who could take on this responsibility on the foundation of God's hard work throughout the 4,000 years. However, the nation of Israel did not believe in Jesus and had him killed. Jesus passed away without creating an earthly victorious foundation on the individual, family, clan, tribal or national levels. The nation of Israel was left without any way to become one with God internally. Only those who believed in Jesus could approach God's heart. So, the history of restoration was prolonged for another 2,000 years.

Today the Unification Church is the most internal movement within the sphere of Christianity, which in turn is the innermost sphere among the many external spheres of the democratic world. Now God's will is to consummate this 2,000-year providence, centering

upon the sphere of the Unification Church. Therefore, we need to consider what the problem was 2,000 years ago.

### ***Jesus lacked protection***

At that time, Jesus was not protected on the individual level as God had willed. Therefore, he could not establish the earthly foundation on the individual level. Furthermore, their clans did not protect Joseph's family and Zechariah's family, which were supposed to have stood up with Jesus, and their tribes did not protect the clans.

We can understand that we cannot fulfill God's will until we resurrect the foundation lost when Jesus was not protected by family, clan, tribe, race and nation. Today, we must protect the Lord of the Second Advent on the individual level with our families, our families must be protected by our clans, and our clans must be protected by our whole movement, representing our tribe or race. Without strengthening these foundations, we cannot fulfill God's will.

So we must create the individual foundation to which heaven can give its official approval. Externally then, we must shield that individual by creating a family foundation, shield the family with a clan foundation, shield the clan with a racial or tribal foundation, and shield the race with a national foundation. We have been fighting steadfastly so far in order to attain all of these levels. Our goal is to form new clans centering upon the new internal relationships, and we are forming a new race that is marching toward a new nation.

Each of you stands on the borderline between God and Satan and must shield those who are standing on God's side by gaining decisive victories over Satan's worst attacks. For example, you should stand in a worse position than Peter, James or John and maintain the authority by which you can defeat Satan. Otherwise, God cannot protect you.

In the time of Jesus, Joseph's and Zechariah's families were in a position to fight the satanic world and gain the victory, thus forming a shield for Jesus' family. However, they did not do so. Jesus could not create his own family and instead went to the cross. We all know this very well. Therefore, in your own family, you must create the foundation to protect the family of the Lord.

The lower or smaller position needs to be saved by the next higher position. In order to protect Jesus' clan, the families around him had to gain a victory in the racial or tribal sphere, and stand on that victorious foundation. Therefore, Jesus' family could have been saved or shielded by Jesus' relatives or clan, the clan by the race or tribe, and the tribe by the nation.

### ***You must shield me***

Up until now, no one in the established churches or in the democratic world has ever thought about such things. Therefore, you who know these things now have the responsibility to create these foundations. You have been gathered here not for the sake

of your own salvation or your place in the Heavenly Kingdom, but in order to protect the Lord individually. This is God's desire.

In the providence of restoration, Cain and Abel must become one, not only on the individual level but on the family level, too. Each of their families must be connected to one another and become like boards in a fence, joined together to protect something precious.

Likewise the Unification Church must shield the families of the church, and these Unification families must shield all families, becoming perfectly unified.- Then we will be beyond the reach of Satan's accusation and will have the foundation upon which God can make a new plan-and give us a new source of power and motivation.

The nation of Israel did not protect Jesus. When a nation takes responsibility to shield us, as Unification clans, that nation can be restored as the new Israel.

Why did we choose the motto "Defense of the Unified Front" for 1972? It is because this is a year of overcoming. Until now my history has been a struggle in order to protect you, your family, your clan, your tribe and your nation. But it should not continue this way forever. So far, I have been working on the clan and national levels. From now on, however, you must shield me in order to do God's will. You must take on a bigger responsibility and work on the world level.

So far you have just been following me. Now, that is not enough. You can continue to follow, but I can only take my proper position when you take a position of active service. Until now, I have not had my proper position as an individual. My family is in the same situation. If my family can take their proper position, then blessed families can take their proper respective positions. After that, a blessed clan can take its proper position. If the foundation is enlarged enough to establish one nation, other nations in the world will be restored in a short time. So you as individuals face a challenge. Can you inherit my mission and fulfill its responsibility?

### ***Protecting our church***

I have been receiving persecution from the nation. However, you must determine to receive persecution from even the world. If you do so, the nation can stand within the sphere of that protection. If I have any problem and receive persecution, you have the responsibility to defend and shield me.

When there is a religious body which can shield the entire Unification Church membership externally, the Unification Church will be able to stand properly. If a nation can shield this religious body surrounding the Unification Church, this religious body as well will be in a position to reach perfection. If other nations take responsibility to shield the nation which shields the religious body, those nations can stand on a secure basis. Then the restoration of the world can be accomplished in a short time.

If God's center is protected on the individual, family, clan, racial, and national levels -- all in one nation -- then there will be no big problems.

When Cain and Abel on each level unite, restoration will be accomplished. This means that Cain and Abel on the individual level, Cain and Abel on the family level, Cain and Abel on the clan level, Cain and Abel on the racial level, Cain and Abel on the national level all must become united upon the one center.

### ***Enlarging our foundation***

However, what is the situation of the Unification Church? We have received opposition from nations, from Christian churches, from families, from everyone. The blessed families and blessed clans are actively supporting me at the center. By doing so, we have been growing gradually. Now in Korea, the Unification Church is the Abel church-and the established churches collectively are the Cain church. We are beginning to negotiate with them and are also entering a stage to negotiate with the nation.

It is possible that established churches will not believe us. Therefore, we are forming a union church, which is an intermediate stage. This organization was made possible by the cooperation among Korea, Japan and Taiwan. It must become one with the established churches, creating an Abel sphere centered upon the nation.

After this year, I must initiate an encircling, protective operation in the United States to save Korean Christianity. Since Korea is directly influenced by the United States, if the American people follow us to a certain extent within the United States, there is a good possibility that Korea will change favorably. I can see a direct possibility for it to happen. However, it is possible that American churches may not respond to us. So, I am going to create a group on the worldwide level.

The dispensation does not advance by keeping silent and sitting on chairs. When the time is right we must create a defense line and deal with Satan. Development can be accomplished by making bridges, so we need to enlarge our foundation for protecting ourselves and marching forward. Otherwise, the dispensation of restoration cannot advance.

We cannot perish. We must accomplish that which Jesus left uncompleted.

You would be happy if I came to the United States and worked with you hand in hand. But I cannot do that because we must enlarge our foundation, step by step. We must create an individual foundation, family foundation, clan foundation, tribal foundation and national foundation. Then, upon this basis, we can create a world foundation. Therefore, I cannot come to the United States until we create a national foundation.

If I stay here in the United States and Korea is totally destroyed, what will happen? Please understand that up until now, I had to focus only on Korean problems.

You are staying in the United States, but you are not only members of the Unification Church of America; you are also part of a larger clan. From the dispensational point of view, when you work for the restoration of one nation, you must do your very best to protect it.

You understand that you had to create evangelical work in all 50 states and to restore the United States and the world as soon as possible. In order to restore the world we must restore the nation. This is the Principle.

Whoever tries to restore the world must inevitably go through this course. The basis of the world is the nation; unless you grasp the very center -- the nation -- you will be destroyed by the world. So, what do we have to do? In order to restore the world through 50 states, we must bring the result of victory through our foundation to the national level of restoration, and we must create the path upon which we can go to the world. This is very important.

### ***Cain protects Abel***

The core position is a trinity centered upon my family. The family needs a clan centered on it, but one family is not sufficient by itself. Both an Abel family and a Cain family are necessary. When they become one, they can restore a clan. Cain's family cannot restore its clan alone. Restoration requires Cain and Abel becoming one: Then it can proceed to the clan, racial, and national levels. We must become one and must march forward together for our mutual protection.

So we create our foundation for our protection. That means we must become one, completely one. For example, the relationship between Abel and Cain is like that between bone and flesh. The bone should not be hit directly. Jesus' body was beaten, but his bones were not broken. If his bones had been broken, everything would have been shattered.

We must totally unite in order to create a world-level foundation within 20 years; we need a World Mission Department for the world. We need to restore our own nation so we can save the world. I want you to clearly understand that the goal of all our activities is unity. We are not trying to save a country, Korea. We are trying to restore God's Kingdom. Korea is the nation where I was born, but it is not my own country. We are still fighting.

### ***Assume the parent's responsibility***

So far I have been fighting alone within the context of the family. But it is now the completion stage, the age of the children attending the parents. The parents have been working untiringly, and your protection is so precious to them. You cannot protect your parents unless you take over the things which they are doing, and assume their responsibility. This same principle applies in the Unification Church. Cain's family exists for the sake of Abel's family, Cain's clan for Abel's clan, Cain's race for Abel's race, and Cain's nation for Abel's nation.

Only this type of thinking can create a protective sphere. When difficulties arise, you must take total responsibility for them. The nation of Israel perished after Jesus' death because their thinking was opposite to his. They expected a Messiah to solve everything for them when he came, even if they themselves did nothing.

For example, it is a big mistake if our blessed families think that they can go somewhere and live a good life. You received the Blessing to shield Abel's position, namely, my family. Families in America should not accuse Korean families. You must feel responsible to stand on one line with them and work with them. That way you can become one with the Korean families. Don't isolate yourselves from each other, doing as you please. Some day we will build apartment complexes where families from 120 nations will live together and learn a cooperative way of life.

From now on, blessed families must become one. The 1972 motto, "Defense of the Unified Front," indicates that this is the historical perspective of our church.

In Korea, we must build houses and churches, and an international training center. I have vast plans, to be carried out in Korea, but I am thinking of bringing these plans to the United States, and carrying them out here, even though they were originally meant for Korea. I am planning also to found a theological seminary.

These plans will cost money. If we send money over there, are you confident that you will not become poor? When such a need arises, we must totally unite and determine to fulfill what is needed several times over by our own hands.

### ***Follow a straight course***

Restoration must maintain a straight course. If a plant grows straight, then the branches will be balanced in all directions. If the stem is curved, everything becomes unbalanced. Concentrate on how to grow straight. I am most concerned about this point. There is no use for branches unless they grow straight. One thing I don't worry about is whether you have the necessary materials to develop a proper standard and direction.

In conclusion, "Defense of the Unified Front" means this: When people on the outside take responsibility to stabilize the inside, the inside is secure. Therefore, all members in the entire nation must become one and work together for the sake of the center. In this way, the Heavenly Kingdom is established as this sphere expands from the individual on the world level, to the clan on the world level, and then to the race on the world level.

It is impossible to create this kind of ideal Heavenly Kingdom unless we create both the fundamental, philosophical foundation and the living foundation upon which we can defend this unified front. Realizing that you will have to do this kind of mission from 1972 on, I set this year's motto as "Defense of the Unified Front."

## **Chapter 7**

### **The Way of Restoration**

**April 1972--Paris, France**

Through the fall, we have inherited the blood lineage of Satan. If there had been no fall, Adam and Eve, as our first parents, would have been sinless children of God, but they became Satan's children through the fall. Originally dominion should have come only from God, and God alone should be our Lord. However, because man and Satan had an illicit relationship, Satan became illicit lord over man. As the Principle tells us, love has controlling power. Even though it was through illicit love, Satan came to have power or authority through which he could claim ownership of man: Yet according to the principle of creation, God is still the original Lord. Therefore, both God and Satan claim their ownership of man.

However, it is physically impossible to cut Adam into two and divide him between God and Satan. Therefore, God had to set up a certain rule in accordance with the Principle in order to separate man into two. God is the internal being and creation is the external being, and they are in the relationship of subject and object. From this standpoint God could separate fallen Adam and Eve into two through the two children who were born from them. He set up the second son, Abel, in the internal position, representing sinless Adam. Symbolically, Abel is the fruit of the second illicit love, between Adam and Eve, in the course of the fall; being close to the relatively less evil relationship between Adam and Eve than to the purely unprincipled relationship between Eve and the archangel and holding fewer evil elements than did Cain, Abel could be taken to God's side.

On the other hand, God found Cain in the external position, representing Satan. Symbolically, Cain is the fruit of the first illicit love between Eve and the archangel in the course of the fall, and inherits the satanic elements within that love.

### ***The original order of love***

The original order of love begins with God, goes to Adam, and then to the archangel. For this order to be restored, love must flow first from God to Abel representing Adam, and from Abel to Cain representing the archangel. God could restore His lost Principle by accomplishing this formula first. Actually the blood lineage was crossed by the act of the fall. In other words, the human race came to be in Satan's blood lineage instead of God's. Therefore, restoration must be done by tracing back to the origin.

For this purpose, the second son, Abel, was to restore the birthright from the first son, who could hold the birthright illicitly in Satan's unprincipled dominion.

Cain had to go down to the position of the second son, and Abel had to go up to the position of the first son where he could inherit the birthright. However, Cain killed Abel. This act was a repetition of the act of the fall at the time of Adam and Eve. Contrary to the intended course of restoration, it signified again that the archangel stood in the position to dominate Adam.

Cain and Abel received evil elements when they were within Eve's womb. If God were to use two brothers who were very different in age, their distance from each other would be too far; so God sought closer brothers. In other words, God had to carry out this dispensation of restoration on a level closer to the cause. The best way would be to bring the lives of Cain and Abel back into the mother's womb, but that is physically impossible. So, God's dispensation came to appear through twin brothers-Esau and Jacob. Jacob had to be restored to the position of elder brother, while Esau had to go down to the position of younger brother. It is the same principle that was applied in the case of Cain and Abel.

The mother of these twin brothers was Rebecca. While she was pregnant, the two children struggled with each other in her womb. When she inquired of the Lord about this, the Lord replied,

'Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples, born of you, shall be divided; the one shall be stronger than the other, the older shall serve the younger' (Gen. 25:23)

***This is what God Himself spoke.***

Once Jacob had set conditions whereby he could avoid accusation, he could buy the birthright from Esau with lentil stew. Even though Jacob took the birthright from Esau, Satan could not accuse him. Thus, the birthright was restored to God's side. The blessing from their father, Isaac, was also given to Jacob. However, Esau became so angry that he tried to kill Jacob, just as Cain had killed Abel. For this reason, Jacob had to escape to the land of Haran for 21 years.

In the Garden of Eden, Eve initiated the act of the fall, becoming the mother of Adam who completed it. Mother and son cooperated with each other to bring about the fall of man. Therefore, in restoration, this process must be reversed. At the time of Jacob, therefore, the mother Rebecca and her second son Jacob cooperated with each other for the accomplishment of God's will.

Also, during the process of the fall, Eve lied to her father, God, and to her brother, Adam. Therefore, in restoration Rebecca lied to her husband, Isaac, and to the first son, Esau, in order to allow Jacob to gain the blessing. Isaac was in God's position, and his son Esau was in Cain's position. In this way a foundation was laid.

However, substantial restoration had not been accomplished yet. By that time Jacob's mother had already fulfilled her mission, and next it was Jacob's turn. Jacob's mission was first to restore the position of Adam, which had been invaded by the archangel, and then to restore the position of Abel, who had been killed by Cain.

***Struggle at the ford of Jabbok***

To understand the mission of Jacob in restoring Adam, it is important to understand how Adam was lost. By whom was Adam dominated? He was dominated by the angel. Therefore, in order to restore that position, Jacob had to fight with an angel. This is what happened at the ford of Jabbok. Jacob fought with the angel all night. As a result, the angel admitted Jacob's victory and blessed him. Thus, the original positions of Adam and the archangel were restored to their proper order.

Why did the angel strike Jacob's thigh before he blessed him? The fall of man was brought about through the misuse of the lower parts. The law of indemnity was fulfilled by striking the part that had become sinful. It was carried out by the angel according to the law of the Old Testament: "An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth." Because Jacob endured, the angel could bless him.

When Jacob won over the angel, he gained the internal victory and Adam's position could be restored. With this condition Jacob was then in the position to restore Abel's position. After 21 years Jacob returned from Haran and gave all his property and wealth as a gift to his brother Esau in order to soften his heart. Jacob asked only for a blessing from his elder brother, and Esau accepted and welcomed him.

Thus, Esau went down to the position of younger brother, and Jacob went up to the position of elder brother. Later, when Jacob blessed his grandchildren, the children of Joseph, he crossed his hands and put his left hand--signifying the archangel's position and blessing--on the first son, Manasseh, and his right hand--signifying- God's position and blessing--on the second son, Ephraim. Jacob could do so because he had taken the position of the elder brother on the side of God.

According to the Bible, Jacob's character seems to be very cunning. Many people wonder why God used and even gave His grace and blessing to such a cunning man. The Principle gives the answer: in this way, Jacob stood in the position where he fulfilled his mission given by God. These events took place thousands of years ago, but until the Principle was revealed no one had ever known their true meaning.

Suppose God's dispensation had ended with Jacob. If that had been the case, only people at or above the age of Jacob at the time of his victory could be restored by this condition, but people under that age, from the newly born to the middle aged, could not have been. Therefore, a more thoroughgoing dispensation had to begin, centering on the mother's womb itself.

Thus, God's third dispensation again began within the mother's womb. The first mother, Eve, fell, abandoning God the Father through disbelief, and instead she welcomed Satan as her father and put him in the position of God. Therefore, Tamar, who had to restore the position of Eve, had to demonstrate absolute faith in God. In a reverse way, Tamar had to walk with God the Father. She had to forget about her pride and honor, even being ready to give her life. Originally, Eve could not become one with her Father. Judah was Tamar's father-in-law, having the role of father. In Chapter 38 of Genesis it is recorded that Judah had three sons and Tamar was the wife of his first son. However, the first son died, and according to the custom of levirate marriage in Judea, she had to have a child through the second son. But the second son also died, and the third son was withheld as too young. Tamar-intuited how important it was to inherit the blood lineage restored by God, so she threw away her pride and risked her life to become pregnant by Judah, her father-in-law. She pretended to be a prostitute sitting by the side of the road where her father-in-law was passing, and tempted him into a relationship. Judah did not realize that this prostitute was his daughter-in-law. But Tamar was wise, and she requested three articles--Judah's seal, his staff and a cord--as a pledge for payment, which she could use later as proof. Why did she have to do so? Because, according to the Jewish law at that time, a widow who became pregnant without having-a husband could be stoned to death.

After some months, Tamar's pregnancy became noticeable. Rumor spread and it reached Judah's ears as well. Judah got very angry and took his daughter-in-law to be burned to death. At this critical moment, Tamar presented the articles of proof to the people and Judah realized that her motivation to continue God's lineage was righteous, so he released her. Tamar risked her life in order to fulfill her mission. She had no purpose other than to fulfill God's will. In this way, Tamar set the condition to restore fallen Eve's position by reversing the process of Eve's fall. For thousands of years up until now, no one has ever known the secret of this story except God. Yet now, you can understand this hidden mystery clearly.

### ***The struggle within the womb***

Like Rebecca, Tamar became pregnant with twins who fought within her womb. When Tamar prayed, the Lord must have appeared and said the same thing he had said to Rebecca, "Two nations are in your womb, and two people within you will be separated; one people will be stronger than the other, and the elder will serve the younger For 2,000 biblical years God had been waiting for that very moment. The time of birth came and the first son, Zerah, pushed out his hand. The midwife tied a scarlet thread around his wrist. This was a symbolical prediction that in the time of the Last Days communism, a satanic ideology, represented by the-color red, would appear first before God's kingdom is established. After 7,000 biblical years--6,000 years of restoration history plus the millennium, the time of completion--communism will fall in its 70th year. Here is the meaning of the year 1978. Communism, begun in 1917, could maintain itself approximately 60 years and reach its peak. So 1978 is the border line and afterward communism will decline; in the 70th year it will be

altogether ruined. This is true. Therefore, now is the time for people who are studying communism to abandon it.

Finally, during the struggle in Tamar's womb, the second son, Perez, pushed Zerah back and came out first. This reversal of the brothers' positions took place in the mother's womb. At this time the principle that Jesus would be born from the lineage of Judah was established. From this time Cain was overcome and Abel was exalted, and restoration history could progress to increasingly larger spheres, from family to clan, from clan to race, from race to nation. However, the satanic world had already expanded in parallel fashion--from the family level to the clan and racial levels, and finally to the national level. Satan had already formed one nation, but God had to wait 2,000 years before the chosen people of Israel could be formed into one nation. Thus, both God's and Satan's camps advanced to the national level, but now God's nation had to become superior to Satan's nation. However, the people of Israel had made many mistakes in the course of history from the family level to the levels of clan, race and nation.

John the Baptist came with the mission to restore all the failures made by the people of Israel, so that the Messiah could come on a perfected foundation. The chosen people of Israel who became one with John the Baptist became a plus (+) force as Abel, and Jesus came as Messiah upon this foundation. John the Baptist was in Cain's position relative to Jesus in Abel's position. Once the people of Israel became completely one with Jesus Christ himself, he could have formed an absolute plus (+) Then the people would stand in the position of absolute minus (-), and together with Jesus would have become one indestructible body.

God's dispensation reaches its peak of completion at the point of True Parents, who are the absolute plus (+) and absolute minus (-). Jesus was crucified, so that he was unable to become a True Parent in his physical body. Although God's blood lineage had been established with Jesus, the position of True Parents in spirit and in flesh could not emerge. The work of Christianity is limited to the spiritual realm alone; it brought only spiritual salvation. Physical salvation, namely the salvation of the physical life, has not been realized.

Up until today, Christianity had only a spiritual father and a spiritual mother. Therefore, True Parents had to come on earth, and we must walk the course of physical, as well as spiritual, rebirth through them. Conditionally, or symbolically, we must re-enter the mother's womb in order to be born anew. In Christianity up until today, the Holy Spirit has been taking the role of mother. We are born again on the spiritual level through the mother, the Holy Spirit, and the father's spirit, Jesus' spirit.

Of course, we were born from our mother's womb. However, even beyond the womb, our life originated from our father's seed. Before the fall, the life of a son or daughter would certainly have started from within Adam's body, as one seed. The seed which becomes a son or a daughter exists within the father's body itself. By tracing back to mother's womb, the blood lineage could be changed and restored, but we have not reached father yet. Therefore, up until today, Christians have been longing to go again to their Father, the Lord of the Second Coming, who is the origin of new life.

### ***Reborn in both spirit and flesh***

We cannot be satisfied with spiritual rebirth only. We must be reborn both in spirit and in flesh. In order to restart in spirit and in flesh, we must go back to the position of the seed. To accomplish this dispensation, Jesus promised that a bride and a bridegroom would appear who could become True Parents, so that we could become the seed sown again through them, to be born again as a new life in this world. From what I have said, you will naturally understand whether or not it is necessary for the Lord of the Second Coming to come on earth as Messiah.

At the time of Jesus, this physical world was not restored, yet it has expanded up to the world level. Accordingly, in the Last Days, the whole world is divided into two, one side representing Satan and the other God; nothing other than these two camps exists. There is confusion and chaos. The Messiah on earth must inherit the foundation from Christians. Christians have not been born completely yet; therefore, we can say that they are just like a seed in Jesus' body. They have only spiritual elements of life. Therefore, a father must appear on earth and create a substantial, physical foundation.

For this reason, everybody has a seven-year course in which he or she has to unite with True Father before receiving Mother. You must go back to the position of a seed in the body of unfallen, perfected Adam who was not yet married. You must go back to the source itself. This seed is the genuine one. A seed that starts from Adam's body must be sown in the womb of restored Eve. This very work is being done by the Unification Church.

Jesus was rejected by the nation of Israel. Therefore, the very difficult task of restoring the position of Jesus was left for the Lord of the Second Coming. We have already been born with flesh and have grown up, so we cannot literally go back to the position of a seed. Therefore, we must set conditions for rebirth by uniting with the True Children, who were born from True Parents. The Principle teaches that both Cain and Abel can be restored when Cain completely follows Abel. We are in the position of Cain and must unite with the sinless True Children, who are in Abel position. By uniting with them, we can become restored children and receive the same grace. Accordingly, when sinless children are born from True Parents, we should offer food and things of creation in order to set the condition by which True Parents can share the same elements with us. In this way we must pass through the course where we participate in the position of the True Children.

Through whom are you going to set conditions to become one with True Children and become newly born? Father alone is not enough. You must go through both of the True Parents. However important Father may be, you must also pass through True Mother and unite with the True Children. True Parents have both male and female children. A woman should become one with True Father, True Mother, and their female children; a man should become one with True Parents and their male children.

Because a woman fell first, the restoration of woman is done first. Afterward, the restoration of man is completed. Who is actually in the position of the first restored woman? The first female child born from True Parents is in that position. The first male child is the second child of True Parents. This is only an outline and a very brief explanation; there are very deep and complicated processes behind it.

### ***The birth of sinless children***

The heavenly four position foundation was restored for the first time in history by the birth of sinless true children. Nothing in the satanic world can touch this foundation. Since a chosen nation has not yet been restored, we must start from the heavenly four position foundation, and develop from this point to the clan, racial, and national levels. The central core of this process of development is the heavenly family in the form of the four position foundation. The nation that will be established on the foundation of the true family will be the strongest and most invincible. This is the nation that Judaism could not gain 2,000 years ago.

This nation will become the center of the external world by overcoming all satanic sovereignties. Once one heavenly nation is restored, it will expand to two, then three, four, and finally it will cover the entire world. People who belong to those heavenly nations will naturally restore everything together. In order to restore this unified sovereignty of God, we must pass through an incredible course. Unless we restore one national sovereignty, however much restoration work we may have

done, it is possible that our earthly foundation might be destroyed by a satanic head of government of our nation. Therefore, to restore the sovereignty of one nation is a most urgent task. For this purpose we must absolutely become one with True Parents, and we must become completely one with members of the Unification Church in Korea, Japan, and all over the world. Through this course, you will realize how difficult the path of restoration has been. Jesus said to Nicodemus, ". . . Unless one is born anew, he cannot enter the Kingdom of God." Nicodemus replied, "How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?" Then Jesus asked, "Are you a teacher of Israel, and yet you do not understand this?" At that time Jesus was talking about this very principle.

The words 'resurrection' and 'rebirth' in Christianity both actually refer to this same principle. Through the womb of a mother the stained blood lineage was restored to the heavenly blood lineage. However, it is only through True Father's body that we can ultimately be recreated and reborn fundamentally as a pure new life. From that point of new creation on, then, our salvation is perfected by redemption of both spirit and flesh. This way, our children will be able to attain heaven without going through the process of salvation.

You must understand how difficult the course of restoration is. I have not only found out the truth, but have had to accomplish all the truth in substance. Now I am teaching it to you for nothing. You are like college students who receive diplomas without doing anything. Therefore, you must understand what a precious, valuable position you have.

This year's motto for the Unification Church is "The Defense of the Unified Front." This means that we must defend and protect this heavenly foundation. Wherever you are, you must become one with the members of the Unification Church in Korea, and go forward to defend the unified front there. Looking at the situation of the entire world, Korea is a country where the strongest foundation is laid in our activities. If we had to start a new dispensation in some other country, we would have to repeat the entire course once again from the very beginning. The period until 1974, when the second seven-year course ends, is a period corresponding to Jacob's second seven-year course. After this period we will create the foundation of the world level, and we will have enough economic power for the restoration of the Heavenly Kingdom. Once one nation is restored, all nations can be restored.

## **Chapter 8**

### **True Parents and Ourselves**

#### **May 7, 1972--Tokyo, Japan**

From God's original ideal of creation, our ancestors, Adam and Eve, were supposed to inherit the blood lineage of goodness through their unity with God, and hand it down to all generations. However, we have learned from the Principle that an unexpected result came about due to the fall of man. We now belong to the satanic world and are completely separated from the lineage of God.

We were supposed to be born from parents of goodness but instead our first parents were parents of evil. We have therefore established a family, clan, society, nation and world centered upon evil. This has to be restored and indemnified. God cannot restore everything at once; restoration has to be dealt with in stages. Since evil multiplied through history stage by stage, it has to be dealt with in stages in the process of restoring it.

Going through the age of servant, the age of adopted son, the age of true son and the age of the True Parents, God's providence has been to indemnify each stage from the evil side to the side of God or goodness. God has founded numerous religions, springing from the many different racial and cultural backgrounds of mankind, and has been working through these religions with the goal of restoring the ideal world.

As an analogy of God's work to create the ideal world, we can look at the way rivers flow. From the mountains to the valleys, streams and brooks flow in many different directions. Some flow from the west to the east and others from the north to the south. However, they all eventually join into a main river. In the same way, God has established many different and various types of religions which have remained separate from one another before joining in the main current of religion. God has been working behind the history of mankind, inspiring the creation of many religions with many different directions. So too the cultures of the world, with religions at their center, have been developing gradually to support the goal of one main religion.

A great amount of indemnity--based on the indemnity course of Adam's family, as described in the Principle--is required to develop this through the ages.

Cain has always been opposed to someone who is close to God. He is the person who struck down Abel. It has always been Abel's position to be closer to God. The fruits of that relationship have been in existence since the fall and have affected mankind throughout history.

Even your own life is part of that legacy. If you examine your daily life, there are times when you are Abel-like and times when you are Cain-like. Between morning and evening of any given day, or even within one hour, the dynamics of the Cain-Abel relationship are working. All directions--back and front, right and left, up and down--have something to do with the Cain and Abel relationship.

One action is closer to God and another is in opposition to God. When you speak just one word, it could be examined as to whether or not it is from the position of Cain or the position of Abel. You can examine yourself and the words you speak according to this standard. If you are speaking today in a better way than yesterday, then you are standing today as Abel in relationship to yesterday. If you are speaking worse today than yesterday, then today you are standing in the position of Cain. In this kind of situation, God has been trying to guide people to be more Abel-like and to come closer to Him.

At the same time, Satan has been trying to pull people away from God. When we grow closer to God, we come closer to the Abel position and we find ourselves feeling happy. But when we become drawn in Cain's direction by the satanic domain, we feel sadness. Because of this dynamic of the Cain and Abel relationship there has been a constant fluctuation of joy and sadness since the beginning of human history.

Without knowing this point, happiness or sadness in our daily lives is simply a matter of whether we gain or lose some benefit. But ultimately happiness and sadness are determined by the Cain and Abel dynamic. When you move forward towards the position

of goodness, you move one step closer to God. But if you retreat from God, sadness comes into your heart according to the degree of distance you retreat from God.

### ***Individual salvation***

Salvation begins from the individual. One person is the beginning point of the family and families create the society; societies create the nation and nations create the whole world. All those different levels are interconnected. A society is made up of many individuals; the world consists of many nations. In order to liberate humanity from Satan, we have to begin by liberating one person, one individual. The liberation of the family, the nation and the world has to begin with the liberation of individuals.

God has been trying to do this through religion. The purpose of religion is to bring us closer to God and guide us in the direction of God's providence. Then, what is the final purpose of God's providence? People generally think that religion has the purpose of contributing to the welfare of the whole world or the benefit of all people of the world. However, religions tend to think only of their own situation and see everything within the context of their own particular faith. But from God's point of view, even the mission of making the whole world better is the secondary purpose of religion. What is its primary purpose? It is to create the True Parents on the earth. Without True Parents no salvation is possible. Those who are born of fallen parents have to be restored completely through rebirth by the True Parents.

Thus the most serious issue for God is how to bring the True Parents of goodness to the earth.

Looking at the world from this viewpoint, we can see that the fallen world has developed from the first fallen individuals to the family, clan, society, nation and to the world. In order for God to establish that kind of basic foundation, He has to first develop the sphere of servants or angels. Then He has to raise that level of servant up to the level of adopted son. From the adopted son realm, He has to bring it up to the level of the true son.

Even within the realm of the true son, there is the issue of Cain and Abel. Cain and Abel were born of fallen parents and they fought against each other as fallen children. In the era when the true son centered on God is restored, Cain and Abel must no longer struggle. We cannot surpass the fallen world until we establish complete unity between Cain and Abel. According to the Principle, only when we establish the foundation of substance can we go beyond the realm of the fallen world for the first time.

A person might be able to go beyond the fallen world up to the level of the formation or even the growth stage, but he cannot advance further than the growth stage unless he establishes a victorious foundation of substance. Even if he could enter the level of perfection, his lineage would not yet have been cleansed. Since the satanic blood lineage has been inherited and that lineage is not yet cleansed, we need the Messiah. Therefore, it is absolutely necessary for fallen people to establish the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance as the foundation to receive the Messiah. Only through the

Messiah is one able to change his blood lineage and stand in the position of a true child of God.

Since Adam and Eve fell, there was no way for Abel and Cain to be united in a vertical way. At the same time there was no tradition for Adam and Eve to be united in a vertical way, because of their fall. Only Cain and Abel stand in the position to restore the failure of Adam and Eve. All unity was lost at the time of Adam and Eve. Those who want to become the true sons and daughters of God have to establish the vertical unity of parents and children. You cannot reach perfection in the position of adopted son. You have to achieve the position of true son in unity with God.

Every person has to move upward through all these stages to be re-stored. Even though you may achieve the position of children, or even if Cain and Abel achieve unity, there is no way to go all the way vertically to God if there is no foundation of restored, unfallen parents. Therefore, God has been trying throughout history to establish the True Parents. The True Parents will create for the first time the way reach God Himself and for Cain and Abel to be united. In this process of restoration, the change of blood lineage has to take place. No one can establish this kind of thing by himself.

### ***The Blessing***

The fall of man took place at the perfection level of the growth stage. In order to restore the fall, we have to go the reverse way of the fall. Adam and Eve fell through the temptation of love. As you are following the path of restoration, and as you come closer and closer to the perfection level of the growth stage, you will face the temptation of love and you will have to overcome it. The tendency to be tempted by fallen love has been inherited through generations of fallen parents. To overcome this, mankind must be connected to the love centered on God and the True Parents; otherwise we can never overcome the problem of fallen love.

Those who dwell in the realm of the fallen world who have inherited the blood lineage of the fallen parents need to welcome the True Parents in the final stage of restoration and unite with them vertically, in order to overcome the fallen world. This is the teaching of the Principle.

We cannot complete this process individually. It always takes a couple -- a man and a woman--to restore this problem of love. This explains the necessity of the Blessing. The Blessing cannot be performed as we wish; it starts centered on the True Parents, who are the core of the vertical line. As a result of the victorious condition of the unity of Cain and Abel, the True Parents can conduct this Blessing. Only through this process can we completely overcome the fallen world.

No one advances through the stages of restoration by himself. By receiving the Blessing, we go over the perfection level of the growth stage and reach the formation level of the completion stage. From then on, the blessed couple or blessed family needs a seven-year period of time to become perfectly one with God. The three stages of growth--that is, formation, growth, and completion--comprise 21 years. Therefore, the blessed couple has

to go through a seven-year course in the completion stage. No one went through this stage in the past.

Each one of you has to go through a seven-year period, according to the standard of the Principle. Therefore, after you join the Unification Church, you have to go through a seven-year period during which you have to restore everything that was lost due to the fall, as well as inheriting the true parental heart which was lost because of the fall of the first parents. As the consequence of the fall, we lost our legacy of lordship over all created things. Moreover, the body and heart of man were stained and claimed by Satan. All of these things have to be restored through indemnity.

Consequently, centered upon these points--gaining dominion over all things, becoming the substantial body of the truth, and restoring our hearts--we have to go through the period of the completion stage and restore them to God. This is our Principle. The time period of seven years needed to reach the standard of perfection is equivalent to the whole human history of 7,000 biblical years. The 7,000 years are calculated as the 6,000 biblical years of human history plus the 1,000 years of the millennium of the Lord's reign, as described in the Bible. Within this time period of seven years, we have to substantially accomplish the victorious standard by restoring those things we lost. Then we receive the Blessing and after the Blessing, the true standard of the family is begun.

We have to restore all things, we have to restore the substantial self back to its natural, law-abiding state, and we have to restore our hearts. From the horizontal point of view, all material things represent the formation stage, the substantial self represents the growth stage, and the heart represents the stage of perfection or completion. All of the vertical providence must also be fulfilled on the horizontal level.

Furthermore, the level of material things corresponds to the Old Testament era; the level of the substantial self corresponds to the New Testament era; and the level of the heart corresponds to the Completed Testament era. Therefore it is natural that we in the Completed Testament era are speaking about the world of God's heart. All these three have to be united in perfect harmony. During the era of the Old Testament, indemnity was paid through the things of creation. In the New Testament era, indemnity was paid through Jesus, the substantial Son of God. Now the standard of heart has to be established in the Completed Testament age, based upon the indemnity victoriously paid in the former ages. The true standard of the family can be established for the first time on the earth after all these things are restored. That is the level we are expected to have reached at the time of the Blessing.

The blessed families are to have their own physical children, but before that they are supposed to have their children of faith, their spiritual children. Spiritual children represent the embodiment of Jesus in the spiritual world. Your physical children represent the position of Jesus when he was alive and expecting to establish a victorious foundation on the earth. Thus, they also represent Christ of the Second Coming.

At this time, the Christian realm of the spirit world -- called Paradise -- is not united with Christianity on the earth. This situation is almost like Jesus being split into two. We are in the position to bring unity between these two disharmonious realms. We can set up the condition to bring about their unity through the unity between our own physical and spiritual children. Our spiritual children stand in the position of Cain, or the archangel; Abel, in the position of Adam, symbolizes the realm of the physical world, and is represented by our physical children. Unity between our spiritual children and physical children means unity between the spiritual world and the physical world. If your own spiritual children and physical children are not harmoniously united, the realms of the spiritual world and the physical world, particularly the two realms of Christianity, will not be united. Basically, the split between the spiritual world and the physical world came about as a result of the division within the original family. Therefore it has to be restored on the earth, by the unity of the spiritual and the physical children of the blessed families.

### ***Position of parents***

It is only when Cain and Abel are united that the ideal parents can appear. This condition of indemnity can be fulfilled when the children of faith -- both the spiritual children and the physical ones -- become united in perfect harmony. By this condition, we can restore the unity lost between Adam and the archangel before the fall. If such a restoration can be accomplished, God can continually shower His love from His position as parent. If your spiritual children and your physical children are united into perfect oneness on the horizontal plane, you can be restored to the position of true parents, which is the position of the ideal love of God, for the first time.

It has been the path of the Unification Church to successfully indemnify horizontally the vertical historical path. In order to restore a result or consequence, you have to find out the cause that brought about the result and reverse the process. We absolutely need spiritual children. Adam and Eve had three archangels, who were supposed to attend them as their servants all of their lives. Adam and Eve could not become the perfected son and daughter of God without them. Thus, they are required in the restoration through indemnity. From this viewpoint, for men and women alike, three spiritual children are needed, representing three archangels. Those three archangels have to unite with you perfectly.

God first created the angels and archangels and then He created Adam and Eve with the help of the unity of the angels. We have to restore that standard ourselves. Before having physical children, spiritual children have to be born. Physical children are to be born only on the foundation of spiritual children, just as God created the angels first and then created Adam and Eve second. That is the Principle. At the time of Jesus, the nation of Israel and the religion of Judaism were standing in the position of archangels and were supposed to have united with him. If that had been accomplished, all God's desires would have been realized.

The Unification Church finds itself in a situation similar to that of the time of Jesus. When Jesus was killed, everything on the physical plane was lost, and Christianity was born

inheriting only the position of the spiritual archangel, not the physical archangel. One mission of the Lord of the Second Advent is to establish the unity of spirit and body. He has to establish the conditions of indemnity to unite these two spheres.

At the time of Jesus, the position of spiritual archangel was filled by Judaism, while the physical archangel was the nation of Israel. If the archangels had united with Abel, who was Jesus, it would have been a completely different situation. But because Jesus was killed, the spirit world and physical world could not be fully united. Jesus, and all Christians, have been seeking the redemption of both spirit and body. Therefore, they must be connected with the realm of the flesh again.

By going the path of indemnity, we have to restore what has been lost on the earth and unite both the physical and spiritual worlds into one. Only through this process can the realm of Cain, symbolized by the two archangels, be born. At this time, when the Lord comes to the earth and establishes the individual foundation of victory on the earth, a victorious family foundation will be formed. The sphere of victory is not limited to one family, but that family represents world Christianity. If the clans of the Second Coming of Christ are restored, those clans will become clans on the worldwide level. Thus, when the Lord of the Second Advent comes to the earth, if Christianity does not persecute him, it would not be difficult to unite both realms and develop God's providence.

### ***Time of victory***

This is a different age from the time of Jesus. Because of the lack of unity between spirit and body, the purpose of the Second Coming of Christ is to fulfill the course of indemnity to restore that disunity. The Second Coming of Christ has to achieve the victory in spirit world and then the victory can be gained on the earth. When he comes to the earth, he has to bring his victory from the spirit world to be fulfilled on the earth.

This is the same situation as when Jacob wrestled with the angel. He first had to gain the victory over the angel in order to win the victory over Esau, who finally surrendered to Jacob. Jesus subjugated the archangel in order to restore through indemnity the fact that Adam was improperly subjugated by the archangel. Jacob's subjugation of Esau was the restoration of Abel being subjugated by Cain. And Jesus' subjugation over the archangel was done on the earth again to reestablish the condition of Jacob's having subjugated Esau. We have to gain the victory in both the spiritual and physical realms.

If the people of Israel had united with Jesus, they could have inherited both the spiritual and physical foundations of victory. But because of the rejection and death of Jesus Christ, the spiritual realm and physical realm were split. Now the returning Christ, like Jacob, has to win victory in both realms. Established Christianity has opposed the returning Christ. The struggle between the Unification Church and traditional Christianity occurs parallel to the historical course of the spiritual development of Christianity. That same struggle has been the history of the Unification Church. Christianity was born due to Jesus' spiritual victory over Satan while on the earth, and Christianity was superior to any other religion, because of that spiritual victory over Satan. We have gained the spiritual

victory in this new era. Although established Christianity may oppose us, they will soon be in the position of Esau, who finally welcomed Jacob.

We are living in a different time from that of Jesus. The providence was centered on the nation during the time of Jesus, but now it is centered on the world. The Lord of the Second Advent comes on the worldwide level and that is a larger level than the level of Jesus' era. Therefore, unless the world goes against him as one united body, he will easily establish the foundation for the nation.

Jesus sought to achieve the perfection of the individual and the perfection of the family, both spiritually and physically. Next he sought the victory of the clan and nation, both spiritually and physically. After he gained that victory on the national level, he was to start the substantial realm of victory through which Rome would surrender to him. Jesus' purpose was not only to restore the individual and family but also to unite the nation of Israel with the religion of Judaism. On that foundation, he was to overcome the Roman Empire. He came to earth with that purpose.

However, Judaism and the nation of Israel did not unite with him and he had to go the way of the cross; complete restoration could occur only at a later time. We ourselves have to restore the standard that was not achieved by the people at the time of Jesus. Although we may be able to gain victory spiritually on the worldwide level, the earthly foundation that Jesus did not establish must be realized by us; otherwise we cannot indemnify what Jesus did not do in the past. Jesus came in the position of parent and he came to stand on earth as the victorious parent of the world. Since he did not complete that role, this must be indemnified at the time of the Second Advent and the victory must be gained. Otherwise we won't be able to go beyond the victory of Jesus. That is what the Unification Church has been trying to do.

Centered upon the True Parents, we have gained the victory spiritually but we have been opposed by established Christianity; thus the failure has not been indemnified. Jesus went beyond Judaism and established the new teaching we call Christianity. Although it was only a spiritual victory, he started Christianity nevertheless. In the same sense, if established Christianity opposes the Unification Church, we have to recreate the foundation of Christianity, according to the new direction. Unless we do that, we won't be able to make the substantial foundation for the restoration by indemnity.

That is what the worldwide Unification Church and I have been doing until now. Unless we have the foundation for the clan, the family cannot be at ease; unless the clan surrounds the family with its protection, the family cannot dwell in peace.

### ***Realm of freedom from Satan***

Only when Abel's family is within the protection of the victorious clan can it rest at peace for the first time. Satan cannot invade that family. Abel's family should not be invaded by Satan because it is in the position of the perfected Adam and Eve. Cain, who is in the position of the fallen archangel, has to establish a victorious foundation to win the victory over the satanic domain. Then the family is protected.

Satan is a fallen archangel, so he is not able to win the victory over an archangel who united with God and never fell. Thus an archangel who is on the side of God can subjugate Satan. Satan cannot invade the protection of a God-centered archangel. Thus the victorious Abel-sphere cannot be born unless the victorious archangel is born. That means that Abel's family can be protected from Satan only when restored Cain's family is born.

During Jesus' life, if his family had protected him, he could have been at peace. If such protection had been given to Jesus, he wouldn't have been attacked. In the Garden of Eden, if the archangel had not fallen but had protected Adam, then Adam himself would have had no chance to fall. If there had been a person in Cain's position who united perfectly with Jesus, then there would have been no way for Satan to attack Jesus.

When we examine the situation in this light, we discover that Jesus' family did not unite with him. Mary and Joseph and his brothers and sisters, as well as his other relatives, had nothing to do with Jesus' mission. In fact, Jesus was a person who was virtually separated from his family and clan. The entire family and clan should have stood in the position to protect Jesus. If he were standing on that perfected foundation, he would never have had to go away from his own home, and there would have been no necessity for him to go through the three years of public life. If the family and clan had united with him and helped him, he would have been able to make the foundation of bridegroom and bride on the earth, with the help of his family and relatives. If that had happened, a new blood lineage could have been established on the earth, centered on Jesus. The new ideal family who did not fall and who were united with God could have been started.

However, Jesus did not have that kind of foundation and he went to the cross. Therefore, the family who could inherit the new blood lineage was not born at that time.

Jesus was to be in the position of True Parents. If the position of True Parents was lost, that means all the descendants that were to be born from the True Parents were lost because the position of the parents was invaded.

Those who are born from fallen parents cannot go over their fallen standard. Christians, although gathering underneath the cross of Jesus Christ throughout the world, are not able to go forward and consummate God's will for the whole world.

Once individuals are united completely with the returning Lord and attend him absolutely, then they have to create a special clan centered upon the Lord. That special clan has to have a higher standard than the clan which surrounded Jesus Christ. That clan could not fulfill its mission to shield Jesus. This special clan should create a heartistic foundation and be called the new Israel. The heartistic foundation is the prerequisite for the substantial foundation of the worldwide level. Restoration through indemnity can be accomplished through that foundation. At the time of the Second Advent Christ must create the standard of the family. In order for him to create that standard, the Unification movement has to create the clan who can risk their lives to shield his family from the enemy. Without that, the Lord won't be able to start his family.

This was the significance of the Holy Wedding in 1960. The Unification Church was born as a new religious organization, and even if the secular world and established Christianity itself oppose the Unification Church, our church has created the sphere of the clan to shield the family of the returning Christ.

When the condition was made for the creation of a clan able to shield the family of the Second Coming of Christ at the risk of their lives, then the true Holy Wedding could be conducted for the first time in history. Since the true family was created, it has gradually been expanded to the sphere of clan and society. Established Christianity has been declining at the same time the Unification Church has been moving up. As a result of Judaism not uniting with Jesus, he did not establish a family, clan, society or nation centered on God. The Unification movement has to restore all of those failures and develop far beyond what happened at the time of Jesus.

### ***Three spiritual children***

That is the history of the development of the Unification Church. What did we do next centered on the true family after 1960? If Jesus had established his own family, he could have formed his clan and tribe. Then, if Jesus' disciples had restored the same position that he stood on, they could have become members of his tribe. Therefore, if Jesus had married an ideal spouse and established a family, Jesus' disciples could have married their ideal spouses and established families. In this way, Jesus could have formed a new tribe within the nation of Israel and the religion of Judaism. The clan of true sons of God centered on Jesus' children that could have been established after Jesus' Holy Wedding is completely different from the clan of Christians that was in actuality established as God's adopted children in the fallen domain. When Jesus' children were to be born, there would have been the families of the 12 apostles who could perfectly unite with Jesus' children.

You joined the Unification Church at different times in your life. Some joined when you were 20 years old, some when you were 30 years old, and some joined even after the age of 50. Before that, you lived in the secular world, within the domain of Satan. According to the original ideal, Adam and Eve were supposed to have a certain innate foundation. In order to restore that foundation, all of you joined the Unification Church after you were already born and then you witnessed to restore spiritual children. As a result of this, you have created the foundation of Cain and Abel. In your case, there was no innate foundation made for you before you were born, so you have to restore it through indemnity. The way to do this is as follows: you must have spiritual children who attend and unite with your physical children even before their birth. Unless you are clear about this, you cannot understand the course of restoration at all.

When the spiritual children unite and serve the physical children of their spiritual parents, even while they are still in the womb, that is the restoration condition of the three archangels uniting with Adam, who was created by God. Thus you need more than just spiritual children; you need your own physical children as well. You joined the Unification Church when you were more than 20 or 30 years old, and established the horizontal foundation by witnessing and gaining spiritual children. But those are Cain and Abel

relationships, on the level of the archangel. The foundation to be restored as parents is not indemnified yet. How can we indemnify that foundation? The foundation is indemnified when your three spiritual children serve your physical children even in the womb. In that way, you can restore the earthly foundation of the three archangels willingly attending Adam while he was being created. Unless you go through this course, the family of the perfection level will not be able to appear.

Therefore, after the Blessing you will give birth to your own children. By the time your children are conceived, you have to have three spiritual children willing to attend the child that will be born from your womb. Those who are born from blessed parents have to be protected by those spiritual children until they get married, or until they reach the age of 21. The spiritual children can never allow the blessed children of their spiritual parents to fall.

The archangels had the mission of protecting Adam and Eve and to help them become the ideal couple. The spiritual children have the same mission as the archangels. God has harbored deep grief and sorrow because of the fall of Adam and Eve. Spiritual children have to fulfill the archangelic mission of protecting the blessed children from falling. Otherwise there is no way for spiritual children to be restored to God's side.

I am talking about the relationship between spiritual parents and spiritual children. Only when your spiritual children fulfill such a mission in relationship with you and your physical children can you finally restore the position of parents, centered on your children. That is the same thing as Adam and Eve being restored through Abel. Thus the blessed parents can perfect themselves through the second generation, their children, just as the fallen parents, Adam and Eve, could have been restored through their child, Abel. This is the way restoration by indemnity takes place.

Therefore you should not conceive your physical children unless you have your spiritual children. You are not qualified to give birth to and love your own children without three spiritual children. This is the way of the Principle. The principle of restoration is to reverse the direction of the fall to the original direction, with utmost preciseness, and to put it into the proper direction. That is why you absolutely need your spiritual children. In reality, you need them even more than you need the Messiah.

You are loved by God; still, to seek after God's love should not be your concern. If you are loved by God, you are standing in the position of Abel. Abel is in the position of Adam, so he must have three archangels supporting him. Only when three archangels completely attend Adam can the position of unfallen Adam be restored. If those three archangels dominate Adam and he fears them, the restoration of Adam before the fall can never take place.

### ***The age of persecution***

After you join the Unification Church and come to know the will of God and begin to experience the love of God, you are in the position of Abel and under the guidance of various good spirits. If you joined at 20 years old, you became an Abel at 20 years old. If

you joined when you were 30, you became an Abel at that age. When you restore your spiritual children, you are allowed to restore the Cain and Abel relationship at the level of your age group. You cannot restore your past, so you must restore that in another way, by going through your children. Your three spiritual children must attend your physical children from the time they are still in the womb until they get married. Unless you establish this kind of tradition, perfect restoration cannot take place.

I myself have to follow that course and you must go that way too. If I have a mission on the worldwide level, you can take on the mission of the national level. I must fulfill one stage higher I will create the victorious foundation on the worldwide level. The victorious realm of indemnity on the worldwide level has been created by expanding the foundation. That is the third worldwide course.

Individual perfection requires Cain and Abel. When you joined the Unification Church, you could begin to receive the love of God in a more direct way. The person who receives the greater love of God is automatically in the position of Abel. But Abel's position cannot be created by Abel alone; Abel cannot be created without Cain. Cain was born before Abel, and Cain has certain elements of evil by which he opposes Abel. By the same token, the archangel was born before Adam.

Just as the archangel invaded Adam, you will be attacked individually if you are standing in the position to be loved by God. Throughout history Satan has been persecuting religious people, particularly followers of Christianity. He persecutes families and clans which are religious. Therefore you too will receive persecution on the levels of the individual, family, clan and society That is how you can win and make advances--by being persecuted.

If you as an individual receive persecution on the worldwide level, the complete victory of the individual is won. Your persecution cannot be limited to just one small village; it has to be on the worldwide level. Thus even if you are receiving persecution within one small village, you will be receiving persecution on the worldwide level. The aim of persecution on the world level is the attack on life itself. If your life is attacked, that is certainly a personal thing but it is also on the worldwide level.

If you dedicate your life for the sake of building the Kingdom of God, when you receive persecution from an individual person, you will be standing in the position of Abel on the worldwide level. So dedicate yourself to God, even unto death.

During the time period of dedication of seven or even 21 years, you cannot look back. If you begin to think, "Maybe I shouldn't have joined or gotten involved in doing God's will," then you will get invaded and hooked by Satan. If you have that kind of attitude, then it will require another seven years to complete the course of restoration. Even Jacob needed 21 years in order to gain his family from his uncle Laban. If you cannot fulfill in seven years, it will require a 21-year course. The Unification Church is in a 21-year course from 1960 to 1981. Even world famous historians are saying that a new era has dawned since 1960.

### ***The third True Parents***

Some of your ancestors may have killed their own parents; some killed their brothers; there are many kinds of people in your lineage. There has been killing among clans for many thousands of years. At this time the past history of thousands of years of sinfulness is being manifested; everyone is becoming individualistic. God does not exist for many people and they do not care about their society or their world. All they are interested in is themselves. That is the condition of today's world.

All of you are influenced by this, too. Generally speaking, the more developed a nation becomes, the more individualistic it becomes. Individualism is the locomotive that pulls everything to Satan's side. The individualistic world is the archangelic world. The more a society becomes individualistic, the more people lose touch with the nation the family and God. The world is disintegrating through self-centeredness and individualism.

Therefore, in order to walk the path of indemnity we must go from the level of the individual, to the family, clan and tribe. We need at least 12 families to create a clan. The clan then multiplies into a tribe and into a people. After establishing one tribe, you aim for the creation of a nation. In the fallen world, God's people have to win over another people to establish their own nation. That is the way of restoration. But in order for God's nation to come about, God's people have to break through the dominion of the satanic realm. In the satanic world, a new nation cannot be born unless a ruling group is overcome by another group.

Likewise, the course of restoration goes the same path. One people- of God has to be created in the midst of the satanic world, which can gain victory in the face of those who oppose them, in order to create the new nation of God's principle. In the same way, Jesus could have created an excellent nation, surpassing any nation in the satanic world, which could have subjugated the Roman Empire, which was Cain on the worldwide level. That would have been the final point in the providence of God.

Jesus was the second true man, sent by God to the world to become a true parent, due to the fall of the first parents. At this time, we have to restore the failure to receive that second parent, in order to receive the third parents in a victorious way. In order to achieve a victory, the second parent was supposed to completely restore the failure of the first parents, Adam and Eve. But Jesus had to die without doing that. That is why the providence had to be postponed to the third time. Christ at the Second Coming is in the position of the third parent. He must physically and spiritually restore the position of the first parents, as well as Jesus and the Holy Spirit, who came as the second parents.

It is necessary and natural that the children have to go through the indemnity course. The reason the restoration of Cain and Abel is so important is that the coming of the True Parents is so important.

My speech today is entitled, "True Parents and Ourselves." True Parents are the embodiment of the ultimate hope in human history, as well as the ultimate victory. All the peoples of the world have to seek for this central point of historical hope. You Japanese people must not be too attached to Japan. Japan is something like an inn that you stop by

on your way to the destination. The goal of history is neither the nation nor the world. The core of the providence is of course to save the world, but in order to save the world, the Parents of goodness have to establish the perfect foundation on this earth. Without the True Parents, there is no way to save the nation and the world in a perfect way.

Therefore, what is the true hope of history? It is not for a nation or even the world, but it is for the True Parents. You really must understand this very clearly. You cannot be nationalistic or hold on to your own world view. Even though you may have concern about your own race, you are allowed to do so only after you have inherited the lineage of the True Parents. Only after you inherit the blood lineage of the True Parents can you create your own clan, your society.

Without receiving the True Parents, nothing can be accomplished. Please understand this very clearly.

The Japanese Unification Church does not have a mission just for the sake of the nation of Japan. You may think that your country will become the central country of the world; all people want that for their own country because they want the very best for their country. But merely wishing will not bring about the goal. With that viewpoint, there is no hope for the country; darkness will come instead. People will realize when they come to a dead end that they made a wrong decision and will have to turn around. But in order to turn around, they will have to use a new method and find a new way.

God has been using the Unification movement to push those who don't know the way toward perfection through restoration, beginning with the individual and through the clan and the nation. Democracy cannot save the world and neither can communism. But they keep on going, and as they do, they experience more and more confusion and chaos. So they have to realize that they do not know the way to go. Everybody, including the people at the top and those at the bottom of society, has to go back to the original point to find the new direction. God wants to establish the foundation for the restoration of the individual, clan, society and nation behind the scenes, while the world is going through this confusion and mess. He wants to make the bridge for the world to come to the level of the foundation for restoration.

But when the people of the world finally realize that this is the only way and they rush this way all of a sudden, that might be the most difficult time in history. Why is that? Because when everyone wants to follow the way of the Unification Church, there might be many accidents as they crash together! People will desperately want to get in, but we will say that nobody can get in without a permit. That kind of time will come.

### ***Embodiment of victory***

When you observe the reality of the world around us, you can see without a doubt that these are truly the Last Days. The Unification Church members have learned that the world will become like this. But the True Parents are not like some rich and famous parents in one of your villages. Though there are masters or leaders in every nation, like the emperor of Japan, they are only temporary, like the innkeepers of a hotel in which you

stay overnight. In order to unite the world and mankind into one, we must welcome our True Parents. The True Parents are the embodiment of the historical hope. By paying the indemnity for everything, they embody the victory for everything. You have to realize this. You cannot replace the True Parents with all of America.

Those who contributed to the providence of God in the past are all in spirit world; you people living now did not accomplish this. Those people in spirit world are also seeking the True Parents. But they cannot have a direct connection with the True Parents at this time; access to the True Parents is limited to those people on the earth. Those who have gone to the spirit world play the role of the angels. Therefore, the people here in the physical world who receive their aid are equivalent to the world of Adam and Eve at the time of creation.

In order to prepare for the True Parents to come, many people have been mobilized for the restoration through indemnity. Because the archangel fell, the realm of the archangels must be restored for the sake of Satan, the fallen archangel. Therefore, those spirit persons who have restored the realm of the archangels can be regarded as the archangels in the realm of servants. Not only the spirit persons but also you yourselves are in the position of the archangel. The mission of the archangel has been carried out by three main religions. An example is Islam, whose symbol is the Koran in the left hand and the sword in the right hand. This doesn't reach the essence of religion. It is a Cain-like religion.

The main three religions can be considered to be three archangels. In that realm, Jesus is taking the central role. So the time has come when, in our battle against Satan, Jesus can be the great general to drive out the satanic spirits, and we can establish a foundation on earth. The Blessing has been given now to Christ, and the Blessing has been given also to the people in the position of Cain. Through this, for the first time on the earth, we established the victorious foundation to be able to drive out satanic spirits, by mobilizing all the spirits who can influence people on the earth. In that way we can bring those who are under the control of Satan closer to the direction of God.

In a short period of time, the world will turn around. So far there have been numerous religions, each going through a difficult path. But that was the preparation to establish the foundation for the True Parents to be born. The True Parents are the perfected Adam and Eve; therefore everybody who was born before them is in the position of archangel. That is why all the religious movements which were born prior to the Unification Church are in the archangelic position. Therefore, isn't it wonderful to be in the Unification Church? Although you may be persecuted for being in the church, what you have here is very wonderful.

You may be just a tiny bird but you will gradually grow up to become an eagle; you will have many feathers and you will be able to fly. You can fly all over the world and see it all beneath you. Because you are just a tiny baby right now, many things could shake you; but after you grow and we are able to establish one nation, nothing will be able to shake you.

To establish that one nation, we don't choose from just one race; we will mobilize all the races of mankind, all over the world, including black, white and yellow people. For that reason, the nation of America has been chosen as an archangelic nation. America has had 200 years of blessing. In 1976, the nation of America will celebrate its bicentennial. But the blessing of America has a 200-year limit. It is the Principle point of view that a crisis will come to America after the year 1976. Without God, America could not have become such a leading nation in the world within 200 years. Her 200-year history symbolizes the indemnity of the 2,000 years of Christianity.

America has developed herself as a world power and transcends nationality and race. Thus the Japanese people can immigrate and become part of the American people instantly. America is to become the Kingdom of God in the future. Soon you will be able to get into the Kingdom of God and work as the people of that nation. If Christianity had welcomed and united with me, it would have been restored as the realm of Abel at once. However, established Christianity persecuted me and struck the side of God; therefore, it was vulnerable to be struck by Satan. This is why communism was able to gain power and attack the Christian world.

The People's Republic of China is standing in the position of satanic Eve. Japan, who is in the position of Eve on God's side, restored itself economically to the worldwide level in the past 20 years; likewise Red China, in the position of satanic Eve, became a part of the world scene in 20 years. In 1950, the United Nations condemned Red China as an invader. But after 20 years, she was accepted in the United Nations and came back to the world scene as a welcomed nation. The reputation and treatment of Red China was completely reversed in just 20 years.

We can look at the Unification Church from that point of view; we may go the same path within 20 years. The second seven-year course will end in 1974. It is the Principle point of view that the Unification Church will come to the worldwide level after the second seven-year course is over. In that time period, the world will go through a lot of turmoil. Centered on Japan, America and Soviet Russia and Red China will struggle against each other. In that kind of turmoil, the one who has to row the boat and bring it into harbor is the Unification movement. We are trying to survive and not be shipwrecked. The person who controls the boat is the True Father. The world has been influenced by the standard of the True Parents. Everything in God's providence has been influenced by the standard of the True Parents. God Himself needs the True Parents. Without them, terrible things could happen. The True Parents are the highest hope for God. The outside world doesn't realize what a wonderful world is contained within the Unification Church, the world of the True Parents.

### ***Necessity of True Parents***

We can come to the conclusion that every one of you needs the True Parents. I know this principle very well, even though you don't. How much do you need True Parents? Although God is an omnipotent God, do you know how much God needs True Parents? He needs them absolutely.

How much do you think those billions of spirits that are in the spirit world need True Parents? They need True Parents absolutely. Until True Parents are born on the earth, the spirit persons in the archangelic world must do everything they can to help the earth. They will be in tears, waiting for God to send the True Parents. The mission of the archangel is to pioneer the way of indemnity. Before Adam was perfected, the archangel fell. That is why we have to establish the sphere of archangels who are perfected and who did not fall in the providence of God. When we talk about restoration, it is not only the restoration of Adam and Eve; we have to restore the archangel as well.

From now on, we will have the foundation to go forward into the future without sadness and mourning. There will be no foundation of indemnity to sigh about or moan about. Your descendants will be in a wonderful position. Actually, there is a deadline. Those who didn't enter the Unification movement by a certain time will cry with so many tears that their eyes will hurt. In God's providence, there is always a conditional time period. That is why the first, second and third seven-year courses are very important. All of you have to realize this.

To be united with the True Parents, each one of you has to cleanse your past sins on your own. If you have a lot of past sins, it will be difficult. Please cleanse all of your past sins very quickly. Those who have sins cannot be united with the True Parents. You have to cleanse the historical sins first. You have to cleanse the stains in your blood lineage which were inherited historically from your ancestors. You have to examine yourself in the course of your life of faith in the church and compare it with the course of God's providence. You have to repent for whatever wrongs you did, and cleanse yourself of them. Then you can become the ancestors of goodness for the future. In order to become the ancestors of goodness, you cannot leave any burden of your sins to your descendants. If you become an ancestor who leaves a burden of sins to your descendants, you won't be able to enter the realm where our True Parents can take dominion.

The blessed families in the Unification movement have to indemnify everything and start anew. You can be the proud ancestor in the eyes of your descendants because you are pioneering the way of indemnity earlier than anyone else in the course of restoration. You are shouldering the indemnity for the racial and national levels. If one true nation is established for the first time in history, then real peace on the earth and eternal peace in spirit world will be created. At that time, we will be the target of attention of the whole world. All of you have to cleanse all the sins of the past, as well as the present, not for just your own sake but for the sake of your descendants. The best way to cleanse the sins from the past is to fight against Satan. That is the first condition -- you have to be the person who can win over Satan. You have to diminish the power of Satan to the point that he cannot come after you anymore. You have to make Satan give up on you. That is what the Principle teaches us.

The Principle teaches you what condition is necessary to subjugate Satan. You make Satan surrender in the satanic world by taking three people in the Cain position and raising them up to be willing and dedicated protectors. The archangel was supposed to

risk his life to protect Adam before the fall. Also, the disciples were supposed to protect Jesus to that extent. The position of the true victorious Cain is not achieved when he runs away at the time of hardship, as did the disciples when Jesus was to be crucified.

The true spiritual children cannot be the kind of people who run away from the situation when it gets rough. They have to shield you at the risk of their lives. The spiritual children are the people who must stand up for you, even at the time of crucifixion. They are the three archangels who gain the victory. You must raise up such people. Doing that is actually three or seven times more difficult than raising your own children.

### ***Restoration of love***

Who began false love? It began from the archangel, Satan. In order to restore that love, you have to take it away from the satanic archangel by loving your spiritual children in the archangelic position and by bringing them back to God as True Parents have done. By loving your spiritual children first and by then loving your own physical children, your position as parents can be restored. That love has to be taken back from the satanic domain. Satan took it away from God and you have to reverse that process. You must seek out and gain spiritual children from the satanic sphere, raising them up to be in the victorious archangelic position; they must unite with you completely. Then you can establish the position to love them as God loves them.

Because of the corruption of love in the fall, we lost true love. Thus we have to have the love which is way beyond any fallen standard. How much do you think we should love our spiritual children? You have to love them much more than fallen parents love their own physical children. Otherwise, you will not be able to restore them. Fallen parents have the love of fallen people for their children and you have to have a love of a higher standard than theirs. Without that, you won't be able to pull your spiritual children out of the satanic realm.

Because they were pulled away from God by love, people have to be pulled back by love. Only upon the victorious foundation of loving your spiritual children can you love your own physical children. This is the formula. I have been living that way throughout my life. Even if you have your own physical children, you should not live together with them unless your spiritual children are restored.

At the time of Jesus, God wanted man to restore that standard of love. God wanted to see the spiritual children of Jesus who were willing to go with him to the cross. In the same way, you must establish the foundation of raising up spiritual children who are willing to sacrifice themselves for the sake of your physical children. Without that, you won't be able to love your own physical children. There is nothing more valuable than spiritual children.

If each of you, in Adam and Eve's position, restores three spiritual children, we are talking about eight people all together. Then you will be able to establish the restored foundation for Adam's family with God's love. But they all come from the fallen world; none of them are born from the original love of God. The original world belongs to those who are born

from the original love of God. The era of perfection will come only through the children who are born through the love of God.

Then a blessed family will establish Parent's Day for their own family. They will also establish their own Children's Day and Day of All Things. Finally, they have to establish God's Day. I am responsible for the worldwide level, but your mission is to gain the victory up to the level of the nation, through clans and tribes. You may not have realized how difficult the work of restoration was. Because of this difficulty, God has had to work for 6,000 biblical years. There has been no one in history who could understand this formula in such a precise way.

Because the fall of man was brought about by human beings, restoration and indemnity have to be done by people, too. It is the Principle that those who commit crimes have to indemnify their crimes by themselves. The first parents became fallen, false parents; because of that, mankind needs the True Parents. Otherwise, there is no way for history to go back to God. The ones who bring the solution for the whole restoration are the True Parents. The True Parents cannot be replaced, even by a million or a billion other people.

You have to be able to say, "I will risk my life serving the True Parents." Jesus declared the same thing in the Bible when he said, "Whoever would save his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it." That is the starting point, the turning point. Those in the Unification Church who want to be happy will not be able to find happiness unless you feel, "Before I can be happy, my Parents have to be happy." Unless you think like this, your own happiness can never come to you. You have to feel, "Unless God becomes happy, nothing in the universe can be happy."

In order to indemnify your sins according the Principle, you must cleanse your past as well as your present sins. You have to straighten yourself out by the Principle. The most dreadful thing you can be told in the Unification Church is, "Don't witness." The most dreadful thing is if you cannot bring your own spiritual children. On the other hand, that is the most desirable thing for Satan.

### ***The tearful way***

Do you want your own physical children? Do you need physical children? Without them, mankind will perish. Nothing will remain after you are gone. It is the natural formula to become parents and then pass your life on for the sake of the future. That is why people get married -- in order to leave behind descendants. But if you cannot love your spiritual children, you have no right to love your physical children. That is the way of restoration.

In order to subjugate Satan, you cannot be forgiven by just asking, "Heavenly Father, please forgive me." You have to shed tears in order to return to God. You have to feel pain of your face swollen from crying. You even have to feel the pain in your stomach. This is the realistic situation. You have to shed tears in repentance for your sins. That is very important for each one of you. We have to go this way not just for the sake of ourselves but for the sake of our country and for the sake of the world. We cannot escape the path

of suffering in order to gain victory over the nation. We cannot escape from struggle, either on the internal level or the external level.

The Unification Church has to go this way from the individual level, the family level, to the clan and national level. You have to realize that, before our time, much sacrificial indemnity was paid by the many Christians who shed their blood and tears for God's providence. You do not know how many tears the True Parents have shed. But you cannot help shedding tears if you realize that the True Parents are still in that difficult position. The situation of the True Parents is also the situation of God.

You have committed your sins in the past and the present and you might weep because of that, but you haven't felt repentance deeply enough. After repentance, you should cry tears of deepest gratitude because you are going back to God to be restored. Without such tears, you cannot enter the Kingdom of God.

This is the way that God and mankind can meet. If you lost the True Parents, you would surely feel deep pain. God had a tearful heart when His son, Jesus, had to go the way of death. Then he sent the third Adam, the Second Coming of Christ. God has been centering His providence on Christianity for the past 2,000 years. The history of Christianity has always been a history of shedding blood. There has been great persecution against Christians everywhere.

### ***Holy Wedding***

Before I performed the Holy Wedding in 1960, I held the engagement ceremony for three families among the 36 Couples. And at the time of the Holy Wedding, I also gave the Blessing to those families. That signifies the condition being set for Peter, James, and John, to stand in God's ideal realm, centering upon Jesus. The victorious, inseparable foundation was made. But we received the most severe persecution and opposition at that time.

Jesus was persecuted by the nation, by the priests, by everyone. Unless we are in the same situation as Jesus was, the restoration cannot be done. This is why the entire Korean nation was mobilized to persecute us. The entire nation and the entire people tried to destroy the Unification Church, but we were not destroyed. Until the day before the Holy Wedding, people kept writing letters to the department of state security and the police requesting the arrest of Reverend Moon. But in cooperation with President Hyo Won Eu in 1960, the Holy Wedding was held. The environment was like a battleground, not a peaceful kind of setting to return joy and glory to God. It was a real battle. We held the Wedding while hearing voices opposing us from outside the gates. By doing this, the Unification Church gained the victory in the midst of battle. Good won over evil. If we had not done so, God couldn't have rejoiced.

With the three families, we have established the foundation which Jesus wanted to establish 2,000 years ago. The three families are the central families which indemnify everything in history.

In this period, I have to indemnify everything from the time of the first Adam and the second Adam. My mission is to indemnify the completion spheres of the Old Testament age, the New Testament age, and the Completed Testament age. Therefore, I cannot ignore history, particularly from Adam's family to Jacob. At the time of Jacob, the sphere of the adopted son finally began. Centering on the sphere of Israel, the Messiah could be sent. Before the sphere of the chosen people there was the sphere of the adopted son. Before that, there was the sphere of the servant. In restoration through indemnity, I have to indemnify the age of the servant and the age of the adopted son. I have to indemnify all of history.

History includes, first of all, the course from Adam's family through Noah to Jacob's family. The extension of Jacob's course was Moses' course. The extension of Moses' course was Jesus' course. Therefore, the first foundation was Jacob's and that was the foundation of the adopted son. Before the Israelites could welcome the true son, they had to go through the age of indemnity on the racial level. The person who represented this age was Moses.

The Israelites had to gain victory on the racial level, not just on the family level. The people of Israel were sent to Egypt and they had to create the victorious foundation. Moses' course was the foundation of racial victory which inherited Jacob's victory on the family level. In Jesus' age, the national foundation was created, which was the enlargement of the racial level. This is the way history develops; the most important thing is the restoration of all of history.

The first 12 families symbolize the Old Testament age, the second 12 families symbolize the New Testament age, and the third 12 families symbolize the Completed Testament age. The Old Testament age families symbolized those who had been married before God's blessing. The New Testament age families symbolized those who wished to be married but could not be. The Completed Testament age is the age when God's desire for the Blessing is completed.

The starting point is the family. God dispensation of restoration traced back to the age of Jacob. Jacob's age was the age of suffering. I must first restore the level of servant and the level of adopted son. The national level of the sphere of the adopted son was the time period from Moses to Jesus. The true son -- Jesus -- did not totally succeed. He was standing in the position which symbolizes three things -- servant, adopted son and true son. My victory is not only for one generation. It is the perfection of the family that encompasses three ages.

The 36 Couples restore Adam's family and the 12 generations centering upon Cain and Abel up until Noah. They also restore Noah's family and the 10 generations centering upon Noah up until Abraham, extended to 12 generations through Isaac and Jacob. The righteous ancestors between the ages of Noah and Abraham could not have established this age if they had been taken by Satan. In Jacob's family, for the first time, the individual level was restored vertically. Jacob's 12 families were the first ones to restore the formation and the growth stages on the earth.

What is the significance of the 36 Couples? It is as if our ancestors came to earth again with physical bodies and got the victory they did not accomplish before in the course of restoration. As the result of their victory, they have indemnified the heartistic aspect of history, which had been stained by Satan. From the point of view of restoration, the perfected man must be The one who has inherited the blood lineage of God, that is, God's heart. The ancestors of mankind should have established such a standard. Now the victorious restored human ancestors are the 36 Couples.

### ***Foundation to unite Cain and Abel***

Then what are the 72 Couples? In order to restore the family completely, Cain and Abel families must become one. In order for Adam and Eve to be restored before God perfectly, they must stand on the foundation of unity between Cain and Abel. The position of Adam and Eve is the position of parents. For the position of the parents to stand in front of God perfectly, they must first restore the foundation of Cain and Abel. The 36 Couples stand in the position of ancestors. The ancestors must stand on the foundation of a family in which Cain and Abel became one. And the Cain and Abel aspects of the 36 Couples are the 72 Couples. The 72 Couples correspond to the 70 disciples of Jesus. The 72 Couples become the foundation in which the sphere of indemnity on the earth is completed.

Since Cain and Abel's family became one centering upon the ancestors' family through the Blessing of the 72 Couples, we completed the restoration required in the family level of the history. By this Blessing, for the first time on the earth, both stages centered upon God were established on the earth. And if we line up the three stages of restored families, they become the four position foundation, centering upon God. Therefore, the center of the standard could be established. By the victorious unity of the 36 Couples and 72 Couples, the central point of God's dispensation has been determined. Since they have accomplished the victorious realm of the central ancestors, restoration could be achieved horizontally.

Centering upon this standard, the Blessing of 124 Couples was performed. After the crucifixion of Jesus, at the Pentecost, the Holy Spirit came down. At that time, 120 disciples gathered, united and prayed. As a result, they could welcome the Holy Spirit, who could come only on the level of the nation. This is the foundation of a spiritual national level. Therefore 120 symbolizes 120 nations.

We were establishing these foundations until around 1967 to 1968. There is no accidental indemnity in history. Everything is worked out internally and externally through significant numbers. The number 124 symbolizes the world's nations, the formation stage of the world level. The Blessing of 124 Couples means the foundation of the ideal family, combining everything into one. The number was originally 120; however I added four more couples. The four couples represent families who were already married. If I had not done so, married couples could not have found the way to go back to God's Kingdom. So there were 124 families, including four blessed families who symbolize the gates of east, west, north, and south.

Until now, religions have been longing to fulfill ideal family relationships. But actually, religions have encouraged the single life. The ideal of the family appeared for the first time in this age, and has been expanding to the national and worldwide levels. When the victorious foundation is extended horizontally, it becomes the 124 Couples.

Jesus' three apostles, 12 apostles, 70 disciples, and 120 disciples could not form ideal families of God on the earth and they all passed away. When we restore them by paying indemnity on the earth we can complete the sphere of the first Adam and the second Adam on the earth. Since all material things were lost through the fall of man, we had the task of choosing 120 Holy Grounds on the world level in 1965 through which all things can return to God's side. We dedicated Holy Grounds through praying and implanting stones and soil from Korea in them. Without the foundation for all things, the stage of God's activity could not be set. The 120 Holy Grounds established the foundation of the victory of 40 years centered upon 40 nations; they became the foundation for the True Parents' victory on the world level. By the establishment of 120 Holy Grounds in 40 nations, the way to restore all things and reach heaven was opened on the world level.

The first seven-year course ending in October 1967 laid the perfect foundation for fulfilling the purpose of creation. In 1968, standing in the victorious position of unity with God and with the True Parents, we could establish God's Day. So in seven years we welcomed God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day, and The Day of All Things. By paying indemnity we could return to the original position and enter into the worldwide era.

### ***Conditions to connect the world***

Centering upon me, members are trying to do their best in every country of the world. You Japanese cannot establish your condition as an Eve nation unless you work hard wholeheartedly for three years by uniting material things, yourself, and heart, and by restoring the victorious foundation which I created in the Adam nation. The Unification Church of Japan must indemnify on the national level Jesus' inability to welcome Eve in his three-year course. Before this time, I never gave orders to the Japanese members. After the three-year course, I am thinking about building apartment houses to solve housing problems for the blessed families and other practical things. We must solve many things by 1974.

The Blessing of 430 Couples set the conditions to connect the world. Prior to the 430 Blessing we indemnified things within the Unification Church in Korea. However, we had not yet established the indemnity condition on the national level. For this purpose of national redemption the Blessing of 430 Couples was held. That Blessing fell on the 4,300th year of Korean history; 430 also corresponds to the 430 years the Israelites suffered in Egypt. I longed to restore the ideal of the liberation of the people of Israel.

Blessing 430 couples opened the way for the entire people of Korea to be able to stand on God's will. It is the path to fulfill ideal family relationships. The way centered on the individual ideal is not the focus for religion today. We, in the Unification Church, must

spread the ideal of the family throughout the entire nation and must pay the historical, substantial indemnity in one generation.

Four and three become 12 when multiplied and seven when added. The number four corresponds to the east, west, north and south. The number three symbolizes the formation, growth, and completion stages. Since I made the national standard, I had to create the foundation for ideal families in foreign countries as well. In 1969, during the second world tour, I blessed 43 Couples and connected Korea to the world. These 43 Couples from 10 nations expanded the ideal of the family to the world.

The world will move ahead step by step by entering into the fortune of the Unification Church. In 1970, I blessed 777 Couples. It would be no good if I gave only Koreans the Blessing. That was the first Blessing for 777 families on the world level held in Korea. Centering upon the ideal of the family, the way was opened for any nation in the world to return to God and share in the fortune of the Unification Church. It doesn't matter whether nations to the north or south or on the left or right come against us. We will continue to multiply.

Theoretically speaking, we no longer even have to witness. Without witnessing the world could still be restored. We could take everybody to one state in America. It is not necessary to sweat, to shed blood and to do such hard work. We could have children, form a new race, and establish the national level. A nation will naturally come about. Our children will be blessed and the foundation of the new blood lineage will spread beyond the race and beyond the nation.

In the future we can assemble blessed families and educate them to overcome differences between East, West, North or South. I am thinking about creating schools for blessed children as well: from kindergarten through college. A blessed child's highest desire will be to study in his homeland. If Japanese parents create such schools, it will be their greatest historical pride. Then the new culture, and the new world will be born.

We have had to go the way of indemnity on the world level centering upon the True Parents. You have completed the standard of indemnity on the world level internally and externally, although you were not aware of it. I have raised the flag before the world. Even if I died now, I have completed what Jesus left unfulfilled. Even if I die, God's world will certainly overcome the satanic world. The world is my stage, and it is my destiny from now on to go the untrodden worldwide course.

After all, the True Parents are the perfected Adam and Eve, and they must perfectly restore the standard of the first parents who failed, and complete the standard of the second parents which Jesus began. Jesus made only the spiritual foundation, not the world-level foundation. I am opening the unification realm on the world level both spiritually and physically. In three years, if we unite and work hard in Japan, Japan will become a country which is recognized by the world. As the Eve nation, Japan will develop substantially from now. In order to bring this about we have mobilized the crusade team and we need to train members quickly. Japan represents a woman of loyalty and filial

piety. If I have to worry about her she cannot fulfill her mission for me. It will be embarrassing if we become unstable people. Those who vacillate are not reliable people to God. Therefore, never change.

Standing on such a wonderful foundation of historical victory, what else would you want? You must distribute the treasures you have gained to the world, and you must be proud of yourselves as beings of unlimited value. Become people whom God can trust. With such a confidence, you will have no hesitations. From now on, don't waver. If you are confident, raise your hands. I believe in you.

## **Chapter 9**

### **Why We Have to Go Through Hardships**

**September 11, 1972--Soo Taek Lee, Korea**

Any religion must pass through hardships in order to reach its ultimate goal. Why is this necessary?

According to the teachings of the Principle, man fell into the non-- principled realm. Man still has the form of man, but, viewed from the standard of God's original ideal, he does not have the internal value which corresponds to the Principle. In order for fallen man to find restoration, he has to go the opposite direction, the way of recreation.

According to Principle, God is the subject and we stand in the position of object. If man had not fallen, the subject and the object would have accomplished the same ideal. But, because of the fall, although we are standing in the position of God's object, we do not have the value of God's objects; God cannot relate with us as His objects.

Why did God create man? The first purpose was to have a being with whom He could relate as His object. The second purpose was that God Himself had to have a form through which to communicate with all things in the invisible world and the substantial world.

From this viewpoint, what kind of being is Adam? The invisible God manifested Himself in the substantial form of Adam, in order to stand as the subject in the substantial world. God's third purpose for creating man was in order to fulfill His ideal of love. In that ideal, the subject and the object were to become one. God wanted the ideal world of love to remain forever. God created man centered upon these three purposes.

In His act of creation, God had to pour out His power. Power is given from God, who is the subject, to man, the object. God's power has to be given until the object becomes perfect. God's ideal is accomplished only when the subject and the object become one in this way.

In order to go up to the perfection level, as the Principle teaches us, we must pass through three stages. This process is the period of growth and at the same time it is the period in which God pours out His energy. When His power is given totally, and when we stand as His objects, God's power can be returned to him. Viewed from the ideal of creation, God's love is born on the level of perfection. The power of God's love cannot return to Him

unless the object's ability to reciprocate is perfected. Without love, the energy which God has poured out cannot return to Him.

To create the objective being, then, is the work of God Himself. In order to make those beings exist, some power must be sacrificed. This is the original reality of creation.

### ***Our path of sacrifice***

Accordingly, as human beings who have to go along the way of recreation and restoration, we must go through that path of sacrifice. We cannot recreate ourselves by ourselves; we must go with God's help along the path of pouring out energy for the realization of the ideal self. We are standing in the position in which God must pour out His power again, so there must be sacrifice. Since this is the original standard of the Principle, a religion which seeks the ideal world or the perfection of human beings must go the way of hardship. We must sacrifice our self-centeredness; in proportion to the degree of that sacrifice, our original nature from God is restored. As the result of the fall, we must go this way of recreation; accordingly, religious people must go through the way of hardships. This is the fundamental point of recreation.

In the development of His creation, God created the angelic world prior to the physical substantial world. The angelic world is not the place in which God could fulfill His ideal of substantial objective beings. The creation of the angelic sphere was part of the process to the final purpose. Then God, together with the angels, created the substantial objective sphere, the physical world of all things.

God, together with the angels, created man. God's objects on the spiritual level were the angels. Man as a substantial being is in a different position from angels. God made angels to stand in the position of objects, admirers, and consultants. In that way He could receive stimulation from the intermediary angelic world in the process of the creation of man. In each stage of the creation of man, angels as God's objects gave gratitude and stimulation to God, so that God received joy in the process of creating man.

God was expending all of His energy in the process of creating man. But He was able to receive joy because the archangel gave Him praise and comfort. Since God created man with the angels, man must accomplish the value and purpose of angels as well as the unique human purpose. Therefore, man has dual values. God aims for man's perfection, while the archangel has hope for man and assists him. In other words, Adam must become the perfected being of the ideal of the archangel, and he must also become the perfected being of God's ideal.

Then why did God create Eve? God and the archangel and God and Adam are in a one-to-one vertical relationship. It is an upper-and-lower relationship. They stay at one point on the vertical line. If the archangel stands in the central point, God also has to stand on the same point.

The objective sphere is needed because that is where the vertical relationship is enlarged. The purpose of creation is to apply the vertical relationship to the horizontal level.

When everything is perfected, God and the archangel, or God and Adam, will stay only at one central point. God created Eve in order to enlarge this vertical point on the horizontal plane. Thus, vertical love is developed into horizontal love.

Adam is the being who stands in the position of perfecting the archangel's purpose and he stands as the central person of God's ideal. Accordingly, it is Adam who stands in the position of perfecting the purpose of the archangel and of God.

God created dual objective beings in order to develop His vertical love on the horizontal plane. Adam and Eve were to become one, centered on God, to allow that power of vertical love to be connected horizontally. However, since this was not accomplished due to the fall of man, God's dispensation up until now has been to restore this position again.

The archangel's mission must be fulfilled first, since God created the archangelic world first. Next must be the accomplishment of the purpose of Adam, who should stand in the position of God's objective being. If he stands as the perfected being of God's ideal, the ideal of vertical love can be developed horizontally. This is the objective world of creation which is the Heavenly Kingdom centered upon God.

### ***The creation of Eve***

Children have a vertical relationship with their parents. Through their experience of love with the parents, children learn how to love others. After they are united with the parents on the vertical level, they know the way to unite on the horizontal level. The vertical relationship is the subjective one and the horizontal relationship is in the objective sphere.

God created the objective beings, Adam and Eve, in order to develop vertical love on the horizontal level. If Eve had not been created, man would have stayed only in the vertical relationship to God and in the same position as the angelic world. That was not God's ideal for the substantial world. God had to create the substantial world in order to develop His horizontal ideal. The representative of this horizontal ideal is Eve.

When Adam and Eve become one, they form a reciprocal subject-object relationship with each other. On the basis of unity between Adam and Eve, God becomes the vertical subject. Accordingly, they should function as the intermediary beings of God's love both vertically and horizontally. So Adam must have Eve beside him. When they become one on the horizontal level they naturally become one on the vertical level.

Once Adam becomes perfect, the power which God expended in Adam's behalf can return to God even stronger than before. This power, which stimulates God, is what we call love. The love returned to God is a much stronger love than the love which God has given. Therefore, God can feel great joy.

Parents love their children, and they don't mind sacrificing for them. The heart of love is contained in their sacrifice; therefore, no matter how much energy they pour out, it returns to them as stimulating love. The more they give out, the more joy they feel. That is the power by which they can overcome the pain of sacrifice.

A man and a woman as well feel joy, even if they must make sacrifices for each other, to the point of giving their lives. One can feel infinite joy, even if one pours out infinite power. By the same token, love returns to God as a stronger power than that which God initially gave out. Through this stimulation, God can feel joy.

Sacrifice in itself is consumptive; it is a minus force. How can one feel joy by becoming diminished? Viewed from the horizontal standard of the secular world, it is absolutely impossible. However, it is possible because of love.

Why did God pour out His love? Because through a relationship of love between subject and object, an eternal give and take action is set in motion which multiplies God's power. Therefore, we can conclude that eternity is not established without love and we can also say that God is love.

According to mechanical or physical laws, there is no time when output is greater than the input. But in the realm of God's power, the result is more than the original.

### ***Sacrifice behind love***

Accordingly, a true parent-child relationship, a true husband-wife relationship, and a true brotherly relationship cannot be established unless we relate with sacrificial love. The genuineness of those relationships depends upon that standard.

Children know that their parents truly love them when they truly sacrifice themselves for them. Although the sacrificial position is a sorrowful one, if the children perfectly appreciate it and return love to the parents, then the parents can feel more joy.

Likewise if a true couple sacrifices for each other, then love can constantly be restored in addition to the power of sacrifice. Therefore, husband and wife can become one eternally if they share their suffering with each other. True friends are those who sacrifice themselves for each other. The position of love can be established when one sacrifices oneself and gives himself for others. Thus sacrifice accompanies love.

God could not truly love man up until now because man fell and did not achieve his perfection. Thus God's love could not be returned by a perfect object.

If someone truly desires love, he should stand in the same position as God and give everything until the perfection of his object of love, as God does. Parents give everything until their children grow up and get married. They have to sacrifice everything and give everything until their children understand the sphere of parental heart. If the children appreciate it and give filial piety to their parents, then the parents feel joy, forgetting all of their sacrifice. This is the way of love.

From the Principle and God's point of view, it is absolutely impossible for us to reach the perfection level unless we go through sacrifice. It is the way of restoration to work and recreate the ideal self so that one can reach God's standard.

God created the archangel and Adam in order to achieve His ideal of love. In the course of restoration, therefore, we must go through the principle of recreation. We human beings must restore the sphere of the archangel first.

The way of faith requires the restoration of the invisible substantial sphere, or the realm of the archangel. This is the sphere of process, during which we need to have a life of faith. In the process of our life of faith, we must restore the path of the archangel through history.

Viewed from the principle of restoration, we go up from the age of servant of servants to the age of servant. After that, we must go up to the level of adopted son and into the realm of true son, which is the original standard of perfection. This is the standard upon which the bridegroom and bride, perfected Adam and Eve, can establish ideal horizontal love.

We must go through the process of the archangel and the process of Adam's growth, receiving God's vertical love until we reach perfection. Then we can make a departure to the horizontal level. Accordingly, God's goal in history up until now has been to complete one person, Adam, who can stand in the position of God's object. Thus, Adam becomes the central figure on the horizontal level. If God and Adam become one and Adam and Eve become one, then God and Adam and Eve become one. At that point the vertical and the horizontal are perfectly united by love. Wherever they go, they are filled with joy. We call this environment the Heavenly Kingdom.

Since God's ideal of the Heavenly Kingdom was destroyed because of the fall, we must recreate it.

Here the problem is the existence of Satan, but if the archangelic sphere is perfected, Satan must disappear. The perfection of the archangel is not done by the archangel but by the perfection of Adam. If Adam is perfected, the ideal of the archangel is also perfected, and Satan has no place to exist in this cosmos.

Since the archangelic sphere is imperfect, Satan can still exist, but once perfection is accomplished, he cannot remain. Therefore, the perfection of Adam is the ultimate and most important task. That is why God has been working up until now to achieve the perfection of Adam. The perfected Adam is the Messiah.

To go back to God, fallen man must first become the servant of the servant, who is the archangel. The best master is the master who works for the sake of the servant. And the servant must find this master

The fall destroyed God's ideal by centering love upon oneself. God's ideal is love. Therefore, where one's love is self-centered, the way of restoration can never be born.

### ***No complaint is allowed***

Why does God require us to have obedience? It is not for the sake of God's joy but for the sake of man's joy. God puts man in the position of His ideal object and gives him the

responsibility of completing the purpose of recreation. Thus, man must push away and overcome the factors of the fall. Because the fall originated from disobedience, God must order us to have absolute obedience as a necessary condition to restore this. Therefore in our religious way of life we cannot complain. We have no excuse; we must have absolute obedience.

Absolute obedience is a hardship, but the purpose of hardship is to set conditions to allow us to stand in the perfected position, and achieve God's original goal of creation. Therefore, if we undergo hardships and sacrifice, we can come to stand in the perfection sphere. We must go this way because there is no other way, and religion cannot but emphasize the necessity of the way of hardships.

In order to overcome the way of the fall, there is no way other than the way of absolute obedience. God has no choice but to require this of us. In the way of restoration, complaint is never permissible.

To follow in the path of absolute faith and obedience, we must go hopefully and joyfully. This is the way of recreation, and therefore it is the way of hope. We cannot go this way crying and weeping with despair. Sacrifice and hardships are the instruments by which we give everything and gain everything.

Which religion has shown the greatest love in history? A religion which teaches the greatest self-sacrifice is the one which is able to love the entire world. Christianity is a religion founded upon martyrdom. It has spread throughout the world by the sacrificial shedding of blood. Therefore, among all the religions, Christianity has shown the greatest filial piety in front of God. We can conclude that the world must return to God centering upon Christianity.

How long can you continue to sacrifice with a heart of love? This is what determines whether you have victory or defeat. However, if God is our true Parent, does He rejoice or feel sorrow when His children have to suffer? Even in the parent-child relationship of this fallen world, no parents want to cause suffering for their children.

Then, why does God make man walk this path of hardship? God's situation has been most painful as He has to lead this dispensation! If we can understand God's situation, we can feel how miserable He is. No matter how much hardship we may have to go through, it is only our lifetime; our life on the earth is within one century.

Therefore, it is the way of filial piety and loyalty to offer daily encouragement to God. Those who complain selfishly at this point are cosmically unforgiven and unfortunate.

When we try to bridge the gap between ourselves and God, Satan is always working to destroy this bridge. Who defends this bridge? Only God and the spiritual world know. People do not realize how miserable are God and the angelic world, who have to do recreation and go the purpose of restoration. The longer the delay of perfection, the more God must stand in His unspeakably miserable position.

What would you do if you had to stand in God's position? Even though we go through hardships, it is not longer than the few decades of our lifetime.

You say that you have worked hard in the Unification Church, but for how many years? The oldest ones here are only about 15 or 16 years in the church. There are many members with less than 10 years; in that case, to say it's hard or painful is ridiculous.

Fallen men have the miserable destiny to carry the cosmic debt, yet cannot find the way to repay it. It is unthinkable even in a dream that we should raise our faces to God in complaint.

We who understand the misery of God's position must show filial piety to the parent. When one tries to alleviate the suffering of his parents, he becomes the man of the greatest filial piety.

### ***The sacrifice of the Messiah***

Who is Abel? It is Abel who can restore God's objects of love to God by going through the way of hardships. Thus, he must subjugate Cain by the heart of love. On the horizontal level, Abel stands in the position of God. Just as God loves fallen man, Abel must have the heart of love toward Cain and restore him at the risk of his own life. The way of Abel is the way of sacrifice. In that way, God's love can be actualized on the earth. Everyone bows his head to the one who offered his life. Thus, the history of Abel became the history of shedding blood. This is the fundamental teaching of the Bible.

How miserable is God who has been standing in that position, driving the historical dispensation! The Messiah is the one who carries the responsibilities of the entire world and says to God, "Please take a rest. Give me the whole cross, the way of all indemnity." This is why Jesus could pray in the garden of Gethsemane, "Please, not as I will, but as You will." If God is suffering in the spiritual world or in the earthly world, then the Messiah has the sense of mission to shoulder all the sufferings of God. Therefore, even though the Messiah suffers he doesn't even think of it as suffering.

No matter how much we do, we must feel sorry before God. As fallen men in the way of faith, we cannot find anything like self-pride no matter how we search for it.

What was the fall? Everything was observed from the self-centered viewpoint and the result was complaint. Finally, there was rebellion. Therefore, complaint is not permissible for believers.

Once you begin the life of faith, you must deny the consciousness of self. Don't compare! Peter had to learn the same lesson. When he was told about the cross from Jesus, Peter asked Jesus what would happen to John. Jesus told him, "It doesn't matter. Just follow me." Once you begin to compare your situation with others, you begin to have complaint. The eyes with which you compare are the eyes of Satan. Those eyes inherited the blood lineage of the archangel.

So, erase every bit of self-centeredness. When you completely deny yourself centering upon God, you can be completely vindicated by God as a result. Complete liquidation will result in complete indemnity; complete indemnity opens the way to recreation.

This is where the essence of religion lies. If one does not know this essence, it is really hard to follow a religious way. Religious scriptures cannot be clearly understood.

If one makes a tremendous sacrifice for the sake of God, even God himself bows his head before this offering. Through such an indemnity condition, both God and Satan come to bow their heads.

Perfect recreation becomes possible through perfect denial. Therefore, don't complain in the life of faith. You may say, "I can't give anymore." But, you should conclude whether or not you can give more only after you have done your very best until death.

To complain is essentially to accuse God. But man has to repay God, so, we human beings must absolutely not complain or say such things to God.

My life up until now has been like that. I could never become a man to complain, even though I were put in prison and tortured to the point of vomiting blood. Even if the entire world opposed us, we can be grateful if we know that our relationship with the satanic sphere is being cut. It is natural that we receive opposition as long as the sphere of resentment exists.

Don't complain. Be grateful and let us go our way in silence.

## **Chapter 10**

### **Sermon for God's Day 1973**

#### **January 1, 1973--Tarrytown, New York**

As you know, today is the sixth God's Day. Five years have passed since we first set up this historically unprecedented day. It is quite a historical event.

In this world, we have many memorable days, such as our birthdays, the birthdays of our parents, or the national birthday, such as the day of independence. There are many nations and peoples living on this earth; they have ceremonies and festivities celebrating their own national days. If a nation had suffered foreign domination, then the day of independence or the day of liberation would be the happiest of all. Suppose someone here had lost his children but found them today. Wouldn't that make today the happiest day of his life? The second happiest day in our lives must be the day of our blessing or marriage.

But in all of these special occasions, there has never been a God's Day set up. When we look back on human history in light of divine providence, we can see that God's Day can only be established when other days are brought to God's side. We have many important or meaningful days to celebrate in our lives, but never have we set up a day just to celebrate God.

## ***The original God's Day***

In the Garden of Eden, if Adam and Eve had grown to perfection without falling, the day they reached their maturity would have been the day of utmost joy for both God and humans. On that happiest day of their lives, God could have blessed them in matrimony. That day would have also been the day when True Parents of all mankind could be installed, signaling the commencement of a beautiful family life. This triumphant family would have represented all the future families of the earth, so that day would have been a day of joy for God and for all the creation including the archangels. This would have truly been God's Day. He could have been proud of His children in this situation, and the whole creation could have accepted or welcomed the men of perfection as their lords. According to the Principle of Creation, this day could have become God's Day, Children's Day and World Day, or the Day of All Things.

But because of the human fall, those days were nullified. According to the Principle, things must be restored in the reverse order in which they were lost. In order to restore God's Day, we first had to restore the day of parents, children and things. In 1960, on the 16th day of April [later shifted to March 1 on the lunar calendar], we set up Parents' Day for the first time. From that point, we began to restore, on a solid foundation, things on the individual level, family level, national level, and worldwide level. Centered on Parents' Day, we could set up Children's Day a short time later.

In human society, there has not been any family who could really be recognized by God. There have been no true parents, no true children, from the standpoint of complete sinlessness. In order for the children of the world to be reborn as brothers and sisters, they must have common parents to give them rebirth. We now have Children's Day; signifying the day we become the true children of our True Parents by being reborn. Then, based on the foundation of Parents' Day and Children's Day, we then could set up the Day of All Things, or World Day.

## ***The establishment of Holy Grounds***

In 1965, I made my first world tour, visiting some 40 countries. In these nations, I set up 120 Holy Grounds. Having set up the True Family, with the True Parents and True Children, I linked that family with the whole world by blessing Holy Grounds in so many places. By setting up these three things, I have reached the national level in my mission.

Jesus wanted to set up this kind of condition, centered on the chosen nation of the Israelites. If he had been able to set up the condition on the clan or the tribal level, he could have advanced to the national level. Had he completed all things, Jesus would have been able to set up God's Day in his lifetime. But due to the crucifixion, Jesus left all those things unaccomplished.

So, it has been my mission to set up God's Day, which I did in 1968. But I could do this only after setting up the rest of the days. Now, with these four main holy days set up, God's providence of restoration can move into the mainstream.

Because of the fall, Adam and Eve were unable to set up these days. You know that man fell at the top of the growth stage, before reaching the completion stage. For man to advance from the growth stage to the completion stage, he must have parents who have nothing to do with sin. But due to the fall, the first parents, Adam and Eve, and all subsequent parents fell down to a level far below the growth stage. In order for man to be saved or elevated to the next stage, True Parents must come and give rebirth.

To pass through the final stage of growth, we must go through a seven-year course. Each stage of growth has three subunits so there are nine subunits. Perfection comes at the very top of the completion stage, which is number 10. Each stage involves a seven-year course, so only after 21 years do we reach the last point. This is why society considers a person mature when he or she reaches the age of 21.

Following the Holy Wedding in 1960, I had to set up many things during the seven years until 1967, when I could commence work on the next level. During those seven years, I was establishing the role of the True Parents. With that qualification, I worked to open the gate, to open the way from the individual level to the family level, and advancing even to the nationwide level and the world.

### ***Second seven-year course***

Then, the second seven-year course began. If it were not for the fall, the first seven-year course would have been sufficient, the fall made the second seven-year course necessary.

For example, before the coming of Jesus Christ there was the chosen nation of Israel. Jesus and the chosen nation were supposed to become one. But when the people did not believe in him, he was unable to accomplish his mission during his lifetime, and he could not fulfill the role of the True Parents on earth. To be restored through indemnity, we have had to go through all these things. When the person in the parent's position can accomplish his mission, those in the children's position will be able to accomplish theirs. Parents and children together have to restore the nation and then the whole world.

It is our mission to restore the nation of God's choice, which was lost at the time of Jesus. By setting up these three days--Parents' Day, Children's Day, and World Day--I was then qualified to set up God's Day at the end of the first seven-year course.

During the second seven-year course, all the children who inherited the foundation laid by True Parents, could begin to accomplish their own mission on the national and worldwide levels. During the second seven year course, we have had to restore a nation to God, so that what was left unaccomplished in Jesus' day, centered on the chosen nation of Israel, could be realized, centered on ourselves.

Originally, God's intention was to send the Messiah on a solid national foundation, so that Jesus could have commenced his mission right there. But Jesus had to begin restoring things beginning on a lower level. Had he stood on the national foundation, with the cooperation of the people of that age, he could have opened the tollgate to the worldwide

level then. Jesus, the Messiah, came in the capacity of the True Parents. Originally, True Parents should have come on a solid national foundation of chosen people. Then, without having to make indemnity conditions, he could have made the providence of restoration a success on the worldwide level.

### ***Connecting spiritual and physical levels***

Jesus' crucifixion made it impossible to connect the spiritual level with the physical level. So our aim is to connect all things on the spiritual and the physical levels. Had we truly accomplished our mission on the national level, True Parents could have started their mission spiritually on the worldwide level in the spiritual sense, connecting it later to the physical level, as well.

We start this year at the national level of restoration in a spiritual sense. We are now heading for the worldwide level. The second seven-year course should end in 1974. Before that, we have to link the nationwide level of restoration in the spiritual sense. If we could really set up the nationwide level of restoration in the physical sense, the worldwide level would open up at the same time.

It was no accident that Korea recently began some revitalizing reforms through North-South dialogue. If Jesus had been able to work on the national level and connect the Jewish people with that level, that would have given him the foundation to advance to the next level. The Korean people are now standing on the national foundation laid by our True Parents. And if they lift that to the worldwide level, then they can make the mission of Korea as the chosen nation a success in the very near future. When I came here on my fourth world tour, I had already surpassed the level of national mission and am now connecting it to the next level of worldwide mission.

### ***Expanding to the world level***

Since the United States is the leading nation of the world, I hoped, during the three years beginning last year, to set up restoration on a worldwide level. Then our movement can grow by leaps and bounds. With the national level already created in Korea, if the members of the United States cooperate with me, and if you all really push forward on your mission, we can attain the restoration of the whole world here. Furthermore, I am going to bring manpower from Europe and the Orient, to concentrate on the work here. After this third seven-year course, our ideology should become the leading ideology of the world. When I refer to going from the national to the worldwide level, I mean that I can go as far as what has already been accomplished in Korea. I want you to bear this in mind whenever you try to accomplish your mission.

What you are doing in the United States is not for the United States alone. You are standing on the foundation laid by Korean people, centered on my mission. This means you will be able to accomplish your mission on the worldwide level after inheriting what I accomplished. You are not qualified enough to accomplish your own mission without my help. It is difficult and it may sound impossible, but if you persevere and become one with me, inheriting the foundation I have already laid, it really is possible. The work of

restoration through indemnity is something you can do when you are on the axis, and that axis turns around me.

With the True Parents on earth, you must carry out what was left unaccomplished by the spirit men in the vast spirit world, including Jesus. You must realize that you are carrying out their missions, too. You must, in fact, play the role of Jesus, restoring yourself on the individual level and then restoring your family and clan. In that role, you are in the position of Jesus' having accomplished that much in his lifetime on the physical level with his 12 apostles, 70 disciples, and 120 followers. That is why in the Unification church we now have to turn the clan-level restoration into national-level restoration. In many ways you must be greater than Jesus himself ever was, greater than all the passed-away saints who came and died without completing their missions on both the spiritual and physical levels.

With these thoughts in mind, you must try to become one with me. Then together we can advance to the next level of worldwide development. So far, in the Christian world, the saints have paid the price of martyrdom and untold misery and hardships whenever they tried to carry out their missions, because Jesus left all those things unaccomplished on the physical level. Our mission is to restore all those things spiritually and physically; so, even though we may be faced with untold difficulties and misery along the way, we must persevere and be able to carry out all those missions in our lifetime. After setting conditions on the spiritual level, we are sure to win the things on the physical level. So with this as the formula, we are sure to carry out our missions. But unless we are willing to sacrifice ourselves for the great cause, we cannot easily accomplish our missions.

After the third seven-year course, by the year 1981, we should find channels opening freely to all directions. We will have accomplished the mission left uncompleted by Jesus and by the saints from his time until now. Is this clear to you? Unless you really know all these facts, you can never know where you are situated in the providence of God and how much I have gained. Without your realizing it, I am fulfilling the Principle formula.

But you must know that Parents' Day, Children's Day, World Day and God's Day are days celebrated only within the scope of our Unification Church; the outside world does not recognize them. True Parents gave themselves for the whole of mankind. A day is not special, in the real sense, unless it is recognized by all the people of the world. Are these days recognized by the people of the world? No. So, we must understand how remorseful and agonized God's heart is that only a handful of people are celebrating these days.

Heaven is the place we enter after having celebrated God's Day, Parents' Day, World Day, and Children's Day on the worldwide level. Only after having lived that kind of life on earth can we really enter heaven. But are we in that position? You said no. That means if anyone of you here should die today, you would go to Paradise or a lower realm, but not into the real heaven. That is the view of Principle. So we are anxious to go beyond the level of the nation to the level of worldwide providence. Unless we can do that, the world will remain as it is.

In the Unification Church, we have blessed families. If I cannot fulfill the unification ideal on the worldwide level, with the cooperation of those blessed families, it will be more difficult to take you with me when you don't cooperate. I will have to drag you. But it makes things harder if I have to drag with me all the people in the Unification Church. Originally, the Principle did not use the term second coming on the family level. With all this in mind, I am seriously thinking about how to take you beyond the level of the nation, to the worldwide level of providence. I have, in fact, opened up the channel to the next level of worldwide providence. In doing this, the wise will try to return one nation to God, fulfilling everyone's hope.

Whether nations in the communist world and democratic world rise or fall is nothing in God's sight. If there is a nation of God's choice with one person as the nucleus, there is hope for mankind, even if both camps, democratic and communist, are destroyed. If I succeed in my mission, restoring my family and the nation of God's choice, then the whole world will be restored. But God is ready to sacrifice even my family in order to save the whole world.

When you focus on all these things, you must be able to join together in great harmony, having a new unified goal in God's providence of restoration. If you are disunited, like the disciples of Jesus, then you cannot expect anything to remain out of what you did. In the Unification Church we must become harmonized into perfect unity. We must never criticize each other. Never protest that you are not ready to go; if you do, you can never expect to reach any place. This is one great law: we are going along a one-way road and we can never turn back.

We are now facing a grave situation, but we are filled with great hope as we head for this one goal. By the year 1981, at the end of the third seven-year course, you must be able to become really united with the True Parents. Whatever difficulties we may have to go through, we must be resolved to attain our goal.

### ***An unprecedented task***

You are doing things which no other people and no other nation have ever dreamed of. If you are not really serious and dedicated to accomplishing the task, you are going to make God's cause a failure. But we can never fail because God is working with us and we have the Principle, which will push us on. How honestly you are attached to the True Parents, how fervently you pray for the success of our great cause, and how strenuously you labor for the cause -- all this will matter. And if you are resolved to do that, you will really make everything a success.

On your way, you might fall back and take a rest, but I can never do that. In Jesus' days, if the people of Judaism and the chosen nation of Israel had become one with him, he would not have gone the miserable way of the cross. We must be able to put ourselves in the position of the Jewish people and the nation of Israel and make our mission a success. Imagine yourself as the high priest of that time. Place yourself even in the position of the king at that time in order to accomplish the mission assigned to you. If you don't

understand what I am saying now in the truest sense, how can you really actualize all those things? What is meant by the Bible verse, "Whosoever would save his life will lose it, and whosoever loses his life for my sake will find it"? If you really understand that passage, you will realize that you can do anything for the cause, even at the cost of your life.

The heavenly side is really serious and God is really longing to make His providence a success this time. And why is it so? We realize that God's will is working behind human history. People are not aware that what they are doing now will destroy themselves, their family, their nation, and the whole world. And if they realize that God is guiding them under His will, they will be able to join hands with Him. If the people of the world continue living without realizing God's will, they will be shattered. We are playing the central role, and with all this knowledge we must be serious in carrying out our missions.

If you people in the Principle long for what you used to have, looking back and missing what belonged to your past, you are going to be a failure in God's sight. You have five spiritual senses. I know you have a resounding inner voice telling you that you must go on, transcend the limits of the New York family, and the American family. You are destined to go through untold difficulties to accomplish what Jesus did not accomplish on the physical level. You have to do greater things than Jesus did because you are physically alive in this world.

### ***You need True Parents***

In my talks about the Blessing, I told you to go through three years of public life and to bring in three or more spiritual children in order to be blessed. But that is only superficial. Three years of public life really means a dedicated, sacrificial life. To bring spiritual children involves raising them up to be blessed in holy matrimony, too. But even if you attain that much, you cannot go to heaven all by yourselves. Without True Parents, you are not qualified to go to Heaven. What you are able to do is at best only five percent of the total. With the 95 percent accomplished by God and our True Parents, you can enjoy the full 100 percent level. Without what True Parents have done, you are not qualified to enjoy that position.

What do you know about the Principle in the real sense? You are given the qualification to be their children, so if you to cling to them and become one with them in utter attendance the way will be open to reach your goal. You were taught that you have the True Parents, but you don't really understand what it means. What you feel toward the True Parents must be something more than what you feel toward your own physical parents. You should think of the central family more than your own physical family. You must have a nation of God's choice, and you must miss that nation and the people of that nation all the time, more than you do your own nation. If you lack that feeling, you will be always wavering, vacillating between two goals. If someone told you that your physical parents were not yours, how would you feel? Could anything make you deny your parents? Even if you are threatened with hanging, still you would recognize your parents. If this is true for

our physical parents, how much more should it be for the True Parents? That is what the Principle teaches us.

Are you one with me on the individual level? Are you one with me on the family level? Are you one with me on the clan level? On the national and the worldwide level? Could anyone or anything ever separate you from me? Even if you are beaten or threatened with death, if you remain obedient and devoted, then you are sure to go the heavenly course. That's one of the strongest teachings of the Unification Church.

The most dreadful words and the most wonderful words are True Parents. Even God is in awe of this term, and Satan also. It is difficult for the fallen men to really understand what it means and to dedicate themselves to become the true children of the True Parents, but they are liable to judgment if they go in the wrong way. So the term True Parents is the thing to be dreaded. For Satan, this term is also fearful because when people are attached to the True Parents they are separated from him. God on one side is calling to us to attend our True Parents, while Satan is anxious to have us stray from them. In between, we are struggling to belong to God's side. You must really understand that you are placed on the brink of life or death; one step to the left or the right determines whether you are heading for death or to life. It is very serious.

### ***Know where you are***

You must know where you are, where God is, and where I am in the providence of restoration. At the commencement of the new year, we must truly realize where we are situated. Our position requires us to carry out our mission of restoring the world back to God. It is the one great cause, even for God. And even if we are unable to carry out our mission in our lifetime, we must come back through returning resurrection and, by helping the people on the earthly plane, become elevated from one level to the next until we reach perfection.

So we must be serious about carrying out the mission while on earth, in order one day to meet God in His bosom, free from sin and Satan's interference. Unless we can do that, there is no God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day, or World Day in the real sense. We must set up those days in the truest sense, so that we can praise God, glorify God, and really enjoy those days without reservation. Finally, not only the Unification Church but also the whole population of the world will celebrate God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day, and World Day. Unless they do, we cannot really enjoy those days. We must have iron determination to persevere until we can celebrate those days with the whole population of the world, without hindrance by any individual, even Satan. We must march on-march on until we win the day on which we can enjoy all those things.

I must remind you again that if you pass away to the next world without having accomplished this much, you must come back and redo it.

So let us be resolved to make it a success in our lifetime and, if possible, shorten the time during which we have to work. Let us be resolved. Let us be determined to dedicate our whole lives for that great cause, to win that goal. Remember that we are working hard to

connect those days to the people of the world, so they can enjoy them as well. Don't let a minute pass without thinking of that. I want you to really devote yourselves to the great cause. If you are resolved to do that and you really want to make the pledge before

God to do to do that in your lifetime, will you please raise your hands?

Now, if you have any questions, you can ask them. If you don't ask questions, does that mean you understand everything I said? Have you thought about it? The things I have said cannot be found in the Principle book. In the Principle book, you read about the providence up until Jesus' days. What you read in the Principle book pertains to the past. In Jesus' days, people had to believe his words, but now you must understand what he says and carry them.

There are many complicated situations in the world around us, but anything and everything can be solved in light of the Principle. Not the Principle as in the book, but that which I am going to reveal. I can reveal a certain amount now because I have already made it a reality. But other things are still in reserve. The True Parents, free from sin and the fall, can know and reveal the secret of heaven, but nobody else is entitled to do that. So in the course of restoration, there is no one in the whole world who can really understand what our True Parents have to do. Famous scholars and famous scientists are not entitled to it. Jesus, in the position of the True Parents, did not accomplish everything, so those who are in the position of True Parents must start their mission by restoring those things.

### ***You are waiting to be born***

You say you are ready to cooperate with me, but however hard you may try, in certain things you cannot help. Those who have not yet been restored are in the position of not having been born. In such a position, how could you understand what your Parents have to say? You cannot really say that you can obey me or cooperate with me, because you are in the position of not having been born. You say you are working for the True Parents, but in fact you are not. You are working to lay the foundation to receive rebirth. You are still in the mother's womb, developing, being given nourishment. So in the real sense, you cannot say that you are working for the Unification Church, either. In a real sense, you can say that only when you are given rebirth. Then you can say that you are cooperating with the True Parents and working for the Unification Church, and all the rest. In the mother's womb, whatever nourishment you get is yours. You can claim nothing more.

Without being instructed by the True Parents, you cannot really tread the way to heaven. In light of the Principle, can there be any other way? If you really long for the Heavenly Kingdom, if you want to inhabit that world, to enjoy and possess the Kingdom of God, then you must feel attached to our True Parents and long for them. Then you will redirect your thinking and actions.

In the way of the Principle, there is only God, not Satan. But in other paths, Satan appears. So if you find Satan around you, you are not quite going the way of the Principle. Are you sure you are walking the way of the Principle? If you are really going that way,

you must be connected with the True Father or be a part of me. Even though you may be in a way connected to me, your physical family and the outside world will drag you back. So you must be free from the worldly bondage. In a way, you are, since you are opposed by your parents, by your brothers and sisters, and by your worldly friends. If you want to go this way, you must cling to me. If one part of you holds on to me, Satan may grab the other end.

Day and night, asleep or awake, you must be thinking of the Principle, how to carry out your mission; never even dream of your worldly things. And sometimes you become lax and yearn for the things that belong to the world, saying, "If I were in the world, I could have gained that position, gained that thing, etc." When you pass away to the spirit world, it will be too late. There you will realize the truth of what I said to you. If you really understand that while on the earth, you are a fortunate person. "Whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." The earth plane is the critical arena.

### ***Reenacting the past***

The 21-year course represents the 2,000-year course of the Jewish people scattered all over the world, after they lost their nation. Jewish people don't realize that. Whatever is lost on the vertical level must be restored on the horizontal level.

In our life span, vertical conditions are being reenacted on the horizontal level. That is why in the communist countries, religious people are still going through martyrdom. How many people do you think Chairman Mao of Red China has killed? Some 50 million people. That is equal to the whole population of Korea. How many did Stalin kill? Perhaps fewer-some 30 million people were killed in Stalin's battle front.

The 6,000 years of human history should now be restored through indemnity on the horizontal level, during the 60 years from the time of the birth of a communist nation. That makes the years 1977 and 1978 most critical. If we carry out our mission by that time, the communist world is destined to decline. No historians have ever been able to point out that fact. We alone know this fact.

People do not know what will happen in the future. Any individual who really knows what lies ahead can be happy; any family, any nation, which really knows what is ahead is very fortunate. We are in that position. We must be grateful for that. Do you really feel happy? We can confidently cry out to the world, "What I have is right. Follow me. I will lead you to the goal God has set before us." Such confidence makes us happy. Isn't that true? Do you want me to continue with more serious talk?

One thing you must know, that I am a serious person, thinking about all these matters. Sometimes, I don't look so serious or I say things casually or jokingly. But my heart is always agonized and serious. God also is full of agony and so sorrowful, grieving over what mankind has to go through. But He masks those emotions. If God projected all His agony to you, you would be dismayed, wouldn't you?

God is trying hard to have you overcome the obstacles in the easiest possible way, but to cross any boundary to the next level always requires payment of indemnity. I am always agonized, with a lot of burdens always weighing me down, but outwardly I can't look pressured. But in prayer, I am really serious, talking with God who knows my heart.

Although you are Japanese, you are no longer children of Japanese ancestors, but God's children in a new blood lineage. The Unification Church has made this possible. We stand in a different place. This is the victorious realm that takes away Satan's accusation.

In what position are you standing? Unless you have reached the perfection level of the growth stage you are not qualified to become blessed. At the fall, one man and one woman were driven out of the Garden of Eden. Therefore, in the course of restoration, one man and one woman have to overcome a hostile environment. This the meaning of the Blessing.

My own God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day, and Day of All Things have been declared on the worldwide level and on the cosmic level.

You can be blessed and can participate in that kind of realm, but you have not gone through the same path as I did. Actually, as true ancestors of a new lineage, you have to establish your own Parents' Day. Also, you should establish your own Children's Day, Day of All Things, and God's Day. All of those things the members of the Unification Church should do. This is the reason why we started the second seven-year course.

Although you are the descendants of the fall, you should surpass the standard of Adam and Eve, marching forward boldly by subjugating Satan's accusation. This is what is meant by total advancement.

Not only ourselves, but the entire world should be doing that. Both men and women and old and young should do that. The second seven-year course is the period of total advancement.

### ***I sacrificed my relatives***

During my 21-year course, I only regret that I have not yet been able to convey the truth and witness to my relatives. Such was also Jesus' regret. I could not speak about my own mission to my relatives. Of course, my parents and brothers and sisters were able to feel that I was some kind of a great man, doing something great. But I have never been able to speak about the precious meaning of the Principle to them. This has been my agony. I could not give love to my parents or my own brothers and sisters, even though they were physically very close to me. Instead, I had to love the people on the side of Cain more than my own relatives. Because of this, however, the Unification Church has been able to advance.

Unless you love that way, you cannot win the heart of your Cain. Without Cain, Abel cannot stand. Unless you raise people who have much more filial piety toward you than your own physical children, you cannot do the work of restoration through indemnity. But

to do so means great suffering. Unless you love people without eating and sleeping, you will not be able to dominate them with love.

I have been in those circumstances and have been attempting to create the victorious foundation that way.

You are different from me, however. In the second seven-year course, you can give your precious things directly to your own relatives, parents, and brothers, so that you can become the Messiahs to your own relatives.

During the second seven-year course you should be the Messiah of your tribe, and you should accomplish with your relatives what Jesus and I could not do. And by achieving victory in your own tribe, centering upon your parents and your brothers and sisters, you can complete everything. You can do that on the individual level, family level, tribal level, national level. And you can open the way to the entire world that way.

The starting point and mission of the second seven-year course is to do what Jesus wanted to do 2,000 years ago, to reveal God's will to Mary and Joseph, and let them participate fully in his dispensation. I was in a position to do that, but if I had loved my own relatives first, then God's providence of restoration would not have advanced.

Always, a beloved people have to be sacrificed and are asked to shoulder the cross. God's providential course has shown us that we must sacrifice our own beloved children, family, and tribe, and love Satan's families, Satan's tribes first.

God loves and blesses his enemies. When Jesus was crucified, he prayed to God, "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do." Jesus could say that because he knew God's heart.

The course of restoration cannot be achieved by the power of the fists, but by the power of heart. The completion of the indemnity must be done that way. We must know that. We must attain the Blessing, which Jesus did not attain. That way perfect restoration and blessing can be attained.

## **Chapter 11**

### **The Significance of July 1, 1973**

#### **July 1, 1973 -- Tarrytown, New York**

Today is July 1, 1973. This is also a holy day, Sunday. It is also a most significant day for us as members of the Unification Church. This morning at five a.m. in the main house, there was an assembly of blessed couples and the leaders of our church from many nations and states. We had a significant ceremony and a message was given to them. I would like to give you the same message.

My subject today concerns July 1, 1973, in relation to the current three-year period in America. The years 1972, 1973 and 1974 are the last part of the second seven-year period in the second 21-year course of our dispensation.... The first 21-year course of the

dispensation was the personal course. Most of this speech refers to the second 21-year course, the course of the parents, which overlapped the first course. This is a very rare, very important and vital opportunity for us, that I have come to America so that we can work together here in this country. You and I started this three-year course together in America in 1972. In order to make this three-year course possible, I already went through the first seven-year course from 1961 to 1967, and I also passed through the first four years of the second seven-year course, 1968 through 1971.

We learn from the Principle that history repeats itself in expanded versions. Because Jesus did not complete his mission 2,000 years ago, the pattern of history has to be repeated in our time, and we have to pay the indemnity for people's failure at the time of Jesus. We are in a position to consummate his mission.

From the Principle, we have learned that the Messiah cannot come through an independent nation, nor can he come in a glorious way. Jesus came to accomplish the dispensation, standing upon the foundation of Jewish faith and the nation of Israel. However, the Jewish people failed him and the nation did not accept him. Jesus did not complete his mission, and the nation of Israel and the Jewish people were dispersed. Therefore, the base upon which the mission of Jesus had to operate was lost. God has since prepared a similar foundation upon which the Messiah can come and complete the mission of Jesus. God has been seeking a similar nation--a nation of suffering--for the base of the Second Coming of the Messiah.

### ***Korea as chosen nation***

For this position, Korea was chosen. The geography of both Israel and Korea and the characteristics of their peoples are similar. Korean history has been repeating the pattern of the struggle between Cain and Abel in various forms: Korea has been attacked throughout history by foreign powers, but never attacked another nation herself. She has struggled both internally and externally. Korea also had the fate of being annexed and subjugated by Japan for 36 years. Those 36 years of tribulation endured by the Korean people were symbolically equivalent to the 400 years of Christian tribulation in Rome, and to the 400 years prior to the coming of Jesus when internal and external confusion were great. In order to compensate and pay indemnity for this period, Korea had to pass through 40 years of tribulation.

As you know, Japan was a nation which worshipped a female god. It is also very significant in the light of the dispensation that Japan has made such remarkable advancement in the last 120 years. Japan has moved up to the top of the world as a first-class nation in 120 years' time. However, while Japan was making external advancement to the top of the world, Korea was developing internally or spiritually. First, Korea embraced 80 years of Christian history, then 40 years of tribulation--altogether going through a course of 120 years.

Ever since the struggle of Cain and Abel when Cain slew Abel, history has been dominated by Cain. In this situation, the nation of Japan was in Cain's position and the

nation of Korea was in Abel's. Hence, Japan's subjugation of Korea for 40 years in terms of the Cain and Abel positions was fitting. When a new history began in the light of the dispensation, the following 40 years is the period in which Abel subjugates and controls Cain in reverse. In 1960, the Holy Wedding marked the beginning of another 40-year period. God plans to especially make the 20 years between 1960 and 1980 a period of total advancement for the heavenly dispensation.

The 20 years between 1960 and 1980 is symbolically equivalent to the 2,000 years of history since Jesus. It is also symbolically equivalent to the total of 6,000 years of fallen history. The history of God has been divided into three distinct parts. This is equivalent to formation, growth and perfection through three stages: 2,000 years pre-Old Testament, 2,000 years Old Testament, and 2,000 years since Jesus. This is a total of 6,000 years. It is God's plan to have this vertical history of 6,000 years restored horizontally in 20 years by the payment of indemnity. Therefore, in this 20 years, every phenomenon which occurred in the 6,000 years of history must recur either symbolically or directly. Therefore, this 20 years is a time of unprecedented confusion and chaos, and the situation will develop in a totally unexpected fashion.

In the time of the Old Testament, people offered sacrifices through animals. During the New Testament, man (the son) became the sacrifice. Then, in the last part of the history, the consummation or the True Parents have to be in the position to pay indemnity. The beginning point of the new history is the appearance of the True Parents. The history of the Unification Church also began at that point. The entire vertical history now is to be enacted horizontally at one time, to be indemnified and then restored.

### ***The age of the True Parents***

The first part of God's history stressed denying the material, because the material -- the things of the creation -- were sacrificed at that time. Therefore, in the first years of our movement, we emphasized the denial of material things. Later, in the second stage, we emphasize the sacrifice of man and the son, or denial of self. The final stage is the time for the Parents to pay the indemnity. Therefore, the True Parents are in a position to go through untold tribulation in that final period. The history of restoration can be consummated only by having the True Parents pay the entire debt. So I have to be in a position to negate, to deny everything. When I am in the sight of God, I am in the position of plus or subject, and my family is in the position of minus or object. So my family has to suffer, as the object to me. The object has to pay indemnity too.

The nation which receives the True Parents has to be in the position of object as well. That nation has to suffer. Therefore, the nation in which the messianic mission begins must be in the position of suffering and has to go through untold tribulation. That nation and all her people must be in a position of despair. Then the new hope of truth will appear to the people and the nation together. With the new acceptance of the truth, there will be new hope, new life and a new history. With the liberation of Korea in 1945, hope came to that suffering land. This year, as far as Japan was concerned, was a day of doom. But as far as Korea was concerned, this year marked a day of hope.

Therefore, it was my mission at that time to connect that new day of hope to the family, the people and the nation. In such a way God can restore His people, His nation, His tribe and His family. This is the promising situation in which Korea is placed in the position of the restored Israel. Since Israel was the nation where Jesus lost hope, when the Lord of the Second Advent comes, he will gain hope and restore his nation to order. Jesus died because the people did not have faith in him. The way we regain that lost foundation is by having hope and faith, by accepting the Lord of the Second Advent.

### ***Christians unable to unite***

In Korea, it was very important for the Christian population to actually serve as a base on which to accept the Lord. At that particular time, every nation of great power was in a position to protect this little country of Korea. Therefore I intended to start my public ministry by developing good relations with the people in the highest positions of power. But within the most important groups in Korea at that time, there were several Christian leaders who violently persecuted us, and I was thus unable to carry out my initial plan.

I am giving you a message that was never given and will not be given again--this is a unique message to you today. So I would like to ask your fullest attention.

Those Christian leaders on the highest levels not only influenced other people in the highest level, but they also influenced the entire Christian population in Korea. God's preparation was done in three years time-1945, 1945 and 1947, until South Korea's independence in 1948, I was, on the surface, just one man, just an individual. Nobody in Korea knew of my vast historical significance. Since I knew the cause of Jesus' frustration, I developed my tactic to perfection. I developed such a wise tactic so that I would not repeat the fate of Jesus. At the same time, God knew that my path was not going to be smooth, so He prepared, in His own way, many spiritual groups who would testify to me. It was amazing to know how precisely God planned everything according to the Principle. But no matter how much God prepared the path of ministry for the Lord of the Second Advent, there was a certain period in which man had to fulfill his condition of faith just as in the time of Jesus. The Christians and the Korean government rejected me in disbelief, the same failure that happened in the time of Jesus. Therefore, I could not go through the original course. I had to alter my direction.

At the time of Jesus, the Jewish religious leaders as well as the government used their power to persecute Jesus, and they had him crucified. When this history was repeated in Korea, the Korean Christian population used its power to destroy my life. I had to face the persecution of the Christian population. When this division occurred, the nation had to be divided. Seen from this perspective, the communist invasion was inevitable. Externally I had to go up against the God-denying power of communism. God had prepared Christianity to accept the coming Lord. When it failed to fulfill this mission, the Korean Christian churches were doomed to new persecution.

Communism became strong and aggressive and began sweeping into the Christian community. The communist march has become stronger and stronger -- for the purpose of destroying not only democracy, but ultimately the Christian churches and Christianity.

Meanwhile, even as communism advanced against Christianity, the Unification Church has been growing inwardly, and is now rapidly advancing. We are growing in strength parallel to the communist aggression. We are in a position to restore both the democratic ranks and the Christian churches. We have to organize sufficient strength to stand against communism.

### ***The Holy Wedding***

In 1960, 14 years after I began my public ministry, I performed the Holy Wedding -- the marriage of the Lamb that the Bible predicted. In 1960, therefore, the first heavenly family was established upon the earth. That was equivalent in significance to the very moment of the crucifixion of Jesus. Christians as well as the government together tried to destroy us in 1960, and untold phenomena occurred. Until just before the day of my Holy Wedding, there was tremendous persecution. In particular, 12 members who were the satanic imitation of the 12 disciples of Jesus banded together and tried to destroy me, even at the very moment of our Holy Wedding. There were nothing but enemies in front of me at that time. There were many people who had fallen from the church and who had become enemies.

The high peak of this time came on April 11, 1960. This was a life or death matter. Under very adverse conditions, I won the first and most important victory. I consummated the heavenly plan. This was the most historical day in the history of God. This was the day that the heavenly son came to earth, restored the base, and welcomed the first bride of heaven. Therefore, on this day God has had His first true base on the earth from which He could continue to expand--He had His one focal point.

Jesus died on the cross without having restored a bride. Therefore, the base was not formed at that time on the earth--this was restored in 1960 by having one heavenly bride restored on the earth. After his resurrection Jesus restored the spiritual foundation in 40 days. However, in our movement, I am in the position to restore both the spiritual and the physical realms. Therefore, the history of the Unification Church began at the time of the Holy Wedding. From that day, the new ministry was begun and God now has His true base on the earth. Now He can open up His heart and welcome the children into His heart.

The vertical history, the formal history, has to be restored in a horizontal way. Therefore, this became the new beginning of the entire restoration history, and is symbolically equivalent in importance to the time of Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve never gained the opportunity to be blessed. But this is the time of the blessing of a true heavenly couple.

At the time of Jesus, God had brought restoration up to the formation stage. Through the New Testament age, God restored the growth stage. However, the perfection period was still in the domain of Satan. Therefore, we must expect difficulties, which can be divided

into three separate parts--21 years of three seven-year periods consisting of hard struggle. These three seven-year periods will end in 1981--21 years. In these 21 years, we are restoring the entire fallen history in a horizontal way.

At the time of Moses, God directly intervened in human affairs. This is almost inconsistent with the Principle because Old Testament history was only the formation period; yet God directly intervened. Why did God do this? Because He had to show His pattern to Moses, so that Jesus could follow Moses' pattern. In turn, Jesus' pattern is the pattern we have to follow. Do you understand? So this horizontal restoration--the first seven years--is equivalent to the first seven years of the formation stage in which God directly intervened to show Himself. By the same token, the leader has to show the pattern to his followers through his own example. This is the meaning of the first seven-year course. In this first seven years, I had to do away with all satanic conditions, any situation that Satan could invade through. In other words, I had to eliminate all possibility of satanic persecution.

I am paying the indemnity for Jesus' followers, setting the example so that all people of the world in this time can follow and be restored. Also, my ministry is on the worldwide scale to make the link between all people and all nations. This was done through several levels of the Blessing. In the Blessing, we go beyond the boundary of nation, race, and creed, and we are able to be purely united as children of God. By 1967, this base was formed and completely consummated. The Blessing was conducted in several stages, the most recent one being the 777 Couple Blessing. All nations and races were included in the number 777, so we went beyond the national base and well into the worldwide scale. In other words, I laid the foundation for all races to be victorious because they all sent representatives to participate in this holy Blessing.

### ***The age of establishing the family***

The second seven years is the course that the blessed family has to go. It is the age of the children. According to history, the first period is equivalent to the Old Testament era and the second seven years is equivalent to the New Testament era. Jesus did not restore his own people; therefore, this period is the period to restore your own people--your own family, tribe and nation. Jesus could not have his own people because he did not have his own family. Therefore, he could not truly fulfill as a son. In our time we already have heavenly couples all over the country, and these people are in the position that Jesus never attained. We are in the position to restore our own family, tribe and nation.

To set out on his public ministry, Jesus had to give up everything-- including his own family, mother and brothers. So in order to restore the family in the first seven years, I also had to disregard my own people. I passed through the first seven-year period of the first 21-year course, which started in 1947, with the same spirit as Jesus: "Those who are doing the will of God are my brothers and sisters." No blood relationship could be considered important to me. Because I laid the foundation for the first seven years in this fashion--which is the foundation upon which you are blessed--you are in a most fortunate position. You can reach out to your own family members. You can preach the gospel to your family: your mother, sisters, aunts and relatives. The eventual purpose of restoration

is to restore the heavenly family. In order to go out and preach to strangers, it is far better to have first preached the gospel to the people nearest you, which is the heavenly family. So I urge you to reach out to your own parents and people.

However, in my time there was no such opportunity. The first seven years of the first 21-year course was the period of utmost tribulation. There was no family around me. I went into North Korea where there was severe persecution, and I had only strangers to work with. When I was released from the prison in North Korea, I could have visited my parents, who were within one hour's drive. However instead I sought out strangers, and at that time I permanently parted from my family. Since then my beloved mother, who loved me most, and my beloved elder brother became the victims of communism and were never seen again. I denied them and sought strangers. You came, and therefore I came to meet you.

This is the history of the Unification Church. The first seven years of the first 21-year course is that part of the history of the Unification Church during which I went through tremendous tribulation. During the first five years of the second seven-year course, 1968-1972, I was doing my very best to restore some form of national sovereignty in Korea before I came to America.

The Unification Church is in the Abel position, and established Christians are in the Cain position. In order to win Cain over in a wise way, I wanted to restore a certain position for our national influence in Korea. There are many existing churches in Korea, but by comparison, the only living church is the Unification Church. I am proud of this. Two thousand years ago, Jesus was placed in the position of the enemy, and they nailed him to the cross. But in my time in Korea, I welcomed persecution. I taught the Principle and brought many people to the truth. There were many ministers who came to our church. In other words, the Christian church came into a position to follow us.

### ***Linking the nations***

I also prepared a great movement linking Korea, Japan and China. Korea is in Adam's position. Therefore, unless Adam links together with his neighbors in a friendly manner, the worldwide dispensation cannot begin. I have never neglected Japan or Free China, and I have done my very best to win them over, to form a beautiful bond. I linked all three nations together internally and spiritually.

In other words, before I came here to America, I paid all my dues--all indemnity that I owed. I fulfilled my part completely for Korea, Japan and Free China. I gave tremendous advice to Free China. If Free China had followed my advice consistently, she would never have been expelled from the United Nations. I gave advice to Generalissimo Chang Kai-Shek through Mr. Kuboki, the Unification Church leader in Japan. Since I am in Adam's position, I cannot deal with that country directly. Free China is in the archangel's position; therefore, I had to use Eve -- Japan. The Japanese are faithfully following my directions, and are attacking the enemy sovereignty with their tears and blood. I created this atmosphere by 1971 -- this was destined to be, and I have done it. Now my chance has arrived to land in America, since I have done my part in Asia. Even though Free China did

not follow my advice and failed, I remained in a victorious position because it was not my responsibility to fulfill -- it was Free China's responsibility to follow my advice.

I completed my responsibility in that part of the world, and I was ready to come to America. If Free China is in the position of archangel in the formation stage, America is in the position of archangel in the growth stage. So, the final battleground I have chosen is here in America. America is in the heavenly archangel position, and the battle between the heavenly archangel and satanic archangel, which is communism, must be fought in this land and won on this ground, here in America. The satanic archangel is strong and victorious in many areas, and the communists are proclaiming the ideal nation, their "heavenly kingdom" on earth. Therefore, -in 1972 I came to America and a new phase of the dispensation began. I am now here and the showdown is imminent. I have to be here to prepare the heavenly archangel to stand against the satanic archangel, and it is America, not the communists, who have to proclaim the Heavenly Kingdom. Jesus went through three years of public ministry -- the confrontation was made during these three years. My public ministry in Korea likewise was a showdown and was completed in three years. Also here in America there will be a showdown in these three years -- 1972, 1973 and 1974. These three years are the most critical period of battle -- the second year is the most critical, as Jesus' frustration came in the second part of Jesus' ministry. Whether we do it right or wrong in the second year of this ministry will decide the entire outcome.

### ***The dispensation in America***

When I sent out the missionaries to America, I divided the country into two parts. To the East I sent a man, and to the West I sent a woman. Then another man came to the Western part of America to assist. The person who came to the East at that time was Bo Hi Pak, who was in Adam's position. Miss Young Oon Kim was in Eve's position in the West, and Mr. David S.C. Kim was in the archangel's position in the West. So in order for the archangel to fulfill his position in America, Eve had to come first. She is the one who prepares and lays the carpet to unite all three parts of the mission in America. However, this unity was not made, and the three were divided. This is a most critical mistake, since it meant that this nation's ministry could not be decisive in victory.

I have a master strategy to win America to God, and they did not know or truly understand my entire strategy. When I landed in America, there should have been troops to join and engage in the greatest battle ever. But that order was not there. So in the entire year of 1972, instead of engaging in the outward battle, I had to reestablish our own ranks myself. According to the Principle, I determined to have this internal reorganization and strengthen our own ranks by the end of June 1973. So prior to this meeting, I asked all the leaders in America to have a church established by the state representative in every state--maybe not substantially, but in form--and a mobile team in every state, also at least in form. This can represent the organization of the church to the whole nation. The state church center is in the internal position, and the mobile unit, the One World Crusade, is in the external position of the initiator, going out and holding rallies and spreading the message externally. It was very significant from the point of heavenly history that I came and did this, and by the end of June, which was yesterday, we arrived at that point of fulfillment.

The destiny of America, upon which the destiny of the world is hinged, depends on you as mobile unit directors and you as state representatives-if the two are able to completely become one. The state representative is in a position to represent us to all the American churches in the religious community, and the One World Crusade unit director is in the position to represent us to the power of government and the social community. Therefore, the state representative is the symbolic equivalent of the Jewish religion at the time of Jesus, and the mobile unit commander is the symbolic equivalent of the government at the time of Jesus. Jesus, the Jewish faith, and the secular community--these three united into one was to be the fulfillment. At this time the same thing is true--unity with me, the mobile unit director and the state representative is the key to victory. In the time of Jesus, if these three had become one, they would have had Jesus as their commander in chief. Then, in his lifetime, these living forces could have moved courageously toward Rome, and Rome would have been won by the heavenly forces at that time. By the same token, if 1, the mobile unit director and the state representative become one, then we can march forward.

### Absolute necessity for unity

Once we have this unity and strength here in America, then the ultimate enemy to overcome is the Soviet Union. The "March to Moscow" is going to be our motto. That new command begins today. The determination of the disciples of Jesus, when they marched toward Rome, would have been such that they would have given their lives. By this same token, our resolution today must be: "We fight with our lives to achieve the final victory." If, at the time of Jesus, with Jesus as a center, the Jewish people and the secular community had been resolved to unite into one, they would never have been scattered--they would all have become the victorious conquerors. But at the time of Jesus, that resolution was not there. Unable to risk their lives together, the people were vanquished and dispersed. Jesus had died by himself; his disciples died separately. When they did not unite with Jesus, they lost the most fortunate opportunity, to live or die for God--which is the true way to live. Jesus said, "He who seeks his life will lose it, but he who loses their life for my sake will find it." This tremendous promise was not fulfilled at that time.

The state representatives and mobile unit directors must realize today that we are very fortunate that God has given us this glorious moment in which we can die for the cause. Then, if we have that resolve, we will never die. The declaration of the first of July is this: "You must become absolutely one with our Father." This is the essential key for our complete victory. There is such a battle to be fought. You must make a resolve that, "I am going to be the front-line soldier, not our Father; let me do the fighting." If you do that, what you will be doing is what the key people in Israel failed to do 2,000 years ago, only now you will be doing it on the worldwide scale. Do you understand me? This is a very serious moment. Whether the heavenly nation stands or falls depends upon this very significant moment.

We have 10 nations gathered in this room: Korea, Japan, China, England, Netherlands, France, Austria, Germany, Italy and America--the most important one last. We are creating here a new epoch of history--10 nations of people gathered together in one room making one common resolve. This alone is very historical. Here we must build a firm

conviction that all 10 nationalities can die together for one cause. Therefore, this is a historical moment. Who will say, "I can do that"? If you think like this, raise your hands--only the ones who are absolutely sure. In order to complete the three-year course--the balance of the second seven-year course--we have one year and a half to go.

I have met the leaders of this country and many senators and congressmen--about 60--in the last year and a half. This also comes from this one-course strategy and purpose in my mind. Last year, I first organized the public speaking tour of seven cities in America, and this year I will speak in 21 cities, and next year, 50 cities. Through these three years, we are going to proclaim that all the people of America must know the Principle and the coming of the Lord. This is the course of the third restoration into Canaan.

We have to save this country and its people, and lead them into Canaan together. Our ultimate goal is a march to Moscow. You must have that conviction. Communists are now pursuing their goal to win America. But this plan has to be reversed. Where will we meet this force of aggression? We will meet them in Asia--in Korea. A critical situation has developed in Asia which cannot be explained in any other way except through the Principle.

### ***Spiritual and physical outreach***

During these three years, I have to become correctly known to the intellectual people in America. There again the existing Christian churches may be in a position to-persecute us. But even-so, once the intellectual people know the truth about us, we will not be defeated; we will be the victors again. So I am making preparations to invite famous college professors from the Ivy League schools to come and learn about us. I plan to distribute our literature to the entire intellectual community of America--college professors, ministers, priests, celebrities, VIPs in all walks of life. We are going to distribute the material on Principle analysis of communism, and Unification ideology. I plan to distribute these books freely. I assume that will be more than 400,000 copies. Suppose each book costs one dollar. Already it will cost \$400,000. This is a historical decision.

As Abel, what can we give to people? We have to give them the internal truth--spiritual food. We also have to give them external service. For these three years I am giving the spiritual food, the truth, myself. This is the first experience in my life of speaking publicly. The stage of the coming of the Messiah is not limited to one nation or any one geographical section. He has to come on a worldwide level. His public ministry has to be on a worldwide scale. This precious three years must be fruitful. This moment is going to make the strongest impact in human history.

In our public speaking crusade, all 10 nationalities must work together as brothers. We must begin the prayer for the October crusade. Everyone must possess the conviction that we are going to win, that we must win. The entire spiritual world is with us; they are going to support us. Since we have physical bodies, we are important to them. Inwardly, I, the state representative and the mobile unit director must be united to make a core. In this way we can pay sufficient indemnity for America. In these three years, internally speaking,

I will be directly giving spiritual food--the message to all people. This is a tremendous thing, really. We must deservedly win the heart of America, the public opinion of America, and then the whole world will come to us.

### ***The victory over Goliath***

In the last seven months since my arrival here in America, many significant events have occurred. The Christian community is now declining, and democracy is falling down. But in the heavenly center, our church movement and our mobile unit crusade are now booming. In numbers we are small compared to the millions of Christians, but this group has the power to support and stop the falling of the Christian community. Our real enemy is communism. However, the American government and the Christian community are not yet on our side; we are still isolated. In a way, we are defenseless--the government, the communists, even the Christian community can attack us. But in the strength of our faith, although those powers seem to be incredible, they will not lay a finger upon you. This is equivalent to the battle of David against Goliath in the United States. I am like the shepherd in the desert to the American people.

In this vast land of America, no one really dares to say, "I am going to take the responsibility to restore this country and stop communism." No one dares to bear that responsibility, not even in the Christian community. The communist power is now growing daily and seems to be invincible. The communists say, "You God fearing country of America, how much power do you have?" Communism, as a formidable Goliath is now approaching us. America is now in the position to ask, "Where is David? Where is the man who can stand up to communism?" God, however, has things ready. David, you will remember, did not have any armaments; he was dressed humbly but he stood up to Goliath. I am sure that the communists are laughing at us because they think that the size of our Unification Church is so insignificant and our Victory Over Communism (VOC) work is so small.

However, God will persevere and wait until the very last moment when things look bad. He will persist until the very last moment. That's the way God makes His victory dramatic--He goes from extreme to extreme.

Therefore, America's David is you, the Unification Church. We are summoned. David is standing in front of Goliath. Now Goliath is laughing at David, but David, however small, knows that God is with him. He has firm belief that God is with him and has untiring faith that God's power is working within him. He never fears. With God with him, David becomes an invincible and fearless person. David is waiting for the final command from God and as soon as the command comes, he will fight with one stroke, and the decisive victory will be won. How perfectly identical our position is to that of David! However; we must be better than David. At least David had his own nation--Israel. But we do not even have our own nation. We are emerging out of our wilderness and coming into our own power.

Our battle could be even more dramatic than the battle of David. We have formed our power in the wilderness, and have come against a giant more powerful than Goliath. Our victory will be a victory for God. The command to march forward against Goliath is coming today, July 1. I only hope you are ready--in your spirit, your faith, your determination, and your well-being. We must realize what kinds of situations are waiting for us at the end of this battle. We are in a position to pay the indemnity for all the worldwide problems in the final day. If we fail this battle, if we become a defeated David, then untold tribulation is ahead for this country, the people of this world, and you. We have no way to pay, except by our blood and flesh.

We have come this far in the history of the Unification Church, making progress since 1960. We come to the present three-year period and the key to victory is in your hands: the mobile unit director and state representative must unite with me. Actually, I have been waiting for this battlefield, waiting for this moment. True Parents have been waiting for this final moment of battle in order for us to go over and go beyond. We have only 18 months, and we must do our utmost best.

### ***A matter of life or death***

We are in the position to face death either way. If we retreat, death is waiting for us. If we march forward, death is also waiting for us. What shall we do? You have to decide on that point. Those who have that resolve raise your hands. This day determines whether we achieve hope for the world, or disaster for the world. This is a life or death matter, and your life or death will be decided by you on this very day. Don't worry about the surroundings. Don't worry about what the enemy looks like--these are not the factors to decide victory. The key to victory is within you; it is not external. All that I fear is that you may disobey God; I have no other fear. I am glad I am here to be able to make this proclamation, this declaration. This is already a step toward victory, since in order to make this declaration I had to make certain preparations.

I am not speaking to you at random. This is the absolute truth and the world will follow this pattern. There is no other way. The great crisis is at hand here in America. In the next seven years, up to 1978, the most catastrophic and chaotic situation will persist in America. When we've fulfilled these three years, we can turn the history of the next seven years to our favor. We can then promise new history, new hope to this land of America. In this particular period, we are doing a total restoration equivalent to the 200 years of American history. This 200 years of American history must conclude when these 20 years of our Father's life and the 20 years of the Unification Church make a most successful conclusion together. These three years, in a way, are the preparation for the final seven years which will be ended in 1981. In the Principle, you learn that all the great dispensations undergo a three-year preparation. These three years are critical, and preparation is so important that this will, in fact, decide the final seven-year course.

The final seven years is nothing but a straightforward pioneering path. In these three years, if America does not listen to us and follow us, then America is destined to a doomed fate, and our fate will be no better. So we have to fight this battle, and win this

victory. When you look at the world situation today, don't you feel this urgency? If it is so apparent on the surface of the world, then you can well imagine how hard God has been working in order to have this opportunity ready for us. More than any other great saints who have come to America, we are here to fulfill for this country. We are doing the greatest amount for this country and for the world. Our heart is a historical heart in which 6,000 years of history have been dwelling; thus, we have to have this feeling for history. God labored so hard for 6,000 years. Now He wants to reap the final crop.

Whether you like it or not, God has given you this mission. It is now up to us to fulfill our task and win for God. Love is a two-edged sword. If we fail, the first ones to be punished will be us. As you know, in order to come to this particular mission, I walked a more miserable path than any man ever walked. There is no second chance, no way to redo it. If we fail, there is no restoration beyond us; without us, how will the world be restored? It wouldn't. God will throw out this world, because this world will be no good to God anymore. If God abandons our world, then this world will become a world of beasts in which there is no ideology, just everyone beating and fighting each other. This would continue eternally. The human race was not destined for that struggle. Truly, this is a serious moment.

Now you must think of yourself as a representative of God, as a champion of God, and willingly accept this responsibility. Let us fulfill our goals and return glory and joy to God, becoming true sons and daughters to God. This is the message of July 1, stressing the importance of these three years and the significance of today. In order to win the full love of God, we must become the victors. Shall we pray?

## **Chapter 12**

### **Single Mindedness at the Risk of Your Life**

#### **July 8, 1973--Tokyo, Japan**

Japan must receive the verdict of judgment concerning its destiny during these next two years. We have already drawn the sword, and it is too late to put it back in the scabbard. We are standing at a very crucial point which will decide our future. Either we cut down all obstacles or we will be cut down ourselves.

At the time of Russo-Japanese War (1904-1905) General Nogi gave the order to the young Japanese soldiers to attack Hill 203. They dug trenches and set explosives. The battle was won after these were detonated, but his own son was killed in the battle. Likewise, that is the only way for us to go. We cannot retreat; we must march forward at the risk of our lives.

Unless we have 50,000 members by 1974, we will be compelled to retreat. Therefore, as I spoke to you in November 1972 at the time of my departure from Japan to the United States, we must advance in all areas in 1973 and 1974. Six months have already passed in this year of 1973. We began a crucial three-year period in 1972 in which we are to make an important preparation for the future. Half of this time has already passed.

At this point, our battle must be centered on the United States. From there we are destined to fight communism throughout the world. If we look at the situation in Korea, Japan or China--or indeed at the perspective of the world at large--we see that we are destined to collide with the communists. Unless such a division of good and evil takes place, there can be no winners or losers in this providential conflict. And unless God achieves a clear-cut victory, His standard can never be attained. God has internally and externally guided the providence of history up to this time. During the various crucial time periods in history, Abel shed his blood; Noah won victory by building an ark; Jacob had to go through a 21-year course, and the Israelites suffered for 430 years in Egypt. This led to the 400-year time period of the persecution of Christians in the Roman Empire. We have finally arrived at this moment because our ancestors shed blood and took the path of indemnity. The three years we are now living through is a very historic and crucial time.

### ***Japan is in danger***

It is training that makes an army efficient and feared by its enemies. There is no substitute for training. Don't depend on miracles to bring about restoration. We also need training--not random training, but well-planned and practical training. The words I like are "single-mindedness" and "at the risk of one's life." What will happen to us if we march forward toward the goal with single-mindedness, willing to risk our lives? Which one of the many faiths existing today can play the role of David? Which religion can take the front-line role? After careful and painful consideration, I have come to the conclusion that no other movement but the Unification-movement can fulfill it. If God could tell you this Himself,; he would only confirm my conclusion.

Let's take my case, for example. When I left my children behind in Korea, I received many letters from them. But I intentionally cut off my personal feelings toward them. On the plane on the way home, for the first time I confronted my own sorrow. I felt sorry for them, for having to-suffer nearly seven months and 20 days while I was away from home. But I had to have my feelings cut off. When Mother wrote to our children with tears, I repeatedly told her that she should shed tears for God; she must not shed tears only for them. When it comes to missing our children, and yearning to see them, there is actually no difference between Mother and myself. Therefore, I tried to look at the pictures of our children as little as possible. I had to do my utmost to advance God's will with single-mindedness during this time.

I thought you would carry out what I told you to do, but now, six months later, I am disappointed to hear your report. We cannot leave the situation as it is. We must change our strategy and change our direction. We are now in an emergency situation, and we have to make a new determination. Unless we have many members who are willing to dash forward to the goal, Japan will be in danger.

The situation in Japan and Asia has turned out to be exactly what I told you before. As time passes, we are getting further behind. Those who are not prepared cannot gain a victory. Therefore, in order for us to be ready, we must surpass the level of 50,000 membership during these three years from 1972 to 1974.

When it comes to fighting for God's will, no one can beat me. I am still fighting in the front line. I am in the middle of a 40-year campaign. Based on the Principle, I mapped out my course of battle for God in three stages: the period of preparation until I reach 40, the period of advancement in my 40s and the period of completion until I become 60 years old. I have made it my plan that 1977 and 1978 will be the pinnacle of my influence in America. Even if no one follows me, I will charge forward. Even if you leave, or cannot help me, I will never cease to fight.

Those who have restored one member every month until now, please raise your hand.... Nobody has done it. You have failed.

We must keep God's providence alive, even if individuals and even nations have to be sacrificed. God has been working to keep His providence moving forward to the present time. We own a providential dot of a family and tribal foundation, and I am protecting it to keep it growing. This is a very serious job. I cannot lose even one hour. The lack- of my effort for one hour could cause a catastrophe in our providential destiny that would have to be rebuilt over a period of a thousand years. Therefore, to me, every hour, and indeed every moment, is a time of crisis. When we understand God's miserable situation, we can imagine how He would feel if He did not find us trustworthy. If God cannot trust the Unification Church, there will be no hope of liberation for Him. However, if you were to hinder the providence by adopting a superficial strategy of your own, you can rest assured that I would not listen to you. I am a man who would prefer to be silent, but as long as we have missions to fulfill, I must speak out for God. I have to give direction even if some members reject it, stumble over it, or leave the church because of it. A good leader teaches and gives direction from a righteous standpoint. Therefore, I cannot avoid doing so as a heavenly leader

### ***I sleep for only two hours***

I slept for only two hours each night while I was in America. After others went to bed, I studied until 3:30 or 4:30 in the morning. Because I have so many things to do and so little time to do them in, I sleep very little. I do not permit myself a relaxed moment that might remind me of my fatigue. For many years I have never had a good night's sleep. How many hours do you sleep every night? If you sleep six hours now, why not cut down on your sleep and spend two hours out of the six for my sake and for God's sake, from now on? God will be attracted to such a person. If you work only within the comfortable limits of your overflowing and abundant energy, this will have very little effect on God. Because anyone can do that without difficulty, this amounts to no condition to touch His heart. Therefore, in the future, the leaders without real spiritual power will become obstacles and fade away.

In the Principle, we must pass through the three stages of judgment: judgment of truth, judgment of character, and judgment of heart. Because these three realms were invaded and lost due to the fall, we have to restore them. I am teaching you these things because I have worked them out and completed their restoration. The path of restoration has to be worked out in reality first before it is taught. If it had been possible to teach the path

without the necessity of practice, the truth would have been already given to us 6,000 years ago. Why wasn't it? Because the original parents, Adam and Eve, lost faith and did not know how to practice the truth. Therefore, parents who know the truth must pioneer the course. Because the first parents could not practice the truth, new parents must set the precedent for practicing it.

By putting the understanding of the truth into practice and by going forward on their course, the parents learn to know the path. This is the Principle. Therefore, I cannot teach the Principle unless I reach the standard of having practiced and fulfilled it myself. Accordingly, you have to pass the test of Principle and by so doing, you will become free from the judgment of the Principle. Then you can go on to become the substantial embodiment of the Principle and live a principled life. However, if you are still under the rule of indemnity, you cannot yet be a restored substantial embodiment of the Principle. As long as you have certain indemnity conditions left unpaid, Satan will still claim you as his own. Therefore, in order to attain the standard of the substantial embodiment of the Principle, confront Satan face to face and win his approval.

### ***Eighty-four as a foundation***

Now we have a tribal realm of 777 couples in 10 countries throughout the world. If some of them are persecuted in any part of the world, we will stand united with them and help them. Our tribe is more caring and united than Jesus' relatives and followers who abandoned him at the time of his arrest. Consequently, we have achieved the standard of having restored Jesus' relatives and tribe, which he had lost. Our next stage is to bring a nation back to God. At the time of Moses, there were 12 tribes and 72 elders in the nation of Israel. In the Bible the numbers 72 and 70 both appear, but 72 is the number symbolic of the nation, because six times 12 makes 72.

Consequently, we must win 72 families to go on to the restoration of the nation. Jesus could not build the Heavenly Kingdom on earth because his 12 apostles and 72 disciples failed to unite centered on him. Therefore, Jesus was abandoned by his 72 disciples, then by his 12 apostles, even the three most trusted apostles. He was abandoned to be crucified alone. He was abandoned by his relatives, by the Jewish people and by the whole nation; nobody truly appreciated the serious three-year effort of his public ministry. As a result, God's plan to build the Heavenly Kingdom on earth was lost. Therefore, unless we recreate and reorganize these lost foundations of 12 and 72, as well as restore the standard of the substantial body of Jesus through indemnity, we will never be able to usher in the Kingdom of God on earth. This is the essence of the Principle.

The formation stage is the restoration of family and tribe; the growth stage is the mobilization of the race. Unless we have 12 apostles and 72 disciples, we cannot mobilize the race. Thus, the key is in restoring 12 apostles and 72 disciples.

In the Unification Church, we have a Father and Mother, as well as brothers and sisters. You must have brothers and sisters of faith who are dearer to you than your physical brothers and sisters. The Kingdom of God is transcendent of nationality. Therefore, unless

you acquire such a heart that transcends national boundaries, you cannot be qualified for the Kingdom of God. Do you have such a standard of heart that transcends international animosity?

I have already gone through this restoration course. Now it is your turn. From now on, you must organize your own 12 apostles and 72 disciples. Otherwise, you cannot build the Kingdom of God.

I directed you last year to restore one spiritual child every month. I told you that it was absolutely necessary. Fulfill it by all means! I did not tell you such a thing capriciously. This is a strict standard.

Jesus wanted to achieve the standard for the restoration of both the spirit and the physical body in three or three and a half years, but it was not completed. We must restore Jesus' lost foundation by walking through our own indemnity course. In order to do that, unless you spend more than three years making a spiritual foundation and more than three years making a physical foundation on this course of restoration, you cannot establish the victorious foundation for the complete restoration of both your spirit and body. Therefore, it is necessary for you to spend seven years to restore these things. All of you must dedicate yourselves for at least seven years in order to build the Kingdom of God.

What are you supposed to do during these seven years? You have to restore what Jesus lost, namely, 12 apostles and 72 disciples. When we restore them centered on our family and expand them from the formation level to the growth level, and further to the completion level, we can build the Kingdom of God on earth.

If you add 12 and 72, you get a total of 84. Moreover, if you multiply 12 people by seven years, you get a total of 84. Unless we are connected to our own 12 apostles and 72 disciples, we cannot build the bridge that leads to the Kingdom of God on earth, which Jesus wanted to establish. Therefore, each one of you has an individual mission of building the bridge to reach the Kingdom of God on earth by restoring 84 spiritual children. That is why we have the motto of 1-1-1. Each member should restore at least one spiritual child per month. This is the essence of the standard for the restoration of the world.

Armed with this principle, if you work for the restoration of the nation while still maintaining a global perspective, how rapidly Satan's realm will collapse! If each member restores one spiritual child per month, then on that foundation of 1-1-1, the Heavenly Kingdom will emerge. This is an unquestionable rule of the Principle. Accordingly, we must devote ourselves to that task for at least seven years. If you witness to one person per month, you can establish the foundation of 84 spiritual children as a fulfillment of the indemnity condition after seven years' dedication. That is why I gave it as the ultimate direction. Now I have explained its significance in detail for the first time.

Unless we fulfill this standard at the risk of our lives, there is no other way to be liberated. This is a strict rule of the Principle. Therefore, I confronted this task at the risk of my life. Jesus also came to grips with this task. God has also been suffering for thousands of

years because He had to wait for us to undertake and complete this task. Unless we complete this task, there is no other way to dissolve God's resentment of heart.

During these three years from 1972 through 1974, we must restore the world level of heart, just as Jesus wanted to expand his own tribe to the worldwide level. Therefore, during these years we have mobilized the young people of various nations and trained them to have a determination not to run away, but to share death with Jesus, as if they were with Jesus at the time of his crucifixion. In order to prepare such young people, we established a training center at Belvedere in Tarrytown, New York. It took me seven months to organize and establish such a training system in America. Having accomplished this task, I am now on my way to my homeland from America, where I spent more than six full months. Now you have come to understand clearly how the Kingdom of God is to be built. Mere lip service will not open the door of the kingdom; the key to its door is the achievement of 1-1-1. Now that I have taught you clearly, after you go to the spiritual world, you will never be able to accuse me of my failure to teach you how to reach the Kingdom of God.

Today is July 8, 1973. Since it is the day following the number seven, a complete number, it is the day of new beginning or new departure. Now that I have come to Japan, I have explained it in detail for the first time on this continent of Asia. All depends upon you. You must undertake this task from this moment on.

I would like you to write to your parents and to your brothers and sisters every ten days. It is possible to restore your relatives with a third of the effort you need for the restoration of society. Your building the Kingdom of God begins with your tribal foundation, and then with your own 12 apostles and 72 disciples who will connect you to the society. Without these 84 spiritual children, you cannot lead society. If you want to become a global-level leader, you must restore 120 spiritual children. I have already accomplished this task.

The issue the Japanese Church must work on from now is gaining members. If the Japanese members fail to achieve their goal by a certain date, the mission of Japan will be transferred to one of the other countries. This must happen in order to save the world; there is no other choice. Imagine this: If the annual world mortality rate is one percent, this means that one out of every 100 persons will die each year. That is, 36 million people out of a world population of 3.6 billion will die every year, and these 36 million people will, in large part, go to hell. From God's viewpoint, it is a great loss; from Satan's viewpoint, a great victory. If we can restore the world one year earlier, we can save 36 million people; if we do this 10 years earlier, we will save 360 million people. If we think in this way, we will come to realize how seriously we must work in order to spread this truth as quickly as possible throughout the world. We do not have much time to lose. God is very anxious to see the day of fulfillment.

## **Chapter 13**

### **God's Hope for Man**

**October 20, 1973 -- Washington, D.C.**

Ladies and gentlemen, first of all I would like to express my heartfelt appreciation for your coming tonight. I thank God for this opportunity because I have been looking forward to visiting this city and meeting all of you.

Because we speak different languages, even though I can speak, from your standpoint I am dumb. And from my standpoint, even though you can hear, you are deaf. In order to correct this dumbness and deafness, we need the man standing next to me as my interpreter. However, as you know interpretation from one language to another is not an easy task. So this man beside me really needs your sympathetic understanding.

My topic tonight is "God's Hope For Man." This subject is vast in nature and rather complicated in content. I will try my best to stay on the central point of my topic.

If there is a God, He definitely needs human beings. God created all things, but in all His creation man occupies the supreme and central position. It is therefore very important for us to have a clear understanding of the relationship between God and man. Historically, there have been many theories concerning this relationship. Varying opinions, theological concepts and academic schools abound, but the true, living relationship between God and man remains an unsettled question.

Because the relationship between God and man is so fundamental to life, our understanding cannot proceed until we have clarified this question thoroughly. As we pursue the answer, we discover that there are two main perspectives which we might take. One view is from God's standpoint, and the other is from man's point of view. Although various religions have developed through pursuing these two views, there must be one principle common to all religions which can clarify the relationship between God and ourselves. God wants us to understand this truth in its ultimate sense.

### ***The most precious thing is love***

If somebody asks you, "What is the most precious thing in your life?" what will you answer? Some might say, "Power." Some would undoubtedly say money: "Money is everything." And others would suggest, "Wisdom or knowledge." Then, are those elements-power, money, knowledge-the most important things in life? When we look into this question deeply, other thoughts emerge. We soon come to this conclusion that the most precious thing is love; love is the most precious thing in life. And second to love, life itself is most precious. If we have love and life, we need one thing further-an ideal. These three elements - love, life, and an ideal- are not just precious and profound in value, they are the very things that make our lives worth living.

Let us consider something further. All men long for eternal life. By the same token, in our human expression of love and ideals we feel an innate desire for them to be unchanging unique and everlasting. Many writers in history have described the beauty of the eternal kind of love. No writer has ever felt moved to glorify the kind of love that changes night and day. The many religions of the world which testify to a life beyond this earthly one support the reality of our desire for eternity. If a religion does not teach eternal life, that religion does not serve a good purpose.

Furthermore, the words "love" and "ideal" are without meaning by themselves. Love exists only when there is someone to love and someone to be loved by. An ideal needs to be shared with someone. Love and ideals come alive as soon as there is a reciprocal and complementary relationship of give and take established. We are in the position of the object and always need someone to be in the subject position. Love and ideals will bud and blossom into full flower only when two elements are in a subject-object relationship.

Is man the cause, the source of his universe, or did someone create us? How can man be the cause of the universe when he does not even create himself? It is obvious that we are resultant beings. We are the products of some cause. Therefore, a subject or cause must exist. There must be a cause for man's existence. This subject, or cause, then is the essential reality. We should be as certain of this as we are of our own existence. Whatever name you choose for that cause doesn't matter. The most important thing is that he is there. And we call him, "God."

Let us put our question to God. "What is the most precious thing to you, God?" His reply will be no different from your answer and mine. God will answer, "Love, life, and my ideal are the most precious things to me." Does God need money? He created all things. Everything belongs to Him anyway. He does not need money. Does God need power? He is already the source of all power. What about knowledge? God is omniscient and the source of all knowledge. Yes, God is all these things; but He cannot have love, life and His ideal all by Himself. He needs to share, to have give and take with someone in a reciprocal relationship. Even almighty God cannot experience the value of love, life and His ideal when He is alone. That is why God created His object, man.

Now I shall ask, "Why do we men act the way we do?" The answer is simple: Because God acts that way. All human traits originate in God. Why are we the way we are? Because God is the way He is.

We are mirrors reflecting the characteristics of God. God is just like you and me. God is the origin. Therefore, our love comes from the love of God. Our life comes from the life of God, and our ideals come from the ideals of God. We feel these are the most precious things because God first felt these things were most precious. God is the subject of love, the subject of life, and the subject of ideals. We are the objects of love, the objects of life, and the objects of ideals. Therefore, if God is absolute, we are to be absolute. If God is unchanging, we are to be unchanging. If God is unique, we are to be unique. If God is everlasting, we are to be everlasting. Our eternal life is not just a fantasy. It is reality. Since God is eternal, His object, man, must be created for eternity. Otherwise, we cannot reflect the nature of our eternal God.

### ***Man is incarnate God***

If there is a God of love, life, and ideals, and that God does not manifest all these qualities in man, His object, then God has defeated His very purpose of creating. God either projected the full value of Himself in His object, or He created nothing at all. God is the subject to man, and we are the objects to God. An object is the full reflection of the

subject. So man is the visible form of God, and God is the invisible form of man. Subject and object are one in essence. God and man are one. Man is incarnate God. Otherwise, we would not be able to reflect God's full image. God could not realize His joy, the purpose of His creation. When we as objects are not as perfect as God Himself is perfect, we cannot reflect the full love, life, and ideal of God. So man, the object of God, is as important in value as God Himself. If I made vigorous gestures and shouted to an empty auditorium, I am sure that anyone who saw me would wonder, "Is that man crazy?" But if I have someone to have give and take with, some object out there to respond to me-even one small child in front of me-and I pour out my heart and soul to him, then I am considered normal. The sole difference is the presence of someone as object. But let's say there is not even one little child in the audience. In desperation, I might pick up a little piece of dust, and looking at this dust, I could speak to it and still pour out my heart. Then I would at least not be a crazy man, for even a dust particle can serve as an object.

What I am trying to illustrate is the value of an object. As we are the objects to God, He has placed us in a position equal to Himself. Thus, man shares the same value as God and is just as important as God. Even though God is most high and noble and mighty, He too must have His object. Otherwise He feels no joy. Joy comes when you receive stimulation from the object. Not even God can be joyful alone. You must realize that God created man and the universe for joy. But God's joy remains dormant until He can have give and take with His object.

So far in Christianity, we placed God so high up in heaven, and pushed man so low in hell, that there has been an un-crossable gap between them. A wide and raging river has separated man from God. Men do not dare to reach out to God as a living reality. Man has been unable to realize that God is so close, so real, so approachable, that we can even dwell with Him. We are supposed to be the living temples of God. Yet conventional Christianity has been unable to make that a reality.

No matter how wealthy and famous you may be, unless you have someone with whom to have give and take so that you can share your joy, your sorrow, your opinions, and your ideals, you are just a poor man. We feel joy and sadness because God's heart can feel joy and sadness. Not until this time in history did we ever believe that God could feel sorrow. And God can feel excitement or indignation, just as we can. We, the objects of God, have this ability to experience emotion because our subject, God, has the same capacity for emotion. God is the first personality, and human personality comes from God. How then can we become true objects to God? By our efforts and hard work alone? No. There is but one way to come together in oneness with God. That way is through love-oneness in love with God.

Let me illustrate. Suppose there is a famous man. Opposite him is a woman who is unassuming and meek and without beauty or education. However, once this great man and this humble woman establish a circuit of give and take in love, she will instantly achieve his level of prestige. Let's say the man's name is Jones and he falls in love with this woman and marries her. She then becomes Mrs. Jones and returns his love with all her heart. Whatever power, authority and prestige Mr. Jones enjoys, Mrs. Jones would share

in every respect. Now, what does this teach us? Once we have a relationship of love with God and become one with Him, our value increases instantly to the level of God's value. And such love as this is everlasting, unchanging, and unique.

### ***The Alpha and the Omega***

Today is the time when we must fulfill this fundamental relationship between God and man. The subject and object must be one just as cause and effect are one. Therefore, the Bible says, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end." (Rev. 22:13) Within God, two are one. He is the beginning and we are the end. He is the first and we are the last. And the relationship between God and man is a circuit because beginning and end come together in oneness.

Peace, happiness and joy are the fruits of harmony in love. Therefore, in God's ideal of creation, He planned the relationship between God and man to be lived with harmony in love, with harmony in life, and with harmony in ideal.

Thus we know that God is subject and we are the objects. We also know that the object is just as important as the subject. We now want to know precisely what man's position as God's object means.

When God created man He gave him wisdom and ambition. Wisdom gives us the power to compare, and ambition gives us the power to strive for the best. If there are two choices before us, A and B, we will automatically compare them to determine which is better. Our human desire leads us to choose, and our ambition does not let us rest until we have obtained ultimate fulfillment.

Let me take another analogy. Let's say there is a most handsome man. He is not only handsome, but all-powerful and all-wise. You would be anxious to have some kind of personal relationship with this great man. What would you want it to be? Would you like to be just his servant? No, in your heart you know there is a position better than that of servant. Would you like to be only his friend? No, you would still not be happy. Would you like to be only his adopted son? Will this position bring you complete happiness? No, I don't think so. You would still crave some closer position. There is one relationship beyond which there is nothing more intimate. That is to become a true son or daughter of this man. With this relationship you will have reached the ultimate fulfillment, and you cannot desire anything more.

Why, then, do we want to become true sons and daughters? Because that is the position in which to receive the man's love most fully. There is no closer or deeper relationship in human society than that between the father and son. Once you have your father's love, you possess everything he has. Every joy of the father, all the power of the father all skill and wisdom and ambition and desire of the father-all will then be yours. In receiving the love of a father, there is no procedure, neither paperwork nor ceremony, necessary to grant those things to a son. The father and son are automatically one. This principle applies among mankind, and it applies between man and God.

## ***The true child of God***

Then, what kind of relationship would you like to have with God? Would you be content to just be His servant? Or would you prefer to be His friend? Would you rather be His adopted son, or would you like to find a way to become God's own child? I know you will be satisfied with nothing short of the ultimate position as sons and daughters of God.

God's ultimate purpose in His creation of man is to give to him all His love, all His life, and all His ideal. You are to occupy the entire love of God, to the depth of His heart. By becoming His true sons and daughters, your desire will be fulfilled. That is your ultimate destiny. Then you will be saturated with the love of God. You will be filled with joy and feel overwhelmed by a total satisfaction in life.

There is no limit to joy. Happiness has no end. When you are standing in the love of God, every cell in your body jumps for joy. You breathe in and out with the entire universe. In this state your life is fulfilled. This is how God means us to live, intoxicated in love and joy. And through our joy God receives His joy. The joy of man is the joy of God; the joy of God is the joy of man.

Early in my life God called me for a mission as His instrument. I was called to reveal His truth for Him, as His prophet. I committed myself unyieldingly in pursuit of truth, searching the hills and valleys of the spiritual world. The time suddenly came to me when heaven opened up, and I was privileged to communicate with Jesus Christ and the living God directly. Since then I have received many astonishing revelations. God Himself told me that the most basic and central truth of the universe is that God is the Father and we are His children. We are all created as children of God. And He said there is nothing closer, nothing deeper, nothing more ultimate than when father and son are one: One in love, one in life, and one in ideal.

Love, life, and ideal are at the central point where father and son meet. Once we unite there then God's love is our love; God's ideal is our ideal; God's life is our life. And there is no other relationship where you can have unity of life, unity of love, and unity of ideal any more than in the father-son relationship. This is a fundamental reality of the universe.

How do we come into being in this world? The father and mother become one through their love, and bring together their lives and ideals. Their love precedes our birth. Love is the force which unites. Husband and wife become one in love. This means the husband's love, life, and ideal become the wife's, and the wife's love, life, and ideal become the husband's. This is the way that two live as one, and two become one flesh. Upon this foundation of oneness in love, a new life can be generated.

When a child is born, that child is the manifestation of his parents' love, life and ideal. When you look at your own child, you are actually seeing another you. You are looking at the fruit of your love, the fruit of your life, and the fruit of your ideal. You are looking at your second self-another visible form of yourself.

Now let us expand this truth onto a universal scale. God created man and woman as His son and daughter. He wants to see Himself in human beings. Therefore, the Bible says, ". . . God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them." (Gen. 1:27)

Man is created in the likeness of God. In other words, God made Himself incarnate in man. Man is the mirror of the living God, and His every virtue, characteristic and quality is reflected in this mirror. God surely wants man to reflect His love, life, and ideal. Man is the fruit of God's love, life, and ideal.

### ***The state of perfection***

How wonderful, how simply wonderful it is to live this perfected life of God! This is the true life of joy unequaled by any earthly joy. Once you reach this state of perfection you don't need prayer. Why should you? You meet God face to face, and you live heart to heart with Him. You converse with God. You no longer need religion, and you don't need a savior. All these things of religion are part of the mending process, the process of restoration. A man of perfect health does not need a physician. The man in perfect union with God does not need a savior.

Life in union with God is the one great way to live-life with God, life in God, and God living in you. This was the spiritual state of Jesus when he said, "Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father in me? . . ." (John 14:10) God and man will embrace in one all-consuming love. This is the state where God is made the living reality. You no longer believe, but you know. And you live the truth. If you really experience this kind of love and oneness with God, then you have tasted the supreme experience of life. There are probably many Christian leaders among you, yet how many of you have had that wonderful experience, receiving the profound love of God?

God made man to live his life in intoxication. Man is meant to be intoxicated by the love of God. Since men lost this original capacity, they seek unnatural, artificial intoxication-getting drunk on alcohol, marijuana, or drugs. The perfect man, however, is created to be intoxicated in the love of God. There is nothing that can go beyond this feeling of joy. Every cell in your body will explode with joy. Your eyes and ears, the tissues in your face, your arms and legs-everything will be newly alive in a rapture of joy. Nothing else can ever match this quality of joy. This is the plan of God's original creation. When you say, "Heavenly Father;" do you really have a living and vibrant feeling of God's presence? Don't you want to hear God answering, "Yes, my son"?

Here is my gift to you tonight: I want you to realize that the true relationship between God and man is a subject and object relationship. You are His sons and His daughters. Once you have achieved unity with God, nothing can trouble you. Neither sorrow nor loneliness, sickness or anything else under the sun can discourage you. God is the ultimate security. You could pay many millions of dollars and still not buy that kind of security. It is priceless. No money can buy it. This is the total experience of life. We are meant to live with God.

Your life is therefore the most valuable thing in this universe. That is why Jesus said, "For what will it profit a man, if he gains the whole world and forfeits his life? Or what shall a man give in return for his life?" (Matt. 16:26) Jesus is talking about life with God. Life without God is like a burned-out electric bulb which cannot give out light. A life without God is death.

Jesus Christ is the one man who lived God's ideal in its fullest realization. He was the first man of perfection ever to walk the earth, and he came to restore the true relationship between God and man. But after Jesus' crucifixion, Christianity made him into God. This is why the gap between God and man has never been bridged. Jesus is a man in whom God is incarnate. But he is not God Himself. I Tim. 2:5 of the Bible says, "For there is one God, and there is one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus . . ." The dwelling of God within Jesus was a total reality. He said, "Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father in me?..." (John 14:10) Jesus is, indeed, the only begotten son of God, but God does not want only Jesus as His son. All mankind is created to be able to say, "I am in the Father and the Father in me" This is the fully attainable goal of everyone.

### ***God's view of good and evil***

Our first step in becoming the true sons and daughters of God is to clearly comprehend God's view of good and evil. What is goodness and what is evil?

We are not concerned with a man-made definition. The eternal standard of good and evil is defined by God. The sharp definition of good and evil existed at the time of His creation, long before evil ever came into being in the Garden of Eden. God's view of good and evil will never change. God is eternal, His law is eternal, and His definition is eternal and unchanging despite the passage of time.

All of our human traits originate in God. We recognize that there is some human tendency for selfishness. This is natural because at one time God Himself was self-centered. This fact may surprise you, but you must understand that before God created man and the universe, He was all alone, with no one to care for except Himself. However the very instant that God initiated creation, His full concept of life emerged. God now lives for His counterpart-not for Himself.

What is creation? Creation means nothing more than the Creator, God, projecting Himself into a substantial form. He made Himself incarnate symbolically in the universe, and He made Himself incarnate directly in man. When the spirit takes form, this is creation. God invested Himself in the creation. God's investment of energy is the creation.

The Bible in the book of Genesis makes creation sound simple and easy. Genesis gives us the impression that God's creation is accomplished through the magic of His words. God simply says, "Let there be a world" and presto!-the world comes into being. Then He says, "Let there be man" and poof! -- Adam and Eve come into being.

But now it has been revealed that it was not this easy at all. God invested all of Himself in His creation. He did not reserve even one ounce of energy. Creation was His total labor,

His total effort of giving all of Himself. When God put His entire heart and soul into the creation of His object, He was investing 100 percent of Himself. Only in this way could He create His second self, the visible God.

Therefore, after His creation, God was no longer existing just for Himself. God began existing for His son and daughter, Adam and Eve. He exists to love, He exists to give. God is the totally unselfish existence. God cannot exist alone. "Love" and "ideal" only take on meaning when partners are in complementary relationship. God initiated creation and made an investment He cannot lose. When God poured all of His love, life, and ideal into His second self, He had to, in a sense, realize a profit. God knew that when He invested all He had--100 percent--His object would mature and return to Him many, many times over the fruits of love, life, and His ideal. His object, man, is everything to God. The life of the object attracts God. God wants to go and dwell with His object, man.

Let us look at an illustration. Suppose there is a great artist. If he works at random without feeling, he cannot create anything worthwhile. To create the masterpiece of his lifetime, the artist must put all of his heart and soul into his creation. That is the only way for him to come up with a great work of art. If an artist works in this way, his art becomes his life.

God is the greatest of all artists. When He created His masterpiece, man, He poured His heart into the process. He poured His soul into it. He poured all of His wisdom and all of His energy into it. God wished only to exist for Adam and Eve and all mankind. He saved not a single ounce of energy when He created them. Thus, man has become the life of God.

### ***Goodness is total giving***

God set the pattern for the universe. In the ideal existence we live for others. The subject exists for the object and the object exists for the subject. God's definition of goodness is total giving, total service, and absolute unselfishness. We are to live our lives for others. You live for others and others live for you. God lives for man and man lives for God. The husband lives for his wife and the wife lives for her husband. This is goodness. And here unity, harmony, and prosperity abound.

Would you, as a man, be disturbed if I said that you were created for a woman? Perhaps some of you are proud of your masculinity and would not want to hear this. But this is the principle of God's creation, and you must not be sorry to hear these words. Man lives his life for his partner, not for himself.

Let us assume that one of you ladies is a beauty queen. No matter how beautiful you are, your beauty is not for your own gratification; it is for the delight of men. We are created to live for each other. This is the very reason for our existence; we exist for others, for an object, for a counterpart. This is the principle for all human relationships in our society. Parents exist for their children, and children exist for their parents. Then both parents and children, when they give unselfishly, become united in a circular motion.

This circling motion is the motion of unity. When you give and take, the give and take action creates a circular motion. Circular motion alone can be eternal, because there you will find no end. Therefore, all of God's creation is based on a pattern of circular movement, since He created for eternity. Even our faces are round, although there is one central vertical line. Our eyeballs are round, and there are upper and lower lips which make up a round mouth. The sun is round, the moon, the earth, and all heavenly bodies are round. They are each rotating on their own axes and revolving around others. Everything in this universe has complementary give and take action between subject and object. Give and take action occurs between artery and vein, and thus blood circulates through the body. Human sickness is the state where the balance of give and take action is broken, and normal circulating motion is stopped. Without having this give and take action between subject and object, without abiding by this principle, nothing endures for eternity. All existence that is based upon God's principle is a good existence.

Then, what is evil? Evil is the emergence of selfishness into this world. God's principle of unselfish giving was twisted into an ungodly principle of selfish taking. The ungodly position of desiring to be served rather than to serve was thereby established. The origin of evil is Satan. He was in the position to serve God, but instead he posed as another god and subjugated man for his own benefit. God is the absolute positive force in this universe. Then Satan posed as another positive force. Two positives naturally repel each other. Satan is a fallen archangel. He left his position as faithful servant to God and man, and he challenged and competed with God. His motivation was selfishness. Out of his selfishness comes the origin of evil and sin.

What happened is this: Eve fell from her position as God's first daughter, becoming the first victim of Satan and transforming herself into a creature of selfishness. Together Eve and Satan then successfully brought Adam into their selfish world. By this tragic event, God was isolated by man in the garden of Eden. Human history started on the wrong footing, without God. The foundation for the evil history of man was laid, and Satan was established as the ruler of this world. Selfishness came into being at the beginning of human history, and now our world is rampant with killing, lying, and stealing. All of these actions in the evil world are motivated by selfishness. Evil subjugated others for its own benefit, while good sacrifices itself for the benefit of others.

Since the fall of man, God's work has been the restoration of original goodness. God wants to destroy the world of evil and recreate the world of goodness. We have lost our health. We have become sick people. The salvation of God is, therefore, the restoration of man to a healthy state once again.

God sowed the seed of goodness, but before He could gather its fruit, Satan invaded with his evil seed and harvested his evil fruit. For this reason, God must sow the seed of goodness once again. To do this job God needs certain tools. The religions of the world have served as these tools for God. Throughout history, good religions have taught God's way of life, centered upon sacrificial love and duty. Thus Christianity may be considered the most advanced and progressive religion because it teaches this sacrificial love and duty in supreme form.

Jesus came as a savior, but his teaching was, ". . . the Son of man came not to be served but to serve . . ." (Matt. 20:28) Jesus taught that the greatest love in this universe is to give one's life for his enemy. The teaching of the Bible is contrary to the common rule of our worldly society. It is exactly the opposite of the way of this self-centered world. The Bible teaches complete giving and total sacrifice. "He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will find it." (Matt. 10:39) It seems almost foolish to think seriously about living this way in man's evil society. But once you know God's principle, you discover that there is actually no wisdom greater than this.

### ***You reap as you sow***

Jesus Christ's teachings were hitting the very core of this fundamental truth. The more you give the more you receive. God rewards total giving with total love, and total sacrifice with total life. Giving creates room for God's love to enter. The more room and the greater the vacuum created by your giving, the faster you will be filled by the flow of God's love.

To be treated well you must first treat others well. You reap as you sow. Sow evil to reap evil; sow goodness to reap goodness. Your concern should be how to give, and how to give well. As for the return to you, you must trust in God. He will take care of it.

Let us take an illustration of a good man and a bad man. Let us say there is one man who has ten friends. Day in and day out this man is unselfishly serving his ten friends. People cannot help but love this man. He can become the very best friend to ten people. Then his influence will spread to the relatives and friends of those first ten people. By giving and serving unselfishly this man becomes prosperous. He is a center of harmony and unity because he lives God's principle. Unselfishness brings prosperity. Here is a good man.

But suppose, on the contrary, this man said to his friends, "You ten, bring everything to me; you are here to serve me." Before he spoke this way to his friends three times, everyone would end all connection with him. They would want to have nothing at all to do with him. So he would be left all alone. Isn't that true, even in our society? It is universally true: A self-centered doctrine, a self-centered philosophy, a self-centered way of life will fling you head over heels down the tragic road of self-destruction. But if you will live your life in service to others, you will find prosperity. It may seem that such a route would lead you to ruin, but it will not. The only reason it may not always bring prosperity to you is because you do not give to the very end. In the middle you suddenly become skeptical. You change your heart or pity yourself and thus shrink from God's law of total giving. The good result never materializes. Total giving is the way of prosperity because it is the way of God.

If any individual sacrifices himself for another individual, he becomes a hero to others. If one family is sacrificial for the well-being of another family, then that family becomes a heroic family among all families. Peoples and nations who sacrifice themselves for the benefit of others become champions of nations. A man who gives his life for his parents is a pious son. A man who gives his life for his king is a loyal subject. And a man who gives his life for all mankind is a saint.

Jesus Christ proclaimed this very truth you are hearing tonight. He strove for the fulfillment of God's truth on earth. He came not to satisfy his nation's selfish purpose, but to achieve salvation for the entire world.

God intended the chosen people of Israel to serve as the prepared instrument of the Messiah for his mission of world salvation. The people of Israel did not know this. They conceived of the coming Messiah as an invincible military conqueror who would restore the political empire of King David for the glory of the Jews. How wrong they were!

God's purpose is not the salvation of any particular man, church, or nation. God's purpose is to save the whole world. Therefore, the true church would give itself as a sacrifice for the benefit of the world. Yes, true Christians must be willing to sacrifice their own lives for the salvation of the world and all mankind. However, Christian teachings today are self centered. Christians are seeking their own personal salvation. Christians are crying out for "my salvation" and "my heaven." This is contrary to God's truth and contrary to God's ideal. We must steadfastly give, love, sacrifice, and live for the sake of others.

We must all work for the ideal way of life. I exist for my family, my family exists for our society, our society exists for our nation, our nation exists for the world, all the world exists for God, and God exists for you and me, for all mankind. In this great circle of give and take there is harmony, there is unity, and there is an eternal process of increasing prosperity. Furthermore, since in this circuit all existence will fulfill its purpose of creation, there is abundant and profound joy. This is the Kingdom of Heaven, in which feelings of happiness overflow.

In this world, selfishness ruins everything. Selfishness in the family causes disharmony, which then erupts into bitterness and strife. Everyone wants to be served instead of serving others. Wives tell their husbands what to do and then seek to be served. Husbands want to be served by their wives. Parents expect service from their children and the children take their parents for granted. This is demonstrated in our families, in our societies, and in our nations.

In this world today the nations are existing solely for their own national interests. They plot, connive, cheat, and lie. They destroy other nations for their own national benefit. Is there even one nation on earth which pledges to God, "God, you may use this nation as your sacrifice and as your altar, if that is the way you can save the world?" Tell me, where is such a nation? Where?

It is a recognized fact that when America demonstrated the spirit of service and sacrificial duty in the world, and went out of her way to help others in their need-when America gave lives, money, and a helping hand-she enjoyed a golden age. But now America has a selfish attitude. The domestic problems today are very difficult. America's situation is chaotic. Today there are greater divisions, more corruption, and graver problems choking this land.

I am not criticizing any people or nation. I am merely proclaiming the heavenly truth that all mankind is seeking.

I started the Unification Church. If this Unification Church exists solely for the benefit of the welfare of the Unification Church itself, then it is doomed to perish. I founded the Church so that I could give my life, my heart, and my soul for the advancement of the salvation of the world. Among this audience there are many members of the Unification Church. Their great desire, their only motivation is to serve others, to save this nation and the world.

Jesus did not teach his disciples laws of retaliation. He told them, ". . . if anyone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also; . . . and if anyone forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles." (Matt. 5:39,41) You never have to retaliate; all you have to do is completely and totally give, and then God will return to you more and more abundantly.

When Jesus was crucified, Roman soldiers pierced him. And Jesus prayed for his enemies: "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." (Luke 23:34) Even at the moment of death on the cross, Jesus was so earnest in forgiving. His very last act was motivated by his love for his enemies. He was the supreme form-of giving-a paragon of love. The example of Jesus- Christ is the absolute standard for all mankind. Just imagine an entire nation composed of Jesus-like men. What would you call it? The Kingdom of Heaven on earth-it could be nothing less.

Jesus Christ was lord over all life because of his unparalleled form of loving, giving, and sacrifice. He will remain the Lord forever. In the same way, no one in this universe surpasses the total giving and loving of God. So God is God forever. He reigns over all creation.

Look at the decline of Rome. The entire Roman Empire collapsed in front of the army with no weapons, the army of Jesus Christ. By what means did the Christians conquer Rome? They conquered by love, sacrifice, and total giving, up to the cost of their very lives. History is a witness that no empire can withstand the army of sacrificial love. And this history shall be repeated.

Up to now in our lives we did not know clearly the definition of good and evil. We could not be certain where to commit ourselves, when to act, what to serve. This has been the source of the greatest confusion in human lives. We must not become the Christians who merely crave their own well-being. As Christians, we must live the life of Jesus and give ourselves totally for the benefit of others, so that others might have life. This is God's way.

This present world is evoking the wrath of God. It truly deserves His uncompromising judgment. But God is love, and He is long-suffering. God is suppressing His anger because He wants to save us. He is giving us a chance to change. He is waiting.

I know that Western culture is characterized by individualism. However, selfish individualism is doomed. Sacrificial individualism will blossom. Individuality in itself is good. God gave each one of us a unique way to serve. But individualism without God can only build castles on the sands of

***The quiet revolution***

I can see a great change, a great new surge of revolution coming to America-not by fire, not by bullets, but by God's truth kindling a revolution of men's hearts. I have come here to ignite this spiritual revolution. I don't need to demonstrate in front of the White House or in Lafayette Square. The answer does not lie there, but in the hearts of men, in the quiet revolution from selfishness to unselfishness.

Can you imagine how wonderful the ideal society will be? Individuals will belong to their families, the family will belong to the society, the society will belong to the nation, the nation will belong to the world, the world will belong to God, and God will belong to you. He who gives the most will know God most deeply.

Some young people might say to me, "Rev. Moon, you are coming here repeating the same old stuff." But that is not at all true. I am speaking not from theory but from life. I am telling you that we are all here to live the truth, as Jesus lived the truth. This is not a theory, a philosophy, or a theological doctrine. It is the ultimate truth of God-not to be talked about, but to be lived.

When man makes this truth live, it is going to bring about the greatest change upon the face of the earth. Although in one sense you know the truth of the things I have been saying, still nobody truly believes them. Since nobody believes the truth, nobody ever lives it. This truth is as old as God, yet as new as the 21st century. You must live the truth. If the revelation of the Divine Principle has made this age-old truth real in your heart, then you have in effect discovered a brand-new truth. The Divine Principle is touching the hearts of millions of young people, showing them the way to our very real God. People throughout the world are learning that God is absolute and perfect, and perfect God demands perfect man as His object. Jesus said, "You, therefore, must be perfect, as your Heavenly Father is perfect." (Matt. 5:48) He is clearly indicating that our standard of value is the perfection of our Heavenly Father. Otherwise we cannot be God's objects and God cannot accept us.

All of us want to be perfect. All of us want heaven on earth, but we ask, "How can it be done?"

We wonder if it is at all possible for man to be perfect. Some contend, with apparent justification, that all one has to do is merely look at man to see the gross error of such an aspiration. We point to the sin and suffering inherent in all things even in the things that are most holy. We say, "Only God is perfect." However, when we fully comprehend the design for man in God's concept of creation, we will understand that perfection is within our grasp.

In God's ideal of creation we were designed as temples of God, temples of the spirit of God, where God is master. "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's spirit dwells in you?" (I Cor. 3:16)

We were designed to be God's temples. When we attain this status, we shall cease to possess a will that is corruptible. Limitations or laws will no longer be necessary, for His will is our will. With His spirit dwelling in us completely we shall move only as He dictates.

We shall then be perfect because the force that is guiding and directing us is the perfect force.

When man achieves this ultimate goal he is in perfect union with God. He is no longer living on the human level alone, but on the God-like level. He takes on God's qualities because the Spirit dwells in and possesses him as a perfect temple; he reflects God's virtue and power. Thus man can be as perfect as the Heavenly Father is perfect. This was the original pattern which God intended for mankind through Adam.

Marriage is the most important means of establishing God's kingdom on earth. Adam and Eve were God's first children. They were born of God, grew up in God, and would have matured into perfection in God. God intended to make Adam and-Eve one in heavenly matrimony. Then they would have borne sinless children and become the true mother and father for all mankind. They would have been the first "king" and "queen," establishing the Heavenly Kingdom on earth.

Has such a kingdom ever- existed? No. Instead, history started in the wrong direction. From the evil first step, Satan has been the god of this world. It has, therefore, been God's purpose of restoration, His purpose of salvation, to restore the perfected nation so that He can truly have His kingdom upon the earth. For this God needs a model. Who can set the criteria of perfection on this earth? To meet this need the Messiah comes.

Jesus Christ came as the Messiah. He was the model of perfection upon every level: The individual, family, tribal, national, and world-wide levels. He came to establish a perfect world in his lifetime, not over a period of centuries.

Before God sent His champion Jesus Christ, He prepared the field with the chosen people of Israel. They were the foundation for the Messiah's coming. The people of Israel could have perfected themselves and their nation if they had united with the coming of the Lord. The kingdom of God would have been a physical reality at that time.

### ***The mission of Jesus***

But Jesus was not accepted by his people. Instead of welcome, he met rejection at every level. Jesus was denied the opportunity to take a bride in the position of restored Eve, and to establish the first God-centered heavenly family. Instead, the people of Israel nailed him to the cross. Read I Cor. 2:8: "None of the rulers of this age understood this; for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory." Thus, the mission of Jesus Christ was left undone on earth.

The history of God's providence is a sad, sad story. To comfort the heart of God and fulfill His work, we must clearly understand His process of restoration.

When God created man, He placed Adam and Eve, man and woman, in the garden of Eden. They both united with Satan and became sinful, thereby leaving God isolated. In the process of restoration, God must restore both Adam and Eve. Jesus came as the sinless Adam, or perfected Adam. His first mission was, therefore, to restore his bride and form

the first family of God. All fallen generations would have been grafted onto him as the true olive tree. God-centered families, tribes, and nations would thus have been restored. Perfection would have reigned. The sinless state of God's kingdom could have been a reality for the last 2,000 years. This is why I Cor. 15:45 says Jesus is the "last Adam ' the second Adam.

Jesus came, but he was crucified. He was not given the chance to restore his bride. And this is why Jesus promised his second coming. Jesus Christ must come again to consummate the mission he left undone 2,000 years ago. Let me repeat: Jesus was a man, not God Himself. When he returns to earth he will come as a man in the position of the third Adam.

Let us understand more fully the significance of these revelations. in the book of Revelation, there is the prophecy of the marriage of the Lamb. God intended Adam and Eve to come together in heavenly matrimony in the garden of Eden. Since it was not realized at that time, God intended Jesus to fulfill this marriage in his time. But it was not realized by Jesus either because of the faithlessness of the chosen people.

Jesus was the second Adam. It was God's will for him to be blessed in heavenly matrimony with the second Eve, his restored bride. They would have become the True Parents for mankind. And all mankind would have found life by grafting onto them.

Jesus cautioned the people: "You are of your father the devil..." (John 8:44) Because of the beginning point of human history, we were born Satan's children. By the restoration of True Parents we will be reborn as children of our Heavenly Father, God, with full salvation into His sonship.

God's will was denied fulfillment in Jesus' time. That is why he is coming again as the third Adam. The marriage supper of the Lamb will take place. True Parents for all mankind will be realized in our time. God will bring forth His true family upon the face of the earth. All men will be made new through their True Parents. All will be made capable of bringing sinless children into the world. This will be done when Jesus Christ reappears. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth will then begin. This will be the day when the dwelling of God is with men. God will be full of joy. His own son as perfected third Adam will initiate an entirely new history upon the earth. On that day, we shall become living images of God. God will bring His kingdom to earth.

I pledge to you from the bottom of my heart that the realization of all this is at hand, in the fullness of God's time. The ultimate realization of this ideal has been the hope of God as well as the hope of man.

Thank you very much for your attentive listening. You have been a most gracious audience. Thank you.

**Chapter 14**  
**God's Hope for America**  
**October 21, 1973--Washington, D.C.**

Ladies and gentlemen, I would like to express once again tonight my thanks for your coming to my lecture. My topic tonight is "God's Hope For America."

I love all of you very much, because I love God--and God loves America and the American people.

It has been a cardinal principle of God's providence that in order to receive God's blessing you must first demonstrate your worthiness of the blessing. Throughout history there have been many righteous people who demonstrated their worthiness of God's blessing by leading sacrificial lives. Nevertheless, we know that the world we live in today is not literally God's kingdom. We learn that human history started on the wrong footing, on the evil side. This is why the Bible says that the god of this world is Satan.

It has been the strategy of God to summon champions out of this evil world in order to restore the world and build His kingdom. To understand His ways, let us therefore examine the history of God's providence. The family of Adam was the first family in God's creation. In this family there was a man, Abel, whom God chose to be His first champion. Abel served God wholeheartedly, and became the first man to give up his life for God's purpose.

### ***An incomprehensible mission***

Later on God called Noah as His champion. And Noah accomplished a very unusual mission. God directed Noah to build a ship, and he was to build it on the top of a mountain. Now, it is just common sense that in building a ship you need a shipyard by some body of water. But Noah's instructions were to build the ark on top of a mountain rather than at the seashore or riverside. How many of us here could accept that kind of mission? How many of us could obey such a command and set to work without a single shred of doubt?

In Noah's time, no one could believe that Noah had received a command from God--nor did anyone accept him in his mission of revealing the coming flood judgment. Can you imagine how Noah appeared to the people of his day? For 120 years he went up and down, up and down that mountain working on his boat. Would anyone among the ladies in the audience like to think of herself in the position of the wife of Noah? I don't think you would be a very happy wife.

Noah's wife must have packed his lunch basket every day, using only a little food. Noah was so busy with the ark he could not find time to provide for his family. Within only a few months the family squabbles must have begun, but it was not just for 12 months or 12 years that Noah's wife had to sustain her situation, but for 120 years. Why, then, did God ask of Noah such an incomprehensible mission? Why does God have to work that way? There is a reason. It is because of evil.

God cannot dwell together with evil. The direction of God is 180 degrees contrary to the direction of evil. God abhors evil! God cannot accept the things that the evil world accepts.

So God does not want anything to do with the evil world, or with whatever is tainted by evil.

We are all in the image of God and can find traits similar to His in our human nature. Consider if you have an enemy toward whom you have strong feelings; you don't want to so much as look at that person. Likewise, God will have nothing to do with the evil, satanic world. Therefore, in dealing with it, He chooses ways often incomprehensible to man.

God also tests the faith of man. He cannot do this by asking just ordinary things of people. We must be willing to comply with God's extraordinary instructions. We must display to God absolute faith. This is not an easy task. People thought Noah was a crazy man for building the ark. Nobody knew he occupied the central position in God's view.

Not only Noah, but other men of God seem to act in peculiar ways when they are seen from the worldly viewpoint. Let us take a look at Abraham.

### ***The idol-maker's son***

God summoned Abraham, not from a family headed by a man of God, but from an idol-maker's house, and ordered him to separate himself from his evil surroundings and leave his homeland. God wanted Abraham to be His champion. This was God's personal command. If Abraham had then discussed this matter with his father, the idol-maker would undoubtedly have asked him, "Are you crazy?" Abraham knew better than to mention anything to his father about his instruction from God. Who would have believed him? His mission was not just to say hello to his next door neighbor. God instructed him to journey to a strange land, as far away as Egypt.

Abraham's decision then was a lonely one, based upon his faith and his reliance upon God. By faith alone he made his decision and departed, with nothing on his mind except following the command of God. I know he stole away in the middle of the night. Suddenly he found himself wandering like a gypsy. He lived in self-denial; he had given up everything.

The champions of God have one characteristic in common: They begin their missions by denial of themselves and their surroundings. Isaac's son, Jacob, was no exception. Jacob was a man with strong willpower in service to God. He wanted to open an exemplary path, accomplishing something nobody else could duplicate.

In the Bible there are many stories about Jacob; One describes a very cunning act when he bought his elder brother's birthright in exchange for a bowl of pottage. And later on he stole his father's blessing, which was intended for his elder brother Esau. In this incident Jacob knew beyond any doubt that he would make an enemy out of his elder brother; He committed himself nonetheless. That craving in Jacob, that ardent desire for God's blessing, was so strong in his heart that God was really comforted. After obtaining Isaac's blessing, Jacob then escaped the danger of being killed by his elder brother when he fled from his homeland and went to the strange land of Haran.

For 21 years Jacob endured a life of tribulation in Haran. During that time Jacob was repeatedly deceived by his uncle Laban. Ten times Laban cheated Jacob, and Jacob did not complain even once. He just persevered and waited for the day when he could return to his blessed homeland. That day finally came, and at the ford of Jabbok, on the way back, God sent an angel to fight with Jacob. Now consider this: An angel from God suddenly appeared to Jacob and became a dreadful enemy. God was really pressing Jacob and testing the strength of his faith. Jacob had to wrestle with the angel. And he did wrestle.

Jacob didn't cease fighting all through the night. He never gave up. And then God knew that Jacob's determination was to fight to the end, even to death. Even when the angel hit his thigh bone and knocked it out of joint, Jacob still did not give up despite the pain. Jacob finally won the test. The angel of God surrendered, and said to him, "Your name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel, for you have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed." (Gen. 32:28)

### ***From Pharaoh's palace to the wilderness***

Later on God chose Moses as His champion. Imagine how fortunate Moses was to grow up in the Pharaoh's palace, where he could enjoy a luxurious life. But then one day, as a young man he suddenly stood up as the champion of his people; he could no longer stand the Egyptians' oppression of his people. At that moment he knew that God was with him. He rejected his surroundings, denied himself, and went to the wilderness of Midian. He awaited his ultimate mission for 40 years, persevering and growing worthy of God's blessing. Moses' life was very humble and meek. Every day he surrendered himself anew to God's purpose and asked His divine guidance, eagerly awaiting his eventual mission, the leading of his people out of Egypt.

These men, Abel, Noah, Abraham, Jacob, and Moses, were champions of God. Now let us look also at John the Baptist. Described in the Bible as a great saint and prophet, John the Baptist went around the countryside like a common vagabond. He went without shoes, wearing camel skin with a leather belt, sustaining himself on locusts and wild honey. This was not a customary way to live, even in John's time; and I don't think John the Baptist's parents were very proud of their son. They must have felt ashamed.

Suppose you put yourself in the position of parents with your son, John the Baptist, going out in the wilderness year after year and living like a beggar. How would you feel? I have traveled in Israel, and I don't believe you will find many locusts or much wild honey in the desert. John the Baptist had to beg for his food many times. Imagine him wearing a camel skin, half of his body exposed, barefoot and with a beard, going from one place to another begging for food. If I came up here on the podium tonight barefoot, with a beard and clothed in an animal skin, and then said I was proclaiming the word of God, I am sure you would think I was crazy.

### ***The rejection of Jesus***

Let us continue along this line and examine the situation of Jesus Christ himself. I am sure there are many devout Christians among you who have various opinions on the life of Jesus. How would you visualize Jesus' appearance? What was Jesus doing for the 30 years before his public ministry? Was he in a college studying? The Bible doesn't say he even went to elementary school. He was a laborer, an assistant to a carpenter. There is so much to know, so many hidden truths within the Bible which are not written explicitly. If I revealed some of those secrets I am sure you would be amazed. Even though I know these things, I could not tell you those stories lightly. For you would then ask, "How do you know such things?"

I learned them from Jesus. Yes, and I learned from God. Remember, at the time of Noah nobody could believe Noah. At the time of Abraham, nobody could believe Abraham. By the same token, even though I will honestly tell you what actually happened at the time of Jesus, no one will easily believe me.

From the point of view of the society of those days, Jesus was a fatherless child, an illegitimate child. In the sight of God he was conceived by the Holy Spirit, but there was no way to prove it to people! So set your thoughts in a realistic vein and just evaluate that I am going to say.

Mary conceived Jesus before marriage. Under the Jewish law, such a woman was to be condemned to death by stoning. Joseph suffered indignation because of Mary's situation, and quietly waited until the right time to divorce her. Then an angel appeared to Joseph and said to him, "You are to take Mary as your wife. Do not condemn her, for she has a special mission from God." If Joseph had not been a righteous man, Mary would have been automatically condemned to death by stoning.

### ***Joseph's lonely decision***

Now, do you think Joseph could have discussed this matter with his parents by saying, "Mother and Father, my wife-to-be, my betrothed, has conceived a child, but an angel said that this is the will of God, so I must take her as my wife and care for her"? What would Joseph's parents have said? There are many older couples in our audience. Put yourselves in the position of the parents of Joseph. You would not have believed Joseph if he spoke such things. Again, Joseph had to make a lonely decision. Without discussing the matter with anybody, he took his fiancée off to some secret hiding place.

I am sure Joseph went through a most difficult period in which he was full of suspicion about Mary. Joseph must have asked his wife-to-be, "Mary, we are close and have no secrets from one another. Now tell me what really happened to you. Who is the true father of the baby in your womb?" I am sure any husband would be very curious about this matter. If I had been in the position of Joseph I would have asked Mary this question. But Mary was telling the truth when she said, "I really do not know who is the father of this child. It was conceived by God." How many of us could believe this statement? It is easier to believe now, because we know who Jesus is, but this, was not the case during the lifetime of Jesus.

Therefore, Joseph had certain suspicions and injured feelings in his heart. He thought, "My wife is not truly honest with me." Because of these circumstances there was emotional turmoil and upheaval in Jesus' family even after he was born.

One instance in particular witnesses to this fact. One day Jesus met his mother at a wedding feast in Galilee, and Mary informed Jesus that they had run out of wine. He called out to his mother, saying, "O Woman, what have you to do with me?... " (John 2:4) The point is, he did not say, "Mother" but instead called out, "Woman." Later on a disciple of Jesus came to him saying, "Your mother and your brothers would like to see you." And Jesus replied, "Who are my mother and my brothers? . . . Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does the will of God is my brother, and sister, and mother:' (Mark 3:33-35) This indicated that in the eyes of Jesus the members of his family were not doing the will of God.

### ***Jesus' life of sorrow***

Jesus suffered great anguish within his own family. There are many hidden stories not yet revealed. Many of the facts about his suffering are unknown. The Bible leaves a scanty record of the 30 years before Jesus' public ministry. If this were a glorious record, we can be sure that God and Jesus' disciples would have revealed it. But Jesus lived in sorrow and grief; he was an obscure figure for 30 years. People were therefore shocked one day when they heard him say, "I am the fulfillment of the law" and "Moses wrote of me." He proclaimed, "I am the Son of God" and "The Father in heaven has sent me." "I am the way, the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but by me." How many of us could have accepted such extraordinary statements if we had lived in those days? Jesus just bewildered people, he sounded so outrageous. Even John the Baptist had difficulty seeing Jesus as the Son of God, and John was supposed to come to prepare the people and make straight the way of the Lord.

Today it is very easy to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God because for 2,000 years Christianity has been glorifying him as God. But in those days, the elders did not accept him. And the priests did not accept him either. They were no less intelligent than we are today. In fact, we would probably have compounded their mistakes if we had lived in the days of Jesus of Nazareth. They saw only an outcast, a blasphemer, and an outrageous heretic. They simply could not see the Son of God.

Jesus had been long awaited. The Messiah was expected for 2,000 years. But when he finally appeared, there was no reception for him. The faith of the Jews at that time was no less powerful, no less devout than the faith of Christians today. Yet we know that the people Jesus associated with were not on a par with the rest of society, that he mixed with harlots, tax collectors, and fishermen. We know the story that one day a young woman poured precious ointment over Jesus' body, then washed his feet with her hair. If we had seen these things, how many of us can say in a pious manner that we would have accepted Jesus as the Son of God?

The three years of Jesus' public ministry were a far cry from the anticipated messiahship. No one understood Christ's true mission. The people judged the Son of God with sinful eyes, according to their own earthly standards. And they treated him as they pleased. This sinful world can never be hospitable to the purity of Christ. He came to his own people but the people received him not.

### ***God seeks world salvation***

As I mentioned, all the saints and prophets and righteous men of history had first to deny themselves totally and give themselves up to God. When He summoned them, they gave up their homes, their fortunes, their families and their nations. God wants His champion on the individual level, on the family level, tribal level, national level and worldwide level. He has summoned His champions on each level. And the qualification for God's champion on any level always remains the same. He needs the absolute and untiring faith required to follow His command wherever it may lead. God needs total obedience to His will.

We must examine then, what is the will of God? Why does He give His people such a hard time? Individual salvation is certainly important in the sight of God. God does not neglect that. However, that is not the ultimate purpose of God's work. God's will is the salvation of the world! God needs an individual to be His champion for the ultimate goal of world salvation. God summoned one family to be an instrument for the salvation of the world. God summoned His people to achieve the salvation of the world. God wants to have a nation as His champion, for the ultimate fulfillment of world salvation.

People in the time of Jesus were anxiously awaiting the Messiah. But they were thinking only of their own national glory as Israel, the chosen people of God. They did not understand the universal mission of Jesus Christ. It was the purpose of God to send the Messiah to the chosen people of Israel so that the Messiah would unite with the chosen people. Then they could become soldiers of faith, to fight for and achieve the salvation of the world.

The foundation for the Messiah was laid through Jacob, the champion of the family, and through Moses, the champion of his people. Finally the Messiah came to the nation of Israel. He was to be the champion of the nation and the champion of the entire world. The purpose of God is not the salvation of one church or one nation alone. It is the will of God that He sacrificed the lesser for the greater. Therefore He will sacrifice the church or the nation for the world. If Christians today think only of their own salvation, their own heaven and their own well-being, then they are not living in accordance with the purpose of God. If we are only concerned with the salvation of our own families, we are not worthy of God's blessing. If people focus on benefiting their own people alone, or their nation alone, then they are absolutely going against the will of God.

God will give you your own salvation. When you become God's champion for world salvation, your own salvation is guaranteed. Now, the Christian population is probably one-seventh of the total world population. But among these, very few are devout

Christians. And among devout Christians, how many of us really strive for the salvation of mankind? We must all devote ourselves to the salvation of the world!

God cannot be pleased with man if we live in a self-centered way. I met Jesus personally, and I received a revelation through which I learned that God's grief is great. His heart is broken. Today God is working ceaselessly for the ultimate salvation of all mankind. He needs His champion to succeed in this work. The purpose of God's church is to save the entire world. The church is the instrument of God, and it was this very fact that the chosen people of Israel forgot at the time of Jesus.

Beginning with this knowledge, let us now continue our historical perspective and determine how America has become blessed.

### ***The course of Christianity***

After Jesus' crucifixion and glorious resurrection, the Christian church spread throughout Asia Minor. The principal thrust was Rome. Rome was the target because at that time Rome was "the world." For the world to be saved Rome had to be conquered by the army of Jesus Christ. But this was an impossible battle, an inconceivable goal. The Roman Empire appeared as an impregnable fortress not subject to conquest. Jesus' army was barehanded. They used no weapons, neither swords nor spears. They were armed only with their love of God and Jesus Christ. They marched fearlessly onward, in conviction and strength. They paid the price in blood and sacrifice.

There can be no stronger army than the one which fears no death. No enemy is invincible against an army of faith. History is witness to the deeds of that army of Jesus. The Roman Empire fell at last, and Jesus conquered Rome. Roman Catholicism became the center of God's dispensation of world salvation. The Pope was in the position to become God's champion.

However, in the Middle Ages, great corruption appeared in the Church, and Christianity disintegrated in spirit. Medieval church hierarchies were interested in their own power, their own authority, and their own welfare. The Church enjoyed formidable power both politically and economically. The hierarchy preserved this power, abused this power, and forgot about God's purpose. They clung tenaciously to their positions and ruthlessly persecuted any opponent. The Church leaders claimed lineage from Jesus' disciples, yet they could not rise above their own sins. The Christian spirit in these men was absolutely dead.

But God had to continue forward. He is never satisfied with less than a total response. The Church needed reform, so religious revolution came. Martin Luther launched the new Protestant Reformation. And the crackling flames of dissatisfaction quickly swept over all Europe, in a storm of revolt against the power of the Church. These protesters disclaimed the old church of their fathers. Throughout the land, righteous people determined to win liberation from the old doctrines and practices. They wanted to worship God, not the Church. Equality in the sight of God was their claim. Direct communication with God was their desire. They helped God bring the world step by step closer to the ultimate goal.

Later in England, the people again protested against the intolerable corruption of the autocratic Church. There was an outcry for the purification of the Church of England. The Puritan movement began, and it quickly spread even amid great persecution. These new seekers threatened the established Church leaders, who used almost any means to suppress the new movement. Those who truly wanted the freedom of worship soon had either to flee or to be imprisoned. Their spirit was strong, but they had not enough power to resist and yet nowhere to turn. They fled to Holland. And still they longed for some new world, some new heaven and new earth where they could find freedom to worship God.

### ***The Pilgrim fathers***

America must have seemed attractive to those who were dreaming of a new world. Even though America was unknown territory, it promised them the freedom of worship they craved. The Puritans felt a strong desire to create a community of their own. America seemed an ideal place, so they made the courageous decision to venture there. They committed themselves to the treacherous journey across the Atlantic. They risked their very lives, finding strength in their faith, which was stronger than life itself.

Think of it: They had to give up their families, their relatives, their surroundings, and their country, and head toward an unknown land. Their only hope was in God. Every step they took they depended upon God. Their journey was long, and there were many storms. They prayed unceasingly to God. They had but one way to turn. They turned to God. When they were sick and dying on the voyage, they had no medicine to take, no doctor to care for them; they turned to God. Those Pilgrim men and women were one with God. And that is how they survived.

Put yourself in their position of total reliance on God. What a wonderful faith! I am sure that the faith of the Pilgrim Fathers touched the heart of God. And when God is moved He offers promises; and when He makes promises, He will fulfill them. God determined to give these faithful people the ultimate thing they wanted--freedom of worship. He then determined to give them even more.

I am sure you know, as I have learned, that the Mayflower arrived at Plymouth Rock in New England almost in the dead of winter. November in New England is rather cold. The destiny of the newcomers could have been only starvation because there was so little food to eat. Given this fact, it really inspires me to learn about the store of grain in the hold of the Mayflower which they would not touch, even though they were starving to death. They preserved this grain for planting the next spring. This was truly a supreme example of sacrifice. They preferred to die hoping in tomorrow rather than to act in desperation for only a few more days of life.

The Pilgrims came to this land full of purpose and hope. They knew that this purpose of theirs was more important than preserving their own lives. Nothing could have given them this kind of courage, this kind of dedication, this kind of sacrificial spirit except their faith in God. When they arrived at Plymouth, the 41 men who had survived the voyage got together and organized their ideas for government. The resulting Mayflower Compact was

signed, "In the Name of God, Amen." This is really a wonderful story. This little group of people left Europe with their hope set in God. They grew sick and died in God; they survived in God. They formed their first government and signed their official papers, "In the Name of God."

The story of the American Pilgrim Fathers is one of a kind in God's history. It fits into the pattern of the righteous people of history, such as Abraham, Isaac, and Moses. These Pilgrims were the Abrahams of modern history. They therefore had to brave many hardships even after the Mayflower Compact was signed.

### ***A winter of heartbreak***

During the first winter in America, the population of the hardy Mayflower survivors was cut in half. Each day that winter brought a heartbreaking separation from loved ones. One by one these courageous pioneers died. Yet their life from morning to night, from dusk to dawn, was centered upon the will of God. God was their only comfort, their only hope and their only security. God was the principal partner for them. Here was an example of such a rare and pure group of God's people. They demonstrated untiring faith, and God gave them power and courage. They never lost their trust in God and their vision of the future. Their purpose in coming to America was to build a nation where God could dwell, where they could really share fellowship with each other and rejoice in fellowship with God. This was all in God's providence, because He needed a nation to serve as His champion for the ultimate and permanent salvation of the world.

So another miracle came to the Pilgrims. When they were just barely surviving and their population had been halved, the Indians could easily have wiped them out with one stroke. But again, God was a shield for them. The first group of Indians the Mayflower survivors encountered were not hostile. The Indians welcomed the settlers. If the Pilgrims had been destroyed at that time, there would probably have been no America for God. God intervened to save His people here in America. This is my belief. God wanted them to settle, and He gave the Pilgrims a chance.

As the population of the settlement grew, they had to push the Indians away to enlarge their own colony. Of course, this land did not belong to the new American people originally. The Indians were the inhabitants of the land, and the Pilgrim settlers must have been invaders in the eyes of the Indians. Why then did God give these settlers their great chance? Here is my interpretation: God sided with the American settlers because it was in His plan. Furthermore, these American settlers met God's requirements and truly demonstrated an unwavering faith in God. God could not help but give them His promise and fulfill that promise.

America's existence was according to God's providence. God needed to build one powerful Christian nation on earth for His future work. After all, America belonged to God first, and only after that to the Indians. This is the only interpretation that can justify the position of the Pilgrim settlers.

This continent of America was hidden away for a special purpose and was not discovered until the appropriate hour. The people of God came at the appointed hour. They came to mold the new way of life. Their principal partner was God. At home, in caring for their children, in farming or cooking or building, they let God share their work. He was the only security they had. A farmer might talk to his son working out in the field with him. "Let's plow this field in the name of God." Their everyday life was lived in the name of God.

After the first spring visited them, they cleared the fields, planted, cultivated, and harvested the crop. And they attributed all their precious harvest to the grace of God. The beautiful tradition of Thanksgiving thus originated. Following the next severe winter, the first thing they built was a church. At night, at dawn, in the morning and at noontime, they prayed to God. I am sure they prayed, "God, we want to build a place for You which must be better than the Old World. We want to build a place where You can dwell and be master."

And they also had a vision of the future that this Christian nation would do more good for the rest of the world than any other country upon the face of the earth. I am sure that after their church they built a school. They wanted outstanding schools for their children, better than any schools existing in the Old World. And their homes came last. After they built these homes, they dedicated them to God. This is the history of your Pilgrim fathers, I know. I can visualize early America as a beautiful America, because God was dwelling everywhere. In the school, in the church, in the kitchen, in the street--in any assembly or market place, God was dwelling.

### ***The birth of America***

I understand that in America you are approaching your nation's 200th birthday. Let us therefore examine the people who led the independence movement in this country in 1776. Those freedom fighters were traitors in the eyes of the British crown. But God could use these traitors as His instruments, as His people, and through them He conceived and built the best nation upon the face of the earth.

George Washington, Commander-in-Chief of the Continental Army, tasted the bitterness of defeat in many, many battles. When he finally faced the last heartbreaking winter at Valley Forge, he was serious. I am sure George Washington prayed like this: "God, it is You who led our people out of Europe and brought us over here to the New World: You don't want us to repeat the dull, gray history of Europe. You liberated us and gave us freedom. You don't want to see the mistakes in Europe repeated in this land. Let me give you my pledge. I will build one nation under God." Thus George Washington made his battle God's battle, and therefore the victory won was a victory for God.

I know that this victory and the independence of America came because God accepted George Washington's prayer, along with the prayers of many other Americans. God knew that His champions would work for His new nation. But George Washington had nothing to work with, and the British army had everything--power, authority, tradition, and equipment. They were proud of their military strength. The American Continental Army had no

ammunition and few soldiers. George Washington finally had one weapon only: faith in God. I believe that George Washington's position paralleled David's in his fight against the giant Goliath. David won his battle in the name of God. They both let God vanquish their foe. Each of them put his whole heart, his whole being, his whole sacrificial spirit into the battle, and won.

Now it is a significant fact that throughout history, God's people could never be blessed on their own homeland. God moves them out of their homeland and settles them on foreign soil, and there they can become a people and a nation of God. According to the pattern, the American people journeyed in faith out of their homelands, came across the ocean to the New World, and here they received God's blessing. God had a definite plan for America. He needed to have this nation prosper as one nation under God. With God, nothing is impossible. So out of the realm of impossibility the independence of America became a fact, and upon its foundation, great prosperity came.

The British army fought for their king. For them, the British crown was supreme. The American army fought for their king. God was their only King, and He alone was supreme. The New World was pioneered in the name of God. America is called 'the land of opportunity' Here is the soil on which people find opportunity in God.

### ***America as God's instrument***

The Christian tradition in America is a most beautiful thing for foreigners to behold when they come to this country. I learned that every day your Congress is convened in prayer. Your president is sworn into office by putting his hand on the Bible. One day I visited a small prayer room in your Capitol building. When your leaders have grave decisions to make, they come to this place, kneel humbly before God and ask His help. There is a stained glass window depicting George Washington on his knees in prayer. Here I saw the true greatness of America. From the highest echelons of Congress way down to the rustic customs of the countryside, evidence of dependence on God can be seen everywhere in America.

In this respect America is a unique nation. Even your money, the bills and coins, are impressed with such a beautiful inscription, "In God We Trust." No other nation does such a thing. Then whose money is it, your money? Is it American money? No, it is God's money. Every bill or coin says so. You are the stewards, and God has deposited His wealth in your hands. Yes, this nation is not the American nation, it is God's nation. And such a nation exists for the entire world, not just for America herself. Yes, America was formed as a new nation, a new Christian nation under a new tradition. The shackles of old traditions fell away in America. You must want to build a new nation under God.

God's purpose is the salvation of the world and all mankind. Today in America, therefore, you must not think that you have such wealth because you yourselves are great. We must humbly realize that the blessing of God came to America with the purpose of making it possible for God to use this nation as His instrument in saving the world. If America betrays God, where can God go? If America rejects God, where can God go to fulfill His

aim? Do you want to let him try to go to the communist world? To underdeveloped countries? God wants to have America as His base, America as His champion. And America has begun in the sacrificial spirit pursuing God's purpose. America must consummate her history in the same sacrificial spirit for God's purpose. Then America will endure forever!

Let me compare two striking examples. The people who came to America--to North America--came seeking God and freedom of worship. The sole motive of the first settlers was God. When they came for God, they not only found God, but they also found freedom and wealth. At the same time many people went to South America. Their sole motivation was to find gold. South America is a fertile land, no less than the North American continent. But when the colonists' motivation was gold, they could find neither gold, nor God, nor freedom. And the South American countries remain underdeveloped nations.

America is the miracle of modern history. You have built the most powerful nation in history in a short time. Was this miracle possible only because you worked hard? Certainly you did work hard. However, hard work is not explanation enough. If God had not been the principal partner, creating today's America would have been impossible. God played a prime role in American history, and this He wants America to know.

The time has come for the American people to be awakened. Because of the noble beginning of this country, God sent His blessing and promise. The sacrificial devotion of your ancestors was the foundation for God's blessing. If you betray your ancestors, if you betray God, there is only one way for America to go. It will go to destruction. Since America was built on the pillars of faith in God, if God is moved out of American life, your nation will be without support. Your decline will be rapid.

### ***Communism and the free world***

We reap as we sow. Today the world is divided into two major camps and a global struggle faces us. Why has this phenomenon occurred? History was sown in the time of Jesus. Jesus was the seed of history. His crucifixion was the sowing. There were two thieves crucified with Jesus, one on the right-hand side, and one on the left-hand side.

Since Jesus went into heaven through the cross, at the time of reaping he will return through the cross. The circumstances at the time of the crucifixion of Jesus form the pattern which will be repeated on the global scale when the time of his return comes. And that time is now.

Today, we are aware that communism is a strong force in this world. The communists say, "There is no God." And the democratic world or free world says, "God exists." Why do we call the democratic faction in politics "right" and the communist faction "left?" Where did this terminology come from? There is an ultimate reason seen from the historical perspective we have been pursuing. This was already determined at the time of Jesus' crucifixion. The thief crucified on Jesus' right side foreshadowed the democratic world, and the thief crucified on Jesus' left side represented the communist world.

The thief on the left side condemned Jesus even on the cross, saying, "Are you not the Christ? Save yourself and us!" (Luke 23:39) He was saying: If you really were the Son of God, you would come down and save yourself and save me. Jesus was silent. He did not answer the man. There was also a defender of Jesus, the thief on the right. He said to the thief on the left, "Do you not fear God, since you are under the same sentence of condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we are receiving the due reward of our deeds; but this man has done nothing wrong." (Luke 23:40-41)

What faith was shown by this man on the right-hand side of the cross! He forgot his own death and defended Jesus. What a noble deed. And Jesus responded: "Truly, I say to you, today you will be with me in Paradise." (Luke 23:43)

At this moment the seed was sown by the left-hand side thief that the God-denying world would come into being--the Communist world today. And the seed for the existence of a God-fearing world was sown by the thief on the right-hand side. The free world is in the position of the right-hand side thief. And America is the center of those God-fearing free world nations. America has been chosen as the defender of God whereas Communism says to the world, "There is no God."

It is America's position to say to the Communists, "What are you talking about? God exists. God dwells right here, with us." Is America taking this position? No! Today's America is quickly turning self-centered and away from God. America doesn't seem to care about the rest of the world. But you must give America to the rest of the world as a champion for God. When America helped others, sent out missionaries and more aid to starving people, she enjoyed her golden age. Confrontation with communism could be done from a position of strength at that time.

But today America is retreating. It is not just an accident that great tragedy is constantly striking America and the world, such as the assassination of President Kennedy and the sudden death of Secretary General Hammarskjold of the United Nations, both in the same decade. The spirit of America has declined since then. Unless this nation, unless the leadership of this nation, lives up to the mission ordained by God, many troubles will plague you. God is beginning to leave America. This is God's warning.

### ***God's warning***

In our time, all Christians should be world champions, destined to fulfill for God the role of the right-hand side thief. Christians must rise and be willing to struggle for the salvation of the world. But Christians today are too busy perfecting their separate denominations and church interests. We must unite with the coming of the Lord. The end of the world signifies that the time of the arrival of the Lord of the Second Advent is near. He must have a base somewhere, some foundation prepared upon which he can begin to fulfill his mission. America is meant to be that base, but America is deeply troubled.

When I first came to America, I went to New York and stood on Fifth Avenue during the rush hour. Suddenly tears began pouring down my face. I looked at the wonder of the

Empire State Building and the magnificence of the new Trade Center--the tallest buildings in the world. But I asked myself, "Does God dwell in those buildings?"

New York is becoming more and more a city without God. It is a city of crime. Such a beautiful city is now crumbling. I can see so much immorality and so many signs of godlessness in that city. It was shocking to my eyes as I stood watching during that rush hour. I could see so many things at once that are all intolerable in the sight of God.

I asked God, "Is this the purpose for which you blessed America?" I know God wants to see His spirit prevail in those great buildings. In those beautiful automobiles He wants to see young people bubbling with enthusiasm for God and the love of others. It doesn't take the Empire State Building to glorify God; it doesn't take a 1973 automobile to glorify God. Even if you have only a rock as your altar, when you pour out your hope and your tears upon it for the service of God, God is with you. I can really see that God is leaving the great city of New York. New York is instead becoming the city of evil.

America has been known as the "melting pot" where people of all colors, creeds; and nationalities are melted into one new breed. In order to melt anything, heat is required. Do you know who provided the heat for America? God was that heat. Without God, you could never have melted your people together.

America could only achieve true brotherhood through the Christian spirit, but when you begin to lose this foundation, America's moral fiber will deteriorate. Today there are many signs of the decline of America. What about the American young people? What about your drug problems and your juvenile crime problems? What about the breakdown of your families? I hear that three out of every four marriages in America end in divorce. The California state government is issuing more divorce certificates than marriages licenses.

What about racial problems and the threat of communism? And what about the economic crises? Why are all these problems occurring? These are signs that God is leaving America. I can read the sign which says, "God is leaving America now!" If this trend continues, in a very short time God will be with you no longer. God is leaving America's homes. God is leaving your society. God is leaving your schools. God is leaving your churches. God is leaving America. There are many signs of atheism in this once God-centered nation: There have been many laws enacted that only a godless society could accept. There was a time when prayer was America's daily diet. Today you hear prayers in American schools no longer.

### ***A new spiritual revolution***

You may want to ask, "Who are you to say these things to the American people?" Then please raise your hands if any of you can take the responsibility for this country. For the last 10 years American churches have been declining in spirit; American churches are becoming senior citizens' homes. The future of America depends upon the young people, and the churches are failing to inspire America's youth. We need a spiritual revolution in America. A revolution of heart must come to America. Individualism must be tied into God-centered ideology. Who is going to do this? Who is going to kindle the hearts of American

youth? Will the president do this? Will wealthy American businessmen do this? Will American churches do this?

I know that God sent me here to America. I did not come here for the luxurious life in America. Not at all! I came to America not for my own purposes, but because God sent me. For 6,000 years God has been working to build this nation. The future of the entire world hinges on America. God has a very great stake in America. Somebody must come to America and stop God from leaving.

My followers in Korea bade me farewell in tears. I know there are still many things to do in Korea. But working with only Korea would delay world salvation. America must be God's champion. I know clearly that the will of God is centered upon America. I came from Korea, I gave up my surroundings in Korea, just as many people have in the history of God's providence. I do not come to this country to make money. When I came to America, I committed my fortune, my family, and my entire life to America. I came to a new country where I can serve the will of God.

We must be humble. We must initiate from this moment the greatest movement ever on earth, the movement to bring God back home. All of your pride, your wealth, your cars and your great cities are like dust without God. We must bring God back home. In your homes, your churches, your schools and your national life, our work for God's purpose must begin. Let's bring God back, and make God's presence in America a living reality.

I have initiated a youth movement which is probably the only one of its kind in United States history. This is a new Pilgrim movement. Does it seem strange that a man from Korea is initiating an American youth movement for God? When you have a sick member of your family, a doctor comes from outside of your house. When your house is on fire, the fire fighters come from outside. God has a strange way of fulfilling His purpose. If there is no one in America meeting your needs, there is no reason why someone from outside cannot fulfill that role. America belongs to those who love her most.

### ***The quality of faith***

The mere numbers of the Christian population in America are not impressive. You cannot impress God with numbers, but only with fervent faith. The standard is the quality of Abraham's faith. How many Christians in America are really crying out with fervor for God? How many American Christians feel that God's work is their own work? How many people put God first? How many are ready to die for God?

Somebody must begin, and begin now. Even under persecution somebody must begin. Someone must give himself up for the purpose of God and bring God back home. We must have our churches filled with fiery faith; we must create new homes where our families can be really happy, and we must finally create a new society, a new spiritual nation where God can dwell. America must go beyond America! This is the only way for this country to survive. I know this clearly: This is the will of God. Therefore, I have come to America, where I become one voice crying in the wilderness of the 20th century.

In the last few weeks, and in particular in the last few days, our Unification Church people greeted every one of you--and not just once, twice, or three times. You are almost tired of them, I am sure. But put yourself in these young people's positions. Why are they doing this? Does it bring them any material profit? Eighty-five percent of the young people in our movement are college graduates. They are capable of earning tens of thousands of dollars a year, but instead they are going out on the streets asking you to come to these lectures. Their hearts are compassionate. They have one purpose: They want to save America. They want to bring God back to America and they know that by serving the world they can save America.

These young people are here to rekindle America's spirit. America has a great tradition. All you have to do is revive it. We need a new movement of Pilgrims with a new vision. This is inevitable, because God left no alternative for America. You have no other direction in which to turn. The new Pilgrim movement has come--not for America alone, but for the world. In other words, the movement for world salvation must begin in this country. America is the base and when America fulfills her mission you will be eternally blessed.

This is God's hope for America. This is God's ardent hope for you. For myself, I made a covenant with our young people of America that we will strive in partnership with God for this great crusade. I want you to join, I want you to support these young people.

There is nowhere else to turn. When you bring God back into your home, your home will be secure. Your juvenile delinquency problem will be solved. There is no good answer to the racial problem except God. Communism will be no threat when God is made real. God will increase your wealth. This is the one way that America can save herself.

This is my deep desire, from my heart, that America will see the glorious day of renewal. And for this reason I come to speak to you with hope for America.

I really appreciate, particularly tonight, every one of you who has come and listened so thoughtfully. May God bless your home, bless your work. Thank you very much.

## **Chapter 15**

### **The Future of Christianity**

#### **October 28, 1973--New Orleans, Louisiana**

Ladies and gentlemen, thank you very much for coming tonight. My topic this evening is, "The future of Christianity."

Tonight I am going to speak about some new revelations from God which are very vital to the understanding of all Christians. I will also frequently mention the chosen people of Israel. I am sure there are many Christians and Jewish people in the audience. I dearly love all Christian brothers and sisters, and I have high esteem for the Jewish people. I beg you to understand before I begin that what I will say in no way reflects my personal feeling. I am only bearing witness to the truth.

Sometimes testimony to the truth is a painful task. Yet it is a mission that it is my duty to fulfill. The content of my message tonight may be contrary to your previous

understandings. Some things may be very new to you. May I ask you to think over seriously what you hear.

Unless I had something new to reveal, I would not come here to speak to you at all. Why should I come if only to repeat the things that you already know? I would like for you and me to spend this time together in open mindedness so that the spirit of God can speak directly into our hearts. Jesus taught in his Sermon on the Mount:

Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. (Matt. 5:3,5,6)

Tonight I humbly ask you to be the poor in spirit. I ask you to be the meek, and I ask you to become those who hunger and thirst for righteousness. Then we will all see the Kingdom of Heaven, and we shall all be satisfied. Now let us begin.

Christians, and Christianity itself, have a final hill to cross. Biblical prophecy states that Christians must pass through the end of the world and face the judgment of fire at the great and terrible day of the Lord. The Bible says we are going to see many extraordinary phenomena, in heaven and on earth, as the end comes near.

When Jesus promised his Second Coming, he conveyed a feeling of great imminence. From the day Jesus Christ ascended into heaven, Christians have been watching for his return to earth. For the last 2,000 years of history, it has been the hope of every Christian to see the returning Christ. But this extraordinary event has never occurred. Many people tired of waiting. Some finally decided this Second Coming would not happen literally. They came to think, "This is just one of God's methods to keep us alert."

Tonight we must clarify the meaning of the end of the world as the Bible prophesies it. We must also know how the Lord will reappear when he comes in the fullness of time.

We should first of all understand that God did not create the world to end. He always intended the world of goodness to last forever. The God who does not create for eternity cannot be an almighty God. The present world must end, however, because the fall of man initiated a history of evil. The end of the world is necessary because we have not achieved God's intended world of goodness. Instead of becoming children of goodness, we have in reality become creatures of evil.

### ***The wrong direction of history***

Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden. They were not at that time in a position to have a clear understanding of the will of God. They entered into a state of confusion and made the wrong choice. They were confronted with either obedience to God, which would have brought about the good world, or obedience to Satan, which did in fact bring about their fall. Between two clear choices, Adam and Eve made the wrong one. They brought evil into the world. God's original intention was to create His ideal world--a good and prosperous world He determined to last for eternity. But man fell, the good world of God ended abruptly, and human history started in the wrong direction.

The history of mankind is therefore a history of evil. God sowed good seed, and He intended to harvest a good crop. But Satan stole His crop before it was ripened and reaped a harvest of evil. Human history is a crop of weeds.

Then what does the end of the world mean? Just what is going to end? Evil is going to end. God will put an end to all evil. Out of God's new beginning will come a new opportunity for man. And the goodness God intended in His original ideal can be made real.

In the garden of Eden man fell into evil instead of developing his goodness. Man was subjugated by Satan and became the child of sin. Therefore the Bible says:

'You are of your father the devil. . .' (John 8:44)

If the fall of man had not occurred, then the true ruler would be God. But He is not today the king of this universe, because Satan is sitting upon God's throne. God has to remove all results of the fall of man before He can truly reign over the world.

Now I will give you clearly the definition of the end of the world. The end of the world is the moment in history when God ends evil and begins His new age. It is the time of the cross junction between the old history of evil and the new history of good.

In light of this definition, why does the Bible predict extraordinary heavenly phenomena as signs of the end of the world? Will the things predicted really occur? The Bible says:

'Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken' (Matt. 24:29)

What does this mean? What are we to expect?

First of all, please rest assured that these things will not happen literally. God will not destroy anything in the universe. God often expresses His truth in symbols and parables, and these biblical sayings will be accomplished symbolically. Secondly, God has no reason to destroy the universe. It is not the universe, but man who has committed sin. Only man deviated from the original plan of God's creation. Why should God destroy the animals, or the plants, or anything in creation which fulfilled His purpose as He intended? God would not destroy those innocent things.

The Bible there says,

'A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever' (Eccl. 1:4)

But in Revelation we read:

'Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away.. .' (Rev. 21:1)

That new heaven and new earth refers to the coming of a new history of God, a time

of new dominion. After you buy a house, won't you move in your family and possessions? Then you will say that you have a new home, and you are the new master of the house. In the same way, when men of God occupy this universe, it will become a new heaven and a new earth.

We know that when winter ends, spring begins. But can we say at precisely what point spring starts? Who can pinpoint the exact instant of transition? You cannot know because the passage from one season to another takes place imperceptibly, quietly. The end of winter is similar to the beginning of spring, so there is no discernible moment of transition.

At what moment does the old day end and a new day begin? Although the change occurs in darkness, there is no doubt that we do go from one day to the next. The change is unnoticeable at first, but it is also inevitable and irrevocable. Although three billion people live on earth, not one among them can point to the exact moment when the old day passes and the new day begins. So we understand that from the human point of view we cannot always know the precise moment things happen. But God knows when winter passes into spring, and God knows when night opens into day. And God can point to the transition into new history.

Our step into new history is like a glorious dawn emerging out of the blackest night. The crossing point between good and evil is not obvious. You will not notice it when it happens, but it will definitely take place, just as surely as the sun will rise tomorrow.

### ***God's servants and prophets***

Then how can we know when the end is approaching? God will not hide this moment from man; He does not suddenly bring judgment on the world without warning. God will announce the coming of the great and terrible day through his prophets. Amos 3:7 says,

'Surely the Lord God does nothing, without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets.'

God chooses His instrument and through him God announces His plans. This has been the case throughout Bible history.

The person to be chosen as God's prophet must be one of the people living in our evil world. But he must be a man of faith who can demonstrate that he is worthy to be used by God. He must show absolute faith. To do this he must give up all worldly success and completely separate himself from this evil world. He must purify himself by cutting off all evil attachments. He will not be popular in the evil world. God is absolute good and therefore the exact opposite of evil. That is why evil always persecutes a man of God.

Noah was such a man chosen by God and scorned by the evil world. God instructed Noah to build a ship. He sent Noah to the heights of a mountain instead of down by the riverside or to the seashore. God's command was so ridiculous in the eyes of the evil world that many people laughed at Noah. He was ridiculed, not because people thought him a particularly funny man, but because he followed God's instructions so faithfully. The eyes of the world could not understand the way of God. In this manner, with such implausible instructions, God could test the faith of the man he had chosen

as His champion. This is what happened in Noah's day.

And at the time of Abraham it was no different. God called Abraham, the son of an idol-maker, and commanded him, "Leave your home at once!" God does not allow for any compromise. God takes a position where evil can be totally denied. In no other way can good begin.

God has said He will start a new history, in which no element of evil will remain. God demands complete response from man. Those who follow God's direction must begin from absolute denial of the evil world. That is why Jesus Christ taught:

'He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will find it.'  
(Matt. 10:39)

He also said,

' . . . a man's foes will be those of his own household.' (Matt. 10:36)

You may ask, what kind of message is this? This is God's way, to choose His own people and put them in a position where they will be rejected by evil. Otherwise His champion can do no good for God. From the point of view of God's standard, then, modern Christians have been having a very easy time. This is very strange, because there is no easy way indicated in Christian teaching. I wonder how many Christians are really serious about following the path of God? God's demand is absolute. It allows for no middle ground.

Then how can we know clearly the path of God? Let us examine the history of God's providence. Today we are anticipating the end of the world. God has made previous attempts to end the world. For example, the time of Noah: That was a crossroads in history, when God wanted to bring an end to evil and begin the world of goodness. Noah was the central figure chosen in God's dispensation. To better understand Noah's mission and the meaning of the end of the world, we want to know more fully how the evil history began.

In the garden of Eden, God gave Adam and Eve a commandment. That commandment was the word of God. Then Satan approached and enticed them with a lie. And that lie was the word of evil. Adam and Eve were in a position to choose between the two words: The truth was on one side, and a lie was on the other. They chose the lie.

Because this was the process of the fall of man, at the end of the world God will give mankind truth. The words of God will come through His prophet. When man accepts the words of God he will then pass from death to life, because truth brings life. Man has died in a lie, and in truth he will be reborn.

### ***The judgment of words***

Therefore judgment comes by words. These words of God's judgment will be revealed by His chosen prophets. This is the process of the ending of the world. Those who obey and listen to the new word of truth shall have life. Those who deny the word will continue to live in death.

God chose Noah to declare the word. Noah's announcement was, "The flood is coming. The salvation is the ark." The people could have saved themselves by listening to Noah's words. However, the people treated Noah as if he were a crazy man, and they perished--because they opposed the word of God. According to the Bible, only the eight people of Noah's immediate family became passengers on the ark. Only these eight believed, and only these eight were saved.

God had said to Noah,

'I have determined to make an end of all flesh; for the earth is filled with violence through them; behold, I will destroy them with the earth.' (Gen. 6:13)

Did this actually happen? We know the evil people perished, but was the physical world demolished in the process? No. This passage was not literally fulfilled, and God did not destroy the earth. God did eradicate the people and destroy evil the sovereignty, leaving only the good people of Noah's family. This was God's way to begin to restore the original world of goodness through Noah.

If God had fully consummated His restoration at that time, then we would have heard no more about the end of the world. Once the perfect world of goodness is realized, another end of the world is not necessary. Nothing could then interfere with the eternal reign of God's perfect kingdom.

But the very fact that we anticipate the end of the world today is proof that God did not succeed at the time of Noah. What happened to Noah after the flood should be fully explained, but I cannot spend too much time on that subject tonight. To make a long story short, once again, sin crept into Noah's family through his son, Ham. God's flood judgment was thereby nullified, and evil human history continued until the time of Jesus Christ.

With the coming of Christ, God again attempted to end the world. Jesus came to start the new Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Thus, the first words Jesus spoke were, "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." Indeed, the time of Jesus Christ's ministry was the end of the world. That great and terrible day was prophesied by Malachi, about 400 years before the birth of Jesus:

For behold, the day comes, burning like an oven, when all the arrogant and all evil-doers will be stubble; the day that comes shall burn them up, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch! (Mal. 4:1)

Was the judgment of Jesus Christ done by literal fire? Did the day come at the time of Jesus when everything literally turned to ashes? No, we know it did not. Since these things prophesied did not literally happen at that time, some people say that such prophecy must have been meant for the time of the Second Advent. But this cannot be the case.

John the Baptist came to the world as the last prophet; Jesus said:

' . . . all the prophets and the law prophesied until John . . . ' (Matt. 11:13)

The coming of John the Baptist should have put an end to prophecy and the Mosaic Law. This is what Jesus said would happen. The purpose of all prophecy before

Jesus was to prepare for his coming, and to indicate what was to be fulfilled up to the time of his coming. These prophecies are not for the time of the Lord of the Second Advent. God sent His son Jesus into the world, intending full and perfect salvation to be accomplished. The Second Coming was made necessary only by lack of fulfillment at the time of the first coming.

Why then was the time of Jesus the end of the world? We already know the answer. It is because Jesus came to end the evil sovereignty and bring forth God's sovereignty upon the earth. This was the end of the Old Testament age and the beginning of the age of the New Testament. Jesus brought the words of new truth.

How did the people receive the gospel which he brought? The Jewish leaders accused Jesus and had him crucified. They were prisoners to the letter of the Old Testament and could not perceive the presence of the spirit of God in the new truth. It is ironic that Jesus fell victim to the very prophecies that were to testify to him as the Son of God. By the letter of the Mosaic Law he was judged a criminal. Blindly the people nailed him to the cross.

At the time of Jesus many learned people, many leaders of churches, and many people prominent in society who were well versed in the Law and the prophets were waiting for a Messiah. How happy they would have been to have their Messiah recite the Old Testament exactly, syllable by syllable and word by word! But Jesus Christ did not come to repeat the Mosaic Law. He came to pronounce a new law of God. People missed the whole point. And Jesus was accused. The people of Israel said to him,

'We stone you for no good work, but for blasphemy; because you, being a man, make yourself God.' (John 10:33)

The Bible states: "And they reviled him (one of Jesus' disciples), saying,

'You are his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. We know that God has spoken to Moses, but as for this man, we do not know where he comes from.' (John 9:28-29)

This was the way they looked at Jesus. Those people who diligently obeyed the letter of the Mosaic Law disobeyed Jesus Christ. The most devout of the Jewish faithful were the first ones to be judged by Jesus.

Now at this time I would like to clarify the meaning of "judgment by fire."

We read in the New Testament:

. . . the heavens will be kindled and dissolved, and the elements will melt with fire! (II Peter 3:12)

How can this fantastic prophecy come true? Will it happen literally? No. The statement has symbolic meaning. God would not destroy His earth, His stars, and all creation without realizing His ideal on earth. If He did so, then God would become the God of defeat. And who would be His conqueror? It would be Satan. This can never happen to God.

Even on our human level, once we determine to do something, we see it through to

its completion. How much more so will God almighty accomplish His will. When God speaks of judgment by fire in the Bible, He does not mean He will bring judgment by flames. The significant meaning is a symbolic one.

Let us now consider another biblical passage which speaks of fire. Jesus proclaimed,

'I came to cast a fire upon the earth; and would that it were already kindled!' (Luke 12:49)

Did Jesus throw literal, blazing fire about? Of course not.

The fire in the Bible is symbolic. It stands for the word of God. This is why James 3:6 states,

". . . the tongue is a fire . . . "

The tongue speaks the word, and the word is from God. Jesus himself said,

'He who rejects me and does not receive my sayings has a judge; the word that I have spoken will be his judge on the last day.'" (John 12:48)

In contemporary society, the word of the court executes judgment. The word is the law. In this universe, God is in the position of judge. Jesus came as the attorney with authority to oppose Satan, the prosecutor of man. Satan accuses man with his words, but these are false charges. Jesus champions the cause of believers, and his standard is the word of truth. God pronounces the sentence: His love is the standard, and love is His word. There is no difference between the earthly court and the heavenly court, in that both conduct their trials by words, not by fire.

So the world will not be burned up by fire when it is judged. The Bible

". . . the Lord Jesus will slay him [the evil one] with the breath of his mouth. . ." (II Thess. 2:8)

The word of God is the breath of his mouth. Jesus came to slay the wicked by the word of God, and

". . . he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips he shall slay the wicked." (Is. 11:4)

What then is the "rod of his mouth?" We take this symbol to mean his tongue-- through which he speaks the word of God.

Let's resolve this point completely. Look to where Jesus was instructing the people: "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears my word and believes Him who sent me, has eternal life; he does not come into judgment, but has passed from death to life." John 5:24) Men pass from death to life by words of truth. God will not send you the Messiah to burn you up. He will not send you the Messiah to set your houses afire or destroy your society. But if we reject the word of God spoken by the Lord, we leave no choice open except to be condemned by judgment. Here is the reason why.

In the beginning God created man and the universe by His word-logos. Man denied the word of God and fell. Spiritual death has reigned ever since. Through His salvation work, God has been recreating man. Man fell by disobedience to God's word, and man shall be recreated by obedience to the same word of God. The word of God is given by the Lord. Accepting the word brings life out of death. Such death is the hell in which we live. Thus the word of God is the judge, and it will bring upon you a far more profound effect than the hottest flames.

### ***If Israel had accepted Jesus***

Now at this time we can examine another important point. What would have happened if the people of Israel had wholeheartedly accepted Jesus Christ? Imagine the nation of Israel united with Jesus. What would that have meant? First, of all, Jesus would not have been killed. People would have glorified Jesus as the living Lord. They would have then marched to Rome with the living Christ as their commander-in-chief, and Rome would have surrendered to the Son of God in his own lifetime. But in the sad reality of history, it took four centuries for a band of Jesus' disciples to conquer Rome. Jesus never won the chosen people of Israel, and he never gained the support he needed from them. He came to erect the Kingdom of God on earth, but instead he had to caution his disciples even to keep his identity a secret because people did not accept his legitimacy as the Messiah, and he therefore lacked the power to be the king of kings.

Today we have much to learn, and we must not believe blindly. We must know the hidden truth behind the Bible. Jesus was crucified, not by his own will, but by the will of others. Rejection by the chosen people of Israel killed Jesus Christ.

Right now I am making a bold declaration. Jesus did not come to die. Jesus Christ was murdered. Let me repeat: Jesus Christ was murdered, and his own people had him killed. Even the Roman governor Pilate wanted to release Jesus. He did not find any fault with Jesus. But Christ's own people rejected him and forced Pilate to release Barabbas instead. What a pity! What a tragedy!

This may be shocking and astounding news to you, but if you are only surprised, then you have missed my purpose. I am revealing these things because of my duty to bear witness to the truth.

It was the chosen people of Israel, the chief priests, the elders, the scribes, and the faithful, who shouted at Pilate's court. "Crucify him!" Saint Paul said,

"None of the rulers of this age understood this; for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory" (1 Cor 2:8)

The people living at the time of Jesus Christ made a terrible mistake. But do you think they were so much more ignorant and less aware than we are today? No, not at all. They learned the Old Testament word by word and memorized the Mosaic Law. Based on their understanding, Jesus did not meet the qualifications to be the Messiah.

The Jewish people were in a very difficult position. If they wanted to believe the Law and the prophets, they had to abandon the Law of Moses as they understood it. Four thousand years of tradition had been based on the Old Testament. It was very, very

difficult for people to just wake up one morning, turn away from the Law, and totally accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Because people had their eyes riveted to the letter of the Law, the spirit of the Law simply passed them by.

Let us look into the Old Testament and examine the prophecy of Malachi:

' . . . I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes. And he will turn the hearts of fathers to their children and the hearts of children to their fathers. . . ' (Mal. 4:5-6)

The people of Israel knew God's promise clearly. They knew it by heart. And they expected the coming of Elijah before the Messiah appeared. When the Messiah did come, naturally they asked, "Where is Elijah?"

Elijah had been a prophet who performed miraculous works about 900 years before Christ. And it was written he ascended into heaven in a chariot of fire. Since Elijah ascended upward into heaven, he was expected to return from heaven. Did such a miracle happen before the coming of Jesus? Did the people hear any news about the arrival of Elijah? No, they did not. But what they did hear one day was the voice of Jesus Christ declaring, "I am the Son of God, the only begotten Son of God." And Jesus spoke not timidly, but with authority and power. Such a man could not be ignored.

### ***The question of Elijah***

This presented a great dilemma for the people of Israel. They immediately asked, "If this Jesus is the Messiah, then where is Elijah?" They earnestly expected the Messiah at that time, so they were also waiting for Elijah. They believed he would come straight down from heaven, right out of the sky, and the Messiah would come soon after, in a similar manner.

So when Jesus proclaimed himself as the Son of God, the Jewish people became puzzled. If there had come no Elijah, then there could be no Messiah. And no one had told them that Elijah had come. The disciples of Jesus were also confused. When they went out to preach the gospel, people persistently denied that Jesus could be the Son of God because the disciples were unable to prove that Elijah had come. They confronted this problem everywhere they went.

The disciples of Jesus were not educated in the Old Testament. Many learned people rebuked them when they went out to preach, asking, "Do you not know the Old Testament? Do you not know the Mosaic Law?" The disciples were embarrassed when they were attacked through the verses of the Law and the prophets. One day they came back to Jesus and put the question to him:

' . . . why do the scribes say that first Elijah must come?' He replied, 'Elijah does come, and he is to restore all things; but I tell you that Elijah has already come, and they did not know him, but did to him whatever they pleased. So also the Son of man will suffer at their hands' Then the disciples understood that he was speaking to them of John the Baptist.' (Matt. 17:10-13)

According to Jesus, John the Baptist was Elijah.

This was the truth. We have determined the truth according to the words of Jesus Christ. But the disciples of Jesus could not convince the elders and chief priests and scribes of this fact. To those men, the idea was simply ridiculous. The only authority that supported such a notion was the word of Jesus of Nazareth. That is why the testimony of John the Baptist was so crucial. But alas, John himself denied that he was Elijah when he was asked! His denial made Jesus seem to be a liar.

Read the Bible: 'And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, 'Who are you?' . . . And they asked him, 'What then? Are you Elijah?'

He said, 'I am not.' Are you the prophet?' And he answered, 'No'. (John 1:19-21)

John himself said, "I am not Elijah." But Jesus had said, "He is Elijah."

John made it almost impossible for the people to know that Elijah had come. But Jesus declared the truth anyway. He said,

' . . . if you are willing to accept it, he [John the Baptist] is Elijah who is to come' (Matt. 11:14)

Jesus knew that most people could not accept the truth. Instead they questioned the motivation of Jesus. In order for Jesus to seem like the Messiah, Elijah had to come first, so the people thought he was lying for the purpose of his own self-aggrandizement. The Son of God became more and more misunderstood by the people.

This was such a grave situation. In those days, the influence of John the Baptist was felt in every corner of Israel. But Jesus Christ was an obscure and ambiguous figure in his society. Nobody was in a position to take Jesus' words as the truth. This failure of John was the major cause of the crucifixion of Jesus.

John the Baptist had already seen the Spirit of God descending upon the head of Jesus Christ at the Jordan. At that time he testified:

'I saw the Spirit descend as a dove from heaven, and it remained on him. I myself did not know him; but he who sent me to baptize with water said to me, 'He on whom you see the Spirit descend and remain, this is he who baptizes with the Holy Spirit' And I have seen and have borne witness that this is the Son of God.' (John 1:32-34)

### ***Rumors about Jesus***

Yes, John the Baptist bore witness, and he did the job that God intended for him to do at that time. But later on, doubts came to him, and he finally succumbed to the many rumors circulating about Jesus. One such rumor called Jesus fatherless, an illegitimate child. John the Baptist certainly heard that rumor, and he wondered how such a person could be the Son of God. Even though he had witnessed to Jesus, John later became suspicious and betrayed him. If John the Baptist had truly united with Jesus Christ, he could have moved his people to accept Jesus as the Messiah, for the power and influence of John was very great in those days.

I am telling you many unusual things, and you may ask by what authority I am

speaking. It is the authority of the Bible, and with the authority of revelation. Let us read the Bible together, and see word by word how John the Baptist acted.

'Now when John heard in prison about the deeds of the Christ, he sent word by his disciples and said to him, "Are you he who is to come, or shall we look for another?"' (Matt. 11:2-3)

This was long after he had testified to Jesus as the Son of God. How could he even ask, "Are you he who is to come as the Son of God?" after the testimony of the Spirit to him? Jesus was truly sorrowful. He felt anger. Jesus refused to answer John the Baptist with a straight yes or no. He replied instead,

'Blessed is he who takes no offense at me.'

Let me paraphrase what Jesus meant: "John, I am sorry that you took offense at me. At one time you recognized me, but now you doubt me. I am sorry your faith has proved to be so weak."

After this incident, Jesus spoke to the crowds concerning John. He put a rhetorical question to them:

'What did you go out into the wilderness to behold? A reed shaken by the wind? Why then did you go out? To see a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, those who wear soft raiment are in kings' houses. Why then did you go out? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet. This is he of whom it is written, "Behold I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee."' (Matt. 11:7-10)

What Jesus was saying here was this: "John, you went out to the wilderness to see the person more than a prophet--the Messiah, the Son of God. You have seen everything but missed the vital point, the core of your mission. You indeed failed to recognize me and failed to live up to God's expectation. It is God who expects of you 'to make ready for the Lord a people prepared' You have failed."

Jesus concluded:

'Truly, I say to you, among those born of women there has risen no one greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is the least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he' (Matt. 11:11)

Conventional Christian interpretations have never fully explained the meaning of this controversial verse.

The missions of prophets through the ages were to prepare for or testify to the Messiah. Prophets always testified from a distance of time. John the Baptist was the greatest among prophets because only he was the prophet contemporary with the Messiah, the prophet who could bear witness, in person, to the living Christ. But John failed to recognize the Messiah. Even the least of the prophets then living in the spiritual world knew Jesus was the Son of God. That is why John, who was given the greatest mission, and failed, became less than the least.

Jesus said, 'From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven has

suffered violence, and men of violence take it by force.' (Matt. 11:12)

John the Baptist was the chosen instrument of God, destined to be the chief disciple of Jesus. He failed in his responsibility, and Simon Peter, by the strength and force of his faith, earned that central position for himself on his own merit. Other men stronger and more violent in faith than John the Baptist fought relentlessly with Jesus for the realization of God's kingdom on earth. The devout men who righteously followed John the Baptist could not become the 12 apostles and 70 disciples of Christ, as they were to have been. If John the Baptist had become the chief disciple of Jesus, those two together would have united all of Israel. But the truth is that John the Baptist did not follow the Son of God.

One day John's followers came to him and asked,

'Rabbi, he who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore witness, here he is baptizing, and all are going to him' (John 3:26)

They carried concern in their question: "Look at all the people going to Jesus. What about you?" John the Baptist replied,

'He must increase, but I must decrease.' (John 3:30)

Usually Christians interpret this passage as proof of John's humble personality. This is an incorrect understanding of the meaning of his words. If Jesus and John had been united, their destiny would be to rise or fall together. Then Jesus could not increase his reputation while John's own prestige diminished! The lessening of his own role was what John feared.

John once stated the Messiah was the one ' . . . whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. . . ' (Matt. 3:11)

Yet he failed to follow Jesus even after he knew that Jesus was the Son of God. John the Baptist was a man without excuse. He should have followed

### ***Responsible for the crucifixion***

God sent John as a forerunner to the Messiah. His mission was clearly defined,

' . . .to make ready for the Lord a people prepared' (Luke 1:17)

But because of John's betrayal, Jesus Christ had no ground upon which to start his ministry. The people had not been prepared to receive Jesus. Therefore, he had to go out from his home and work all by himself, trying to create a foundation on which the people could believe in him. There can be no doubt that John the Baptist was a man of failure. He was directly responsible for the crucifixion of Jesus Christ.

You may again want to ask me, "With what authority do you say these things?" I spoke with Jesus Christ in the spirit world. And I spoke also with John the Baptist. This is my authority. If you cannot at this time determine that my words are the truth, you will surely discover that they are in the course of time. These are hidden truths presented to you as new revelations. You have heard me speak from the Bible. If you

believe the Bible you must believe what I am saying.

We must therefore come to this solemn conclusion: The crucifixion of Jesus was a result of the rejection by the Jewish people. The major cause of their rejection was the betrayal of John. Thus we have learned that Jesus did not come to die on the cross. If Jesus had come to die, then he would not have offered that tragic and anguished prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane. Jesus said to his disciples:

'My soul is very sorrowful, even to death; remain here and watch with me' And going a little farther he fell on his face and prayed, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.' (Matt. 26: 38-39)

Jesus prayed this way not just once, but three times. If death on the cross had been the fulfillment of God's will, Jesus would certainly have prayed instead, "Father, I am honored to die on the cross for Your will."

But Jesus prayed asking that this cup pass from him. If his prayer came out of his fear of death, such weakness would disqualify him as the Son of God. We have witnessed the courageous death of many martyrs throughout Christian history and even elsewhere people who not only overcame their fear of death, but made their final sacrifice a great victory. Out of so many martyrs, how could Jesus alone be the one to show his fear and weakness, particularly if his crucifixion was the glorious moment of his fulfillment of the will of God? Jesus did not pray this way from weakness. To believe such a thing is an outrage to Jesus Christ.

The prayer of Jesus at the Garden of Gethsemane did not come from his fear of death or suffering. Jesus would have been willing and ready to die a thousand times over if that could have achieved the will of God. He agonized right up to the moment of death, and he made one final plea to God, because he knew his death would only cause the prolongation of God's dispensation.

### ***A tragic misunderstanding***

Jesus wanted to live and fulfill his mission. It is a tragic misunderstanding to believe that Jesus prayed for a little more earthy life out of the frailness of his human soul. Young Nathan Hale, in the American struggle for independence, was able to say at the time of his execution, "I regret that I have but one life to give for my country!" Do you think Jesus Christ was a lesser soul than Nathan Hale? No! Nathan Hale was a great patriot. But Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

Think this over. If Jesus came to die on the cross, would he not need a man to deliver him up? You know that Judas Iscariot is the disciple who betrayed Jesus. If Jesus fulfilled God's will with his death on the cross, then Judas should be glorified as the man who made the crucifixion possible. Judas would have been aiding God's dispensation. But Jesus said of Judas,

'The Son of man goes as it is written of him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! It would have been better for that man if he had not been born.'  
(Matt. 26:24)

Judas killed himself.

Furthermore, if God had wanted His son to be crucified, He did not need 4,000 years to prepare the chosen people. He would have done better to send Jesus to a tribe of barbarians, where he could have been killed even faster, and the will of God would have been realized more rapidly.

I must tell you again, it was the will of God to have Jesus Christ accepted by his people. That is why God labored in hope and anguish to prepare fertile soil for the heavenly seed of the Messiah. That is why God established His chosen people of Israel. That is why God sent prophet after prophet to awaken the people of Israel to ready themselves for the Lord.

God warned them and chastised them; He persuaded them and scolded them, pushed them and punished them because He wanted His people to accept His Son. One day the disciples asked Jesus,

"What must we do, to be doing the works of God?" Jesus answered them, "This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent" (John 6:28-29)

The chosen people of Israel did the very thing God had labored to prevent. They rejected the one He had sent.

Jesus had one purpose throughout the three years of his public ministry: acceptance. He could not fulfill his mission otherwise. From the very first day, he preached the gospel without equivocation, so that the people could hear the truth and accept him as the Son of God. The word of God should have led them to accept him. However, when Jesus saw that the people were not likely to receive him by the words of God alone, he began to perform mighty works. He hoped that people could recognize him through his miracles.

'Now Jesus did many other signs in the presence of the disciples, which are not written in this book; but these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing you may have life in his name.' (John 20:30-31)

Jesus gave sight to the blind and made the lepers clean. He healed the lame and blessed the deaf with hearing. Jesus raised the dead. He did these things only because he wanted to be accepted. Yet the people said of him,

'It is only by Beelzebub, the prince of demons, that this man casts out demons.' (Matt. 12:24)

What a heartbreaking situation! Jesus soon saw the hopelessness of gaining the acceptance of the people. In anger and desperation he chastised them: 'You brood of vipers! . . . ' (Matt. 12:34)

He did not hide his wrath, but exploded in anger.

'Woe to you, Chorazin! woe to you, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.' (Matt. 11:21)

And he wept when he drew near the city of Jerusalem.

'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not!' (Matt. 23:37)

### ***No hope of avoiding death***

Who has ever understood the broken heart of Jesus? He said, 'Would that even today you knew the things that make for peace! But now they are hid from your eyes.' (Luke 19:42)

By that time Jesus knew there was absolutely no hope of avoiding death. Yet he pleaded with God in Gethsemane, and he pleaded with God on the cross: 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' (Matt. 27:46)

Thus Jesus died on the cross, not of his own will, not of the will of God, but by the will of men. Christ was destined to return from that moment on. He will return to consummate his mission on earth. Mankind must await his Second Coming for the complete salvation of the world.

Many people may now ask, "What about the prophecies in the Old Testament concerning the death of Jesus on the cross?" I am aware of those prophecies, such as Isaiah, Chapter 53. We must know that there are dual lines of prophecy in the Bible. One group prophesies Jesus' rejection and death; the others, such as Isaiah, Chapters 9, 11 and 60, prophesy the glorious ministry of Jesus when the people accepted him as the Son of God, as the king of kings. For example:

For to us a child is born, to us a son is given; and the government will be upon his shoulder, and his name will be called 'Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.' Of the increase of his government and of peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David, and over his kingdom, to establish it, and to uphold it with justice and with righteousness from this time forth and forevermore. . . (Is. 9:6-7)

This is the prophecy of the Lord of glory, Jesus as the king of kings, and prince of peace. On the other hand, we can read:

'Surely he has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; upon him was the chastisement that made us whole, and with his stripes we are healed.' (Is. 53 4-5)

This is the prophecy of the suffering Christ. It is indeed the prophecy of the crucifixion.

Then, once again, why did God prophesy in two contradictory ways in the Bible?

It is because God has to deal with men--fallen men-- in His dispensation. And fallen man is wicked and untrustworthy and possesses the capacity of betrayal.

## ***Man stands between God and Satan***

In a way God fears man, and Satan fears man also because of man's ability to betray. God is absolute good, and He never changes His position; Satan is absolute evil and he never changes his position either. In this respect God and Satan are similar. However, man is a mixture of good and evil. Man stands between God and Satan and has the ability to change. Therefore, man is unpredictable. One day a man may profess his untiring faith in God and desire to serve Him; and the next day the same man may curse God, unite with Satan and become his slave.

Since God did not know how man would respond to His providence for the Messiah, He had no choice but to predict two contradictory results dual prophecies, each possible depending on man's actions. Thus the faith of man was the factor determining which one of the two prophecies would be fulfilled:

In the case of Jesus, if the chosen people of Israel demonstrated faith and united with him, then he would be accepted. The full realization of the prophecy of the Lord of glory would result.

On the other hand, if the people rejected the Messiah when he came, inevitably the second prophecy, that of the suffering Christ, would be fulfilled. And history shows that the chosen people took the second way. Therefore, the prophecy of the suffering Lord became reality instead of the prophecy of the Lord of glory. Thus the crucifixion and the story of the suffering Christ became the course of history.

Since the prophecy of the suffering Christ became fact in the time of Jesus, the prophecy of the Lord of glory has been left unfulfilled. And this is the prophecy which will be fulfilled at the time of the Lord of the Second Advent.

I would like to also observe that the Bible does not provide much record of the life of Jesus prior to his public ministry, except for the story of his birth and a few accounts of his childhood. Haven't you ever wondered why?

For 30 years Jesus lived in great rejection and humiliation. There were many events and circumstances which grieved and agonized Jesus. He was a truly misunderstood person--in his own society and even among his own family. Nobody, absolutely nobody, treated him as the Son of God. He was not even accorded the common respect due to any man. His society ridiculed him. God's heart was very deeply grieved by Jesus' life. If I revealed just a glimpse of some of the situations of heartbreak and sorrow in the life of Jesus, that obscure figure, the man of Nazareth, you would not only be shocked and stunned, but you would burst into tears of sorrow.

God did not wish mankind to know the tragedy, the heart breaking reality of the humiliation of Jesus Christ. The death of Jesus was neither his will nor his fault. The death of Jesus was murder, and his body was taken by Satan. Our salvation in Christianity comes not from the cross but from the resurrection. Without the resurrection, Christianity has no power. The crucifixion itself was a criminal act of faithlessness. However, the resurrected Jesus brought new hope, new forgiveness, and a new power of salvation. Therefore, when we place our faith in Jesus Christ of resurrection and unite with him, our salvation comes.

Please ask seriously in your prayers for a final answer on these matters. Ask either

Jesus Christ or God Himself. If Jesus had lived and fulfilled his primary mission of bringing the Kingdom of God on earth, Christianity would never have been what it is today. The purpose of Jesus' coming was for the salvation of the world. The Jewish people were to be God's instruments. However, salvation was not intended only for God's chosen people. For every soul upon the face of the earth, Jesus is the savior. He is the savior of all mankind. Since Jesus left his mission uncompleted, he also left us the promise of his Second Coming.

Then let us examine when the end of the world will come. This is very important to us. The gospel says that in the last days God will separate the sheep from the goats. What is the difference between these two kinds of animals? Sheep recognize their master, the shepherd, while goats do not follow a shepherd. Today you know that our world is divided into two opposing camps. One is the democratic world, the other is the communist world. Our free world says, "There is a God." We accept our shepherd. The communist world says, "God does not exist.?" They deny their master. Thus the free world may be symbolized by sheep, and the communist world by goats. At the time of the formation of these two conflicting ideological worlds we can know we have come to the end of the world.

How will the Lord of the Second Advent come? Our position as Christians exactly parallels the position of the elders, scribes, and priests at the time of Jesus. In those days, the people were waiting for Elijah and the Messiah to arrive in the clouds of heaven. Why did the people think this way? Why did they hold this kind of belief?

They were simply following the Bible prophecy written down in Daniel 7:13:

'I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man, and he came to the Ancient of Days and was presented before him.'

Because of the great prophet Daniel, the people of Israel had every reason to expect the arrival of the Messiah with the clouds of heaven. Christians are expecting the arrival of the Lord of the Second Advent in the same way today, from the clouds of heaven.

John said, '. . . many deceivers have gone out into the world, men who will not acknowledge the coming of Jesus Christ in the flesh; such a one is the deceiver and the antichrist.' (II John 7)

The Bible says that many people were denying the appearance of Jesus Christ in the flesh. And John condemned those people as the antichrist. But let us not forget the Old Testament prophecy of the coming of the Son of God in the clouds of heaven. Unless we know the whole truth, we, like the people of Jesus' time, become victims of the words of the Bible.

Then, may I ask, what would you do if the Lord returned to earth not in the clouds but as a man in the flesh? What would you do? I am telling you, the Lord of the Second Advent will in fact appear as a Son of Man with flesh and bones. The first thing you may want to say is, "Reverend Moon, you are a heretic."

### ***How God looks at the world***

It is important to know on which side God will be and how God fulfills His plan. It is

not important whether a man or his views are considered heretical or not. It does not matter how I look at the world or how you look at the world. It only matters how God looks at the world. And in God's view, we once again find in the Bible a dual prophecy concerning the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. Revelation 1:7 definitely prophesies the arrival of the Lord of the Second Advent with the clouds. However, I Thess. 5:2 states:

'For you yourselves know well that the day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night.'

There are then two opposing prophecies. What shall we do? Would you simply choose the prophecy which is most convenient for you?

Perhaps the Lord will appear with a loud noise in the clouds of heaven, because the prophecy says so. But on the other hand, the Lord might appear like a thief in the night. If he comes in the clouds, he surely cannot slip into the world unseen like a thief. Tremendous attention would surround the spectacle of his coming in the clouds. I cannot imagine how such a thing could be hidden from your eyes.

Then just what is the truth? We have a crucial question before us. What is the truth? When you see the signs of the Last Days, the Bible urges you to go into a dark room and pray. Who can tell you the time of the Last Days? The angels do not know that day. Jesus said not even the Son of Man knew when that day would arrive. Only God knows the time of the Last Days. That is why we have our answer from God. I am not saying you must believe me not at all. I am just revealing what I know to be the truth, but you must verify this truth with God.

In the Last Days, the Bible says, do not believe just anybody. Do not believe me, and do not believe your church elders. Do not believe your ministers, and do not believe famous evangelists. Heaven is so near, and you can be lifted up by the spirit so high, that you can speak with God and receive the answer directly from Him if you are earnest enough.

There are many ministers in New Orleans, many clergymen, and many church elders. How many of them are really listening for the voice of God? These ears of ours do not mean much, nor these eyes serve any useful purpose, unless we have spiritual ears and spiritual eyes. Jesus said, 'He who has ears to hear, let him hear' (Matt. 11:15)

And he said to his disciples, 'But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear' (Matt. 13:16)

He was not referring to physical sense organs.

When you use your spiritual senses and listen for the word of God, you will find His direction and guidance. But it is not easy to become a citizen of the kingdom of heaven. It is very difficult for a foreigner to become a citizen of the United States. How much more difficult it is to remove ourselves from our earthly life and transfer ourselves into the Kingdom of Heaven. But we can achieve this very thing.

We know that even after Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden, they were still able to communicate directly with God. Do you think that after the days of the Old

and New Testaments, God has for some reason become deaf and dumb? No, God is very much alive, and today we can talk directly to Him. God can speak to you, and you can have a direct confrontation with Him.

The book of Acts of the Apostles says that in the Last Days, ' . . . your sons and your daughters shall prophesy and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams . . . ' (Acts 2:17)

We must know the truth. We have to know how to apply for citizenship into the Kingdom of God. We have to know when the Lord will come, and how he will arrive.

Even with clear guidance in our lives, there is still the chance of failure to reach the goal. But today people have no guidance, and no direction people feel confident to follow.

Let us look to our Bible and clarify how the Lord of the Second Advent will appear. In Luke 17:20-21, Jesus was asked by the Pharisees how the Kingdom of God was coming. He answered,

'The kingdom of God is not coming with signs to be observed; . . . the kingdom of God is in the midst of you.'

Jesus then told his disciples, 'The days are coming when you will desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and you will not see it'

But if the Lord comes in the clouds of heaven, how could we not see it? Revelation 1:7 says, ' . . . every eye will see him, every one who pierced him . . . '

What can this mean? Why would we not see him? The only way we might miss that day is if we look for the Lord to come from one direction, and he appears from another direction in an entirely unexpected manner, just as Elijah did at the time of Jesus. This is the reason you may not see the Lord at the time of his Second Coming.

Who would dare deny him?

Another mysterious prediction was given by Jesus Christ himself. He declared about the Lord at the Second Coming: 'But first he must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation.' (Luke 17:25)

If Christ at his Second Coming appears in the glory of the clouds of heaven, who would dare deny him? Nobody would cause him suffering and pain.

The only way this prophecy can be fulfilled is if people expect his return from the clouds and he suddenly appears as a humble man in the flesh. Do you not think that Christian leaders of today would make the same mistake that the priests and scribes and elders committed at the time of Jesus? Yes! They may very well deny him and reject him, because the manner of his coming would be very difficult for Christian leaders to accept. However, in this way the Bible will be fulfilled. He will First suffer and be rejected by this generation.

Jesus once asked a most important question: 'When the Son of man comes, will he find faith on earth?' (Luke 18:8)

How does this question concern us today, when Christian faith covers the face of the earth? It is because although we do have faith today, it may be mistaken faith--a belief which expects the Lord must come on the clouds of heaven. There are few men on earth with the kind of faith ready to accept the Son of Man even appearing in the flesh. If this were not the situation, the Bible would not be fulfilled. Please note that Jesus did not say there would be no believers, but he said there would be no faith.

Jesus also said, 'Not every one who says to me, "Lord, Lord," shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. On that day many will say to me, "Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast out demons in your name, and do many mighty works in your name?" And then will I declare to them, "I never knew you; depart from me, you evildoers.'" (Matt. 7:21-23)

This prophecy cannot be realized if his Second Coming is on the clouds of heaven.

At the time of the Second Advent, people will again be crying out, "Lord, Lord." At the same time they may be in the process of trying to crucify the Lord of the Second Advent himself if he appears in a manner different from their own expectations. They will then be the worst evildoers.

This is the Bible. Those who truly have eyes will see. Those who truly have ears will hear. Throughout history, God has sent His prophets before the time of fulfillment. He warns the people of His plan. No matter how devout Christian faith is today, no matter how many millions of people are in the Christian churches, they and their churches and their world will be doomed to decline once they fail to accept the Lord, however he may appear. This was the tragic fate of the people of Israel when they denied Jesus Christ, regardless of their righteousness otherwise.

We must therefore also be open to a new message. Jesus Christ did not come to repeat the Mosaic Law. Just as Jesus revealed himself with the new truth, the Lord of the Second Advent will reveal himself with God's new truth for our time. That truth will not be simply a repetition of the New Testament.

The Lord will not appear miraculously in the clouds of heaven. Why? Because God is sending His Son to restore the things that once were lost. The first ancestors lost the Kingdom of God on earth. Satan invaded the world and took Eve to his side, and then Eve took Adam away, leaving God alone and separated from people. All people have therefore suffered under the bondage of evil. God must send a new ancestor for humanity, to begin a new history.

### ***Adam must restore a new Eve***

The work of God is restoration, always in the opposite direction from His original loss. This means that God first needs to find His perfected Adam, and Adam who instead of betraying God will become one with God. And then Adam must restore his bride in the position of Eve. Perfected Adam and perfected Eve, united together, will be able to overcome Satan and expel him from the world. In this way, the first righteous

ancestors of mankind will begin a new history.

God's first beginning was alpha. This was invaded by evil, so He will restore the world in omega. Jesus is referred to as the last Adam in I Col 15:45. God wanted to bless Adam and Eve in marriage when they were perfected. As a heavenly couple, they could bear children of God. This life was not realized in the Garden of Eden. That is why Jesus came in the position of Adam. God intended to find the true bride and have Jesus marry. The True Parents of mankind would have begun in the time of Jesus, and they could have overcome and changed the evil history of the world. Since that hope was not fulfilled by Jesus, after 2,000 years he is returning to earth as a man to complete in full the mission he only partially accomplished. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth will be established at that time.

The new history of goodness will thus begin. With the truth of God and True Parents for mankind, a new alpha in God's history will begin and continue for eternity. The ideal of God is to restore the first God-centered family on earth. With this one model as a center, all the rest of mankind can be adopted into this family. We will become like them, and the first heavenly family will be expanded, multiplying into the tribal, national, and worldwide kingdom of God on earth.

The Kingdom of Heaven is to be literal and tangible. Jesus gave Peter the keys to the kingdom of heaven and said, '. . . whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.' (Matt. 16:19)

So accomplishment on earth must precede fulfillment in heaven; the Kingdom of Heaven will be first achieved on earth.

At this time only an intermediate place in the spirit world is open. That is called Paradise. Jesus and his disciples dwell in Paradise, and even they cannot actually enter the Kingdom of Heaven until it is established on earth. One reason for this is because the Kingdom of Heaven is prepared not for individuals, but for the family of God for the father, the mother, and God's true children.

Ladies and gentlemen, I believe my message is absolutely clear and simple. God intended to begin the history of goodness in Adam. But Adam fell. God worked to restore history and begin anew in Jesus Christ. But the people of his time lacked faith in him and did not give him a chance. Therefore, the promise of the Lord of the Second Advent will be fulfilled. He is destined to come to earth as the Son of Man in the flesh. He comes as the third Adam. He will take a bride and thereby bring about the most joyful day of heavenly matrimony, referred to as "the marriage supper of the Lamb" in the book of Revelation. He will fulfill the role of True Parents. True ancestry from God will be established and heaven on earth can then be literally achieved.

We cannot doubt that Christianity today is in a definite crisis. This is a crisis parallel to the time of Jesus, when the established religious institutions failed the Son of God. We recognize this crisis of our time; but we can also see through the haze to the brightly shining day of new hope.

The end of the world is at hand, not only for Christians but for all people throughout the world. The new history of God will begin with the arrival of the Lord. Blessed are those who see him and accept him. It is the hope of Christianity to recognize, receive, and accept the Lord of the Second Advent. The chance has arrived for all of us. The

greatest opportunity in any man's lifetime is now knocking at our door. Please be humble, and open yourself to great new hope!

This is the time for unprecedented spiritual awakening. I want you to open your eyes and ears to perceive the truth. This is my hope, that by sharing this message with you, we might unite to prepare for the glorious day of the arrival of the Lord. Let us see the God of history, let us understand the God of providence, and let us embrace the living God in our own lives.

Today is my last day in this city. I hope you will investigate these matters thoroughly. There is opportunity in New Orleans to come to our church and study, or attend our workshops and explore the truth of the Divine Principle. I would not have come here if I did not bring with me new things to tell you. I am revealing new truth. This alone should be a compelling reason for you to look into the depths of this message.

I hope that, as I said in the beginning of our evening together, you will consider these ideas seriously, and pray to God. He will answer you.

Thank you very much.

## **Chapter 16**

### **The Standard Bearer of Tradition**

#### **May 10, 1974--Tokyo, Japan**

In a family, the one who inherits the tradition of the family is not an old man but a young man. Those who inherit the tradition of the country are also young people. This was true in the past, and it is true today as well, that those who inherit tradition are young people. For example, in the country of Japan, if no one inherits the Japanese tradition correctly, then Japan's prosperity will be undermined in the future, and Japan will naturally head in a more difficult direction.

Who should assume responsibility for the world and for the establishment of the ideal world? From the viewpoint of God's dispensation, it is God's earnest desire that young people should take responsibility to establish the tradition of God for the new world.

When we look back to the Old Testament Age, such old men as Noah, Abraham or Moses were setting the tradition. Jacob was an exception. When the era changed to the New Testament Age, we find the central figures were young people, like Jesus and John the Baptist. They were the ones who desired to inherit the tradition of heaven. They tried to substantiate this tradition in the world during their 20s and 30s. If the ideal tradition of God's nation centering upon John the Baptist had been established, then the tradition centering upon Jesus could have become the standard tradition for the coming world.

Young people are not influenced that much by society once they choose their own direction. If they decide something in their minds and hearts, they do it without hesitation. They tend to put my teachings into practice immediately. Young students especially have a strong desire to establish themselves as God centered people.

Certainly, God's hope must rest with young people rather than old people. Therefore, it is the principled point of view that the Completed Testament Age begins centered upon young people.

### ***The purpose of tradition***

We must understand clearly the purpose toward which the tradition is aiming. Before we save our country, we must save our own relatives. Before we save our own family, we must save ourselves. So, first of all, our goal must be individual perfection. If God's hope is with young people in the Completed Testament Age of Unificationism, it is no mistake to say that you were chosen as the center of God's hope to fulfill His main mission for today, and set the central standard of tradition. This is true not only in Japan. Most of the overseas members of the Unification movement are young people. In America, the average age is between 23 and 25. If these young people offer their lives for this purpose, and if they live their daily lives with total commitment, the new tradition will certainly be built by following this kind of life.

Japan can have a new hope for the future if she has this kind of young people. At this time, of course, Japan desires prosperity for herself. But if she has a burning resolution to create a better world tomorrow; and if she goes beyond the nation, hand in hand with young people of Asia, with one international heart; and if her policy remains internationally oriented over a long period of time; then she will not decline but prosper among the Asian nations and will naturally emerge as a central nation on the worldwide level. You have a mission to inherit such a tradition, and you must also build up the tradition when you inherit it.

From this point of view, we of the Unification Church need to have an educational system that can direct the education and ideals of young people toward an international outlook.

Those of you gathered here are all young people. You are still pure and have hearts that have not been corrupted by this world. You should have a new resolution in your heart. If your minds and bodies are united with new resolution and confidence, and if you become perfect men and women who are loved perfectly by God, how greatly can God rejoice! The highest and greatest desire of God, who created Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, is to find a perfected man and woman, a son and daughter who can realize God's purpose of creation, and who are qualified to be loved by God eternally. God must have centered all of His hope in His son and daughter in the garden, and dreamed about the future development of their world. But all of His hopes and dreams were destroyed by the fall. After that, in the course of the dispensation of salvation, God lived through the history of the old generation age, through the adult generation age, and came to welcome today's age of the generation of youth. How much hope did God have for Adam and Eve before their fall? When we think about this point, we can realize that today's generation of youth is precisely what we would expect for the Completed Testament Age.

### ***The tradition of loving and being loved***

It is natural and principled for you to love God in the same way that He loves you. So when you long for God as the vertical center of your life, and when you are loved as His son or daughter, then a tradition of love can begin. You cannot make a start toward individual perfection unless you establish this tradition. The family is composed of individuals, so first of all you must be loved by God as an individual. But not only that, you should welcome God as your Parent, and return with filial piety the love that you received from Him. You have not even reached the starting point of individual perfection until the reciprocal love of parent and child is established on the vertical position.

You speak about it often, but what is individual perfection? It is to establish the absolute vertical parent and child relationship through faith. You as a child will also come to love God in the same way as God loves you. God and child are inseparable since love is established in such a reciprocal relationship.

You should not cry for yourself. Cry for God. You should do things in order to establish the harmonious subject-object relationship and a unified sphere. You enlarge the sphere of your activities in order to strengthen this subject-object relationship. By doing so, God's dominion is expanded into a larger sphere of His dominion.

When you come face to face with your husband or your wife, you enlarge your sphere of dominion to the level of the family. A man for a woman, a woman for a man -- this relationship of a man and a woman is not simply a relationship for their own selves. The family is the central sphere of heart where the members are horizontally strongly connected, centered upon God. In the relationship of husband and wife, a wife can love her husband, whom God loves, the same as God loves him. A husband can love his wife, whom God loves, the same as God loves her. When they can fully embrace this relationship of loving and being loved centered upon God, they become one.

God is not lonely when Adam and Eve love each other. He feels the power of His own love. The relationship of absolute love and oneness of Adam and Eve is the substantial realization of elements within God's inner mind. Therefore, when He looks at them, they do not repel Him, but together they form the attraction of positive and negative elements.

### ***Absence of the tradition of true love***

The tradition of genuine happiness centered upon this kind of family was never established on earth because of the fall of the first human ancestors. We know this very well. It is an undeniable fact that we are born as the descendants of the fall. So, when we think in this way, we cannot say that our parents are parents of goodness. If this concept is enlarged, the race also has not inherited the standard of goodness. Being descendants of the fall, we are in a realm whose origins were not from God, but from Satan. It must be the desire of all fallen people to change from this realm of death.

We cannot easily solve this problem by our own efforts. Even if we wish for liberation, we, who are dominated by Satan, do not have wisdom superior to that of the archangel. It is absolutely impossible for us, who have less power than Satan, to overcome this situation. The natural conclusion would be that the human race must remain in the eternal realm of

death. So, if there is anyone who can change this situation, it must be none other than the good God who is the enemy of Satan. The numerous saints were God's hands of salvation reaching down to this miserable human race. When this foundation of saints sent by God is enlarged, the families, societies and nations of this satanic world will be displaced. Therefore, it is natural for Satan to give his utmost effort to try to destroy God's saints, sages and prophets. We are very familiar with the history of the prophets, saints and righteous people who came to this world, were persecuted, and in some cases killed. From that foundation of death and sacrifice, God has been carrying out His providence, enlarging His sphere from the individual to the spheres of the new family, clan, tribe and world. For that purpose, God established religion.

### ***Christianity as God's foothold***

In modern times, religious spheres have created cultural spheres on the world level, and God's desire is to unite them together into one. It is God's dispensation to mobilize a movement that unites this world of religious and cultural spheres into one, and brings them back to God's ideal world of goodness. The one who is sent to complete this plan is the Messiah. Conversely, this plan is messianic thought. But when the Messiah comes, he cannot accomplish these things alone. Since the Messiah is coming, the interracial foundation corresponding to this messianic ideal must be created. Christianity is a unique religion in that it developed its cultural sphere throughout the world. Why could Christianity become a world religion? Why not other religions? Theoretically speaking, it is because Christianity is the religion that best represents God's will and internal heart. Christianity has penetrated to the core of God's will and heart, and preserved this until the present time. God loves Christianity, and since God is a world level God, it is natural for Christianity to develop throughout the world. God desires love. According to Jesus, God is not the Lord of Judgment of the people in heaven and earth, but the Father of Love. There is no religion other than Christianity which understands God in this way.

"Oh God! I am the only son of God, who is omnipotent, omniscient, eternal, unique, absolute and infinite." By these words, "only son," you would be qualified to become a messiah for all humanity. What kind of position would you have if you said you were the only son of God? Because God has a heart of love, you would be the only son of God when you gain that love first. Isn't that so? Suppose there is someone who can touch the core of love which is deep within the Father's mind, and can move God. Who would be that person? [The only son!] From this point of view, Jesus was the one person who was qualified to occupy God's heart completely. Because all people desire God's heart, one cannot teach them the world of God's love unless he has the experience of occupying God's internal heart. Therefore, this is the qualification of the Messiah.

### ***Experience God's love first***

Jesus is God's only son. Furthermore, when we are saved, even though the circumstances are different, we also can become God's children. When a branch is grafted onto a sweet persimmon tree, that branch can become the sweet persimmon tree. After you are saved by Jesus, he does not remain as your Savior, but becomes your

brother. Jesus becomes the bridegroom, and you become the bride. This tradition of Jesus started from brotherly love. This is a cosmic declaration. This is not the tradition of brotherhood we have seen in the fallen realm so far, but a new tradition. You are the very people who are doing this. So at this point, we need to implant the new heavenly tradition of brotherhood. This is not merely a theory; we are advancing this historically. You must build the new tradition of brotherhood and also the new tradition of husband and wife. By doing so, the tradition of brotherhood is born, and the tradition of bride and bridegroom is born. Then when a couple is able to inherit the tradition of love from God, their children will be entirely loved by God. Since these children are not born within the realm of the fall, but are born within the unfallen realm of God's love, they are not in the position to be claimed by Satan. Therefore, they are sinless. Through this birth of sinless children, Christianity was to have determined the tradition of parent-child relationship.

The time during which this promise was made was the time of the New Testament. The promise of the Old Testament was not fulfilled, therefore, a new promise was given in the New Testament. This was a promise that we shall become true children of God by becoming true brothers and sisters and inheriting true love. And that promise will absolutely be accomplished at the time of the Second Coming. What does Unification theology call this age? It is called the Completed Testament Age.

God does not just make promises. He has advanced the Completed Testament Age in order to fulfill this wonderful promise. So, many children like Jesus should be born, and many brides and grooms who are like Jesus should be born. Many families must emerge with ideal spouses such as Jesus would have been--who can raise perfect children. God's ideal world begins here. But from what point does all of this start? It begins from the individual.

Adam and Eve fell before they reached perfection, being motivated by their hearts to sin. They took a step away from God's direction and His commandment by following the dictates of their hearts while their hearts were still immature. Young people of the Complete Testament Age are not influenced by their surroundings no matter how much it is corrupted by Satan. If they are influenced, then Satan, who is the final master of the corrupted love, will corrupt the heart of all humanity in the world to come. For that purpose, Satan uses his final wisdom.

The communists say, "Sing, dance and enjoy love!" Then, what happens? Destruction. Satan is trying to destroy man by creating this kind of environment.

Therefore, the organization that the communists hate the most is the Unification Church. They tempt people through their propaganda--"sing songs, dance and make love!" But those who do not give in, no matter what they say, are the young people of the Unification Church.

### ***To see God directly with your eyes***

You must first of all stand face to face with God and inherit His vertical love. Since God is the God of dual characteristics, He created man because He cannot receive stimulation by

being alone. Joy is produced only through reciprocal relationships; therefore, stimulation from outside of God's being is necessary. He needs the stimulating sphere of His objects. And one can receive love from God, who is the highest being, only when he stands in the position to reciprocate. If he does so, he can become a substantiation of God's internal character. When God feels sorrow, man must also feel sorrow. In this way, man and God will be inseparable. These are unchangeable facts, no matter how much you may doubt them. You have been created to be inseparable from God. Therefore, the perfection of the individual means the establishment of the absolute vertical relationship between you and God.

God is invisible. This invisible God created Adam and Eve in order to bring about His substantial image. God exists within the minds of Adam and Eve, and when Adam and Eve become perfect and fully receive God's love, God becomes the internal father and Adam becomes the external father. The external form reflects the internal form. God sees His own form in man. Then God, as the father of humanity, takes the form of Adam. And Eve becomes the mother of humanity. Adam and Eve are God's substantial forms in the universe, and they become parents of humanity and of the created world, which resembles them. Thus, through the form of Adam and Eve, God let people know His existence throughout history. Then there can be no doubt about the existence of God. He is always visible. If the fall had not taken place, God would immediately appear if man called him. If man reaches this level, who could say that God doesn't exist? [No one!] If you show your utmost sincerity, the same sincerity is returned. This is a universal principle. So, who has to prove that your parents are your parents?

Then what God is desiring to do is to substantiate His form in this last stage of the Last Days. He is trying to show Himself again as a perfect man who is completely restored heartistically and vertically. This man we know as the Messiah. In the Completed Testament Age, God manifests Himself to all people in the form of the True Parents, who come in the place of the perfected Adam and perfected Eve.

Therefore, the Unification Church has a power that is greater than any secular power. Through the Unification Church, our members can see the living God directly with their eyes, and experience Him with their senses. Do you understand? How many of you believed in and saw Jesus in the past? A very small percentage. Unless you had faith for 20 or 40 years, you could not see the crucified Jesus. In the Unification Church, however, you can see him if you listen to the Principle with sincerity for one week. What a great difference this is! A cosmic revolution has begun. We could not find a way to see Christ throughout thousands of years of history. But through the Principle, we have discovered a way to experience him within a week. This is truly the great miracle of the Unification movement.

Behind this miracle, there is a 6,000 year period in which God has been advancing human culture. All of the indemnity and sacrifice of 6,000 years is concentrated on this point in time. This fruit of this victorious course is the relationship of the love between parents and child.

## ***Look at the world with the same sorrow as God***

If you are anxious to see God or to see True Parents in a dream, the only way is to work for God with your whole heart. You must have the type of God-like heart that is willing to shed blood for the sake of all people. You must have such a heart that you would even forget sleeping, and cry with me. This is the closest path to reach God. The teaching of the Unification Church is that we should sacrifice smaller things for God, for humanity and for the greater purpose. God wants to restore the cosmos to His dominion. This is done by the principle of always serving the greatest purpose. Accordingly, the individual lives for the sake of the family, the family for the clan, the clan for the race, the race for the nation, the nation for the world, the world for the cosmos and the cosmos for God. You cannot become a child of God unless you fight for God with the goal of victory for God on the cosmic level by achieving all these standards. You cannot become a child of God unless you have the confidence and desire to work for the sake of God and for the sake of the cosmos. You understand this, don't you? [Yes!] It is not a trivial matter.

Each of you can become a person who has such vertical experiences. In the present situation, when God has not yet established His nation, if you can call upon God and feel the same sorrow He has, and if you can look at Japan and the world with such Godly sorrow, keeping your mission and your commitment to Him, then you are truly a son or daughter of God, even if you are alone.

You should keep your mind occupied with the absolute desire and determination to fulfill God's will. If the providence is prolonged for years, decades, centuries, we cannot imagine how great God's agony would be. We must maintain a course toward victory. If you remain a joyous child, doing your best while sacrificing for God, you can save Japan and dominate this country's spiritual future. You may not get much attention in this world, but when you go to the spiritual world, you will be the one revered by all people as the representative of God. God is expecting you to become this kind of young person. You must set the tradition for the future. God desires that we become such people who can substantiate His ideal in this world. Such people must be the young people of the Unification Church.

## ***Jesus walked the way of the cross with dignity***

In the tradition of the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age, we must become children who can shed blood, and even die, to console God's heart: In the history of God's providence, who set the tradition to open this path in the world? It was Jesus. At Gethsemane, the reason why he prayed with such agony as to shed blood was to leave God's true tradition on earth. Jesus was the very person who pioneered this path and set this tradition for the first time. Religion is the way by which we inherit the tradition of Jesus correctly and expand it to the public world. Christianity was formed by inheriting the tradition of goodness and by passing on this tradition to future followers.

Christianity teaches a realm of heart, which is also a realm of hope heading toward one goal. In order to enter this one realm, we must go back to God. So we as Unification

Church members must just go back to God. We can never understand the realm of Jesus' heart unless we go back to the realm of God's heart. That is also the only way we can ever understand the tradition of Jesus or Christianity, or inherit the tradition of hope for the future. The path that the Unification Church has been walking until now has been to go back to God and to rekindle the spirit of the churches with a new understanding of the reality of God and His providence. Do you understand? [Yes!] First of all, we must establish this vertical relationship and become an ideal man through receiving guidance from God.

Mankind lost three things at the fall. Adam was to be God's son and Eve to be God's daughter. But they lost their childlike heart toward God. And they lost the love they had as brother and sister centered upon God. Eve killed Adam spiritually. Despite the fact that he was her elder brother, Adam was attracted to Eve and could not resist her. They became people of evil, not a brother and sister of goodness. The husband and wife of goodness became the husband and wife of evil through the fall. They lost the realm of God's heart and love in one instant. How can they restore this lost heart? For a man to take responsibility to restore this, he must have the heart of an elder brother. Thus, he must enter into the world of the heart.

In the realm of heart, then, you are children to me. It is through the fall that man lost the three hearts, namely, the heart of brother and sister, the heart of parents, and the heart of children. Accordingly, perfect restoration is impossible unless we heartistically experience these three things and resurrect them.

### ***Saints should shed tears for God***

The horizontal restoration of God's heart begins through indemnity. The Unification Church, which was founded for that purpose, can never be understood by merely studying it. People cannot understand why the Unification Church was founded, why we go in crazy directions, and why you members work with one heart. Do you work in accordance with my heart? [Yes!]

Men are in the position of archangels. Therefore, the courageous men of the Unification Church must be able to miss me with tears. Otherwise, they are not the saints of the Unification Church. You must be like a child with tears in your eyes. I ask this not for my sake, but for the sake of God.

I love you, centered upon God's love. You love God, you love me, and you love each other. With this foundation of love, you can love all people of the world.

You should love other members as you love me. My desire is that you love others more than I do. If you do so, you can love each other as brothers and sisters more than your parents love you as their children. If this tradition is spread throughout Japan, this country will never perish, even if God wanted it. Don't be a person whose achievements are on the theoretical level, but rather a person who puts his heart into his work. As a group, you should love each other like brothers, like sisters, like parents. If you are that type of person, even if you tell your friends not to come see you, they will be so eager to see you

that they would come anyway. I am like that. My close friends and classmates were all drawn to me. Why did they come? They had no one else from whom they could seek advice. You must inherit the realm of God's heart. You have the theory, and when you practice it, you can become one with God. You must establish such a tradition.

Those brave Unification soldiers who wish to work toward this purpose once again with resolution and who wish to revive this tradition of God among all people, please raise your hands. I believe you.

**Chapter 17**  
**The New Future of Christianity**  
**September 18, 1974 -- New York, New York**

Ladies and gentlemen, I am very happy to be here tonight. Thank you very much for coming. We are gathered together in this impressive setting of Madison Square Garden tonight in the name of God.

My topic tonight is "The New Future of Christianity." But before I begin this evening's message, I would like to make one personal plea. I did not come here to repeat what you already know. I have come to reveal something new. I want to share with you a revelation from God.

There is only one God, one Christ, one Bible. Today, however, in the Christian world alone there are more than 400 different denominations, all looking at the same Bible from very different points of view, with many different interpretations.

What we are interested in is not the human interpretation of the Bible, but how God interprets the Bible, and what God's will really is. Therefore, no person by himself is capable of satisfying us. That information must come from God, in the form of revelation.

And I want to share that revelation with you tonight. Since this message came from God, and since it is from God's point of view, the content naturally may be different from human understanding. Therefore, it may be very new to you. But what we need is new ideas -- God's ideas because man has exhausted all of his own ideas already. That is the reason for my coming to talk to you tonight.

So I ask each one of you to open your mind and open your heart, so that the spirit of God can speak to you directly.

For 2,000 years, Christians of the world have been looking forward to one great culminating day, as prophesied in the Bible -- the day of the Second Coming of the Lord. Since this has been the promise of God, the Second Coming of Christ will definitely be fulfilled.

Why is the Lord coming a second time? He is coming to consummate the will of God. Then what is the will of God? Do we know clearly what God's will is?

God is eternal, unchanging, and absolute. And He has one will, which is also eternal, unchanging, and absolute. In the beginning, God had a definite purpose for creating the universe and this world. That purpose was the reason for creation. And God began the creation of the universe and man to fulfill that purpose.

According to the Bible, after the first man and woman were created -- Adam and Eve -- God gave them a commandment. That commandment 'Of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall die.' (Gen. 2:17)

God asked them to obey His commandment. God was implying that by Adam and Eve's obedience to the law, His purpose would be fulfilled. However, God made the consequence of disobedience very clear. He said, "The day that you eat of it you shall die." The fruit of disobedience was death.

However, Adam and Eve disobeyed God. The result was the fall of man. Spiritual death came to mankind, and the purpose of God was not realized. The fall of man means their deviation from the original state that God intended. Adam and Eve departed from the fulfillment of the purpose of their creation. They made a wrong choice, creating the opposite of what God originally intended.

After their disobedience, God had no choice but to expel this man and woman from the Garden of Eden. The Garden of Eden is a symbolic expression of the Kingdom of God on earth. Adam and Eve no longer deserved citizenship in God's Kingdom, so they were cast out into the ungodly realms, the living hell -- which was their own creation.

### ***Kingdom of Heaven on earth***

If Adam and Eve had obeyed God, they would have brought the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. What would that kingdom be like? Adam and Eve were created sinless, with the potential for perfection. And they were to grow into perfection by obeying the law of God. While they were growing into fully perfected man and woman, their relationship was to be that of brother and sister. They were expected to set the true tradition of brotherhood and sisterhood.

What is perfection? Perfection is man's total union with God. A man is supposed to be the temple of God, in which the spirit of God dwells. Such a man is divine, as God is divine; that man is holy, as God is holy.

Jesus was the first such perfect man. This perfection is the state that Jesus was speaking of when he said,

'Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me.' (John 14:11)

When you become one with God, His divine power is yours, and you shall be perfect as God is perfect. Therefore, Jesus set as man's goal to be perfect as God is perfect when he said,

'You, therefore, must be perfect, as your Heavenly Father is perfect.' (Matt. 5:48) God created one male and one female. Why? After their reaching the state of perfection, God wanted to bring them together into one heavenly couple, through the blessing of heavenly matrimony. God intended to begin His Kingdom with Adam and Eve as the first husband and wife.

If that had become a reality, then God's blessing to be fruitful and multiply would have been fulfilled. He would have given them the power to multiply children of God. And those children would have been sinless and perfect. What else could they be? Sin would never have been introduced into the human race. By having children, Adam and Eve would have become the God-centered True Father and Mother -- the True Parents of mankind.

If Adam and Eve had formed this first God-centered family, from them would have come a God-centered tribe, a God-centered nation, and a God-centered world ruled by God alone. Then perfection would have reigned from the beginning to eternity.

Where did God create Adam and Eve? Up in the air, out in space? No, right here on earth. Therefore, the prospering of Adam's family should have brought the realization of God's ideal here on earth, and God would have become the center of mankind. This would have been nothing other than the Kingdom of God on earth, in which God would have dwelt with men and women.

If that had been accomplished in the beginning, there would be no great divisions of races and languages. We would all belong to the one race of Adam under the one tradition of Adam. And Adam's one language would be our universal tongue. And indeed, the whole world would be one nation under God.

So, in God's plan, all men are supposed to be born into the Kingdom of God on earth. We are to enjoy the heavenly life on earth. And then when our physical earthly life is over, we are to be elevated into the Kingdom of God in the spiritual heaven, where we shall live for eternity. That was God's original plan.

There could be no Satan, no evil, and no hell in that world. Indeed, God did not create hell for His own children. No good father would construct a prison for his newborn child. Why would God need a hell for His children? Only heaven was God's original will. Because of sin, however, people lost their original value and became human trash. Hell is like a trash can. But it was necessary only after the fall of man.

### ***Kingdom of hell -- paradise lost***

Then let us further examine the state of the fallen people and the fallen world. We read in John that Jesus says,

'You are of your father the devil.' (John 8:44)

By the fall, man was brought under the false fatherhood of Satan. Man changed fathers. We left our true father, God, and united with the false father, Satan. The first man and

woman became the children of Satan. Under the false fatherhood of Satan, Adam and Eve united unlawfully as a couple without God's blessing or permission. And when they multiplied children, they all came under the same false father. They were all born as the children of sin, not the children of God. Therefore, the multiplication of sinful children from one generation to another has brought about this fallen, sinful world.

Because God is not at the center, this is a world of sin, a world of mistrust, a world of crime, a world of war. And we, the nations and societies of this world can destroy each other and feel no pain. This is the kingdom of hell on earth.

The master of this world, indeed, is not God, but Satan. This is why John 12:31 indicates that Satan is the ruler of this world. We know this universe was created by God. We know God created us. But God is no longer the master, because people changed masters. Man betrayed God and united with a false master, Satan. This Satan became the father of mankind.

The fall of man has brought great grief to the heart of our Heavenly Father. God lost everything when His people turned against Him. That is why we read in Genesis,

The Lord was sorry that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him to his heart. (Gen. 6:6)

God was grieved because the exact opposite of His will had become the reality. If God's intention had been fulfilled, He would have been joyful. If the consequences of the fall were the result of God's own plan, why should God be grieved to His heart? Why would He have been sorry that He had made us?

### ***Salvation is restoration***

Almighty God is a God of love, a God of mercy. His heart is compassionate and He grieved at the living death of His children.

He knows no person is capable of breaking his chains and getting rid of sin by himself. He knows that only one power can bring people into salvation -- God Himself. And God, in His mercy, is determined to save this world.

What is salvation? Salvation is simply restoration. What does a doctor do to save his patient? He restores the patient to normal health. That is a cure. What would you do to save a drowning person? You would save him by bringing him out of the water and restoring him to dry land. That is a rescue.

By the same token, God's salvation of man is simply to restore man from an abnormal, deviated state to the original state of goodness.

So, salvation is equivalent to restoration. God is going to restore the kingdom of hell to the Kingdom of Heaven.

God made His determination clear in the Bible:

'I have spoken, and I will bring it to pass; I have purposed, and I will do it.' (Isaiah 46:11)

God did not say He might do it. He said He will do it, showing His absolute determination to restore man and the world to the original design.

How? By the Messiah. To restore mankind, God sent His only son, Jesus Christ, into this world as the Savior -- as the Messiah. Two thousand years ago, Jesus Christ came into our world as the author of life. He came to transform all sinful people into Christ-like people. He came to restore the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Therefore, Jesus Christ proclaimed as his first gospel,

'Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.' (Matt: 4:17)

With the coming of Jesus Christ, people were truly at the threshold of the Kingdom of Heaven.

### ***Preparation for the Messiah***

However, before God could send His Son to restore the world, He had to prepare the way step by step, starting with one individual and expanding to a nation, in order to establish a foundation of faith upon which the Messiah could come.

After all, this world had been Satan's world. If the Messiah were to come to this earth without a prepared foundation, the satanic world would destroy him. So God worked diligently and carefully to establish one nation, one sovereignty over which He could have control. The nation of Israel was the result of that preparation for the Messiah.

God prepared the nation of Israel as the "landing site" for the Messiah. Upon Israel's foundation of faith, God could send His ultimate champion, the Messiah.

Likewise, Christianity today is the parallel landing site of the Messiah for his Second Coming. And Christians are supposed to be forming a foundation of faith for the return of the Messiah in the final hour of fulfillment.

Today, as never before in our troubled world, the Messiah is our hope! The mission of the Messiah is restoration -- to bring fallen, suffering humanity out of this world of evil and restore man into the original perfection and goodness of God. He is to destroy Satan's evil sovereignty over this world and establish God's sovereignty.

Jesus Christ came as the Messiah of 2,000 years ago for this purpose -- to restore God's Kingdom. Today we are waiting for the Second Coming of Christ. The purpose of that Second Coming is precisely the same -- the restoration of God's original Kingdom. That is the one purpose and one will of God.

We Christians are today's chosen people of God. Christians are Christ's co-workers. So we are in a position to prepare a foundation for the Lord, to welcome and accept him when he comes, and to participate in his mission to destroy Satan from the face of the earth, and bring all mankind to salvation.

But today, Christians are not sure about the will of God. We are more interested in our own personal salvation, our own heaven somewhere, and the guarantee of our own little niche up there. But that is not the way God intended Christians to be.

### ***Where are you, my David?***

God is looking for His champions among the Christians of the world today. And the work of God needs a sacrificial spirit. How many Christians are now saying, "Use me as a lamb on Your altar, and out of my sacrifice save this world"? God is seeking a self-denying spirit. God is searching for the bearers of the cross for the 20th century. And today's Christians are deaf to that call.

Instead, Christians today are crying out for "my heaven," "my salvation." What about God? What about the rest of the world? Will you be able to keep your small piece of heaven when the rest of the world is crumbling? No. If, on the other hand, the whole world were saved, would your own salvation not already be included?

Today, if the Christian churches persist in the same individual-centered way, the spirit of Christianity is bound to decline. Before we cry out for our salvation, let us cry out for the fulfillment of God's will. We must liberate God from His sorrow, His grief. When we have solved God's problem, man's problem will automatically be solved. Then Christian fire will truly burn for the sake of the broken heart of God, not for ourselves.

In their 2,000 years of history, Christians had great opportunity to bring the entire world to God. But Christians simply did not clearly know the will of God. They did not act when opportunity knocked.

That same opportunity is knocking once again. This time the opportunity has come to America. If today's American Christians recognize the will of God in the present day and act upon it, we can turn the world upside down and right side up, and bring heaven down on earth. The hour of the Second Coming of Christ is at hand, yet we are missing the signs of the times.

Instead of continuing to ask and pray, 'Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven,' (Matt. 6:10) we can act upon God's will now, and make that heaven a reality right here in New York, because we have already arrived at God's scheduled hour of fulfillment.

Each one of us is part of the body of Christ, so when Christ comes we are the extensions of his living body. If each one of us is willing and ready to nail his body to the cross in order to have our world live, then we shall indeed turn this world into the Kingdom of Heaven. To live and die for God and Christ -- this is the privilege of being a Christian!

Remember, God's will is to save the whole world -- not just Christians, not just churches. There is a universally known verse in the Bible, which we learned as children in Sunday school:

For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish but have eternal life. (John 3:16)

The emphasis there is on the word "world." God so loved the world, not just the church, not just the Christians, not just one particular people, but the whole world. For that reason -- to save this world -- the Messiah is sent.

If you asked our Lord the question, "Are you the savior of only the Christians?" he would answer "No! I am the savior of all mankind."

If you asked God, "Are You the God of the Christians?" God would say, "No! I am the God of the universe, the God of all creation, the God of all people."

Two thousand years ago, people were awaiting the coming of the Messiah, but for very self-centered reasons. They thought that the Messiah was coming as a sort of military conqueror to avenge them and defeat the Roman Empire, and to reward Israel with great glory and power in an earthly sense. And they simply missed the whole point.

On the contrary, the Messiah was coming to Israel to lead the people as a sacrifice to reach out to the rest of the world, to bring the entire world into God's salvation.

God determined to restore the entire world, and to bring all people into goodness and perfection. If God could not do that, He would be a defeated God. Defeated by whom? By Satan! Then God would not be God.

Imagine yourself in the position of God. When God looks upon the Christian world today, I do not think He is pleased. He foresees a great battle to be fought and won. God must have a confrontation with the formidable power of the enemy, the power of Satan, the power of sin.

For that, God needs a modern day David to confront this Goliath, Satan. Do you not hear God's cry, "Where is my David? Where are you, my David?" And God expects today's Christians to respond, "Yes, my Lord! I am Your David. Your will be done!"

But the Christians of this world seem to be in deep sleep. And the handful who are awake are busy fighting among themselves. The time of harvest has come in this cosmic autumn, but God has no workers to send out to the fields.

Ever since the fall of man, God has been waging a divine war against the power of Satan. That war has not ended. The final battle is yet to come. Christ is coming for the second time, as the commander in chief, to wage that final battle. And that hour has arrived. Yet, alas, no heavenly soldiers are ready. Christians are asleep.

So far, God has only been able to engage in "guerrilla warfare" against Satan, not total war. However, God has been preparing for one great day, a heavenly "D-Day" -- like the D-Day of the Normandy landing -- when God can launch an all out offensive. That day is the day of the return of Christ. That D-Day of God is at hand! The Bible is the record of God's patient preparation leading mankind into that final battle. The fulfillment of the Bible is the coming of the Lord - - the return of Christ for that D-Day.

### ***The Bible is a coded message***

What is the Bible, more precisely? The Bible has been a book of mystery. However, the Bible contains God's message to you and me.

The Bible does not use plain language, but is written in symbols and parables. Do you know why God has presented the Bible in symbols and parables? Why did He not speak the truth clearly?

God has had to deal with the world of evil. Throughout the ages, God has hand picked His workers, or champions, out of this evil world. Abraham was such a champion. Noah was such a champion.

And God's champions were always in the utter minority in the evil world. If God revealed His strategy too openly or plainly, the enemy would use that information against God's champions. Thus, the Bible was written as a coded message, so that only God's agents or champions could decipher it.

Let me make an analogy. To protect her security, America sends out many agents overseas to collect vital information concerning potential enemies. When the home headquarters is communicating with these agents overseas, particularly in enemy territory, would they communicate openly and plainly? No. No one would be that naive. They would communicate in coded messages -- secret messages -- so that the enemy could not decipher them.

Throughout history, righteous people have faced nothing but suffering on this earth, simply because they were in enemy territory, and Satan did not want to have God's agents prosper. Whenever Satan's forces discovered God's representatives, they tried to destroy them.

We must realize that God has had to give His instructions in coded messages. Thus the Bible is written in symbols and parables. In a sense, the Bible is intended to be mysterious. Then how can we know the true meaning of those symbols and parables?

It is simple, in a way. If you are an agent dispatched by your headquarters, and you want to decipher a coded message, then you must either have a code book, or communicate directly with your home headquarters.

By the same token, the meaning of the symbols and parables in the Bible can only be clear when we communicate with our "home headquarters" -- God. This is truly the only sure way we can know the ultimate meaning of the Bible.

Two thousand years ago our Lord Jesus Christ brought the blueprint for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. However, he could not speak plainly about his plan even to his own disciples. Jesus spoke in figures and parables. Why?

Jesus knew the adverse circumstances in which he had to work. There was political pressure from the Roman Empire. There was the ruling monarchy, who opposed any change. And there was a strong religious system and tradition. These could all be directed against the building of the Kingdom of God.

Jesus came to kindle the fire of revolution in people, which would in due course change the structure and the life of the entire nation. But he could not speak plainly of any of this even to his own disciples. Instead, he had to speak in figures and parables, saying,

'He who has ears to hear, let him hear.' (Luke 14:35)

If you attempt to interpret the Bible literally, word for word, letter for letter, without understanding the nature of the coded message of the Bible, you are liable to make a big mistake.

Therefore, in this day, at this hour, what the Christian world needs is a revelation from God. God must reveal to us His plan; He must tell us His timetable, and give us instructions as to what to do at this time. God indeed promised that by saying, in Amos, 'Surely the Lord God does nothing, without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets.' (Amos 3:7)

Tonight I am standing here at Madison Square Garden not according to my own will, but in obedience to the divine will of God. God has called me as His instrument, to reveal His message for His present day dispensation, so that there may be a people prepared for the day of the Lord.

Tonight I am going to concentrate on the divine revelation concerning the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent -- the vital issue of the Second Advent -- the most important question of our time. And in order to understand this more clearly, we must first know the circumstances of the coming of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago.

### ***Jesus did not come to die***

There is one historical puzzle that not been solved.

For 4,000 years before the coming of Jesus Christ, God had prepared the people for the Messiah, as I explained earlier. Through His prophets, God had forewarned the people to be ready for the Messiah. God was working to build up expectation, and there was indeed

great messianic fervor in Israel. And at the appointed hour, God fulfilled His promise. The Son of God, Jesus Christ, came to his own people on time.

Then what happened? History is the witness We did not know him. We rejected him, rebelled against him, and finally crucified him on the cross. Why?

The Christian churches say, "Well, the answer to that question is, simply, God sent Jesus Christ to die on the cross. The crucifixion was the predestined will of God from the beginning."

Then let me ask those Christians, "What will you do when Jesus Christ returns to you today?" All Christians undoubtedly will answer, "We will receive him! Welcome him! Unite with him! Follow him!" Let me further ask, "Will you crucify Christ when he appears?" Your answer must be, "No!"

If that is so, then what about the people of 2,000 years ago? If they had accepted Jesus -- as you would today -- would they still have had to crucify him? No! It was a mistake! It was in ignorance that we crucified Jesus Christ.

It was God's will that His people accept the Messiah. But we crucified him instead. And then Christians "passed the buck" by saying that was the will of God. Ridiculous! This is not acceptable to our logic. Something must have gone terribly wrong. What was it?

### ***Ignorance killed Jesus***

The people did not know who Jesus of Nazareth was. They did not know him as the Son of God. If they had clearly known Jesus was the Messiah the Son of God, they would not have crucified him.

He came to his own home, and his own people received him not. (John 1:11) None of the rulers of this age understood this; for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. (I Cor. 2:8)

If they had only known who he was, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. It was a mistake. It was ignorance and blindness that killed Jesus Christ!

Christians of the world have not realized the truth about what actually happened in Jesus' time. If God's only purpose in sending His Son was to have him nailed on the cross, then why would God spend the time to prepare the people in the first place? It would have been much easier for God to send His son among the disbelievers, or even among savages. They would have killed him more quickly, and salvation would have come faster.

### ***Slaves to the letter of the Old Testament***

Then the question is, why did the people not know who Jesus was? Believe it or not, the first reason why God's people did not recognize Jesus as the Messiah was because of the Old Testament. This may be surprising to you. But the people interpreted the Old

Testament literally. They did not realize that the Bible was in code. They did not look for a code book. Instead, they took the Bible literally, word for word, letter for letter. In other words, they became slaves to the letter of the Old Testament.

Let me give you the evidence. The book of Malachi in the Old Testament has a parallel purpose to that of the Book of Revelation in the New Testament. It clearly shows the timetable and the last minute description of how the Messiah would come. In Malachi, you will find these words:

'I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes. And he will turn the hearts of fathers to their children and the hearts of children to their fathers' (Mal. 4:5-6)

Who was Elijah? He was a great prophet of Israel who had lived approximately 900 years before Jesus Christ, and who had ascended into heaven in a chariot of fire in a whirlwind, according to the Old Testament. So people believed that Elijah would literally return from the blue sky in a chariot of fire and announce the Son of God: This is what people expected.

But did Elijah come? The problem was, Elijah did not return in the manner people expected. The people never heard anything about his returning miraculously. However, one day they did hear an extraordinary declaration. A young man from Nazareth, whose name was Jesus, was being proclaimed by his followers as the Messiah, the Son of God. That was indeed an incredible announcement.

And what was the people's immediate reaction? "Impossible!" they said. "How could Jesus of Nazareth be the Son of God? We have not heard anything about Elijah." No Elijah, no Messiah.

In order to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God, they would have had to disregard their 4,000 year old tradition and throw their Bible away. But no one was willing to do that.

People at that time truly misunderstood Jesus, the Son of God. They said to him,

'It is not for a good work that we stone you but for blasphemy; because you, being a man, make yourself God' (John 10:33)

And they picked up stones, ready to stone Jesus Christ, the Messiah.

Furthermore, when Jesus performed many mighty works and miracles, people did not honor Jesus. They said instead,

'It is only by Beelzebub, the prince of demons, that this man casts out demons.' (Matt. 12:24)

What a tragedy! Jesus Christ, the Son of God, the prince of peace, was belittled and relegated to the prince of demons!

Pontius Pilate, the governor from Rome, did not want to crucify Jesus, because he could not find any fault in him. However, Jesus' own people were the ones who were shouting, "Let him be crucified! Let him be crucified!"

People whom God had prepared to receive him wanted Jesus to be killed, and to have the criminal Barabbas released instead of him. Was that the will of God? No! Jesus Christ was the victim of the ignorance and blindness of his own people. And they misread the prophecy -- they misread the Old Testament.

Imagine that Elijah had come in a supernatural manner, in a chariot of fire from the sky, as people expected. It would have created a great sensation. And imagine Elijah appearing in front of the multitudes and proclaiming, "This man, Jesus of Nazareth, is indeed the Son of God." Then I am sure everyone would have knelt down and worshipped him right there. Then who would have dared to crucify Jesus Christ?

However, that sort of miracle was not the meaning of the prophecy.

Malachi's prophecy of the coming of Elijah was indeed an obstacle to Jesus' successful ministry. When Jesus' disciples went out all over Israel teaching the gospel and proclaiming Jesus as the Son of God, the people repudiated their words, saying, "If your master is the Son of God, where is Elijah? The book says Elijah must come first."

### ***John the Baptist was Elijah***

Jesus' disciples were not well prepared to answer this question. As a matter of fact, they were not learned in the Old Testament. After all, they were lowly fishermen of Galilee and tax collectors. So the embarrassed disciples one day decided to go to Jesus to ask for his help in this matter. An account appears in Matthew:

And the disciples asked him, 'Then why do the scribes say that first Elijah must come?' He replied, 'Elijah does come, and he is to restore all things; but I tell you that Elijah has already come.' ...Then the disciples understood that he was speaking to them of John the Baptist. (Matt. 17:10-13)

This was a real shock to the disciples. And then they understood, according to the Bible, that Jesus was speaking to them of John the Baptist.

Was John the Baptist Elijah? Yes, Jesus said so. But the people were never convinced. They said, "Outrageous!"

Let us imagine we can transpose these events to our time. John the Baptist of 2,000 years ago was a person of tremendous influence, enjoying great prestige all over Israel as a great man of God -- just like Billy Graham of today, a great Christian leader.

Let us say some unknown young man suddenly appeared and began proclaiming himself to the world as the Son of God. As a student of the scriptures, you would ask him, "If you are the Son of God, where is the promised Elijah?" If this man said, "Do you not know that

Billy Graham is Elijah?" what would be your reaction? You would undoubtedly say, "Impossible! How could Billy Graham be Elijah? He did not come out of the blue sky. We all know he came from North Carolina!"

You could not accept that, could you? Precisely this same kind of unbelief confronted our Lord Jesus Christ. People could not accept John the Baptist as Elijah, simply because he did not come from the sky. The people of 2,000 years ago were stubborn in their belief that the prophecy of Elijah's return must be fulfilled literally, that he must come from the sky. They were the victims of the letter of the Old Testament.

### ***John the Baptist, man of failure***

Yet Jesus Christ continued to preach with power and authority in spite of scornful public opinion. The people could not dismiss such a man lightly. They wanted to be sure of themselves. So they decided to go to ask John the Baptist himself and settle their questions once and for all. They asked John,

'Who are you?' He confessed, he did not deny, but confessed, 'I am not the Christ' And they asked him, 'What then, are you Elijah?' He said, 'I am not.' 'Are you the prophet?' And he answered, 'No.' (John 1:19-21)

John the Baptist denied everything. He said, "I am not Elijah." He even denied the title of prophet. Everyone knew and recognized him as a prophet of God, but he said, "I'm no prophet." Why? He evaluated the situation and knew that Jesus Christ was treated by his own society as an outcast. Jesus seemed to be a loser, and John decided not to side with Jesus. He thought it would be much better to deny everything.

By doing so, John the Baptist pushed Jesus into a corner, making him seem a great impostor without defense. After John's denial, Jesus had no further recourse on this point.

Then why was Jesus crucified? First, he became the victim of literal interpretation of the Old Testament. Second, Jesus was rejected and finally crucified because of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist. We can read in Matthew that John the Baptist, waiting in prison to be beheaded, sent two of his own disciples to Jesus to ask the following question:

'Are you he who is to come, or shall we look for another?' (Matt. 11:3)

Is this the question of a man who has faith in Jesus as the Son of God? John the Baptist had earlier testified to Jesus at the Jordan River:

'I have seen and have born witness that this is the Son of God' (John 1:34)

Yet this very same person, with the very same tongue, was now confronting Jesus by asking, "Are you really the Messiah, or shall we go and look for somebody else?" How disheartening that question must have been to Jesus! What a man of little faith John was!

The mission of John the Baptist was very important to the fulfillment of the mission of the Messiah. God sent John specifically,

. . . to make ready for the Lord a people prepared. (Luke 1:17)

That was John's responsibility as the forerunner of Christ.

Jesus relied very much upon the success of the mission of John the Baptist. When this very John the Baptist sent his disciples to Jesus to ask him, "Are you really the Messiah?" it was more painful for Jesus than if he had stabbed him with a knife. Anger overwhelmed him. Jesus refused to answer yes or no to that impossible question. Instead Jesus said,

'Blessed is he who takes no offense at me.' (Matt. 11:6)

This was Jesus' consolation to John when he saw that John was failing. Jesus was really saying, "Poor John, man of failure. You no longer have faith in me. You are taking offense at the Son of God. I am sorry for you, John."

And then Jesus spoke to the crowd about John in indignation, saying,

'What did you go out into the wilderness to behold? A reed shaken by the wind? Why then did you go out? To see a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, those who wear soft raiment are in kings' houses. Why then did you go out? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet' (Matt. 11:7-9)

John was more than a prophet, because he came to bear witness directly to Jesus Christ, the Son of God. He was born for this extraordinary mission. God entrusted that glorious responsibility to John. What an honor for a man to be called "more than a prophet" by Jesus! Yet John failed to live up to this honor. Therefore, Jesus said in Matthew,

'Truly, I say to you, among those born of women there has risen no one greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.' (Matt. 11:11)

John had fallen to the point where even the least in the Kingdom of Heaven was greater than he. The meaning of Jesus' statement has remained mysterious. Christians have not understood its true significance because they have not realized that John the Baptist was a man who failed his mission. Tonight we know the true meaning.

John the Baptist was the greatest among those born of women because of his mission, which was to testify to the Son of God. All the prophets in the past had the same mission. But the prophets who came before John had borne witness to the Messiah with a distance of time between them and the Lord.

John was born as a contemporary of Jesus Christ, so he had the privilege to bear witness to the living Christ when he appeared in person. So far as his mission was concerned, John the Baptist had the greatest, most glorious mission of all. Thus Jesus said he was the greatest among those born of women.

However, in carrying out his mission, John was the very least; he was the most miserable failure of all. All the prophets who had lived before him were watching from the spirit world. They knew who Jesus Christ was. But John did not. He doubted. He became skeptical and finally blind to Jesus' identity. In the end, he failed to maintain his own testimony to the Son of God. He became a man of failure and therefore the least of all in the Kingdom of Heaven.

I will give you another indisputable proof of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist. The people said to John,

'Rabbi, he. . . [Jesus] who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore witness, here he is, baptizing, and all are going to him.' (John 3:26)

Then John answered,

'He must increase but I must decrease' (John 3:30)

Christians have interpreted this to mean that John was truly a humble man and a great prophet. They believe that he felt in all humility that Jesus must increase, while he himself had to decrease.

On the contrary, this is proof of the arrogance of John the Baptist. If John had taken Jesus Christ seriously as the Son of God, he would have no choice but to become one with Jesus and follow him wholeheartedly, rain or shine. He would have risen or fallen together with Jesus, bound by the same destiny. This passage shows that John did not in fact follow Jesus. He took an independent course and deserted Jesus. He did not, indeed, take Jesus seriously.

John the Baptist was finally beheaded. He could have been a glorious martyr had he been beheaded for performing his ordained mission: witnessing and proclaiming to the world that Jesus Christ was the Son of God! But he was beheaded merely for becoming involved in the love scandal of King Herod's family. That affair was none of John's business. Attending the Son of God was his sole responsibility. But John deserted this divine mission and suffered a meaningless, even shameful death. This truth must be told, however painful.

Therefore, Jesus said of John,

'From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven has suffered violence, and men of violence take it by force.' (Matt. 11:12)

This means that because of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist, the kingdom heralded by Jesus Christ suffered and was left open for competition. When a champion of God fails in his mission, someone else must take up that mission and put forth great effort to accomplish it. Thus, men of violent faith -- like Peter -- took John's position by force of their own merit.

However, had John the Baptist been a man of great faith, what would have resulted? He would have indeed become the chief disciple of the Son of God, Jesus Christ. If Jesus had been king, John the Baptist would have been prime minister. That was the position that God ordained for John.

In that case, then, the 12 apostles, the 70 disciples, and the 120 people chosen by Jesus all would have come from the ranks of John's own followers. John would have served as a mediator to bring unity and harmony between the chosen people of Israel and the Son of God. Who would have dared to crucify Jesus under those circumstances? No one! The crucifixion would never have occurred.

I am sure that many people who read the Bible must have wondered about John, "If he was such a great man, why did he not become the chief disciple of the Son of God?" Jesus himself indicated the mission that John the Baptist came to fulfill:

'For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John; and if you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come' (Matt. 11:13)

John the Baptist represented the consummation of the Old Testament, the law and the prophets. He was the prince of the old age. Jesus Christ came as the prince of the new age. Had he been supported by John the Baptist, he could have stood upon the firm foundation of the Old Testament Age. Then the new age could have blossomed in the fertile soil of the accomplishments of the old age. The Son of God could have established his glorious kingdom at once. And John the Baptist would have been the cornerstone of that kingdom.

Had John the Baptist followed Jesus, the distinguished leaders of that society would have been the first to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Then who would have crucified the Lord of glory?

When God sent His only Son to this world to establish His kingdom on earth, don't you think He wanted to be followed by the most able people of his age? Do you think that God wanted only the outcasts of society to follow Jesus? Not at all! The simple failure of John the Baptist broke the link between the Son of God and the people. And as a result, only fishermen, tax collectors, harlots and lepers followed Jesus Christ. This brought great grief to the heart of God.

If the Lord is returning to the world today, is it not most logical that all the leadership of Christianity -- the bishops, the cardinals, the pope, and all the evangelists and great ministers of the world -- should become the first group to welcome the Christ? If they followed the Lord and became his first disciples, the establishment of his kingdom would be infinitely easier.

You may say, "Reverend Moon, by what authority are you speaking? What makes you so sure?" I do have the authority to say these things. God showed me the truth. I met Jesus. Jesus himself showed me these truths. And I met John the Baptist, too, in the spirit world. He himself bore witness to the truth of this testimony. After these extraordinary spiritual

experiences, when I returned to the reality of this world, the same Bible I had been reading took on a whole new meaning.

Even if you cannot accept these things as the truth now, you must at least suspend judgment. One day we will all know the truth. Eventually we are all going to die. Every one of us will end up in the spiritual world, where truth is like the sunlight. No one can escape it there. On that day we shall all see the whole truth.

However, blessed is he who can be humble enough to accept the truth while he has the opportunity here on earth. Your knowledge of the truth and of God here on earth will determine your eternal life.

### ***Jesus expected on the clouds of heaven***

There a third vital reason why Jesus was not accepted as the Messiah. Two thousand years ago the people expected the Son of God to come on the clouds of heaven, according to the prophecy of Daniel:

'I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man' (Dan. 7:13)

But Jesus Christ did not appear miraculously on the clouds of heaven.

He was born of a woman Mary, the wife of Joseph. The people said, "Well, how could this Jesus be the Son of God? He is a mere man, Just like you and me." This was another overwhelming reason why the people rejected Jesus.

Some might object that Daniel's prophecy was not intended for the first coming of Jesus Christ, but rather for the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. But I say this is not the case, because Jesus testified that all the prophecies and the law given prior to John the Baptist were intended to be fulfilled in the time of Jesus Christ (Matt. 11:13).

So the prophecy of the coming of the Son of Man on the clouds of heaven was intended for the coming of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago. In those days there was no New Testament, and the thought of the Second Coming of the Lord was not even in the mind of God.

This prophecy of Daniel posed much difficulty for the ministry of Jesus. For instance, we can see the apostle John warns in the New Testament,

For many deceivers have gone out into the world, men who will not acknowledge the coming of the Jesus Christ in the flesh; such a one is the deceiver and the antichrist. (II John 7)

This is what John was saying 2,000 years ago about those who disbelieved in Jesus Christ, rejecting him simply because he was a man in the flesh. They did not accept

Jesus, but continued waiting for a supernatural appearance on the clouds. John condemned these people in the worst terms, saying, "such a one is the antichrist."

These historical truths have remained hidden from the Christian world. Today, for the first time, all these circumstances of Jesus' ministry are being brought to light.

Yes, our Lord Jesus Christ came to fulfill the mission of bringing God's kingdom to earth. But we did not understand him. We committed the great tragedy. Then later we claimed that was the will of God. How ironic!

The conviction that Jesus came to die on the cross has become the very foundation of Christianity. But this mistaken belief has been piercing the heart of God again and again for the last 2,000 years. God's heart was broken when Adam rebelled against Him, and again when His Son was nailed to the cross on the Mount of Calvary. We have sadly misunderstood both God and Christ.

Why, then, has this truth been revealed at this particular time? Because the time of the Second Coming of Christ is near. And God does not want Christians to commit the same mistake made at Jesus' time.

Only with the revelation of the clear truth from the Heavenly Father can all the Christian churches become one. Yes, truth makes us one. If we know the truth, that truth will liberate us from our mistaken beliefs and disunity. And the plain truth of God has now been revealed.

### ***Crucifixion -- secondary mission of Jesus***

The crucifixion was not at all the original mission of the Son of God, but represented an alteration of his intended course. It was a secondary mission. It was decided on the Mount of Transfiguration. An account of this appears in Luke.

And behold, two men talked with him, Moses and Elijah, who appeared in glory and spoke of his departure [his crucifixion], which he was to accomplish at Jerusalem. (Luke 9:30-31)

When Peter, Jesus' chief disciple, was informed by Jesus that he would suffer in Jerusalem and was to be crucified, Peter violently protested, as we read in Matthew:

'God forbid, Lord! This shall never happen to you' (Matt. 16:22)

Then Jesus lashed out at him saying,

'Get behind me, Satan! You are a hindrance to me; for you are not on the side of God, but of men.' (Matt. 16:23)

Christians often quote this particular passage as proof that Jesus came to die on the cross. Many explain, "Look what Jesus said. He said he came to die. So that is why he rebuked Peter and called him Satan, because Peter opposed Jesus' going to the cross."

But that interpretation misses one vital point. Jesus rebuked Peter after he knew that God had changed His plan and altered Jesus' mission. Since the people rejected Jesus, God knew that Jesus could not carry out his primary mission, the establishment of the kingdom on earth, which required the cooperation of the people.

At that late point in his ministry, God then asked Jesus to fulfill only the limited goal of spiritual salvation. Jesus therefore began preparing for this secondary goal. And poor Peter knew nothing about this change in the mission of Jesus Christ.

Jesus called Peter "Satan" because Peter's seemingly comforting words had no relevance to the will of God at that point. Peter spoke from ignorance and blindness. But Jesus could not risk losing this secondary mission -- for then his coming would have been completely in vain.

Accepting Jesus would have brought God's kingdom

Let us consider what actually would have happened had Jesus been accepted by the people of Israel. Indeed, he would have become the king of Israel; he would have united his disciples with all of the descendants of Abraham, 12 tribes of Jacob, and all the Arab tribes as well. All of them would have become one family of the Son of God.

Jesus Christ would have set up a heavenly sovereignty centered upon the nation of Israel. The constitution of the Kingdom of God would have been promulgated in his time. An invincible nation would have been established, with the sovereignty of God spearheaded by the last Adam -- Jesus Christ -- as king. Even the Roman Empire would have been humbled before God's kingdom. This is the prediction of Isaiah:

Of the increase of his government and of peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David, and over his kingdom, to establish it, and to uphold it with justice and with righteousness from this time forth and for evermore. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will do this. (Is. 9:7)

After Jesus' death, his disciples marched toward Rome barehanded, suffering and shedding their blood. And within 400 years, the Roman Empire collapsed before this weaponless army. Had Jesus Christ not been crucified, but personally commanded this holy army, the entire Roman Empire would have come under the sovereignty of God during Jesus' own lifetime.

In those days, the great Roman Empire was the hub of the world. God's plan of salvation was to restore the whole world. Thus, God prepared Rome in a central role so that once the kingdom came to Rome, it could be spread easily to the whole world. Had Jesus been able to establish his kingdom in the Roman Empire, then through Rome's power and influence, people in every corner of the globe would have heard his gospel while he lived on earth.

Thus, in his lifetime Jesus would have established the Kingdom of Heaven on earth as a reality. The nation of Israel would have been the glorious center of his kingdom. Then

there would be no divided Christianity as we have today -- no Roman Catholicism, no Presbyterianism, no Methodism, no Church of Christ. None of these would be necessary. You no longer need a vehicle when you have reached your destination.

You and I would already be citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. There would have been no bloody history of Christianity -- no martyrs. And there would be no reason for the Second Coming. A doctor is unnecessary if there are no patients to cure.

The sad reality, however, is that Jesus Christ was met with rebellion. Without the obedience of Adam and Eve, God could not fulfill his ideal in the Garden of Eden. And without people's cooperation, Jesus Christ could not establish his kingdom on earth.

### ***Crucifixion brought only spiritual salvation***

So Jesus focused on his secondary mission, spiritual salvation. Due to the sin and blindness of the people, God permitted His son to be a sacrifice. That was the significance of the crucifixion. God allowed Jesus to die on the cross as a ransom paid to Satan. In exchange, upon Jesus' resurrection, God could claim the people's souls, though redemption of the body was not possible.

Therefore God's victory was not in the cross but in the resurrection. The resurrection brought the salvation Christianity offers.

At Jesus' crucifixion, Christianity was crucified as well. At the hour of the Lord's tribulation, no one remained faithful. Everyone betrayed Jesus. Even Peter denied Christ.

But with the resurrection, Christianity revived as well. Then for 40 days, Jesus rejoined and cemented the shattered fragments of Christianity. That was the beginning of the Christianity of today.

Yes, our salvation does come from Jesus' victorious resurrection. This is the victory of Christ, and Satan's power can never influence it. But the body of Jesus Christ was given up as a sacrifice and a ransom. In giving up his body, Jesus also gave up the body of mankind. Our salvation is limited to spiritual redemption, because the redemption of the body remained unfulfilled 2,000 years ago. And our world still suffers under Satan's power. Sin rages and dominates this world through our bodies.

Therefore, Paul shouted out in anguish,

Wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, I of myself serve the law of God with my mind, but with my flesh I serve the law of sin. (Rom. 7:24-25)

Paul was living in the grace of the Lord. Still he confessed that he could serve God only with his mind, and his flesh served the law of sin. His body yearned to be redeemed; he still anguished over sin.

And so it is for us. By accepting Christ, we receive spiritual salvation. But our bodies serve the law of sin under Satan's domain -- until Christ returns and liberates us from the bondage of sin. The Lord of the Second Advent alone can give total salvation: spiritual salvation and redemption of our bodies as well.

Christianity's power is limited to spiritual salvation. Unlike the nation of Israel, Christianity has no physical base, so God's dominion in Christianity is over only a spiritual kingdom.

Therefore, our great hope is the Second Coming of the Messiah. This is the hope of America, the hope of the world. America -- this unique Christian nation -- must awaken now and ready herself for the day of his coming.

American Christianity stands in the spiritual position of Israel 2,000 years ago. America is destined to serve as the Messiah's landing site for the 20th century. God wants to reach out to all people, and has chosen to reach out first to America and through her to the world.

America's role parallels that of the Roman Empire 2,000 years ago. As Rome was the hub of the world then, America is the hub of the world in modern times. Jesus set his eyes on Rome. And when Christ returns, he will set his eyes on America.

### ***Prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane***

In our ignorance, we Christians have missed the true spirit of Jesus' prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane. There he told his disciples:

'My soul is very sorrowful, even to death; remain here and watch with me' And going a little farther he fell on his face and prayed, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will but as thou wilt.' (Matt. 26:28-39)

He prayed this way not once, but three times. He was sorrowful even to death. Many in the Christian world suppose Jesus prayed this way out of human weakness, shrinking from his mission of dying on the cross. Nothing can be further from the truth!

Under Roman tyrants hundreds of thousands of Christians were martyred. They never said, "Please let this cup pass from me."

Simon Peter, when he himself was about to be crucified, told his persecutors, "I am not worthy to die in the same manner as my Lord. Do me a favor! Crucify me upside down." Even he did not say, "Please let this cup pass from me."

When Stephen, the first Christian martyr, was being stoned to death, he did not say, "Let this cup pass from me." Rather, he died peacefully, praying for his tormentors.

Such bravery is not limited to the Bible, Nathan Hale, a young officer captured in the American Revolutionary War, said as he was about to be hanged, "I only regret that I have but one life to give for my country." He did not say, "Please let this cup pass from me."

Do you suppose that the Messiah, the Son of God, was weaker than all these people -- especially if you think he came for the sole purpose of dying on the cross for world salvation? No! Were that the case, he would be unqualified as a Messiah. We have not understood the Lord Jesus.

The prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane was not uttered out of any selfish concern or fear of death. Jesus Christ, our Lord, was ready to die a thousand times over if that were the only way to bring about the salvation of humanity.

Jesus' concern was for his mission. He grieved at the suffering of his Heavenly Father. He was in turmoil because he could foresee the terrible consequences of his crucifixion. Jesus knew well that his crucifixion was not God's ultimate will. He knew his death would postpone the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven another 2,000 years, and that in the meantime humanity would suffer terribly.

He knew that millions of future followers would have to suffer, shedding their blood and being martyred as he had been. He knew Israel would be forsaken and desolate. And most of all, he had longed to bring victory and glorious fulfillment to his Father's throne in heaven, not to return alone through the crucifixion. He had hoped for a triumphant homecoming.

So in the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus made his final desperate plea to God: "Even at this late hour, is there any possible way that I can remain on earth to fulfill my mission?" If we are to become true followers of Christ, we must fathom the grief and anguish that Jesus Christ suffered.

Furthermore, had the crucifixion been the full will of God, then Judas -- Jesus' betrayer -- should be regarded as a hero and awarded a heavenly medal, because somebody had to hand the Son of God to the enemy to be crucified. Yet, Jesus said of Judas,

'Woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! It would have been better for that man if he had not been born.' (Matt. 26:24)

And why should Jesus shout on the cross,

'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' (Matt. 27:46)

If his crucifixion had been the will of God, Jesus should have been overjoyed. He would have shouted, "God, I am honored! Rejoice, Father, I am victorious!"

Christianity today has maintained the traditional view that Jesus came simply to die on the cross. This is how Christians have rationalized the murder of the Son of God!

### ***How the Second Coming will be fulfilled***

Today, people cannot believe anything unless it is logical. God is truth, and truth is logical. There can be no perfection in ignorance.

Christian prayer alone could not lift Neil Armstrong to the moon. Scientific truth was necessary. I myself was once a student of science, and I know that God is also the God of science. God's message has to be scientific, logical, and convincing to men of the 20th century.

Let me come now to the apex of this evening's talk by discussing how the Second Coming of Christ will be fulfilled.

We read in the Gospels,

'They will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.'  
(Matt. 24:30)

And in Revelation we read:

Behold, he is coming with the clouds. (Rev. 1:7)

But on the other hand, Paul wrote, "The day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night."  
(I Thess. 5:2)

One prophecy envisions the Lord appearing with the clouds of heaven, and the other sneaking in like a thief in the night. These two prophecies are somewhat in conflict. If he comes as a thief, he cannot at the same time appear in the clouds. Shall we just choose one prophecy and throw the other out?

The people of 2,000 years ago did not know the message of God was in symbols. In interpreting it literally, they made a grave mistake. And when we Christians read the New Testament, we must not make the same mistake. We must read the Bible in the spirit of God, and discover the true meaning of its symbols and parables.

Two thousand years ago everyone expected Elijah to appear from the blue sky, but he did not come that way. Likewise, they expected the Messiah to come with the clouds of heaven, but he did not come that way either. Today, Christians await the Lord of the Second Advent's arrival on the clouds. But do you have any guarantee that such expectations will not be disappointed this time?

Let us be humble and open minded enough to accept both possibilities -- his coming on the clouds of heaven, and his coming as a thief at night. If you fix your mind only on the Lord's coming on the clouds, and it turns out that he comes as the Son of Man in the flesh, you will most likely commit the same crime as the people 2,000 years ago.

However, if you are humble and capable of accepting the Lord as the Son of Man in the flesh -- which is the only way he could come as a thief -- you win either way. You will be assured of meeting the Lord whichever way he comes.

If you could miss the Lord at all, it would be only if he came as a thief. If he comes on the clouds, you have no worry. Every eye would see him then. The television networks would make sure of that!

But I must advise you that God will not send His Son literally with the clouds of heaven. If you are gazing up in the sky and waiting for the Second Coming of the Lord, you will be disappointed. He will come, once again, as a man in the flesh.

This is God's revelation. Let me testify to it by reading the significant prophecies of the Bible. In Luke we read,

Being asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was coming, he [Jesus] answered them, 'The kingdom of God is not coming with signs to be observed.' (Luke 17:20)

Everyone would see the clouds of heaven. But Jesus said we would not observe the kingdom's coming. Did the people see the coming of the Messiah 2,000 years ago? No, they did not, because he came as the Son of Man in the flesh. Next let us examine a most extraordinary statement of Jesus Christ.

Most people ask, "Does the Bible really say that?" Look in Luke, where Jesus said,

'But first he [the Lord of the Second Advent] must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation.' (Luke 17:25)

If the Lord is coming with the clouds of heaven, in power and great glory, with the trumpets of angels, who could dare reject him or cause him suffering? Would you? These are Jesus' words: He will suffer and be rejected, because he is coming as the Son of Man in the flesh. At first, people will have a difficult time recognizing him as the Christ.

Christian churches and devout Christians are expecting the coming of the Lord in the clouds of heaven. They are all looking up, waiting for his appearance. But if that expectation does not come true, and the Lord appears unexpectedly as the Son of man in the flesh -- as Jesus came to this world the first time -- then what will happen?

At first people will reject him and cause him suffering. There will be no faith on earth. There will be no initial acceptance of Christ. Many Christians will pick up stones to throw at him. Many Christians will call him a blasphemer, a heretic, a man possessed by demons. Those were the very charges brought against Jesus 2,000 years ago.

In Luke we read,

As it was in the time of Noah, so will it be in the days of the days of the Son of man. They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day when Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all. (Luke 17:26-27)

This is the description of the days of the Son of Man. And this will happen when the Lord comes as the Son of Man in the flesh.

The coming of Jesus as a man will herald the Kingdom of Heaven. But nobody will heed him. In fact, people will laugh at him, ridicule him, and persecute him, and do all kinds of evil against him.

And in the meantime, the world will continue in its usual way, in carnal business -- eating, drinking, marrying -- until the day the Lord is lifted up to the throne of judgment. When the world recognizes him as the Lord of Judgment, it will be too late! The ark will be closed. The judgment will already be at hand.

Now, I want you to consider another passage:

'I tell you, he will vindicate them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man comes, will he find faith on earth?' (Luke 18:8)

Jesus questioned whether there would be faith on earth when Christ returned. Why?

History may repeat itself. Two thousand years ago tremendous faith existed. People prayed in the synagogues morning, noon, and night. They constantly read the Scriptures, writing them on their lapels, reciting them every day. They kept the Ten Commandments and all the laws. They brought their tithes to the temple. They fasted and fasted.

However, when the Son of God appeared, they failed to recognize him, and condemned him to the cross. Did Jesus find any faith? In the sight of Jesus Christ, there was absolutely no faith on earth.

So when he returns as the Son of Man in the flesh, there also may be no faith on earth. Millions of Christians and thousands of churches may never see the Son of Man coming, because it will be in the flesh.

Now, finally, let us read Matthew,

'On that day many will say to me, "Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast our demons in your name, and do many mighty works in your name?" And then will I declare to them, "I never knew you; depart from me, you evildoers."' (Matt. 7:22)

What does this mean? Why should these devout Christians, who are calling on the name of the Lord, be condemned as evildoers? What wrong will they have done?

Throughout history many crimes and sins have been committed in the name of the Lord, in the name of God.

There is no better example of this than what happened in Jesus' time. The people who plotted to kill Jesus Christ -- and finally succeeded in crucifying him on the cross -- were the very people who had faithfully followed the word of God day and night. But when the

Son of God came to them, they committed the worst crime in history. They killed God's only Son, and they did it in the name of the Lord!

By the same token, when Christ comes to us once again as a man in the flesh, how can we be sure that the Christians of today will not be the first ones to cast stones at the returned Christ? Today we have the same responsibility as the people of 2,000 years ago. No matter how great our works or our prayers, when God sends His Son, if we do not recognize him and unite with him, he will say to us, "Depart from me, you evildoers."

If it is ever true that history repeats itself, then the Christians of today could become the worst enemies of the returned Christ. They may attempt to crucify him once again in the name of the Lord.

However, even though the initial rejection and persecution may be very severe, Christ is not returning to be crucified again. The Lord of the Second Advent will be victorious, and will finally be elevated to the throne of judgment, and shall judge the world as the Lord of Judgment.

When he is lifted up to the throne, then every eye shall see him. It will be unmistakably clear to everyone who he is. And those who have previously accused and rejected him will wail and mourn because of the evil they have done to him. But it will be too late. The Lord will say to them, "I never knew you. Depart from me, you evildoers."

The Lord is coming. And he is coming as a man. Yet, he is also coming with the power and glory of God. And he will judge the world. Only the meek will be blessed. The arrogant will see the unquenchable fire.

### ***Meaning of the clouds of heaven***

Then what is the true meaning of the "clouds of heaven"? Let us note once again that the Bible is written in symbols. Jesus said, "I am the vine, you are the branches." This is, of course, a symbolic expression.

By the same token, the "clouds of heaven" has a spiritual meaning, not a physical one. For instance, we read in Revelation,

The waters that you saw, where the harlot is seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. (Rev. 17:15)

The Bible indicates that water is a symbol for the multitudes of fallen mankind.

What are clouds? They are vaporized water. Water is often impure, dirty, with many foreign elements in it, but when such water is evaporated into clouds, it leaves its impurities behind. Thus, those people who are vaporized and purified from among the waters of mankind are symbolically in the position of the clouds of heaven.

Jesus is coming among those prepared people, God's people. He is coming among the consecrated, reborn Christians -- those who are purified, elevated, cleansed from sin. They will form the foundation of the Kingdom of God when Jesus returns to earth. This is the true meaning of the clouds of heaven.

### ***God's purpose fulfilled***

First Adam and Eve: God actually intended His Kingdom on earth to begin with the first Adam and Eve. If they had been truly obedient to God and achieved perfection, God would have united them in heavenly matrimony and established the first family on earth according to His will. This family would have become the cornerstone of the Kingdom of God on earth, with Adam and Eve as the True Father and True Mother of all people. The Garden of Eden is the symbolic expression for that kingdom. And this world would have been the world of joy for God.

Second Adam and Eve: Although the first Adam and Eve failed, God's ideal remained the same. God determined to realize that original kingdom and fulfill the world of joy. And 4,000 years later in biblical history, God intended to restore that Kingdom of God on earth through another perfected Adam. Jesus Christ was that perfected Adam.

Paul called Jesus the "last Adam," or the second Adam (I Cor 15:45). He came as the perfected Adam 2,000 years ago in place of the first Adam, who had failed.

The restoration of Adam alone could not bring a kingdom. There had to be a bride, a mother -- another Eve. So God intended for this perfected Adam -- Jesus Christ -- to restore his bride, the perfected Eve. This would have been the restoration of the first family, lost since the Garden of Eden.

Third Adam and Eve: Because of the rebellion of the chosen people of Israel, however, this never happened. Nevertheless, God is determined to fulfill His will. Thus, He has promised the return of Christ.

Approximately 2,000 years have passed since Jesus Christ's death. And now, God is once again ready to send His son -- in the capacity of the Third Adam. Throughout history, God has always fulfilled His goal at His third attempt. It is true that the number three is the number of perfection. This time, God will definitely fulfill His age old ideal by blessing the perfected Adam and Eve in heavenly matrimony, thus laying the foundation of the Kingdom of God on earth.

This ultimate condition is prophesied in the Book of Revelation as the marriage supper of the Lamb. And the Lord of the Second Advent is that Lamb, that perfect Adam. The Lord is coming as perfected Adam, and he will restore perfected Eve. Then they will be lifted up as the first True Parents of mankind. At last, God's joy will be complete.

Shortly before his crucifixion, Jesus said to Peter,

'I will give you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.' (Matt. 16:19).

The error was made here on earth. Sin was committed here on earth. So the error must be remedied and sin eradicated here on earth. Jesus asked us to pray, "Thy Kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven." Earth is the problem. That is why Christ must come back to this earth.

Many Christians believe that at the end of the world, God will destroy everything. The sun will be darkened, the stars will fall, and the earth will be burned up. A mere handful of Christians will be lifted up in the air, to spend the millennium with Christ.

If God did that, then He would become a God of failure, His original will forever unfulfilled. He would be relinquishing this earth to Satan. Then Satan would actually become the victor, and God the loser. This will never happen! God is almighty. He will not give up on this earth. It was meant to be, and it shall be, His kingdom. This New York shall be His kingdom, too.

You can be the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven if you meet the coming Messiah. He is your hope, my hope, and the only hope of America and this world.

If we fail to see him, however, then Christianity will have no hope. Christianity will decline. Its spiritual fire will be extinguished. The churches will become the tombs of the old legacy. Our world then will be doomed.

Ladies and gentlemen, I have come here to Madison Square Garden tonight in obedience to God's command. The Bible says,

And in the last days it shall be, God declares, that I will pour out my spirit on all flesh, and your sons and daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.' (Acts 2:17)

We are living in such an extraordinary time, at the birth of a new age! Heaven is quite near. And if you earnestly call upon God, He will answer you.

You must urgently ask Him, "How can I know if Reverend Moon is telling the truth?" Do not let me or anyone else answer that question for you. Let God answer you directly.

So go in peace, and please ask God earnestly, sincerely. Confront God in prayer. God will reveal the answer to you.

The new hope for mankind is the Messiah. And that "great and terrible day of the Lord" is at hand. It is up to you whether that day will be great or terrible. If you meet the Messiah, for you that day will be great. But if you fail to meet him, then for you that day will indeed be terrible.

God bless you. Thank you for your attentive listening.

Kamsa hamnida! Thank you, and good evening.

## **Chapter 18**

### **Ceremony for the Total Dissolution of Resentment**

**May 1, 1975--Chung Pyung Lake, Korea**

We must turn everything around, centering upon God, because that is the path of restoration. To turn everything around, we must go in the reverse direction from the past in which man fell, centering upon Satan. We must perform a ceremony of indemnity so that we can stand in the position of bride and bridegroom, form a family centering upon an original man and an original woman, and enter the national level by forming tribes and races connected to this family.

How shall we do this? There should not be any resentments against fallen man remaining on God's part. God may work to restore fallen men; however, mankind cannot truly go back to God while standing in the same position from which he caused God sorrow. Therefore, we must perform a ceremony of restoration to resolve that grudge. Furthermore, True Parents also cannot hold any grudge or resentment if they are to stand in the position of parents for the three historical ages--Adam's age, Jesus' age and the age of the Second Coming. All resentment against the world or our enemies must be resolved. God's grudge can only be resolved through those standing in the position of parents. God's grudge can only be dissolved when True Parents appear and dissolve their own grudge. Then, after the dissolution of these resentments, finally, all the resentments of the clan, tribe, nation and world can be resolved.

### ***Restoration of the national foundation***

Since the time of Cain and Abel, the history of restoration has been preparing the foundation on the worldwide level upon which restored Adam and Eve can come. A man grows from an infant to a child and then to a youth and to an adult. Likewise, in the developing ages of restoration, the path of history has been opened by the sacrifice of many sons and daughters of God. When the national foundation is prepared, the person who becomes the Messiah must appear as a representative of the national foundation based on this standard. This providential history of restoration was centered on Israel. The person who came to gain the sovereignty centering upon Israel was Jesus, the Messiah.

Following the death of Jesus, Christianity has been working to restore this foundation for the Messiah a second time. But Christianity has only been able to lay a spiritual foundation. The mission of the Lord of the Second Coming will be to connect the spiritual foundation of Christianity to a new physical foundation. This is the mission of the Unification Church.

Therefore, up until 1972, we took the lead in Korea to set a spiritual standard by becoming the root of this nation. We had to set a heavenly example and direction regarding all national matters. The years 1973 and 1974 were the time when we needed to connect

that national, physical standard with the. spiritual foundation of world Christianity. ... Since 1975, we have mobilized the entire movement in a very short period. We held the Day of Hope banquets in January, the International Blessing in February, and the One World Crusades in April. As a result of these events, I have become known to many distinguished and prominent Koreans.

This period has been one of international blessing. Certain historical indemnity had to be completely paid by the end of April this year on the lunar calendar! which is May on the solar calendar. During this period, I also appeared for the first time in front of the nation of Korea. Blessed families ultimately must appear in front of the nation and entire world, and afterwards all the members of the entire Unification Church must also appear before the world.

What kind of phenomena can be expected as a result of these big revival meetings? The entire nation must become one with us. This has been a most significant time period. If we look back at the situation centering upon Judaism, we see that the Jewish people and the Roman sovereignty united to kill Jesus. But, this time, it went the opposite way. This time, the Unification Church and Korea became united while Christianity remained opposed. This is historically very important. That this kind of thing could happen meant that we were going beyond what was needed in accordance with the standard of the Principle. The police did not even understand why they were helping us. People came from all nations of the world. If we had not been welcomed on the national level, it would have violated certain conditions. If something were to have happened, if anyone had been beaten or shed blood, for example, it would have become a world political problem. This can become the kind of thing whereby the nation itself is accused by the embassies. Therefore, the police had to protect us to protect themselves. The fact that Korea protected us symbolizes that we completely met the national standard and went beyond it by the principle of the restoration through indemnity.

Today, our movement celebrates its 21st anniversary. This is the last period of the second seven-year course. It is April on the lunar calendar and I, as an individual, am going beyond 30 years of my ministry. This is the period in which we must perform the ceremony of the dissolution of resentment.

### ***Dissolve the resentments of history***

We must first dissolve the resentment of God. Next is the dissolution of resentment of True Parents. We must also solve the resentment of Mrs. Won Pok Choi, who is celebrating her 60th birthday. Mrs. Choi stands in the position of a mother and true woman in the fallen world. In this ceremony she will establish the condition to indemnify all the failures of women in- history. So the spiritual world and the fallen world up until today must all be indemnified centering upon Mrs. Choi.

In the original-world, parents would not have been responsible to pay indemnity because good, perfect parents would-not have laid a condition for the fall. As a man, I have been preparing everything up until now; however, since a woman still could not stand alone,

everything must be indemnified at one time centering upon this condition by Mrs. Choi. There are many historical resentments to be indemnified. For example, there have been many religions, such as Christianity, Islam, Buddhism and Confucianism, and many good soldiers and loyal subjects throughout history. Even now, there are good soldiers fighting for goodness, and loyal subjects united together in many nations. Also, there have been many philosophers and others who did not believe in any religion, but who took a conscientious position. Also, there is a Cain world where people are connected from Lucifer to Judas and Nero all the way through to the Communist Party today. We must gather all of these people, good and bad, and open a path through which they can be subjugated and can follow the Principle. We must gather them to one point and open such a path. Today we- must perform this significant ceremony centering upon Mrs. Choi. The liberation of True Parents and the liberation of God begins upon the standard in which all grudges are dissolved.

### ***Liberation of spirit world***

Additionally, there are spirits on this altar who believed in the Principle and then went to the spiritual world. We must dissolve the resentment of the spirits of these members as well. For instance, there is the late President Eu. We must dissolve the grudge of President Eu and those who believed in the Unification Church on the earth. This is the altar upon which we can connect with those who were accused for believing in the Unification Church, and pay indemnity for them. Upon this altar we must perform the dissolution of the resentment of Christianity, religious people, philosophers, conscientious people, good soldiers and loyal subjects, children of the Cain world, and the angelic world. We must fulfill the dissolution of resentment, placing Christianity on the East, the angelic world on the West, good soldiers, patriarchs and loyal subjects on the South; and the Cain-type satanic world on the-North. Today is the very day which marks the total dissolution of all resentments in history. Because of this ceremony we can overcome many things. Christianity and many-other religions walked their path yet could not complete a ceremony like this.. From now on, the principle of heaven is clearly established and the spiritual world can not just act as it wishes. In performing this kind of ceremony, many evil spirits, which were very active up until now, are no longer so free to act. Following the Principle, those in the spiritual realm can pay conditions of indemnity through a person on the earth who has the same level of conscience. The order has been created, and from now the Constitution of the Nation of God is set.

After three years, Korea and the United States, which is the representative nation of the democratic world, must be connected. After this is done, nobody will be able to oppose the Unification Church. Up until now, evil spirits have taken all kinds of measures in order to dominate this world. But from now on that direction will be changed so that the side of goodness can perfectly digest and conquer everything.

By 1977 or 1978, if a substantial national foundation is created in the United States on the same level as that of Korea today, the world will be completely involved in God's dispensation. After the creation of the worldwide foundation, the next opponent will be the Communist Party. One can go to the world level only after the creation of the foundation of

the nation. Judaism failed and Christianity re-indemnified it and set the spiritual standard. Today, we are going beyond the national standard after indemnifying the spiritual standard and going up to the physical standard. Centering upon this basic point, we can now go into the world just like Christianity did 2,000 years ago centering upon the 120 disciples of Jesus. In the Unification Church today, three members are going to each of 120 nations. This evangelical work to 120 nations is the strategy through which the four position foundation centering upon Christ will be spread to the entire world. Through this, the foundation centering upon the national standard will come to have a reciprocal relationship with the horizontal world foundation. When such a relationship is created, all the spirits can come to assist the entire world. In other words, a foundation will be created for all the spirits to freely work on the earth as their domain. Do you understand? Let us pray.

Beloved Heavenly Father, we know the sorrowful fact that we could not accomplish the great work of Your creation on the earth. How much did Adam's and Eve's failure give grief to You and how hard You have worked in order to resolve this sorrowful resentment. You made all the sacrifices by leading many saints. You led the way throughout the long history on the earth so that the standard of the True Parents could be set. You set the standard of True Parents, in this land of Korea, centering upon this Unification Church. Thinking about all of this, once more, I am deeply grateful Son Your love. The son and daughter who are here, the two of us, are called in front of You. They fulfilled their responsibilities and came to stand in this place.

When I traced Your sorrowful heart in this course of restoration which has been full of resentments, and when I thought of the most sorrowful fact of the failure of the human ancestors Adam and Eve, I pledged to inherit Your heart, to change the path on which they betrayed You and to give devoted service to You. Since the day I was born, I have followed Your will, and in my ministry, the days and months of 30 years have passed. During this period there was an internal grief in Your heart and in the mind of Your son which could not be spoken to anybody, could not be shown to anybody. I have wished for the day when I could go beyond the limits of race and dissolve your resentment by all means, to dissolve the resentment caused by the miserable crucifixion of Jesus on the cross.

I am very grateful for the surprising fact that the very day my wish can be fulfilled is May 1, 1975. This day marks the-21st year of the creation of this Unification movement, and this is the time to finish the second seven-year course, the course of indemnity for world Christianity. This is also the place when 30 years of history is coming to an end centering upon Your son. Thinking about the fact that all of this has been carefully prepared in Your course of restoration, I have no words to express myself.

Heavenly Father, You grieved when You had to greet the fallen human ancestors You grieved when You sent Jesus to accomplish Your will, and yet he was crucified. You grieved when the many Christians who followed Your son were killed, and when many religious people had to sacrifice themselves. God, I know how great Your sorrow was to have seen all of these things. The angelic world was left behind and could not help in the perfection of Adam and Eve. I know You have been sympathizing with all these miserable

people whose resentment has not been resolved yet. Father, this is the family of True Parents which You have been seeking and the body of True Parents which You have been seeking. This day, here is Your son and Your daughter in front of You, Heavenly Father, and Your children have gathered at this place, centering upon Your son and Your daughter, and we are praying here; so please accept this prayer.

I am grateful for this day when I can offer the lost foundation centering upon the family in front of You, and centering upon the foundation of this nation and race. I pray this-day will become a day to accomplish the dissolution of the resentment of the True Parents and to dissolve the resentment of the angels as well as the resentment in Your own mind. The grudges of God, of True Parents, of the angelic world, of Christianity, Confucianism, Buddhism, Islam, and all the religions which were working behind each race in the entire world are all connected to this dissolution. I am grateful for this day and for this ceremony which allows the dissolution of the resentment of the Father, of the True Parents and of Mrs. Choi. Now we have the authority to dissolve all the grudges of all religious people on the earth. Now on this joyful day, a group is born who can establish the sovereignty of the nation of the Heavenly Father. Please unite other conscientious people, philosophers, good soldiers of each nation, civilians of each nation, and all those many spirits who helped each nation go the path of goodness in order to advance into the Heavenly Kingdom. I sincerely wish You will permit this day to become the day of dissolution of all resentments for which they have been longing.

We have been able to achieve the liberation of the True Parents, the angelic world, the religious world, the conscientious world, and the good soldiers and loyal subjects, but I know that there is also the miserable Cain world, which has opposed God, opposed religion and opposed conscientious people throughout history. They opposed God centering upon Judas and the emperor Nero, and now they oppose God centering on the Communist Party. I know that I cannot judge them from the same place of Your judgment today when all resentments are being dissolved on the cosmic level. Father, forgive them by the dignified and victorious authority which- You have bestowed on the True Parents so that these people can find the way to contribute to You, to the True Parents, and to the many religions on the earth.

Please make this an opportunity to love our enemies, to end our resentment against those who nailed God's heart, crucified Your son Jesus and killed many people whom You loved. I know that the gates of hell can be opened and the path to liberate hell can be prepared by spreading Your heart of love and by liberating our enemies. Please make this a time when the people on the Cain side, who are in the special domain of your grace, can raise themselves to a position to revolt against the evil world, to pledge loyalty to heaven, to dominate all the evil spirits in the evil world, and to pledge to go the way of Your will. I pray the same for the good spirits of children who have been loyal to God and who have walked this path of death. Please make this a time for them to be filled with joyfulness by the special pardon of heavenly grace at a time when the sovereignty of the world is under the control of evil spirits. Let them repent and bow their heads down in front of True Parents, in front of the good angelic world, good religious people, good soldiers and

conscientious people. Let them pledge to fulfill this responsibility in front of God in this special time under God's dominion.

Beloved Heavenly Father, I sincerely pray to accomplish Jesus' prayer today at this time, the prayer by which Jesus offered his true life on the cross. The True Parents who are standing here went through a history in which they received the opposition of their race, all of Christianity, the satanic world, and the entire nation in their 30 years of public life. I ask you to forgive and resolve all the resentment of the True Parents and of the many people who sacrificed themselves up until now. I ask you to forgive the Cain world, not to make them enemies, but to let them stand in the position to spread God's Principle completely. Let them become the shadow of the substance, to go wherever the substance goes--just like a shadow can not exist without a substance.

Father, I wish to dissolve all the scars of Your mind by fulfilling the standard which Jesus desired. I know that Jesus had resentment within himself too, walking the path of death alone. I know Your resentment cannot be resolved unless Jesus' forgiveness for his enemies is accomplished on the earth. I pray that Jesus' liberation can begin at this time, and the liberation of Christianity can begin at this time. I offer all the existing things--man and all things of creation, including Lucifer and the many evil persons in the satanic world--as your belongings at this time, in the name of True Parents. I sincerely ask You to receive this offering. Many saints who are serving God in the spiritual world, and many good religious people centering upon the 24 religions who are sitting on God's imperial floor at this time, together with True Parents, are sincerely asking You to respond to the appeal of True Parents. I sincerely ask You to forgive all these sorrowful events of history. I know that this is a very solemn time which enables us to prepare for a new turning point in the midst of the confusion of this world. This ceremony enables us to heighten Your victory.

Father, it is now 8:50 a.m. on May 1, 1975. At this time, please declare this moment to the entire cosmos and the world. I sincerely wish for You to declare it in Your name and rejoice in the dissolution of the resentment of the angelic world. Rejoice in the dissolution of the resentment of True Parents, and rejoice in the dissolution of the resentment of the religious world which you have been trusting up until now, centering upon the True Parents. Rejoice in the accomplishment of the desire of conscientious people and philosophers, and forget even the resentments of the miserable satanic world and rejoice in their liberation. Now, this son and this daughter, following Your declaration, declare the day of the total dissolution of resentment in this substantial world in the name of God and in the name of True Parents. Because all things correspond to Your Principle, all nations, all people, all the spiritual world, all good spirits, and all good people are now able to correspond to the Principle. God, please forgive all evil people as well; those who are waiting for Your embrace. They can go into Heavenly Father's bosom by establishing one standard of merit in the domain of Your grace, through this liberation at this time.

Now, we are going to have our ceremony to accomplish these conditions. Heavenly Father, please perform it with Your love, with Your joyful heart, by spreading Your authority, using goodness, chasing the evil out, and subjugating evil in front of goodness.

Please accomplish everything on the racial and national level-which You have been trying to accomplish by the restoration of indemnity centering upon Cain and Abel. By doing so, I sincerely wish to claim one day when even the communist world will bow its head down in front of the happiness of God and respond in heaven's victorious position. Today, Vietnam was subjugated by the communist camp. I pray that this becomes an offering representing the satanic world and that it will become a starting point to re-indemnify the communist world so that they can surrender in front of God and the world, starting from Korea.

Now I declare the significance of this day in the name of God and in the name of True Parents and the angelic world by mobilizing all the good spirits. I pray that all the spiritual world can be mobilized and all conscientious people can be mobilized so that this declaration will be set firmly like iron. Centering upon God, at Chung Pyung Lake, on this very day, at this very time, in this very place, the entire spiritual world is paying full attention, the entire angelic world is paying full attention, God is paying His full attention, and the True Parents on the earth are paying full attention. All Christianity, all religions, all good nations, all loyal subjects are paying full attention, and the communist world is paying full attention. I offer this on this very day, expecting only that Heavenly Father shall embrace this offering in his bosom. So, please receive this. As I leave it all to you, Heavenly Father, I sincerely wish You to receive this as Your victory, and I declare it all in the name of the True Parents. Amen.

## **Chapter 19**

### **Myself**

**January 13, 1980--Tarrytown, New York**

When someone says "I," he is not thinking of himself as a solitary individual. Each person understands himself within the context of a certain background and set of circumstances. When I think of myself, I think of my family, parents and surroundings. Each of you is aware of being a citizen of America. A man of deeper thought thinks of himself as part of the world. If he is truly religious, then he will feel connected to God, who created everything around him.

In various situations, there are some good people, some bad, some happy and unhappy, all put together. A person may assess himself as good, or as bad but trying to improve, and as generally happy or unhappy. When each of us thinks of "I" we think in connection with all these surrounding conditions. That "I" exists now, but when did it begin? You might think, "Well, I am 30, so I started to exist 30 years ago." In addition, you know that you have been and always are increasing in age.

You also realize that you didn't just abruptly start from nothing, but received certain things from your parents. You didn't begin to exist from yourself but from your parents. Your course of thought traces back to your parents, their parents and so on through your ancestry. If you have a good imagination, you might trace it back to the beginning of energy, which has been passed down through your ancestors. If you pull yourself in a certain direction at this point, you are not pulling yourself alone, but all your lineage as well. If I pull one thin hair on your head, the rest of your body had better follow along if it

doesn't want to feel any pain. When you dance about the floor, the whole lineage that is connected with you is also moving around.

No one wants to be isolated, but desires instead to be proud of representing everything that is connected to him. Would you choose to be isolated and independent, or to represent many more people than just yourself? Everyone wants the second choice. Why should you feel like that? Why do we tend to think of ourselves as the center of everything surrounding us? Is it because we want mastery and control? Whatever the reason, the fact remains that an individual will try to protect himself from invasion. Also, you want your eyes to be the best of all eyes, your nose and even your hair to be the best. You want to protect even external things that change, like your clothes. Where does this quality come from?

Everyone wants to advance, whether he is of low or high capability. We can state that the force of the conscience urges the uplifting of the individual. Why does each person want to make himself better? Where does that action of conscientiousness come from? It is derived from a cause-result relationship. No action is initiated without purpose; all actions have some purpose. The bird sings and the bee hums, the butterfly flies, the wind blows--all of these have their purpose. When your eyelid blinks it certainly has a purpose, doesn't it? Your breathing has a purpose. When you smile, it is not for yourself, but for some reason. No action takes place without purpose.

### ***Is force or energy first?***

Scientists maintain that the universe is made up of energy. Energy exists everywhere, as well as force or power. Is force or energy first? Does the Principle teach that force comes into being by give and take action, or does give and take exist after the force exists? We should examine our thought carefully to see whether we are not taking the answer for granted. Seen from different angles, both viewpoints seem entirely correct, so it is important to know which is the correct answer. What is your opinion?

Action certainly must come from a definite source. The subject and object precede action. If we pursue this a little further, we can say that if God is omnipresent, then He must have both subject and object qualities. God's dual characteristics are not just conceptual or abstract; they are very real and important to our lives. Ever since the universe and individual entities came into being, subject and object were the beginning of the existence of self. All things in the universe are made up of these two different qualities or parts, and each is involved in give and take action.

The force, or the result, is the consequence of the subject and object having give and take action. Let us take the simple example of parents having give and take of love; their child will be the result. The child is like the force that results from give and take action. What causes that? God is the cause, and that process follows the pattern of God's creative process. The force in turn has within itself the possibility of give and take action because it is the result of give and take. When we think of force, we recognize it involves the two qualities of subject and object, cause and result.

When you think of your existence, you think of the power within yourself, but prior to that you realize the give and take action within yourself. You have a mind and body that form a subject-object relationship, and when they have give and take you can't help but feel the resulting power within yourself. Therefore, you are the subject body of force. You are very powerful. When you draw a line down your front, dividing yourself in half, the two parts look alike externally. Why is that? Because if the cause has that quality, then the result has to be that way. That's a very logical reason.

When scientists examine the development of life forms, they conclude that energy randomly evolved into higher and more complex beings, and this is how man came to exist. This theory is not rational when we really examine it. It is more reasonable that subject and object together would form an entity, which in turn would become a subject and take an object. Together they would create some higher life form as subject which would also take an object, and so on, forming greater and greater entities.

In our social life, we want to broaden our sphere of Influence, increasing our areas of activity. When you become a subject on one level you want to find an object on that level, and then, when you are united, you find that together you become a subject on another level. Scientists explain the formation of new species through random mutation, saying it happens by chance. We can immediately see that is false reasoning, but they have not come up with some better theory so they stick with this one. It does not stand to reason to say that a small thing could just suddenly become big. Even a non-scholar would find the subject-object explanation more reasonable.

### ***Purpose precedes interaction***

How could a bigger entity come to exist? From where does the original force come that can cause a small cell to grow bigger, that can enable a small group of cells to become bigger, and enable each step to develop? A force is the result of give and take, but there must be some purpose preceding that give and take. Nothing happens without purpose. A chemistry professor trying to mix a plus element and a minus element of unrelated qualities will never get a reaction. But if he prepares a compatible subject and object and merely brings them close together, then give and take will automatically happen. This explanation based on give and take describes science more adequately than theories of probability or random occurrence.

In the beginning, I pointed out that each person wants to become greater and greater in his life, and becomes angry if he cannot do so. Does that happen at random, too, or is it inevitable? We know now that it has to happen like that because the conscience is at work. Everything comes into the realm of subject and object, and is a collection of subject-object relationships. This means that "I" exists within a broad universe, and lives only within a broad purpose. Therefore, one's conscience always directs him to become bigger and greater. We have to be aware of the purpose for that.

This is explained through the four position foundation. In order to have circular action, there must be plus-minus, plus-minus -- not plus-minus, minus-plus. Can you name one

thing that does not move or turn? When anything stubbornly refuses to move, it ceases to exist. Each cell is vigorously active, and the collection of these cells, which is you, is even more active. The whole universe is full of vitality. You can accept that, can't you?

Our conclusion is that this big universe moves with a certain purpose, not haphazardly. Even one of the billions of tiny cells in your body has plus and minus and is an inseparable part of the universe, and so it wants to become as great as the whole universe. Even a tiny cell will rebel if the large organism no longer wants to become greater. This is why each person has hope for greater happiness in the future.

If a person is restricted to living in one situation for the rest of his life, he loses his will to live.

### ***The source of action***

What existed before force existed? The action of subject and object. And where does action come from? Action derives from a subject and object, and the whole thing takes place because of the larger purpose of creation.

There are dual purposes here: one is to maintain oneself, and the other to become part of the large self, which is the universe. A man's purpose for finding a woman as an object is to preserve and perfect himself, and then become one with her, and then, their purpose is to have children. In this way, they stand in the same position as their ancestors.

Let us look at the example of our eyes. The eye has the purpose of self-existence, but also that of serving the whole body. The ear has to operate automatically, but it also helps the whole. Everything from particles to the largest creation has a right to exist, but if there was only the purpose of the individual, how could the universe be interrelated? It is because all individuals have dual objectives: one is to protect the self and the other to make sure the self combines with another self to make a bigger self. The theory of evolution understands the individual purpose of self preservation, but it does not grasp the ultimate purpose of the whole.

Conscientious scholars today have no answer for the question of how the universe is perpetuated or what its purpose is. Their conclusion is that it has no purpose, but just goes on and on and will perish at one point. But we know this is not true; something may seem to perish, but as it passes away, something else will be formed. This happens because everything has a purpose. The same principle applies to every aspect of the universe. Individuals gather not only to meet individual needs, but also for the purpose of forming a greater being. If someone wants to have great character, he must be available as an object to the whole universe as his subject. He must be worthy of it.

Today, white people tend to stay together, ignoring other races. But their true purpose is not only to be with whites, but to embrace all other colors as well. Individual purpose must always follow the purpose of the whole. Conscientious people wonder why big fish eat little fish, why some animals are carnivores, why the powerful eat the weak. They may see this as a chaotic situation. But according to the principle that the smaller things exist for

the larger purpose, the lion is justified in eating the rabbit. This is the key to the whole problem. The small purpose exists for the purpose of the greater existence, which is ultimately the whole universe.

### ***We exist for the larger purpose***

Americans don't know that they exist for the purpose and betterment of the whole. Who says so? God says so. More objectively, the universe says so. Unification Church members are the most consistent people in all history because they know the individual should exist for the family, the family for the tribe, the tribe for the nation and the nation for the world. We not only think that way, but we live it. Why do we do that? In a sense it is for a selfish reason, because by going on to bigger and bigger levels we make ourselves available to become really big individuals.

Young people now do what I call the kisko dance; "co" means "nose" and "kis" means "kiss," so "nose-kissing dance." For whom do they dance -- America, the world, or themselves? It contributes nothing to the whole and limits them to the individual purpose, so it stops their development. It is even worse than a lion eating a rabbit--it is a sin. For the betterment of the whole we want to get rid of whatever harms the whole, but we know that kids won't listen if we just say outright, "You shouldn't do that for all the following reasons."

If I gave you some money and free time, would you go disco dancing? But if it were for your betterment and the world's betterment, then you would disco 24 hours a day, right? The Soviets are visibly closing in on the free world, and if disco dancing would halt their advance, we should disco 24 hours a day.

People today, from the lowest to the highest level, don't know what man is or who the individual self is. All their confusion arises from ignorance. First we must teach them, then demonstrate how to live, and then we can restore order in the world. This principle explains all phenomena from the past, and we have to apply it consistently all the time. You cannot learn this in school because the teachers don't know it. I am the first teacher of this knowledge. This is the beginning of a new culture. By knowing this, you can comprehend the Principle even better, and know why there are three stages, subject and object, how give and take occurs, and why there is a purpose. Now the Principle is no longer conceptual, but something you can put into action in every circumstance. Now you will never forget, because the Principle is you.

When you think of force, what do you think of? Action. And when you think of action, you immediately think of plus and minus, subject and object. When you feel powerful, you know that some give and take action is happening, and that your mind and body must be in harmony. You must be smarter than to think it begins with you, and remember that God, your Father, gave it to you and you resemble Him. You then remember that He has the whole universe under Him, and you are a small part of that universe; you are a small minus to the universe, which is the biggest possible plus.

God is a big plus and you are a small minus, but this small minus has the purpose of becoming as great as the plus. This is why you want to become great. This is perfectly logical, and something that stands to reason is reality itself. Each of us has an urge to become great, but until now you didn't know why God and the universe also wanted you to become great. They want to pull you up like a big winch.

If you go to the top of a mountain, you can actually catch up with God better. In other words, if you have a broader, deeper thought, God can love you and encourage you to go higher and higher. What is God's thought? His thought is to manifest power according to the Principle and to realize the ideal world. Will He do that by force? Is God going to make the world great because He has all knowledge? Could the strongest man on earth make the ideal world? Harvard professors are proud of their knowledge, but could they do it? What is the essence that can make the ideal world? True love.

### ***Love is long, very long***

The other day I paraphrased love as being "long, very long." You think you know English, but you didn't know love was long. Love should last a long, long time. How does God want to make the ideal world? If you ask God where He wants to be at any given time, He will say He wants to be at the center of the universe. If you ask which center of the universe He wants to be at--whether of knowledge or power--He will say He wants to be at the long, long center. Is this stretching the truth too far?

When I asked why you wanted to become greater and greater, you didn't have an answer. Now you know that you want to be great so that, based on love, you can become the companion of the center of the universe and be worthy of being His object. Though we know we are very small, we want to be object to the great universal subject in love. If God wants to be at the center, where would you want to be? At the center of love in the universe. When I seriously ask you where we are going, you have to have some answer. We are going to the objective of love on the universal level. Since God is going there also, we are bound to meet Him. Even though you become very knowledgeable, that will eventually pass. Power cannot last eternally either. But if you are pursuing love and find it, it will last a long, long time.

We have to have some perspective of life, some awareness of our purpose. When we have that in ourselves then we can go there. With this life perspective, you can know why the world has to be peaceful and how that can happen through love, and then your entire plan and idea can come to one focal point. Only a handful of people on the face of the earth know that they should be living with their purpose and direction taking them toward love. If that prevails in the world, then the earth can become peaceful.

Now, when I ask you who you are, you are in a position to answer for the first time, "I am the one who is supposed to go toward the purpose of love on the universal level." We know that all things exist for man because man has love. The animals and plants willingly sacrifice for man because he is reaching for the objective of love with God. You like steaks, don't you? Do you eat a steak for your own enjoyment, or do you think that the

steak will help you get nearer the love of God? If it were for love, then the meat would be glad to be eaten and say, "Eat me quickly!" That meat also craves love. A stick of celery wants to continue its own life, but when you eat it you can say, "I assure you that through me you will come closer to God's love."

If a person is perfect in this respect, all things will want to tag along and be eaten by him. Money will want to be earned by him. Today, men chase money but the money runs away. If you become a person of original purpose, however, then money will follow you. If another person follows after money, the money will be scared, thinking, "A tiger is after me!" That person will end up in hell. Would you rather follow money or love?

### ***The question of sacrifice***

Is it good or evil to sacrifice your own life for the sake of the world? These pragmatic Americans call something evil with one side of their mouths and then call it good with the other side, twisting it around for their convenience.

Throughout history God has seemed to be unjust because it was good people who were sacrificed all the time; but being sacrificed is the best way, actually. What kind of person makes a good president? If a tyrannical, pushy man is the one who works best for the sake of the world and is the most effective in educating Americans and the world, then is it good if he is president? Or does a tyrannical person have no place? It is good if he is doing God's job. Is ML Carter very dynamic? The first thing a politician thinks of is how he is going to get reelected next term, and he makes compromises with justice and righteousness to get along. It should certainly be wrong if a president thinks more about his reelection than about what is right for America.

No matter what the situation is, my purpose is consistent. I work for the sake of God and humanity and never compromise. I keep telling Americans the truth. Americans don't like to hear bad things all the time, but if they have to hear bad things over and over in order to finally change, then the purpose of giving that advice is served.

The Unification Church is not fighting for the Unification Church; we are sacrificing the Unification Church for the sake of the world and God. That is what I have done all my life. That doesn't look very workable to pragmatic people, but actually it is the most effective way. A self-centered person doesn't understand that self-sacrifice is the best way of life simply because God and the universe always protect a person who is working for their cause. An explanation must be consistent, from head to tail, no matter how big or small the situation.

Would you prefer a leader who buys you candy all the time, or one who makes you into a person who is worthy to be object to this great subject, God? Do you think it is easy to convert a person away from evil and make him into someone who is worthy of being that object? It is even harder to do in America because here there is an adverse atmosphere of self-centeredness. I have to pluck someone out of that environment before I can teach him. It is a little less difficult with an Oriental, because that culture tends to consider the larger purpose more, which is God's way of thinking. Here the culture is not group-

centered but individual-centered. You have to realize that you can't take individualism for granted.

Even unambitious people are excited and inspired when they join the Unification movement and realize what God's idea is, but the difficulty of everyday life is also great. It doesn't make sense that you can have only things that are extremely enjoyable, but not those which are extremely difficult. Any worthy man in the past has led such a life.

### ***Sacrifice for greater love***

You know your life should be filled with happiness and love, but you wait three years to be blessed and have no dating in the meantime. Then, you wait three more years after getting married, and even after you are together you do the hard work of witnessing. The women worry also about whether they will be too old to have children by the time they get married. On top of that, there are many Orientals in charge of your activities; plus you go fund raising and you receive no recognition. All put together, you are in a quandary deciding whether this is fantastically miserable or fantastically wonderful. But even when you are full of tears, you know this is the best way. Even if you have to risk your life a dozen times a day, this is still the best way, because it is the way of love.

I am no dumber than anyone else; I knew this principle before you did and have gone this way my whole life without compromise. There is no in between way for either you or me. I thought that probably no one else on earth would have courage or wisdom to do this, and that I would probably be going all by myself, but then I looked back after a time and found hundreds of followers straggling after me, trying to go to the same place. And there were many white people among them who were determined to give their lives! Then there were other white people who weren't happy with me and tried to persecute me. The important question is which side will God and the universe be on.

Now you know better who you are. Confucius said that whoever knows himself will be a success, and wise men have always accepted this. Should we let any circumstance divert us once we know who we are? Once you know, you should be able to laugh off the scorn of even millions of people. This is 1980. This is the year to take off and fly into orbit. You should be confident that you are masters of the universal thought that has been hidden all these thousands of years. There is nothing vague about this.

Now I can give you a little more explanation, which will make it easier to follow. Why do I train you on earth instead of later in spirit world? Why do you have to struggle on earth in order to learn? Of course, you have to restore yourselves, but you must love your family more than yourself because it is a bigger cause. Even though it is painfully difficult and you may not be able to carry it out on earth, you will be given credit for doing your best. Then, when you get to spirit-world the path will be open to accomplish it successfully there. When the family has to be sacrificed for the world and you try your best, even if you are not completely successful on earth, a crude road to finish it will be opened in spirit world. If you don't even try on earth, however, there is no road for you in spirit world later.

You are in hell when you find yourself with no avenues open at all; then you are living in complete isolation and are unable to go where you have to go. You can see ultimate happiness around you and it looks within reach, but, in reality, it is too far away to seize. If you can't get along with a certain person on earth, that relationship will carry on into spirit world and be hell. You will know you could have experienced happiness with that person, but because you didn't make it happen on earth, you can't do it in spirit world. The most important reason why I work so hard pushing you and trying to inspire you to go the difficult road is that I know about spirit world. If you can unite and follow, then there will be at least a small road open for you in spirit world.

### ***Your accomplishments in love are eternal***

If you are successful in loving people of all races, all spirit world will applaud you and welcome you. Wherever you go in spirit world, spirit men will tag along. Our life here is short, but we can accomplish and settle much in order to claim happiness in spirit world. Your status in spirit world is eternal. This is one of the reasons why we suffer willingly. The purpose of a business is to gain profit by investing some money. If we invest very much pain, then we profit a hundred times more. In the lottery, one dollar can win thousands, but here there isn't even any risk and still we are guaranteed to win.

Taking one step after another, we lengthen the sections of the bridge of love. We are building it inch by inch, and though there are miles to go, we keep going. No matter what opportunities there are for you in life, you would rather follow me, right? Why? I don't give you money or time or power. You say it is for love, but have you seen that love with your eyes? I am like a parent nagging you to study after school, and pushing you to study again even when you have finished. You get frustrated, I know, but still I tell you to keep studying. That's love.

You might be comfortable if you didn't do it now, but for the sake of the greater purpose you choose to sacrifice anyway. That is goodness.

It can be good to spank a child if it is intended to secure his eternal well being. That is logical. True love is worth the hardship.

Now you know about the individual, so let us decide when we would like to be in that position. Ten years or a 100 years from now? Now sounds pretty close to "no." And "no" sounds close to "know." Do you know or not?

Can you go this path alone? Who do you need? Would you rather have a yoke on your neck to be sure you go the correct way? Should I just allow you to do whatever you want? Now we are secure and comfortable because we know the objective, but the problem is only half-solved. You also have to accomplish the goal, and you think you need someone to push you because you can't do it alone. You feel you can be a champion if only you had a trainer. A trainer is someone who gets after you and nags you all the time. At some point, you'll get so aggravated that either you'll confront your trainer and give up, or you'll become the champion. That is the reality.

Don't appoint only one trainer, because you will have free time when he is away, which is not good. Appoint a dozen trainers, one Chinese, one Korean, one Japanese, one American, one German, and so forth. Then wherever you go you will bump into a trainer and he will chase after you. Perhaps you could tolerate one person kicking you, but what about 12 people kicking you at one time? If you are determined to survive, you will be a champion after they get tired of kicking you.

This is no ordinary life, to be lived at whim. It is most serious, not only for our generation but for all history. All Unification Church members know they each have a spirit self that lives eternally in spirit world. You have never been to spirit world, so you are persuaded through logic that it is so. Because you start at the lowest part of life there is no place to go but up. The thousands of people outside the church who study us can't figure us out, because they don't know about the spirit world. To some I look ordinary, to some deceptive, to some great. Even many intelligent people all have different opinions about me. They can only conclude they don't understand me.

### ***Training in religious life***

Am I going my way by accident? No one in the world has any idea what the world will be like even next week, but we know how the past was and what direction history will take. Our path is basically a religious life, and who is the most strict, most serious of trainers? That's Reverend Moon. This is a training ground and that's why you sit on a cold concrete floor for hours and hours. You are here to be trained, not just to enjoy a sermon. You do that for years and years, and people wonder if you do that because you are scared.

Our training is conducted in the most painful way. We have no such thing as comfortable training. Why? Because we want to shorten our period of training. You have just begun to know a few things, and you have to meet the challenge and go over it. You only have a few years to do that, so I am pushing you to speed up. Even at this moment I am pressuring you. Throughout the '70s you had some complaint, wanting to know why life had to be so difficult, why the hardship couldn't be spread out. But starting at this moment you should give up complaint. Starting this year you should look for the difficult jobs to do.

The members usually feel that fund raising is our most difficult activity. If the fiancée of an MFT [Mobile Fund Raising Team] member writes to say there is an opening in his office and why doesn't the MFT member come to do that easier job, the fiancée is actually acting on behalf of Satan, blocking the other person's training. What he is actually saying is, "Become a third-rate champion." What he should say instead is, "MFT is too easy, so go to Cambodia to fund raise." Is this illogical? We have to develop according to the Principle for all these things.

If someone asks you for proof of how much I love humanity, you can tell them that I have matched thousands of couples of all races in the best possible way. That's proof of having loved mankind. And even afterward I continued to train them and to care about them as I would my own children, planning how they will support and educate their families in the future. I have no preferences or prejudices; I have loved black people as much as white

people and yellow people. When I go to spirit world I will visit hell and no one there will oppose me; I will go to the area where white people are, and no one will accuse me, because they will know they are the ones who did not listen. In heaven white people will want me to stay at their house and sleep in their own bedrooms.

There are 12 pearl gates to heaven, and I can pass through many of them. Why 12? Because that represents 120, and also represents 360 degrees, encompassing every angle. Also it symbolizes 12 different types of personalities. How can you pass through the gates? Only when you tag along with me! There are guards here who will challenge you and ask, "Who are you?" Then you will say, "Reverend Moon happens to be my father." They won't be satisfied with that, however. When they ask for proof, you can say, "Don't you know the Principle? The Principle says so." If he still doubts you, you can say, "Don't you think I look like Reverend Moon? I did the same things he did, so I should look like him by now." If the guard thinks you look like me, then he will let you in.

### ***Challenge yourself to love***

You said you wanted to start the strictest training now, but actually it will last for the rest of your life, and you have no idea how long your life will be. If you have hated black people in the past, you should fund raise in the most difficult place possible, where you can only earn a few dollars, and then invite the ugliest, fattest black grandmother to go out for lunch at a Chinese restaurant. Then, over lunch, you can say, "I have a confession to make. I have hated black people, but now I want to love them." You can tell her how you felt in the past, but when you joined the Unification Church and met Reverend Moon, you worked to train yourself as a champion of goodness. Now you repent, and as a sign of apology you sincerely brought her out to dinner. When you beg her with tears to eat the dinner you buy, you will have indemnified your hate in the past.

If someone has hated white people in the past, then he also has to repent. Whatever you have bound in the past, you have to unbind now and indemnify it. If a man has been a playboy in the past and made many women sorrowful, he has to find some situation where he can apologize to one woman representing all of them. If a woman has married several times, then she has to apologize to a man in the same way. Everything you have done that was unprincipled, you have to indemnify. That is your main task in 1980, to repent and then forget about the past. Don't let it drag you down, but pray to heaven to help you do away with it. Then look for the difficult thing and tackle it. That will be your best and fastest training.

If you are trying to find some loved ones, more value is added if you go a difficult way. It is not as valuable if you find one in an easy way, and you cannot feel as much value even if you try. But if you go through difficulty, you feel the value even if you try not to.

We all say we love and follow God, but when you say it and I say it, there is an entirely different quality in our words even though we say the same thing. The main difference is that I have gone through tremendous suffering while you have not. Never forget that how we go the path of true love is the real question. Whether you get a passing grade or flunk

the course is determined by what difficulties you have persevered through. Are you going to be a failure or success?

Now when you say "myself" you don't think in isolation, but in the context of parents, grandparents and God, all flowing like a big river. When you say "I" their image immediately appears in front of your eyes. You have to feel that the perfection of the world comes through yourself. When the four position foundation is formed, a central point is needed, which is God. The center of the family is love. In three dimensions the four position foundation has six points, with one in front and one in the rear, plus one in the middle, which is the seventh. Thus, the number seven is the number of perfection, but that is formed only after adding the one point of love.

### ***The number 12***

A straight line denotes one, and when it is cut in half it actually has three in it. Thus, the four position foundation has the number 12 in it at the same time. The number 12 represents the entire spirit world; for instance, the 12 pearl gates referred to in the Bible. Jacob had 12 sons, Moses led the 12 tribes, Jesus had 12 disciples. The number 12 was necessary to fulfill the important requirements of the universe, so at crucial points they had to satisfy the number 12.

We know that Jesus was the ideal man, and, as such, he had to be able to get along with 12 different types of people. These 12 actually represented people of 120 nations of the world, meaning, in fact, all elements of humanity. This included even the Judas-type of person.

The 12 types are composed of the spring, summer, autumn and winter natures. We need winter-type people just as we need the season of winter. If the world had begun in an ideal way, then the spring-type culture would have been established, but because of man's fall, a summer culture was started instead. Mankind did not see the blossoming of Adam and Eve; man's evolution started from summer instead of spring, with the ancient civilizations in their warm climates. In the 20th century, we entered the autumn culture, when everything ripens. Now the winter-type civilization, centering on the Soviet Union, is trying to invade this culture, even though it knows that it is destined to go through the springtime eventually.

All the autumn leaves have dropped off the trees and are withering now, and only the civilization that has life in it can remain. The winter civilization actually has no place, either, and eventually has to be drawn into the God-centered spring civilization. We call that spring culture the centrally-harmonized civilization, or roundly-harmonized civilization. All the summer, autumn, and winter civilizations will oppose us as we try to go to the spring civilization, which is true life, but we will pull them with us. That's the course of history and the dispensation, so it has to move forward.

No matter how strong the communists may boast they are, when the cosmic spring comes, the ice has to melt. That cosmic spring centers on the warmth of love. When love visits, everyone opens the door of his mind. There is no area love cannot pass through.

Just as Jesus followed a pattern, so must we. Each individual must condition himself to pass over a certain type of peak. In Western culture, 13 is an unlucky number, but, actually, it is a good number and we must cross over it. Americans are not ignorant people, but they don't know this important fact. Note that it was Jesus plus his 12 disciples, making 13. Also, Jacob plus 12 sons, or 12 gates to reach God. If you are not successful with the number 13, then when winter comes you will die of the cold.

Americans are confronted by communism now and can't wriggle out of it. They are afraid of communism, wringing their hands and wondering what to do, but not the Moonies. You have been taught that you have to go over the winter to enter the spring, so you will just swallow communism and digest it. America needs a leader who has intelligence enough to know this and to lead the nation in the right direction so it can gain victory over communism.

As America perseveres, it can conquer the number 13 and stand right beside Jesus. We are bearing the cross of mankind, just as Jesus did. Now the Moonies are doing it in place of today's Christians. The letter B is like the number 13 stuck together; everything that starts with B is connected with 13. That's the quality you have to have to survive: be a believer who is brave, bold and bright.

America must win the blessing

America is facing collapse from every angle, and the only thing holding it together is the Unification Church. It is incredible but true. The most profound reason we fund raise is so that somewhere along the line we can get the signatures of 12 different people, representing 120 countries. This is exactly what America is one nation composed of 120 different nationalities of people. When a person gives you a donation he is actually loving you and doing the same work you are. Therefore, God will give him some blessing. Then, America, where the money will be spent, will also be blessed. All things will benefit from our fund raising. We do home church in order to find the 12 different types of people. Eventually you have to get their signature of approval. For the time being take my word for this and act on it, and later see whether you can find any evidence to the contrary.

Of course, home church is difficult. If you go knock on the door of the most unpleasant person, you know he will yell at you. You may not want to see his face, but you knock anyway and he yells at you. If you go back three times, I can guarantee that his voice will become lower. After four or five times, he will want to know why you come, and wonder what kind of person you are.

The moment he smiles at you will be the moment the walls crumble and the 12 gates open for you. If you seriously work for that goal, then when the 360 homes of your home church area welcome your cosmic spring will really be at hand. You can know that one day your home church members will be waiting outside to take you to lunch. Some day, the worst person will be waiting to invite you to dinner and to sleep in his house. That will surely come to pass.

That's our objective, and until that day comes you will keep knocking on their doors. We talk about hope and faith, and what higher hope is there than to look forward to the day when they welcome you? When you go around and around knocking all the walls down, you will eventually arrive at the central point you should occupy. Then you will be a successful number 13. At that moment, you will have finished historical indemnity centering on yourself. You will have achieved something no one ever dreamed of achieving and will occupy the central position with God's approval. That's when your rocket of love will take off to the center of the love of God.

I know that many of you, especially the women, study yourselves in front of the mirror and wish that maybe your nose or mouth or ears were different. But I am telling you that they make almost no difference. Forget it. If you are running as fast as you can, then you are beautiful; no manicure or makeup will make you beautiful. You don't have to have position or a degree. If you don't have anything, it is still fine.

How fast are you going to go -- like an airplane, a rocket, a bullet? Will you really run in the 1980s? In the 1970s, your mind and body, your eyes and ears, were all going in different directions. But in the 1980s, are you going to assemble everything in one direction? Our only focal point is love. Your eyes will focus on love, your ears hear nothing but love, your mouth speaks about nothing but love. If they go in single file, which should go first? Your mind, then your body -- eyes, ears, nose, limbs and so forth.

If you fly as fast as you said you would, then your arrow cannot be pulled out of God's heart. Do you think God will want to pull it out because it's painful? No, God will push it in deeper. You are just thinking about God's heart now, but one day you will be living in it. When that happens, whenever you want to do something God will want to do it too. That's the sole objective we will strive for in the 1980s. We will not look back or to one side, but just go for the goal. Will you do that this year?

## **Chapter 20**

### **The Turning Point of History**

**December 1, 1975 -- Tarrytown, New York**

In the history of our world, the dispensation of restoration has often been repeated three times due to human failures. Originally, there was to have been no dispensation of restoration. The need for restoration and the subsequent repetitions ultimately came from one event: the fall. We have learned that since the fall, God, Satan and man have been tackling each other. Their interaction has formed history, with the heavenly side battling to establish turning points in order to restore the original position, and the satanic side battling to keep its dominion. The issue has always been to determine who will eventually gain the victorious turning point -- God or Satan.

The established religions and their adherents have never realized that man has a central responsibility for turning this evil world around. They have believed that anything can be accomplished if only God wishes it. They assumed that if God willed something, even Satan would not oppose Him. Unification theology says that man himself must take all

responsibility. We say that we cannot reach the true turning point unless we expel Satan. Man must take a leading position. God, on His side, is trying to restore mankind centering on good people. Satan's side, centering on evil people, opposes this restoration. History has been developing through the repetition of these struggles.

Cain represents Satan's side and Abel represents God's side. They inevitably collide. God's side stands in the internal position while Satan's side is in the external position. Cain and Abel experienced this kind of struggle, and in their battle, Satan's side eventually gained the victory. Had God's side been victorious, history would have moved at that crucial turning point to the side of goodness.

At the times of Noah and Abraham, Satan was able to win more battles and frustrate the attempt to set the turning point toward goodness. At any historical turning point, heaven has always fought centering upon three stages or generations, representing the Old Testament, the New Testament and the Completed Testament, or the formation, growth, and perfection stages. Abraham, representing mankind, tried to make a complete turnabout by making symbolic offerings. Yet because he did not cut the birds in two, the condition was not established. Then the course of Abraham's family had to pass through three stages -- from Abraham through Isaac and Jacob. Finally, for the first time, a victorious historical turning point was made at the time of Jacob.

### ***Jacob set the turning point***

When Jacob gained the victory for the first time, a whole family was able to follow the path toward heaven. What was the next challenge? What is always critical after a new tradition starts? Passing that accomplishment on to one's descendants. The thought, faith, and action by which Jacob gained the victory became the new tradition which his descendants were to follow. Although Jacob was an individual, he did not set the indemnity condition simply as an individual, but rather as someone standing in a historical position. Thus, the historical turning point which he achieved had to be passed on to the family and then the tribe. They had to inherit the tradition through which Jacob gained his victory. This is the course of Jacob which we study in the Principle.

But the chosen people of Israel could not inherit Jacob's historical victory over Satan unless they could continue to follow the path which he and his family walked through the time of Moses. No matter how difficult the course may have been, they had to observe this rule through the time of Moses. This rule applied to them not only in their own country, but wherever they went. Furthermore, they had to create the turning point centering on the level of the race or the people at Moses' time.

Satan is always standing one step ahead of us. In the alien country of Egypt, God and God's people had to face Satan, Satan's people and Satan's country. By the time God had gathered His people, Satan had already claimed a country. By the time God had a country, Satan had the world. They have always been fighting in this way.

Moses was a leader in the palace of the pharaoh even though he was an Israelite. In the palace, since he represented the Egyptians, he was a man on Satan's side. But Moses left

the palace and made a change. The day he changed, Moses became one of the people of Israel -- a man on God's side. No longer was he the Moses of the palace, dwelling on Satan's side.

Moses was able to gain the foundation to lead his race, his people, during his 40 year period in Midian. Moses and the people of Israel became one and battled against the palace of the pharaoh. God's side and Satan's side fought each other, and God's side subjugated Satan's side. The Israelites journeyed for three days until they reached the Red Sea. The initial three-day period for returning to Canaan was significant in Jacob's return to his homeland as well.

After winning these battles, the people of Israel began their exodus, ending 400 years of slavery in Egypt. Yet they did not go directly to Canaan, but spent 40 more years wandering in the wilderness. Why did they have to go this course? Because the Israelites were not willing to pursue their goal at the risk of their lives. They could not focus on one goal leading to God alone. Their way of thinking was humanistic and still tied to the satanic world.

From the time the people of Israel left Egypt until they returned to establish the national foundation and await the Messiah, the tradition they had to inherit was the one Moses used to gain victory in Egypt. Unless they followed and observed this tradition wholeheartedly, they could not inherit the foundation of victory on the level of a race or a people or bring the turning point to the level of a nation. This foundation was critical because upon the expansion of this foundation Jesus was supposed to come on the national level and bring the messianic age.

The level of the nation is one step higher than the level of the people. The nation encompasses families and people. Accordingly, in the national age, conditions to restore families and people do not have to be repeated individually. Therefore, when Jesus came to the earth as the Messiah, if he set the national standard victoriously, he could also accomplish all the requirements to restore the family and the people.

What did Moses have to focus on to accomplish restoration at the stage of a race or people? He had to inherit the tradition of Jacob's course. You must understand this. Moses represented the next goal in the process of development since Jacob, and he inherited the tradition which Jacob left. In the process of development, there is no growth stage without a formation stage, no completion stage without a growth stage. So, if Jacob's age is the formation stage, Moses could come on that foundation at the growth stage. In the vertical process of history, Moses inherited the past and stood on the present. The turning point was directed toward the future. So he decided to march forward. From this turning point, the concepts of past, present and future were determined.

Jacob's family passed through the formation and growth stages and went forward to the level of complete faith. They followed the formula of bringing victory by setting up three stages -- past, present and future.

Without making conditions, Moses could not simply tell the people, "Let's go to Canaan." He could start forming a nation only after he cleaned up all the failures from Jacob's age until his time and set up a foundation which excluded Satan. The formula is the same. Then what must be done after entering the national age? Jesus had to stand upon the foundation of a victorious Moses. Since Moses' foundation was the foundation of a people, Jesus could not succeed without inheriting Moses' position and eliminating any conditions for Satan to invade.

The nation of Israel and the people whom Moses led were to become the foundation for Jesus. Therefore, all the failures from the age of Moses had to be cleaned up within the time of Jesus. Once he prepared and cleaned the foundation of the people and connected it with the national foundation, then Jesus could go to the world level. Only in that way could he go one dimension higher.

Since the turning point can only be made by securing the historical tradition from the previous level, when the national foundation was not secured at Jesus' time, the possibility for world restoration was lost. All the conditions established centering internally upon God and externally upon Jesus were supposed to have created one national foundation to confront Rome and the satanic world. If they could have created such a national turning point then the national of Israel would have existed on the earth eternally.

After the time of Jesus, both Jews and non-Jews should have been able to follow the original tradition of Jesus, and unite and create a national foundation. Then can any individual, family, race or nation accomplish God's will on earth? What happened at the death of Jesus? Was the turning point on earth lost or does it remain?

### ***Christianity***

Today Christians say that everything is accomplished by simple faith in Jesus. However, this is not so. Through the death of Jesus, Christians lost the earthly foundation upon which they can restore the past, present and the future on the individual through the national levels. Where should we make the turning point? It should be on the earth. Because a being of spirit and flesh fell, it must be a people of spirit and flesh who go back to God as an individual, family, tribe, race, nation and world. By the death of Jesus, all of these levels were lost.

At the time of Jesus, his followers had to create the spiritual foundation to reach out to the world. The time had been right to create the national turning point on earth and go forward toward the world level. However, the death of Jesus blocked the way to the national and world stages, and Christians had to start a spiritual movement to accomplish God's ideal. Is Christianity qualified to inherit the earth? First Christians had to understand Jesus' situation and keep his tradition. You must understand that Christianity became a spiritual movement through the death of Jesus. What is Jesus' spiritual victory? It means his followers are not violated spiritually on the earth; a victorious spiritual atmosphere has been established. What Christians must know is why Jesus' prayed, "My father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will but as thou wilt." From this

we can draw the conclusion that Christians are not able to reach God's ideal without uniting with Heavenly Father's will, just as Jesus prayed at the Garden of Gethsemane.

It is clear that with Jesus' death, God lost the earthly foundation which Moses had set. Externally the situation became worse than it was before the Messiah came. The Christians, the second Israel, have no nation, no land. They are like members of a family with no head of the household. There is no guarantee that God can protect the people for whom He had so carefully prepared the foundation of individual victory, family victory, tribal victory and racial victory. Even though God is an almighty God, He has no foundation to protect this second Israel. This is why Christian history has been the most miserable in the history of religions. Christianity has been a religion of martyrs. People wondered: Why, if God truly exists, did the Christians have to go such a miserable path, individually and as a people? We see now how Satan can always attack physically when there is no foundation for the individual, the family, the clan, the tribe or the nation.

### ***The Second Coming***

Then, should Jesus return? Absolutely. Today, many Christians say that it doesn't matter whether the Messiah comes or not; it is not necessary. Some believe that the Lord will come on the clouds and bum everything up, and then the world will be made over just as God and Jesus wish it to be. Can this happen? This kind of Christian thought is too far removed from true restoration history and it will perish. People with that kind of faith will never be able to see the Lord of the Second Advent.

Is the Lord of the Second Advent coming with glory? Does he have the principled authority to be able to overcome the satanic individual, family, race and nation? In order to come on a national foundation, the Messiah must inherit the foundation of a race or people. But to inherit that, he must first inherit a family foundation which is perfectly purified. Only then can he firmly stand on the national foundation. Without this kind of foundation the Lord of the Second Advent cannot come with glory. Then the prophecy that he will come under conditions of incredible suffering and misery will be fulfilled.

The present situation of Christianity is like clouds floating in the sky. Clouds drift as the wind blows. Today, there are many nations in the world whose national religion is Christianity. But they have no earthly foundation of individual victory, family victory, and tribal victory. They have not established a chosen nation.

Then, what should the Lord of the Second Coming do when he arrives? He cannot reach out and save the world unless he recreates a substantial foundation on the individual, family, clan, race, and national levels, which were all lost in the nation of Israel. Without reestablishing those levels, he cannot consummate world Christianity.

Where has the floating spiritual Christianity settled in these 2,000 years? Do you think something which could not settle anywhere else could settle successfully in the United States?

Where can God gain His base? The dispensation did not succeed in Rome, or in England, or in this Christian nation of America either. Therefore, God set His base in a small country in the East. He needed to find a nation that had a long history of more than 4,000 years, and it had to be a small nation with a population of a manageable size. He needed a nation of one pure race of people. That nation had to be one which had never invaded another, and its people had to have a distinguished culture. It had to be a nation that had kept a strong national heritage even if it had to become a dependent state or suffer an unstable situation. Also, it had to be a nation whose people had undergone much suffering, because they were needed to indemnify the suffering of the world.

### ***The chosen nation***

In the course of history only two nations have met these conditions. One is Israel. The Israelites wandered without a nation. Yet, in order to receive the Messiah, they persevered as a nationless nation in spite of all kinds of persecution and harsh treatment. The other nation is Korea. Koreans have been called the Jews of Asia. Korea has been able to inherit the achievements of Western culture, but its culture has not been diluted by Western civilization. It has been dominated by Satan's side, and in that, it shares the situation of Israel, which was ruled by Rome.

In 1948, Israel became independent; therefore, some might think it reasonable for the Lord to come back to Israel. Korea also became independent in 1948. However, Korea was liberated from Japanese colonization, in contrast to modern Israel's situation. Conceivably both countries may have become independent at the same time because the physical Israel inherited something from the spiritual Israel, Korea. The fact that the Jewish people, who had been wandering for 2,000 years, found their nation, shows that all their sins had been forgiven. Therefore, they could return to their original position. The prophecy that Israel would be restored when Jesus returned was fulfilled. Because Jesus' death was indemnified, mankind was able to receive forgiveness and the Lord of the Second Advent could come.

If the Lord of the Second Advent comes to Korea, is he going to lead a luxurious life or go the way of indemnity? He must endure many things in walking the path of indemnity; he must develop incredible endurance. The Koreans, who love hot food, say that such a person is able "to eat peppers without crying."

Korean Christianity stands in a position similar to that of the Jewish leaders in the past, except that Christians are floating, maintained by only a spiritual base. The mind, or spirit, follows where the body goes, so if Christians find a group of people who are welcoming the Messiah, the spirit may move them to follow. The Lord may appear through a new movement born in Korea, one which carries God's historical mission. What is that movement? The Unification movement is the focus of God's spirit and is trying to unify Christianity and the world.

### ***The Messiah's course***

What does all this mean? It means that the Messiah has come. If people had not opposed him but accepted everything, the restoration process would have ended in seven years; the indemnity conditions for the family, clan, and nation would have enabled all levels to unite. Korean independence was declared in 1948; by 1952, seven years after Korea's liberation from Japan in 1945, restoration would have been accomplished.

God accomplished His creation in one week, resting on the seventh day. What did I do during this period of seven years? I was in prison. I stayed there until I was liberated in 1950. When Jesus went the way of death, his disciples ran away. However, while I was in prison, I found 12 faithful disciples. This way the course of restoration through indemnity could start. I had started preaching in the democratic sphere, but the Christians opposed me. This signified that democracy was failing at that time. Since I found hostility at home in South Korea, I went to the basically enemy territory, communist controlled North Korea, to regain what was lost.

### ***Restoring blessed families***

From that point, recreation could start anew. I worked to form a family from the position of Jacob, or at the individual level. I could begin my family in 1960, 14 years after the liberation of Korea. Considering each stage as seven years, I went through the stages of formation and growth to restore the failures at the time of Jesus. Jacob also worked 14 years to establish his family. So, in 1960, the family of God could begin to separate itself from the family of Satan.

I wanted to form families on the world level, creating a new blessing sphere of the new Israel. The third Israel is made up of blessed families. From 1960 we began to reach for the worldwide level of restoration, going through the historical process of the family age, clan age, tribal age and national age.

Up until now, the Unification Church has been forming clans and tribes centering on 12 couples representing Jacob's families. The 36 Couples represent three stages of 12 couples each. One process of restoration involves 36 couples; one family is the extension of 36 generations. When Cain's and Abel's families are added, they become 72 couples. Through the Blessing we must find the original, historical families which were lost, and we must restore them.

To accomplish God's will, Jesus should have blessed three disciples first and then the rest of the 12. So we also must fulfill the Blessing number 12. This number expanded horizontally through the past, present, and future becomes 36 couples. Also, the formation, growth, and completion stages expanded horizontally become 36 couples.

There were 10 generations from Adam to Noah and 10 generations from Noah to Abraham. However, this number 10 implies the fundamental number 12, because it includes Cain and Abel, or Isaac and Jacob. Through the formation, growth and completion stages, the number 12 becomes the number 36. This is the origin of the 36 Blessed Couples.

Expanded to the level of Abel and Cain, the 36 become 72 couples, representing a tribe. The next level of Blessing is the number 124, corresponding to the 120 followers with whom Jesus started his worldwide spiritual course. They are the representatives of the world's nations Jesus originally wanted to bless them and unify them, connecting them with the nation of Israel. If Jesus could have blessed his 120 followers, and if he had been welcomed by the nation of Israel, would he have been killed? Of course not. We had to indemnify what he did not accomplish and bless the 36, 72, and 124 couples within three years.

Next is the 430 Couples. The numbers four and three when added together become seven, and the numbers four and three always correspond to the number of liberation. The people of Israel made their exodus to the Promised Land after 430 years. In Korean history as well, the liberation from Japan happened in the year 4300, according to the Korean calendar. After 4,300 years, Korea could become the chosen nation. Therefore, 430 years is the period for the restoration of the nation of Israel.

When the foundation in Korea reached the national level, I blessed 43 couples of the Western world. The number 43 is a factor of the number 430.

The next Blessing was the 777 Couples, including people from 10 nations. Through this Blessing the way was opened for the world level.

The Unification Church is forming a new tribe and new nation. Do you understand what is happening? If you do not understand this so far, you will not understand the dispensation from now on. You must inherit the tradition and observe it, but how can you observe and maintain something you do not understand?

In February 1975 I blessed the 1,800 Couples. I had to hold that Blessing within 14 years after the dispensation started in April 1960. The 1,800 Couple Blessing closed the second seven-year course of the Unification Church because it prepared the perfect foundation for expanding to the world level. The number six is the number of Satan, and 1,800 is a multiple of 18, which is the total of six plus six plus six. It signifies the dominion of the satanic world. The first six represents the formation stage of the satanic side; the second six represents the growth stage of the satanic side; and the third six represents the completion stage of the satanic side. Thus the world foundation was prepared; therefore, from now on we can mobilize the nation and the world.

### ***The Yoido rally***

We have been holding rallies, centering on the Yoido rally this past June in Korea. Rally preparations began in February, and the event reversed the entire fortune of Korea. We had to reverse the path of the established churches and achieve victory in various other areas as well. These activities have linked Korea to the individual, family, race, national and worldwide levels. This spiritual connection has given Korea a substantial foundation on the worldwide level.

We could open the way to go to the world by making a spiritual connection through conditions such as the three-year course in the United States from 1972-1974. Before, we had been working spiritually on the level of tribe and race. However, I have sent members out to the world and have brought a spiritual victory through the three-year course in the United States beginning in 1972.

Now that the national standard is set, in order to expand it on the worldwide level, we have to establish the substantial Christian world standard in these next three years and connect it with the foundation of spiritual Christianity. In the following three years, combining the substantial foundation with the spiritual foundation, we must mobilize on a world level. This period corresponds on a worldwide level to Jesus' three-year mission. The foundation for all this was the Yoido rally. Through it we reached the level of the established churches and the nation and have prepared a victorious foundation spiritually and physically. The three-year dispensational course for the world begins this year in the United States.

### ***The next three years***

This is the historical turning point for the world level spiritually and physically. You must understand this. During these three years -- 1975, 1976 and 1977 -- the destiny of the United States will change, and the destiny of the world will change with it.

In Korea, I have been restoring though indemnity everything lost in Israel. I prepared the national foundation and completed it, spiritually and physically, through the Christian world. I have also been setting the indemnity conditions for the world level.

In these first three years, we must create the spiritual foundation, and in the latter three years we must create the physical foundation. Then from 1977 to 1981, we must completely indemnify the problems of the world and resolve them. We must gain a certain victory in the first three years until 1977, and by 1981 we must free the Unification Church from any opposition in the democratic world. The communist sphere may still oppose us, but in the sphere of the free world the Unification Church should be welcomed any place. What we achieve in the United States will determine this.

What kind of time are we in? In terms of the historical turning point, we have now inherited the national foundation the Christian era. To that we must add the foundation of the world level not only spiritually but physically as well. In the coming years we will fight to create the world foundation. The destiny of the worldwide foundation will be based upon the principle of restoration through indemnity. Therefore, you must understand that 1975, 1976, and 1977 are the years of the greatest turning point in history. We are standing on that point.

In these three years, how shall we influence America? What do we have to do? God has shifted His focus from the established churches, and the Unification Church has appeared. We must have a clear providential view of history. We must understand the reality, not only the theory, of history. Jacob went through his providential course without understanding much of it; neither Moses nor Jesus went through the providence with full knowledge. But our situation is different. We understand everything, so we should be able

to do it. The formation stage is Adam's, the growth stage belongs to Jesus, and now we are in the completion stage. Therefore, we must clearly understand God's situation.

I have stood up for a nation, and that nation is Korea, not America. We have no way to restore Christianity and the spiritual foundation unless we find the physical substance again. As you trace back through the ages, who has the most ideal situation -- Jesus and his disciples, or you? Jesus' age was at the tribal or national level; however, we are standing on the world level. How great this time is! You must understand that theoretically you should be greater than they. The early Christians were willing to go to Rome even knowing their throats would be slashed. What would you do if knew your throats were to be slashed in Moscow? Are you superior to Jesus' disciples?

How many years do we have to work in order to save the democratic world? We must work hard these three years, and accomplish as much as possible to win the communist world within a seven-year period. If we do so, the democratic world can be victorious over the communist sphere without fighting it. If we cannot do it, there will be one fight after another. In that case, members of the Unification Church must go toward the victory even if our blood is shed. Therefore, in this course, we must solve the world problems by all means. This is always my earnest desire, whether I am asleep or awake. God and Jesus long for this as well. Many spirit persons are relying on us to gain this additional victory for which we have been striving. This is what we and the spiritual world are praying for.

In the past the spiritual world could not fully assist us, but now they are able to fully participate. Everything depends on us opening the way. How near the Heavenly Kingdom is! We have seven years left.

### ***Yankee Stadium***

What are the turning points in this battle? The Madison Square Garden rally changed things spiritually. Now the challenge is the external world. The growth stage is the Yankee Stadium rally. World victory depends on the upcoming rally at Yankee Stadium. The second stage in the providence is usually the turning point. In Adam's family, the providence centered upon Abel, the second son. At the family level, centering upon Noah, the heavens and the earth were divided. The second stage is the most crucial. In Abraham's family, a decision of life and death revolved around the second generation, Isaac. In the larger scope of history, Jesus, the second Adam, had tried to set the turning point but could not. The growth stage is at the center, whether it is viewed vertically or horizontally.

Now, on the world level, the turning point is the second key rally, at Yankee Stadium. The number seven represents the formation, 14 is the growth, and 21 is the completion. Therefore, Yankee Stadium will be a victory if we can gather 210,000 people. To accomplish that will be equivalent to lifting up the United States. Therefore, we must do it at the risk of our lives. We must be victorious at Yankee Stadium. We should concentrate on God's Kingdom not only with our mind, but with our whole body. If all are gathered at

Yankee Stadium, how delighted God and Jesus would be! The entire spiritual world will be grateful. And this generation will change. Groups opposing us will shrink away.

You must understand that I am standing in a serious position. For the first time I am standing on the world foundation spiritually, and now I am surveying the physical foundation. If you gain the victory here within three years, by 1980 we will surely be able to protect all these foundations. We can openly testify, in front of God, that all the problems of the world have been solved without a fight. If we can bring more than 200,000 people to Yankee Stadium, we will triumph at Washington Monument and be able to get 600,000 or even 700,000 people. When 600,000 people can support me, the new Israelites can head for Canaan.

In these three years we will create the world foundation. We are building the restoration through indemnity. In Korea, we assembled 1.2 million people for a rally at Yoido Island. If you have the same heart as Jesus and unite in a desperate effort, the spiritual world will be mobilized and we can gain the victory. People will feel unconsciously drawn to Yankee Stadium.

When they see you, they will want to follow you. The spiritual world will attract them. Therefore we must do our best. This is the final battle. It has never existed before and will not come again. God is serious, Jesus is serious, and I am serious; the Christian spirit world is serious and you members of the Unification Church are serious. Those who went to the spiritual world believing in Christianity will come and assist us. After Christianity penetrated Rome, opposition to Christianity did not last much longer. If we gain the victory at Yankee Stadium there won't be much opposition after that. The people will feel somehow attracted to the Unification Church, and they will come and observe what we are and what we do.

The victory of Yankee Stadium will put us over the growth stage. It is the same as rising beyond the sphere of the fall. Since it will establish God's authority on the world level, Satan will have no place to go. Therefore, our enemies will not be able to oppose us. Yankee Stadium will determine all these things. In a way, I feel desperate.

If it fails, what will happen next? I am most serious on that point. You must understand it. We must accomplish by all means, regardless of what happens.

The United States will soon be 200 years old. We understand that God's providence works through corresponding time periods. During their 400 years of persecution under the Roman Empire, the early Christians re-stored through indemnity the 4,000 years of human history lost at the time of Jesus. Now the United States must indemnify the 2,000 years lost by the failure of Christianity. These 200 years must consummate spiritually and substantially the providence since Jesus, solve everything, and return it to heaven. The indemnity period to restore the spirit and flesh of Jesus is this 200 years.

The title of the Yankee Stadium rally is "America's Bicentennial -- God Bless America." It means we are passing over to the Heavenly Kingdom, crossing over the peak of the second providential stage. Even when you sleep, sleep with a mind directing your arms

and legs toward Yankee Stadium. If we think about things is that way, victory will surely come. If you bring success, you will rise up. Jesus will bow his head to you. So will God, and the spiritual world too.

Now is the time when each of you can focus on 6,000 years of history with the best of sincerity and become the resurrected body of Jesus. In the history of the providence, you are standing on a brand new summit of history; it will never reappear. Do your best. If God should ask you, "Couldn't you have done more?" and you can reply, "I did the maximum I was capable of," both you and I will be free from responsibility. But if you did not do your very best with the utmost sincerity, you will become the object of resentment of billions and billions of generations. You and I must completely unite. Satan does not take a rest; God does not take a rest, and we cannot. Think in these terms, and in the coming six months -- which will be like the final hell -- you must seriously overcome all obstacles. This time will never be repeated. Let's all do our best and make our pledge in front of God that six months from today we will accomplish our goal.

## **Chapter 21**

### **Message at the Unification Ceremony**

**January 31, 1976--Seoul, Korea**

As you know 1976 is a historical year. The Yoido rally last year prepared the national foundation spiritually and established the substantial national standard. Because Jesus died on the cross the nation of Judea and the Jewish religion could not be united. Last year was the historical period for restoring this through indemnity. At the time of Jesus, the Jewish people and the government joined to confront him. Last year the Unification Church and the government together confronted the established churches and turned the situation completely upside down.

Unification Church members from 60 nations came to Korea representing many nations of the world. Looking at the national point of view horizontally, we can say that the democratic world has the spiritual mission of Christianity; therefore, the International One World Crusade (IOWC) was organized in order to give our movement a spiritual foundation on the worldwide level. The Western team members brought along the victorious spiritual foundation of all of Western Christianity.

Last year's events also created an opportunity for the Asian and the Western cultures to be united, since many spirit people who had come to Asian nations while they were on earth and many Christian spirit people who had sacrificed themselves here helped us. They had tried to achieve that unity on earth, but never succeeded. This unity has now created an opportunity for making contact between good Asian spirit people who had been loyal patriots and good Western spirit people who had done good deeds for their cultures.

Korea is a nation which has paid the historical indemnity condition representing the whole world; therefore, it must establish one unifying teaching representing the entire world. The spiritual unity in Korea means that both Christianity and the Unification Church are uniting, as well as Western culture and Asian culture. Now the spiritual foundation of Christianity must be connected to the world centered upon the Unification Church in Korea today. There is no way we can reach out to the world physically unless we have all the blessings of worldwide Christianity centered here on the spiritual standard, and can connect those blessings with the physical foundation in Korea.

The Yoido rally was a historical event that established these conditions. The participants came not by their own will alone, but were moved unconsciously by the entire spiritual world which was mobilized for the occasion. This rally was unprecedented in Korean history and established a world record as well.

This shows that now is the time to jump forward according to the fundamental principle centering upon the nation. Thus I have established certain conditions in the United States. In the third year of my course in the United States the media began to attack me severely. But I know that by this April we will go over the peak and take the offensive.

It makes me feel good that the communist accusations that I do brain-washing have all been dismissed. A recent court case clarified this, and our accusers were sentenced and had to back down. All the American news media have been opposing God's providence since the time of President Nixon, and they are now trying to kick us out, saying that the leaders of the Unification Church are coming to the United States and are influencing the entire nation. They contend that a stranger appeared and began attracting young people away from the affluent American way of life.

We know our activities are sacrificial deeds for God's providence, but the news media sees them as something to be accused. They say that members are forced to sell flowers or raise funds on the street. But Unification Church members are voluntarily doing this as a sacrifice in order to bring life to the world. The world esteems people who work faithfully eight hours a day for themselves, but how can we save the nation if we just imitate what people of the world do? Theoretically it is reasonable that we should do more than they do if we are working for the sake of others and the whole world. This is our point of view, which they do not understand. This is why we get up early in the morning and come back at midnight or 1 a.m. Americans consider this overworking.

Some people thought that the Communist Party was assisting me and using me to gain control of the United States. So they investigated through the CIA, but they could not find anything. If I had not initiated Victory Over Communism (VOC) activity, a lot of problems would have developed. I initiated VOC activities in Korea and other parts of Asia and have been considered the authority on anti-communism. No one can ignore that fact.

Thus they are very concerned about me. They are trying to create a situation in which they can catch me and accuse me. From an ideological point of view, I am not a member of the Communist Party; from a religious or Christian point of view, I am in the leading position. So they cannot find any condition to accuse me.

### ***The Yankee Stadium rally***

Our activities were all done in order to meet the dispensational time conditions. We are now working in the spiritual Christian cultural realm, since the United States is the central Christian nation of the world. My three-year course in the United States that ended last year established a victorious spiritual foundation, which connected Christianity and the Unification Church. We have control over the spiritual foundation no matter how much noise the democratic world or established Christians make. The foundation we established in Korea has set the national and substantial standard both spiritually and physically. This was the purpose behind the three-year course in the United States. We must work to set the national and substantial standards in the United States through 1976, 1977, and until April 1978. Then the United States will certainly enter a whirl of great confusion centered upon me, but that confusion will decline after the second year.

Jesus was crucified because his situation was reversed after the second year. However, today we are going in the opposite direction--up. Therefore, the three-year period from 1975-77 should connect the

victorious worldwide spiritual foundation with the victorious physical standard. The victorious national condition set both physically and spiritually at the Yoido rally has made this possible.

Because I know the absolute authority of the Principle--that no one can ever get victory over us no matter how they attack us--I am fighting with great confidence. Now a big battle will begin centering upon Yankee Stadium.

All the Unification members will attend. Among them there are many kinds of people. Our course until the Washington Monument rally will be our second major battle centering upon the Madison Square Garden rally. If we can meet that standard, a historical turning point will come after the Washington rally.

Those who oppose us are disappointed; they are questioning what kind of person I am. They are so worried about being at a disadvantage that they are now attempting terrorism. Terrorists attacked the Unification Church in Paris. The same phenomenon can happen in the United States as well. There was a threat to blow up Belvedere, and we talked to the local fire station and the police. The New York Times officially reported that the incident in Paris was carried out jointly by the established churches and the Communist Party. Now, the American people cannot refute us when we claim that the Communist Party is working behind people who persecute us.

We are marching on with these advantageous conditions. Now, with this Unification Ceremony, the unification line has been set for the individual, family, clan, tribe, nation, and world. Do you understand? We have never held such a ceremony before. Previous ceremonies were all related to the past; we never had a ceremony to establish the horizontally unified front line. The fact that the Unification Church could cross the peak of national Indemnity, gather together all the blessings of the world, and carry out this ceremony indicates that the Unification Church is marching to the determining point of eternal victory. You must know this.

### ***The new era***

In the speech at the beginning of this year I announced that schools of thought must be unified. The prominent professors of the Korean Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA) are now aware of the greatness of the Unification Thought which the Unification Church is teaching. The Korean Department of the Interior and the Department of Information had been offering programs of ideological education, but recently they asked us to take it over. After our seminars, 98 percent of the participants recommended that this be developed as the education for the whole nation. Such a response convinces us that this nation must surely be equipped with this new thought, and establish a foundation to be able to harmonize things on a new dimension. All things, internally and externally, are coming together.

Now you understand the time we are in and what is going to happen. The Unification Church, centering on my family, has only one way to go--that is the way of the Principle. So far, we have been walking complicated paths. However, now we must guide ourselves based on the principled standard. This time I did not come with Mrs. Won Bok Choi. From now on things should be guided centering upon the family. There are many problems in the family, internally or externally; we have to deal with many things, such as education of children. We have been fighting on the front line; from now on, mothers also have to stand on the front line. We have to establish an internal and an external order.

We had never been able to establish a clear order or position. Why? The position of unfallen Adam is a unique position in relation to the world. An individual cannot secure his position without paying indemnity for the worldwide historical indemnity condition. This is why the position of an individual has not been established. I have done many things in order to establish the worldwide historical indemnity

condition, so now the position of an individual can be established in relation to the family, tribe, nation and world.

### ***Unification Ceremony***

What does unification mean? So far Cain has been hitting Abel. Evil has been attacking good. From now on, that era is over. Good can smite evil, but evil may not hit good. You must know that today is the historical turning point. Therefore, we call this ceremony the Unification Ceremony. Do you understand?

Unification Church members need to completely unite their body with their mind, and guide their mind by the public thought. This hasn't been done yet. The body must unite with the mind, centering upon the purpose which our mind desires. No matter how difficult our circumstance may be, the goal for our mind and body never varies. No matter how miserable the condition in which I was placed, I overcame it with this thought. I never wavered.

You too must become willing to sacrifice your body in order to achieve unity with the mind, centering upon God's will and God's ideal of creation. There is no accusation by living that way. When you go against that way, however, you will certainly become sick or have to pay certain indemnity.

A man whose mind and body are united, and a woman whose mind and body are united, should form a family. When a man and a woman love each other, they have to do so centering upon God's ideal of creation. The husband's love for his wife or the wife's love for her husband are insufficient by themselves; their loves must be united with the love of the ideal of creation. The love of the ideal of creation is the love centered on God, binding together husband and wife.

The position of True Parents is secured only when vertical love is established within the realm of horizontal love, and horizontal love is established within the realm of vertical love. Then children can stand in a position inseparable from their parents' position. If they break away, they certainly will have to pay indemnity. Also, children must be united with each other centering on their parents. Just as Cain hit Abel, elder brothers have been hitting younger brothers in Cain's position.

Children should serve their parents faithfully with filial piety centered upon God, and brothers and sisters should be united centering on God's will. For this to happen, parents have to educate their children. Until now children have been educated in school. From now on, however, parents must take responsibility for educating them. Father and mother must be united and be examples for their children to follow. For instance, the father should demonstrate how a man should live and how he should care for a woman. We must establish this kind of tradition and must create new families.

Such a family can be the model for their neighbors and relatives, starting a unified circle. If people value our way of life, they will come to believe in the Unification Church and want to live centering upon the love of God's ideal of creation. Then neighbors come spontaneously to such a family to ask for advice. And relatives will come to them for counseling when difficulties arise.

### ***All things will be united***

We have been involved in ecumenical activities. When ministers listen to the Principle their attitudes naturally become softened. In an atmosphere of love, all the elements in ourselves will harmonize and become tempered. To make all our dimensions harmonious, we should keep them free. When elements are kept free, they can be united into one. So when we create an atmosphere of love, people will begin to open themselves, even unconsciously.

Such a family can unite its neighbors and relatives. They will tell you all their secrets and you can listen to them and comfort them. After that, if you guide them in a good direction! they will come to trust you. In this way unity will be realized in a clan and in a nation. Let's say Mr. Kim's clan becomes united with his family and the clan becomes better; that means that the nation also becomes better.

Nations also must be united. A nation means a state and a sovereignty. We must certainly have the determining point for establishing our Fatherland. Sovereignty represents God. A God-centered state--the state whose sovereignty represents God--was a task that Adam and Eve were supposed to have accomplished. They fell, however, and left the indemnity to be paid on the worldwide level; therefore, some nation in the world should indemnify and accomplish it, going through the necessary suffering course of indemnity.

To be established in the position of a son, a nation must pay all the national indemnity. Korea was divided and the communist nation of North Korea was established. If the two halves--South and North Korea--are united and become the new Israel, it will be an example for the world.

If an ideology that can overcome communism appears in a nation confronting communism face to face, that ideology will become world- wide. Then any democratic nation that does not like communism must learn the thought of this nation, because it is a bulwark against communism. That way, a condition to forgive even Satan will be established. We can say to Satan, "You helped to prepare the way of unification; therefore, I will forgive you.

Thus we can see God's dispensation to save mankind transcending all peoples, all races and all ideologies. Since we are equipped with anti-communism theory, we can be united with nations that are threatened by communism. On the other hand, communists also attack us.

### ***Time for victory***

What communists want to crush is not the government but me. As a result, people will naturally come to our side. We are entering a time when we can develop our movement more in Asia. From the dispensational point of view, the time from now until April is a peak. The first year of the crusade activity ends this April. The second year starts from there. Then a big change will occur both in our nation and in Asia. You must understand the importance of the ceremony we are holding now in order to bring glory to God.

All the 36 Couples, 72 Couples, and 124 Couples should form one team. We cannot have branch families. The 36 Couples represent the ancestors of history. The 72 Couples represent children, sons and daughters. The 124 Couples represent nations of the world, and the side of Cain. They also represent 12 branches on the worldwide level. Thus the ancestors and Cain and Abel can become united and the 12 branches also become one. This is the history of restoration. The key point of the history of restoration is that when the parents become united they transform bad Cain and Abel sons into original children of God and guide them into unity. The 72 Couples are the Cain and Abel branches of the 36 Couples. Therefore, they must become united. But family unity is not yet the horizontal foundation on the world level. The 120 apostles (124 Couples) are the representatives of the 12 branches reaching out to the world. In other words, the 120 apostles are the archetypes enlarged to the world level.

In the dispensation centered upon Jesus as well, the 72 disciples were supposed to become united centered upon Jesus and work to accomplish the restoration through indemnity. Jesus established the representatives through the 12 apostles and 72 and 120 disciples. They should have accomplished certain conditions, but they failed.

In our restoration through indemnity, we are able to advance by establishing these three stages of families. That is why 120 couples and leaders of the nine districts of Korea participated in this ceremony. The nine districts of Korea represent the nation and the world; and the district leaders symbolize tribal chiefs. This ceremony--held on the second floor of the headquarters of Korea--has worldwide significance. Invisible border lines had separated the individual, family, clan, tribe, nation, and the world. From now on, however, everything will be on a straight line. This Unification Ceremony has created this alignment. This is the most precious ceremony in the Unification Church.

### ***The fortune of the True Children***

Actually, I tried to hold this ceremony with Hyo Jin and Ye Jin, but they had to attend school. So I did it with Kwon Jin.

The 'Hyo' of Hyo Jin's name means filial piety. Blessed families can win victory by serving with filial piety. The 'Heung' of Heung Jin's name means prosperity, and the 'Hyun' of Hyun Jin means rising. He will rise after the Blessing. Kook Jin will appear in the nation; that is his responsibility. Kwon Jin will appear in the nation and bring the power.

Each of the True Children has a distinct nature. Kwon Jin smiled the 17th day after he was born. Usually babies are glad when they are held at all. But he never enjoyed being held for only a short time. If someone picked him up, he had to hold him for a long time. He has a unique and wonderful nature, and is very wise. The Unification Church is marching on with Kwon Jin. Dispensational meaning coincides with his name, Kwon Jin. Since Kwon Jin was born in the United States and has its citizenship, he represents the United States. Through him, the United States and Korea can be connected. That's why I brought Kwon Jin with me this time.

You should exemplify the meaning of unification, creating unity in the family, the society, and the country. You should be unchangeable centering upon one purpose, the realization of the unified nation and the unified world. Otherwise, you will have to pay indemnity from now on.

There are three stages of paying indemnity. You may suffer a lot materially, then your child may become ill, or you yourself may become sick; In the Old Testament Age people paid indemnity by making offerings. In the New Testament Age, indemnity was paid through children--sons and daughters. In this Completed Testament Age, indemnity is paid through parents. Therefore, you have to suffer physically and materially. You must conform your family to God's providence. Otherwise your children will pay indemnity. But if you are still obstinate and do not repent, you personally will suffer. After being punished on the three stages of formation, growth and perfection, if you still do not repent, that is the end. This is the law of indemnity.

If you understand this principle, your mind and body must become united, your family must be united, also the church, nation and world must be united. It is the heavenly principle that a family must be unified even at the sacrifice of an individual. This is the way of goodness. If we can save our relatives at the sacrifice of our family, we must go that way.

To sacrifice the nation for the sake of oneself or to sacrifice relatives for the sake of oneself, or to sacrifice one's wife for the sake of oneself, these are totally opposite to the heavenly way. A wife must sacrifice herself for the sake of her husband, and parents must sacrifice themselves for the sake of the family, the family for the sake of the clan, the clan for the sake of the tribe, the tribe for the sake of the nation, and the nation for the sake of the world. Accordingly, if the nation of Korea is to receive the blessing of God's kingdom, it must stand in the position of son on behalf of the other nations and set the tradition of sacrifice for the sake of the world. If Korea does so it will never fall. This is totally opposite from the usual way of thinking.

Now all the nations are trying to use other nations, such as the United States, for their benefit. Life in the Kingdom of God is totally opposite. In order to establish the world that God wishes, we should sacrifice our nation beyond what any other nation has sacrificed for the sake of world happiness and God's kingdom--regardless of the opposition we may face. When we sacrifice our nation for the sake of the world, we are guiding it to become the world's leading nation. That way we will establish a historical tradition and gain true achievement. In this fallen world, only the achievements attained with a sacrificial spirit, only good achievements, can remain. Those who lived that way are regarded as saints and historical figures--central figures and people of merit.

Therefore, to sacrifice oneself for the sake of others is reasonable. It corresponds to God's position. To throw oneself into something is to create one's second self. God threw Himself into the work of recreation as well as creation. That is how indemnity is paid in the history of restoration, or recreation. Indemnity will be paid only when one invests in it the power of recreation. Without this, the history of recreation cannot begin. The conclusion is drawn theoretically. It applies to me as well.

### ***The way of sacrifice is the formula course***

We gather money here and sacrifice our nation, sending the money to the United States. The United States is a rich and affluent nation, but in the history of recreation, we have to save the United States at the sacrifice of Korea and Japan. So we have thrown everything into the United States. God threw Himself into the creation of Adam and Eve. God invested the archangel, all things, and His entire spirit into the creation. Creation requires total investment.

For this reason Korea should become the first nation to throw itself into God's providence. If Korea does become such a nation, it will never perish. Nations supporting Korea will naturally appear, and Korea will receive the blessing and prosper. Other nations will follow the direction of this nation. Thus the way of restoration, the principle of unification, can only follow the course of indemnity. Restoration and unification cannot be accomplished without self-sacrifice.

We must make an effort to unite our body with our mind even at the sacrifice of our body. When we confront difficulty, we must overcome it, consoling our mind even if our body aches. This formula matches the Principle. This formula applies to an individual, a family, a clan, a tribe, a nation, and the world, as well as the spiritual world. The formula course that we should go is the principled one. An individual exists for his family, a family for its clan, a clan for its tribe, a tribe for its nation, a nation for the world, the world for the heaven and earth, and heaven and earth for God. When we do this we can receive the fruits of God's sincere investment. This is the Principle, the way of heaven.

Then who will become the master? The person who sowed seeds and cultivated the crops becomes the master. In the spiritual world it is the same. He who enjoys a good harvest in autumn is the one who sowed the seeds in spring. This is the heavenly principle. Accordingly, one must sow seeds with sincerity and cultivate with sincerity.

This formula is the foundation for achieving perfection. This is the Principle. Speaking about the ideal of creation, we must earnestly fulfill the ideal that God implanted in us with His sincere heart. The perfection of the ideal of creation means accomplishing the ideal on the worldwide level.

Speaking about unity, ask yourself whether you have achieved such unity in your activity. You know well the answer. If you say you do not know, you are telling a lie. You know whether you are a genuine person. Only when you face yourself can you make progress. Your conscience knows everything and you can learn from it.

Both husband and wife know whether they are truly standing in a principled position. When parents fulfill their responsibility to their children, they know whether they are taking care of children in a principled way. A family knows whether it is fulfilling its responsibility for its clan. Because your conscience guides you, you should be able to practice the principled way, almost as if you had already been taught. Thus, people can receive God's blessing through practice. If people cannot practice the principled way, even after being taught, they have to take responsibility for it. That is the heavenly principle. You have a conscience, and through it the spiritual world teaches you.

### ***Any effort leads to development***

Up until now the way had not been opened for a family, a church, a nation,. the world, and the spiritual world to be united. Even if an individual or a family had achieved perfection, true perfection was left unaccomplished until the worldwide standard was established. No matter how loyally or sincerely an individual or a family served, they remained on the level of individual perfection, since the way through the clan, tribe, and nation was not opened, and individuals could not stand on the world historical position. That is the reason why people could not live the ideal life in the spiritual world.

I have now opened the way for you to go to the world starting from the individual level, through the family, clan, tribe, and national levels. So once you join the Unification Church, if you make certain effort you can make rapid progress. You are living in such a precious time. Do you understand?

Even people who served with their best loyalty, waiting thousands of years, giving their best loyal service, could not accomplish perfection, because the way was closed. The historical indemnity had not been paid; therefore, people could not resolve things in their 70 or 80 years of life. After going to the spiritual world they had to resurrect through their descendants and pay indemnity again. But from now on all the good spirits will push their descendants day and night. Such a time will come. This is the result of today's ceremony.

The spiritual world cannot keep silent; it can cause illness or other things to happen to their descendants if they do not go to the Unification Church. Recently in the United States, too, such phenomena are happening. Organizations will also be pushed. Ancestors can teach their descendants through spiritual works. All the ancestors are being mobilized to push their descendants by all means. That's the time we are in.

For this purpose Lon Sun Harmony has the mission to liberate ancestors, opening the way for them to come to the earth. This ceremony lays the foundation to dissolve the resentments for thousands of generations of ancestors and open the way for them to resurrect. I have been doing these works through this elderly woman. Do you understand? Leaders may not understand clearly, but ancestors are being liberated. On May 1 of last year we performed a ceremony for the total dissolution of resentment and dissolved the resentment of even Satan.

It is very historical that such a ceremony is performed this year. Now Buddhists, for instance, can make rapid spiritual progress. All providential religions are now being pushed to make new leaps. This is the time for us to encounter the spiritual world. We cannot solve the confusion of the spirit world unless we know the spiritual principle. For this reason if you are not in the course of unification, the spiritual world can attack you.

The good spiritual world represents the good archangelic realm. God, the archangel, and Adam should have been united in the Garden of Eden. Now God, the good spiritual world, and the Unification Church are unifying. This is the same as God, the archangel, and Adam being united. The

Cain world should follow in order to avoid destruction. Cain can survive by following. Such a time has come.

I have already set up the condition for an individual, a family, a tribe, a nation, and the world to be able to connect with God and heaven. In fact, I have established the condition for the Unification Church to make rapid progress. We know that is God's will. Knowing this, you should live not for yourself but for the nation and the world. You should try to give a donation even if it is a penny. Especially the 36 Couples and those who have public missions should never live in a private way. Do not use money in a private way. If you use money for God's public will, you will not violate the law in front of God. But if you use money in a private way you will have to pay indemnity.

### ***The principle of unification***

You should understand this principle well, and the 36 Couples, 72 Couples, and 124 Couples must be united. The 72 Couples should not criticize the 36 Couples, nor should the 36 Couples criticize the 72 Couples or the 124 Couples, and so on. Even if the 72 Couples do very well, I cannot praise them if they do not appreciate the 36 Couples. Even if the 124 Couples do well, I cannot bless them unless they appreciate the 72 Couples. This is the principle of unification. Therefore, these three sets of families must become united. The 36 Couples are the resurrection of human ancestors, the 72 Couples the resurrection of children, and the 124 Couples the resurrection of the people of the world. Therefore, if they become united, the family, children, and the world can become united. For this reason I am responsible for these three stages of couples. Do you understand? From now on, therefore, you must think in this way.

We must mobilize a nation in order to save the world; I must mobilize my clan, the Moon clan, in order to save the nation of Korea. And my family must save my clan. This is the task of a tribal Messiah. But we must have a national Messiah in order for us to become clan Messiahs. When the clan standard is established, we have to prepare ourselves to keep the principle and be connected with the national standard; then we can go up to the national level. This is the course of restoration through indemnity.

We can face God only when the subject and the object become united. For subject and object to become united, they need a center. God certainly should live there. When subject and object perform give and take action, movement begins. And their motion needs a central point, an eternal central point. If subject and object are not united and do not perform give and take action, they cannot establish themselves as an object to God. This means that they have no relationship with God.

Therefore, husband and wife must be united centering upon God. Parents and children must be united centering on God. Compared to that ideal, I must say that you are living a haphazard life. You should have a substantially fruitful life. You must focus your mind on establishing these relationships in substantial life, and you must bring certain results in your lifetime.

## **Chapter 22**

### **The New Cosmic Spring Will Prosper Eternally**

**April 18, 1976 -- Tarrytown, New York**

Spring has come. Plants, grass, trees, insects, birds, animals, all of them are welcoming spring. What happens when spring comes? In nature everything stirs. Spring is the season of love. Birds are singing songs of love every morning. God also is seeking a spring when He can sing a song of love, a song of spring. Nature sings a song of life and

prosperity. Everything is in that melody. The Creator and the creation are one. Accordingly, God is also preparing to sing a song for spring. But is God in a situation where He can sing now?

One day can be divided into four seasons. Morning expresses spring, noon expresses summer, the evening expresses autumn, and night expresses winter. Human history as well is following the same seasonal path. Human history started from the sorrowful spring caused by the fall of man. Later it moved into the sorrowful summer, which was manifested by the cultures of Egypt and China. Then civilization prospered in countries such as England, the United States and Japan, and so moved into the tropics. These modern civilizations correspond to the autumn of human history, the season of cultivation.

The cold season, the winter of civilization, is coming. That is the threat of communism, centering on the Soviet Union. In a shivering, frozen culture, only a tree with good roots and seeds can survive. What can survive in cold civilizations are the things which have a life force inside, and the source of its life, the seed. We must have the root. That is God. A man who has this root can survive in a cold civilization. A seed which has energy can survive. The seed itself has the root and branch within. This bud is a small cosmos of life.

If you really understand the plan of seasonal history, you know that winter is not the very end. A new spring will come. Since God knows the direction of history, He prepares a people for spring, and sends them out as pioneers to the world. God has been preparing them over a long time.

Religions are headed toward paralysis and destruction. They are not following their predestined purpose. The crisis of democracy is reflected by the crisis of Christianity. God was hoping for evergreen trees, with Himself as the root. But the trunks of today's religions are paralyzed. The sign of new life must rise from there. The new sign must appear despite all kinds of cold weather.

### ***God is the root***

If the new spring reaches the cosmic level, who will welcome it? It is not the dead, dried branch or trunk but the small twigs and the small branches. The small branch which came out from the root is evergreen and is growing even during the winter. The branch may be small; however, it is connected to God who is the root.

God is trying to prepare the cosmic spring. For spring He is raising princes and princesses. Finally, when the preparation is made in which spring can bring life, God cuts out the rotten branches and trunks. This cutting occurs on all the levels such as family, race and nation. All the energy coming from the root is given to the evergreen branches. Yet this branch is bringing benefit to all levels. The Unification Church is like this small branch. However, it is growing from the family level to the national level and moving toward the world level. Once we move beyond the world level, we can realize that the cosmic spring is awaiting us. When spring comes, the atmosphere will automatically change. The cold weather of Siberia will die away.

Today communism has a big crack within itself. The early ideal of international communism has already been destroyed, and they have fallen back to the national level. Satan's trees are still growing, but their leaves are falling and their branches are withering. The golden age of communism has come to an end.

When will the turning point come? The year is 1976 and the day is June 1. Once we achieve a distinguished record at Yankee Stadium, the free world will enter into the cosmic spring and will make effort for the purpose of its prosperity. We will receive the respect and trust of all the world.

Since God is very powerful, He will soon bring forth a great tree. This evergreen tree will be made hard by the wind of Siberia. It will grow quickly when spring comes. When we bring spring to the free world, the same spring will give a warm climate to the cold civilization of communism.

Wherever we go, we can see the world feels no hope. Yet the world does have hope. The seed is bringing a new life. You are made hard by cold climates, but you have the glow of life burning inside you. The warmth of spring can break the shell. As a result, the evergreen tree will bring forth new leaves.

The civilization for which God has been longing is not in bloom yet. As you know, God is not really savoring the joy of history. Past civilizations centering upon past religions could not go beyond the limit of the nation. Accordingly, the new evergreen tree must begin on the international level. Neither could past religions overcome the obstacles stemming from different skin colors. But we know that God is color blind.

### ***Embracing the entire cosmos***

Communism could not overcome materialism. On the other hand, religions have centered on the spiritual world and put minimal value on the material world. Both of them are one-sided: however, the Unification Church embraces the entire cosmos of spiritual world and physical world. Let's think about how different we are. Other people worship God in order to receive His blessing, but we are trying to set God free. If you understand this is the truth, there is nothing higher or greater than our ideal.

Comparing yourself with the you of the past, you are a totally new person, spiritually and morally. Your face is the same, but your thoughts and mind are different. The mysterious invisible power that changed your thoughts is indestructible. You have become men and women who are full of energy. We have the formula for perfection. What you have to do is simply to apply this formula and extend it. Twenty years ago members of the Unification Church were working on the individual level. Now the activities of the Unification Church are the same, and the formula is the same, but the range has been enlarged.

Americans used to have a lot of pride. But now that pride has been lost, and 50 is their purpose. If Americans can find a new hope, the rest of the world can follow them.

The Yankee Stadium event is something like throwing a large rock into a huge lake. After the splash the wave moves from the center outward. Our impact will be felt throughout the entire world. It is the same in the communist world. God is testing us by seeing if the wave can move or not. Therefore, in March there was a hurricane of negativity which opposed us. God is hoping that we are strong enough to be able to bear such a negative event as the bombing of our church center in France. I hope that you have guts. When I sent my representatives to 120 countries, I said to them, "You are the seeds of Heaven; you must be spread. You must prosper. The seed grows a root. The root penetrates the earth, and you will grow." They have guts and confidence.

God is secretly preparing the huge cosmic spring. For this reason, God is preparing one select group out of the cold weather. This group can survive and bring the new civilization to the world. The ancient, subtropical and communist civilizations have been judged. The new cosmic civilization of spring will come, and it will prosper eternally.

### ***Covered with evergreen trees***

We have been struggling during the winter, but the time has come. Now a spring is smiling over us. By 1981 the cosmic summer will come. When we go into the cosmic summer, nature will be covered with evergreen trees. Do you want to be the persons who welcome the cosmic spring?

Your smile is very big, and contains a joy that has no precedence in history. Your smile reaches to the end of the world, so God also smiles broadly. God and man will embrace each other and everything under the sun will sing a song of spring -- nature's grasses, trees, insects, and birds.

Spring is a season that love can visit. Why is the power of love immortal? Because it makes separate things into one. Love generates life. The power of love is so strong and so warm that it can melt the universe. The power of love will bring a blossoming spring on the earth.

The God of love is dominating us beyond the limit of nationality or race. We will march forward in order to welcome the imminent cosmic spring. We have been chosen by God as the harbingers of spring. We are marching forward toward Yankee Stadium in order to declare the spring. What a joy this is!

New York is the city of despair. We must bring a revival to New York. We will create a spring atmosphere. Yankee Stadium will become the place of the welcoming spring banquet for the entire universe. Just as spring visits all places, you must visit each street and each home in New York. You must show the sign of spring to all places, in each small part of town and on each street. Raise your hands, those of you who truly wish to become the harbingers of spring.

### **Chapter 23**

**Today in the Light of Dispensational History  
February 23, 1977 -- New York, New York .**

As you know, today is True Parents' Birthday. The topic of the message this morning is "Today in the Light of Dispensational History." According to the Principle, since the fall of Adam and Eve the responsibility of the fall has rested upon the fallen generations of humanity. If Adam and Eve had not fallen but had reached perfection, then not only they as the ancestors of mankind but also the entire universe would have been perfected.

It was God's original plan for Adam to reach perfection, followed by Eve. Then through them the first family of man would have been formed upon the earth, and the children of God would have multiplied, first forming one nation and then another. Finally the entire world would have been filled with Adam's lineage. God intended to have only one people, Adam's people; one race, Adam's race; one heart, Adam's heart. Then the center of this entire universe would have been God, and Adam and Eve. Since God is the center of all living creation, everyday life would have been centered upon one God, and that God would have had dominion over all the things of creation and all mankind.

God would have been the source of all mankind's tradition, history, and entire way of life. All mankind was to live in one tradition centered upon and related to the love of God. In such a perfected world, man would have been incapable of separating from the love of God. It would have been impossible to do.

Here on earth, children naturally long for their parents even when they are separated for only few days. This human tendency comes from the original nature of man; we are longing for that one parent of mankind, God. This inseparable relationship must be reestablished because man cannot bear the loneliness of being separated from God.

When you consider this, man has something to be proud of. What is it? The supreme pride of man in the world of perfection is to have God as father. To be able to say "God is my father; Almighty God is my father!" is the greatest pride of man. Man's second most supreme source of pride is that he can say "I can possess the love of God; I can monopolize the love of God." And man's third source of pride in the world of perfection is that he can say "I can inherit God's kingdom. I can inherit everything that my father has." Isn't that truly something to be proud of? In our world, people are proud of so many social positions. They say, "You know, my father is a Ph.D.; a doctor at Harvard; a prime minister; I come from the royal family." These positions become a source of great pride. But think of it -- you can say, "My father is God."

Many people in our society are proud of being a son or daughter of an important person, but in many cases they have no experience of a loving relationship. When you say "God is my father;" however, you are already saying, "The love of God is mine." Without having a relationship with the love of God, you are not His son. Let's say you are a child of a lord and are living in his house. All the servants know that eventually you are going to be master of the house, elevated to the throne of the house. Therefore, all those servants have to pay respect to you. By the same token, in the entire Kingdom of God, everybody knows that you are the son of God. Therefore, all creation, including the angels, must pay respect to you.

God's intention was that He and man would dwell as father and son, and that He would dwell together with His son's family. The Kingdom of God would be inhabited by the children of God. A God-centered culture and tradition would be born, so that the history of God would last through eternity. That was the original ideal of God.

Today, where are mankind's desires, ambitions and hopes concentrated? Mankind's supreme desire is to become the sons and daughters of God. Secondly, man desires to possess the love of God, and thirdly, man longs to inherit God's kingdom, everything that God has. There is no greater hope for man than to fulfill these three desires.

In order to become sons and daughters of God, we must come into God's own lineage. Our bloodline must become connected to God. What if there had been no fall of man? In the first place, we would automatically be born as children of God. The fall of man was the severing of man from God. Illicit love brought about the fallen lineage. Instead of Adam and Eve uniting under God, the archangel and Eve united. The archangel, the servant of God and man, took God's position and subjugated all mankind, and all mankind came under the servant instead of God.

### ***Of Satan's lineage***

Ever since the fall, all mankind has been born, not into the direct lineage of God, but into the lineage of Satan. Mankind is part of the bloodline of Satan. Once the fall became a reality, no matter how much we called God "my father" it was devoid of meaning. The fallen world is selfish. "Myself" became the center of everything, disregarding God and everything else. No matter how hard people tried to concentrate on God, it was virtually impossible because the master of the world was not God but Satan.

Contradiction, struggle and destruction have filled the chapters of the history of fallen mankind. Fallen humanity came under satanic culture, which centers on struggle and division, contrary to God's history, which seeks for unity and harmony. Even in the fallen world, however, all men and women have an innate, original human desire. The conscience always tries to lead one back to the original center, God. To return to God, one must be saved from the satanic surroundings. That's why those who are heading toward the original God-centered point have gone through tremendous struggles.

The entire history of man can be described as a tug of war. Man has been pulled by both powers. It has been a struggle to determine which side to belong to. This is the agony of man. This struggle started with the individual, and advanced to the family, tribe, nation and world. All have been pulled from pole to pole, toward evil and toward goodness.

History has been a war between good and evil. Each battle was a severe struggle, but eventually the ultimate winner was always the good side. God's side won each level, expanding His territory. In war, there is so much killing and destruction on both sides. It is a chaotic and confusing situation. How can you tell which side is good and which side is evil? The side that initiates the attack is the evil one. In a school classroom, if two boys with bloody faces are fighting, the first question the teacher will ask is, "Who started it?"

Whose side will the teacher take? Not the side of the attacker, but of the defender. Is that not true?

Let's say there is a classroom with dozens of students, and one boy is a rascal. He does not study and is always a troublemaker. But one day he happens to be sitting quietly, and all of a sudden he is attacked by some other person. No matter how bad a rascal he may be, on that particular day he would get the sympathy of the teacher.

Evil always takes the initiative; it always attacks first. Throughout history, God has been like a schoolteacher, looking down on the struggle, watching those being attacked. God is on the side of the defenders. Therefore, the history of war is such that the attacker initiates, but always loses in the end. The universal teacher, God, is on the side of the weaker ones who are being attacked.

Why is the attacker evil? Think of human history. In the beginning, evil took the initiative and brought about the fall. The relationships between God and man, and Adam and Eve, were infiltrated and attacked. That is the original characteristic of evil. The attacker may inflict certain harm or destruction, but it is a universal law that eventually that person will have to not only restore the damage but pay a penalty as well.

God knows this universal principle. Do you think He is always initiating war? No. God does not initiate attacks. What about the people who are on the side of God? Can they say, "God, You are too good. You sit down, we will fight"? God's true people will never initiate an attack. An aggressive action will never be taken by God's people.

God's people are always being attacked, but they endure, persist and move on. That's the characteristic of God's people. Always under attack, they take the beating but never give up. It is a universal law that you become a winner by being attacked. The aggressor has to pay the damage plus a penalty. So you must endure and survive the attack on the individual level, then on the family level, national level and the worldwide level. You must withstand, survive and persevere. In the end, you will receive the entire universe because Satan and evil have to pay you the damage plus the penalty. That's how God's side will win.

### ***The universe will come to you***

The entire universe may attack you even though righteousness and justice are on your side. As long as you withstand, you can survive, and the entire universe will come to you. Beyond the universe, there is no higher level. Satan is the forefather and the king of aggressors. God is the king of the defenders.

The attacker may seem to annihilate the good, but God will raise up additional strength and power, and the attacker will eventually lose. On the individual level there are good and evil men. The evil man may attack the good, and that good man may be destroyed. But that is not the end of it. God will raise up another, even stronger champion until He finds a person, tribe and nation to withstand the attack and survive. God will never give up. As long as God is alive, the good side is never finished and never gives up.

From God's point of view, the battle of good and evil has not even started. The start has always been delayed and extended. The Principle teaches that God can prolong restoration history if certain expectations do not occur right on schedule.

The most important pattern of human history is this: Satan always attacks and loses, and God is always being attacked and gains. Look at the example of World War I. Germany started that war but was not the winner. Why? At that time, the Germans thought they could win the war. If this were not so, they would not have started it. Satan always thinks he can win; that is why his forces start wars. But no one can violate heavenly law. This is the Principle. Germany and Japan attacked in World War II, but they also lost. God, the supreme judge, was looking down and said, "You violated the universal law."

Right now the communist world and the free world are confronting each other. Which side is more aggressive and destructive? Which side is taking the initiative? According to the universal law of the Principle, are the communists going to be the final victors?

How far can Satan advance? This is of great interest to us. Communism cannot take over more than two-thirds of the world. In both world wars you can see that the attackers were successful until they gained two-thirds of world domination. As they gained this ground, they thought they were winning completely. In World War II, the German army swept over most of Europe, and the Japanese forces took almost the entire Pacific area. But Satan could not take the final one-third.

This is because the fall of man came during the formation and growth levels, or two-thirds of the whole. Satan could not infiltrate the perfection level. Therefore, Satan can claim two-thirds of anything, but never the final one-third. This is the formula through which human history has evolved. Therefore, throughout human history, there has always been one level that has remained intact. One incomprehensible group always emerged with a common set of goals -- a religious group.

Religious people are always a problem to those in power. God is always their goal; therefore, they can go beyond national boundaries, racial boundaries and cultural boundaries. They are just impossible people to deal with because the accepted sense of judgment does not apply to them. Throughout history, sovereignties have always felt threatened by religious groups. They are such difficult people to deal with because they cannot be controlled. To say "We will kill you!" is not a threat to them. They answer, "Go ahead; do it!"

### ***Governments fear religions***

Therefore, as new religions emerged throughout history, governments usually opposed them. They always wanted to liquidate the religions before they got too big. A sovereign nation worries only about the integrity of its own territory, but religious people don't care if an enemy is next door. They might even open the door to the enemy camp. This worries the governing people.

Rulers of nations have always seen religious people as a very sticky problem. They try to oppress them and accuse them of all kinds of sins. "You spied; you caused violence; you caused disorderly conduct." Then which is the good side? Which one is the aggressor -- the government or the religious people? Which is the evil -- the rulers or the religious people?

The religious people and religious crusades are constantly utilizing God's Principle. When the Christians arrived in Rome, they had no weapons. The Roman Empire had everything including a trained, disciplined army, and the Romans attacked the Christians over and over. The Christians just withstood the beating and pressed on: Though many were martyred, they continued, and after 400 years the Roman Empire finally surrendered.

Without knowing this principle, many people cry out, "Why did the supreme, Almighty God let His people suffer?" Many people try to say there is no God, or if there is a God that He is helpless. But when you know the Principle, you know where God is

From the point of view of this formula, we can determine which is the period of the Last Days. You can determine the Last Days by observing the world situation. First of all, in the Last Days an adamant, new religious movement will spring up, and the entire world will try to suppress it. Not just one ruler, not just one government, but the entire world together will try to strike that particular religion and demolish it. When you see this sign, you can know for certain that these are the Last Days.

In the Last Days there will be one lonely group of people with the highest possible goal, and they will be attacked not just by white people, but by black and yellow people, too. They will be accused not just by white governments, but by black and yellow governments. The entire universe will try to stop them. Even the established religions will try to suppress that group. Isn't that exciting? To which side would you like to belong?

History is not made at random. History is made according to a definite principle, and it never deviates from that principle. In light of this, we can so clearly see our position in this world as a lonely group, yet with the highest, most noble ideals. Nevertheless, the rest of the world is trying to condemn us. It is with pride and great honor that we belong to this group.

You know the Principle. You know the truth of God, the secrets of God. If God sends one champion in the Last Days, that champion is going to organize a strategy so that he can emerge as a lightning rod, with the rest of the world trying to strike him. He will not try to avoid such a task, but will work according to God's strategy.

In accordance with God's Principle, this is really the wisest and quickest strategy to win over the rest of the world. We must become good lightning rods so the rest of the world is inevitably drawn to come and strike us. To have that happen, we have to irritate the world. How should we do that? What's the best way to irritate the rest of the world? By taking their money? They wouldn't really mind sharing some of their money with us. But if you touch their loved ones, then everybody gets excited!

Who are those loved ones? You are! You are their wives, husbands, daughters and sons. These relationships are very sensitive, so if anybody touches them, the families react immediately. In all the history of religion, we have never seen anything like a parents' movement organized to search for their own children. In all of history, no such organization of parents has ever existed. This is the first time in history that parents have tried to kidnap their own children. Usually a child is kidnapped away from his parents, but this time your parents are coming to kidnap you.

### ***The final showdown***

This unique, extraordinary situation is happening because God has initiated extraordinary things here on earth. The final showdown of good and evil is being waged. That's why we see this extraordinary situation. Is this of my making, or of God's making? God is fulfilling His Principle at this time. Today, even Judaism has come against us. Jews say we are anti-Semitic, and Christianity has come against us, as well as communism. The American government has not exactly put out a red carpet for us. This amazing situation is happening all over the world. To make the situation worse, I sent out missionaries to 120 nations, which created more upheavals and commotion everywhere.

So we can see that wherever we are, the Unification Church is a very lonely group, and the rest of the world, including every government and every kind of religion, is trying to liquidate us. Then where am I going? Am I so naive that I do not know about all the opposition outside? How can I sleep at night? Some people say, "Reverend Moon, your ideology is so superb, but why not be diplomatic? Why don't you talk nicely to The New York Times and The Washington Post?"

Should I be diplomatic, or should we go out and shake the world? Let's get the attention of the world focused upon us. Let them hit me; let them hit us. By doing so, they owe us a debt. The important thing is this: Today I am indeed a focal point here in America, in Korea, Japan, Africa, South America, everywhere. But while the rest of the world is banded together trying to stop me, what do I represent? Do I represent the ideal of God or the ideal of Satan? That's the main question.

You say I represent God, but maybe the rest of the world will say I represent Satan. In the democratic world, majority rule stands. In my case, only a minority is saying that I am on the side of God. The majority says, "No, he is on the side of Satan." Which side can we trust? We must learn a new democratic rule: A minority plus God is the majority! We represent the supreme ideal given by God. As long as God is on our side, we are the majority.

You must know my secret, the secret of the Unification Church. From the very beginning of my ministry I was attacked and attacked and attacked, but I never faltered, never completely gave up, and in the end I always won and prospered. This has been the history of God and the history of the Unification Church. The Bible says that the ones who are patient to the last shall be victorious. Not just one person came against me, not just one nation came against me, and not just this world came against me. In the course of my

ministry, the entire spirit world has come against me, and at one point even God came against me and said, "I don't know you."

Even God tested me, but I withstood to the last, surviving even the test of God. Then God surrendered and said, "This is my son to whom I can leave my entire kingdom." God and I made a covenant. God said, "You are the son I have been seeking, the one who can begin my eternal history. Now you are here." And I said, "I have been searching for you, and finally I can know that you are my father in heaven, and I am your own son." Our covenant as father and son was made.

God does not easily give the title "Son of God." First, that person must become the victor over all human history. He must be in a position to pay all the debts of history. He is a rare individual. God took several thousand years to find that one man, and finally He has found him. I have nothing to be proud of, except that I know that God is my father, and I am His son. I am proud that I am entitled to receive the entire love of God, and that I have become a channel of that love. Finally, I can be proud to be entitled to inherit God's kingdom.

The great human desires that Adam and Eve were supposed to fulfill in the Garden of Eden were to become the son and daughter of God, to receive the love of God, and to inherit God's entire kingdom. However, this was all lost by the fall of man. I can now proclaim to the world, however, that the original human desires and God's original plan have been achieved by man through the law of indemnity and the process of restoration, and the attainment of the three blessings is now possible.

### ***The victory of 1976***

The rest of the world came around, trying to beat us, during the momentous year of 1976. In 1976, the entire history of God was culminated in two major events: the Yankee Stadium rally and the Washington Monument rally. World attention toward our movement came to a peak that year. In the year of 1976 I became known to the world. The events that we created, that God created, in the year of 1976 cannot be removed from the history of religion or from human history. I established myself as a super lightning rod in the year 1976. In my public ministry I drew the attention of the world; therefore, after the victory at Washington Monument, I declared that my public speaking had ended. Who won?

Was I defeated or victorious? Those who wished us to fail miserably were watching very attentively for the outcome of the Washington rally. By their own standard, was our accomplishment a success or a failure? Could our adversaries think we were a failure, or do they have to admit we were a complete success?

I want you to know that the Washington Monument rally was a decisive victory that became the turning point of human history. Until then I was just a person to be beaten upon over and over again, and I just persevered. The rest of the world came around me, trying to strike me. I'm sure, without knowing this formula of God's dispensational history, that even many Unification Church members thought, "I don't think God is working through Reverend Moon. If He is, why is Reverend Moon so persecuted and so lonely? Why does

he have to go through so much hardship and hard work?" Actually, many Unification Church members ask that question.

Think of it. Even if God is really furious at a government or nation, just exploding in wrath, could He crush it after sending His son to save it? America thinks it is a big country, but God's son is much bigger than America. Sometimes Unification Church members are almost desperately praying, "God, please bring your son down on our opponents a little bit." But I don't pray that way. That will never be my prayer.

God cannot do that. God cannot bring His own son down to crush an opponent, because that will defeat His purpose. Rather, God is allowing the rest of the world to come against me, to hit me like this. By doing that they are just giving up their own blessing to me. Their action of hitting me creates a bridge for blessings to come to me. That's how God harvests the blessings in the Last Days. God will harvest these blessings for one God-centered ideology.

Some people might say, "Reverend Moon, I can now understand God's Principle. But why do you let the Unification Church members suffer? You are the lightning rod, so you should get attacked, take all the hardship and win, but let the rest of the members go easy." But I want you to be a bridge to give our the blessings to the rest of the world. I want you to receive part of the blessings by receiving some of the attack.

This is why I let you suffer. If you go through similar hardships, then you can be recognized together with me, and the blessings I receive will also become yours. That is the only way you can receive them. Then you can distribute these blessings to the world. If people refuse to receive the blessings you distribute, then they will become yours. God will say, "You just go ahead and keep them." So you have no way to lose. So, would you like to receive some persecution?

So far, we have been continuously beaten and we have never even turned around to look at our attackers. But now the time has come for us to turn around and face them. Why? The time has come for a different kind of showdown; now we have to disseminate the blessing. Unless the Unification Church is attacked by the entire world at once, and unless we go over that hill, we cannot be liberated.

I want you to know that this level of accomplishment was not achieved by random actions or on a whim. I have gone through God's precise timetable, from the individual level to the family level, society level, national level, and worldwide level. As you know, if Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have been models or symbols of perfection for every level, but because of their fall, the model that God created was not established here on earth. No one has seen that model.

### ***I paid the debts***

When you read the Old Testament history in the Bible, it is really a history of human failure. There is not much victorious history in the Old Testament. There is so much indemnity to pay for all three of the major ages: the Old Testament era, the New

Testament era, and the Completed Testament era. I had to pay all the debts of the past, and then expand that vertical history onto the horizontal level of victory. Unless this is done, there can be no real day of victorious proclamation.

So far, the entire spirit world has been divided because there was no unity, and no dispensational indemnity had been paid here on earth. There is one realm in the spirit world for Judaism, another realm for Christianity, another realm for Buddhism, and so forth. They all have different realms for themselves, so there is no unity in the spirit world.

If there had been no fall, Christianity would not have existed, nor Confucianism, nor Buddhism. There would only be Adamism, from one Adam. Starting from Adam and Eve as the true parents, everybody would have been joined together as their branches. But the true parents never emerged, because of the fall. Therefore, all the division was inevitable. Until the True Parents emerged to make a new beginning, no unity could be seen in the spirit world.

God has been working for so many thousands of years to create this one base where He can install true parents. Starting from the ancient tribes, and continuing through the national history of Israel, and then expanding Christianity into a worldwide religion, God created a base where this new dispensation could take place.

Throughout history, the path of the dispensation followed one pattern through all the levels of family, society, nation and world. For example, Jacob reflects the pattern for the family, but Jacob's blessing did not come easily. He went to the land of Haran and suffered hardship for 21 years. Finally he received the blessing after returning to Canaan. Look at Israel. The chosen people went to Egypt where they suffered untold tragedy and afterward were led through the exodus by Moses. Thus, Jacob was victorious on the family level, and Moses was victorious on the tribal or national level. Then look at how much Christianity has suffered, going to the Egypt like land of the Roman Empire to suffer for 400 years. Only after that suffering could liberation come to Christianity.

### ***The goal of Jesus***

After the exodus, the Israelites were able to create their own kingdom, the kingdom of Israel. If Jesus Christ had not been crucified, he would have united the entire Arab territory with Israel, creating one united Kingdom of God in his own time. Jesus would have fulfilled God's ideal of king of kings, not just symbolically but also on the physical level.

God's plan was that Jesus unify the nation of Israel and absorb the Arab territory, and that power was then to have absorbed India and China. Then, even though the Roman Empire was very strong on the European continent, it would have easily been absorbed by Jesus' great kingdom to create one unified Kingdom of God. At that time, the literal Kingdom of God on earth was supposed to have been erected. If Jesus had not been crucified, instead of turning to the West and crossing the Atlantic to America, Christianity would have gone the other way to India, China, and the Orient, and then over to the Western world. However, because of the crucifixion, Christianity made a 180 degree turn and moved toward Rome, England, America, and then back to the Orient.

Today, America is the model Christian nation; it is the fruit of the Christian culture of the entire Christian world. Today, America is in the position of the second Israel. The first Israel was the Jews of 2,000 years ago. The second Israel here in America is a cosmopolitan assemblage of all the people of the world, all the races together, united in one nation. However, even though all are symbolically gathered together in America, complete spiritual and physical unity has not been seen here; the love of God is not yet in full swing. The Unification movement will become the spirit of America and unite the heart of America. We have come to bring together the hearts of all people and all races. We want to melt their hearts together in unity and harmony. According to the Principle, in order to indemnify the past, we have to first create the environment. Today, America is the environment for the new dispensation.

The Messiah could not come to Israel again. This is obvious because it is God's Principle that He cannot use the same people or the same territory twice. God always chooses a new champion. The new messianic mission will unfold in Asia because Asians are internal, like the "mind" of the universe. God will choose one homogeneous, united people -- a single race that has a deep religious history and religious capability. That one nation will be chosen from Asia.

There is a parallel that can be seen between the Western world and the Oriental world. For example, in the dispensation of Christianity in Europe, Great Britain was in a position equivalent to Japan in the Orient now, and Italy was in a position equivalent to Korea today. A peninsula is the ideal environment because it serves as a bridge between islands and the continent. New cultural movements blossom on peninsulas. The Hellenic and Roman cultures developed on the Greek and Italian peninsulas. The peninsula is where the island and continental cultures can merge and mingle together to become one unified culture. In the final days, the Western culture and Oriental culture will merge and create a unified culture of the universe on the Korean peninsula.

Historically, the peninsulas have always played critical roles. Vietnam is a peninsula where two cultures clashed and a war was fought. Before World War II, Korea had been annexed to another nation and had lost its sovereignty, but after the war, its liberation came. Now Korea is one nation in Asia that America must not leave. America has given up on so much in Asia, like Vietnam, for example, and now there is a lot of talk about the new administration withdrawing armed forces from Korea. This would not bring fortune to America. For dispensational reasons, America must retain her position in Korea. Great blessing is coming by this link between the United States and Korea. If that link is broken, America will be deeply troubled.

During World War II, the ungodly forces of Japan and Italy were destroyed by the Allied forces. That victory was God's gift to America. America holds stewardship as the servant of God, retaining custody over all of God's property. It is God's will to have America guide all the land of the world that is on the side of God. America must not abandon it, particularly not to communism. That is certainly not the will of God.

***The United Nations was invaded***

The establishment of the United Nations, a symbol of world government, was within the will of God. However, God wanted America to take the initiative in world leadership and to create a United Nations without the ungodly forces of communism interfering. After World War II, America continually retreated from world responsibility. Furthermore, by allowing communism to come into the United Nations, America has now foolishly provided a forum for communist propaganda. The United Nations is now a tool for the communists.

American young people by the hundreds of thousands shed their blood during World War II. Through them, God paid such a high price. We can never calculate the value of that blood, and yet America gave it up to enemy hands. America, as a nation, has failed in the sight of God, She harvested God's gift and then gave it to Satan. Can that be forgiven? Satan, who is receiving all of God's beautiful harvest, is still not going to be satisfied. His people are coming into the heart of the United Nations to choke the United States to death.

After World War II, America began a drastic decline. There has been a retreat in the political area, and there are great problems in the economic area. Furthermore, spiritual and moral decline is occurring. For 2,000 years, Christianity has been evangelizing prosperously throughout the world. But in the last several decades, Christian culture, particularly in this country of America, is truly crumbling. The decline is happening rapidly; 2,000 years of tradition and heritage have been crumbling in the last 20 years. Why is that? America has failed as a model Christian nation.

In the 1960s, the tragic plane crash of the secretary general of the United Nations, Dag Hammarskjold, and the assassination of young President Kennedy were dark signs for the free world. Ever since, America has been declining and retreating. The Nixon Administration was deeply corrupted when the Watergate situation erupted. The administration has changed but this trend continues. In the sight of God, someone must step in to reverse the trend. We must wait and see what will happen.

I am a religious leader. I spoke up during the Watergate affair because I wanted to turn that national crisis around and unite the national conscience of America in a Christian spirit. I knew that the Watergate crisis would bring advantage only to the communists. When America was completely paralyzed by the Watergate situation, communist student were flooding the campuses. For example, at Columbia University, in broad daylight, communist posters and propaganda brochures were being given out.

Communists participated extensively in the American presidential campaign. They were trying to influence the elections, to push for someone who will advance their cause. Here in New York, in front of our own World Mission Center, there was a left-wing demonstration for Carter. Are the left-wingers interested in Carter as a man? Not at all. The Carter Administration has to be very, very cautious and alert because there is an un-American group of people who looked at the situation and pushed for him, thinking he may work to their advantage.

***Human rights***

In the present administration, human rights is a very important issue. This is very good, but how is the administration going to handle violators of human rights? In North Korea, at least three million people were exterminated by the communist regime of Kim Il Sung. In China under Chairman Mao, up to 150 million lives were taken. During the Bolshevik Revolution and the following communist rule in the Soviet Union, over 70 million people were exterminated. The New York Times reported that in Vietnam, about 600,000 people have already been exterminated. So who is really violating human rights? Communists not only violate human rights, they violate human lives!

Congress is talking about the Korean bribery and lobbying situation; But think of it: What Korea is doing is probably nothing compared to what the gigantic nations of the world are doing, trying to influence the American Congress. Even friendly nations get involved in pressuring, like Israel, England, Germany and Japan.

The problem of the KCIA here in America is made out to be something extraordinary. Everybody thinks the whole city of New York is flooded by KCIA agents, but the Korean government has probably dispatched only 10 or 12 people. On the other hand, the Soviet Union has over 1,000 known KGB agents in America to maintain their operatives. And that's only to maintain their central, fanatic operatives. Behind them are thousands of students and professors and different organizations to infiltrate every facet of American life.

If anybody wants to talk about human rights, then he must become a strong anti-communist, because nothing in history has violated human rights more than communism. Among communists, the phrase "human rights" has no meaning because communists deny even the right to live. To them, human life is as worthless as the life of an insect.

Human rights are important; we must preserve human rights. However, the right to live is even more important. We must secure the right to live for all people under communist regimes. This is why I am taking such an adamant stand against communism, and declaring communism as the enemy of God and of mankind. I will not yield even one inch from that position.

The communists know very well that I am their archenemy, and they are trying to destroy us. We can even find churches and government people collaborating with the communists against us. This is a sad situation. Newspapers try to paint a dark picture: "Reverend Moon is an agent of the KCIA." It's incredible, just nonsense. My life is not so small or inconsequential that I would act as a KCIA agent. My eyes and goal are not just for Korea. America is my goal; the world is my goal and target.

No president ever spoke as I did at Yankee Stadium, saying that this nation is burning and needs a fire fighter from the outside, that this nation is mortally ill and needs a doctor from the outside. I came as a fire fighter to this nation, as a doctor to this nation. At Washington Monument I said, "Leave the young people to me. I will rebuild the American youth so that they can go out to truly liberate the world." No religious leaders or political leaders in the history of America ever spoke like this. I did because I have reason to say such things.

## ***America doesn't understand***

Actually, I am deeply mistreated by America. Americans do not know me. But some day they will realize that I am truly the most notable and precious VIP that ever came to this nation. You must know that you are the people who must fight for this. No one can pull your loyalty and conviction in God and His kingdom out of your brain. No one can pull that ideology out of you. No atomic bomb, no military might, no weapon can do that. You are becoming invincible individuals now.

I am not here to please the government or the politicians; I am a prophet, a messenger of God. Whenever I have something to say, I will say it, whatever it is. I know very well that certain government people will be irritated by my remarks because they do not like to hear these things. However, I must speak the truth; no one can stop me from speaking the truth. We cannot trust anyone. We can only trust ourselves, because we have a mission ordained by God. We are not here for ourselves; we must influence the power of the nation because that is the will of God. A long time ago, I committed my life to this mission. It does not matter that there is danger around me; I have already given up my life.

Korea and America must not break apart. Once that link is broken, tragedy will come. From the current trend of history God knows very well what will happen now that liberalism is rampant and communist infiltration is so widespread. The situation is very dismal. That is why God sent me to America as His agent. God asked me to hold America, to keep America linked with Asia, to restore His blessing to all the Christian world, and then to liberate the communists. That is God's mandate.

When I declared that I would go to Moscow, I meant it. When they hear me say, "Moscow is our goal" the communists will laugh, "How can you?" All right, they can laugh. Twenty years ago in Korea, in a small room only big enough for two or three people, with a roof that leaked, I talked about world unification. I predicted my world ministry and the sending of missionaries to 120 countries, and I predicted this crusade in America. Twenty years ago in that small room, everybody thought those were crazy ideas. .

Today, compared to the size of the communists' power, the New Yorker Hotel is like that small cubbyhole of 20 years ago. We have only a handful of people, yet we are talking about the liberation of the communists; we are talking about Moscow. I am sure most people laugh. Let them laugh now. I know one thing: In the communist world, the children of the communist leaders are on the side of God. The next generation in the Soviet Union will be on my side.

The spirit world will take care of them. The spirit world will manifest itself and show the truth to those children. Those children will fight against their own fathers; that's God's strategy. God has started that operation already. Even here in America, spiritual revelation is coming down to the leadership of this nation, even to members of Congress. Behind the scenes, truly astonishing spiritual phenomena are unfolding. The heavenly spiritual assault has begun.

What have I been doing in these last several decades? What I have done as a man in history, representing all of mankind, is to really declare victory in the name of God. Before heaven and earth I truly stand now as a victor in the name of God. No one like that has ever existed in history.

### ***I had to suffer the most***

I could have avoided suffering, but I knew the Principle. According to that Principle, I have to suffer more than any other individual here on earth. Throughout thousands of years of history, men have committed innumerable dirty, impossible sins. In order to liberate the people of the world from the sins of history, I have had to go down to the very bottom of the sinful world. Therefore I have gone through every decent occupation that a man can possibly have. There is only one thing that I have not experience military life -- because I did not want to shoot anyone.

Except for killing a person, I have experienced every situation in human life. One time I was a beggar and slept on the street. I know what a beggar feels like on a cold winter night, sleeping in the snow. I was a laborer, a farmer, a dock worker, a sportsman, a mountain man. I have been a miner digging coal There is nothing under the sun that a God-centered man can do that I have not tasted. Why? Because I wanted to drop a silk line of life everywhere so that those sinners in every corner, every walk of human life, could have a rope to climb to reach God.

I went through hardship not only because of the Korean people. Since coming to America, I have faced many hardships because of Westerners. White people, yellow people and black people, all together, have been trying to tear me apart. Does the American movement bring money to me, or do I bring money to the movement? I am a parent, and even more than parents in the outside world, I am concerned about money for you. A small nation like Korea has always been trying to win a little more military and economic aid from the United States, trying to squeeze out more money. But I am the opposite. From Korea, I have come to this country, pouring everything I have, my zeal and heart and soul, into America. So no matter what the American people say, my conscience is clear.

I want to set the condition that as a parent, I truly gave out everything for all the children of the world. I want to buy houses for them, for Americans, South Americans, Africans and Europeans. I want to be a parent to all the races of every land in the world. I will earn that money; I am not depending on your economy. I want you to take care of yourself and do your mission. In the meantime, I will bring down the blessing from heaven, and part of it will go to you. For example, our World Mission Center was not bought with your fund raising money. Not at all.

The Tiffany Building and 43rd Street Headquarters, none of those great real estate investments came from American sources. The American church is always in the red and I have to subsidize you. You didn't know that, did you? The newspapers do not say that I am bringing in my resources to help America. They know it, but they will not write about it.

## ***I experienced everything***

I want to become a unique man. I will experience and fulfill everything that man is supposed to do. Truly, I have done everything that a man can do, without limitation. Is my appearance acceptable to you? Normally men have small hips, but I am rather heavy through the middle. It is because I have guts and strength.

In high school days, I was a champion in Korean-style wrestling. Now I am like a rock and no one can defeat me. I can certainly speak, and I can be very artistic in calligraphy; I can complete a whole volume of literature overnight. When I was teaching Sunday school, I was very popular among the children, and everybody else was crazy about my God-centered storytelling. They were fascinated and I could go on and on for hours. I can also express much through my face.

In the world of literature, I can quickly grasp the concepts of the great masterpieces and great writers. In the communist prison in North Korea, everybody was my friend, like my followers in a way. Everybody liked me because I understood the people and filled their needs. When we were together, they forgot their fatigue, their suffering, and their anguish as though springtime had come. When I go to a farming region, I am a great friend of farmers. Because I speak their language, I instantly become the master of the farmhouse, and everybody says, "Won't you come in and stay for supper? Try our home grown potatoes!"

History always has a central flow, like the mainstream of a river, but in our history, the side streams were all blocked. I am now clearing that blockage away so that the water of life can flow. I am the one bringing all the tributaries of human history back to life.

I have the conviction and determination that I can do anything that man is made to do. As a religious leader, I have set my criteria as high as possible. The great spiritual leaders of history achieved a certain level but there were also many great failures. I wanted to go as high as possible and restore all the failures of men. I have done that.

In the spirit world there has been no free circulation. Everyone has been blocked into compartments. I wanted to make every river flow from the spirit world to the physical world and from the physical world to the spirit world. Now all these barriers are broken down so everything can flow, like the circulation in the human body.

Throughout history, there were tributaries for the family level, the tribal level, the national level and the worldwide level. I started out from the very top and took away the blockages between them so that the water could flow. So far, each religion has been only a single stream. Jews say, "Only Judaism is important." Christians say, "Only Christians can come to the Father; everybody else is destined to hell." Religious people have been so arrogant because they did not know how to link together with others. But somebody has to open the connecting streams so that the water of life can flow from one stream to another.

In order to unify all the religions of the world, a person must know the essence of every religion; Judaism, Christianity, Buddhism, and so forth. When unity is made in spirit world

and all the rivers flow together, that unity can be brought down to be copied here on the earth. That is what my ministry is all about. Here on earth, I am going to copy the work I have already done in the spirit world. Then the spirit world and physical world can become united.

### ***Uniting the spiritual and physical worlds***

So far, the spirit world and the physical world have been separate, and because of this separation, our minds and bodies have also been disunited. Unless we bring the spirit world down to the physical world, there is no way for our minds and bodies to unite. During the period of establishing unity, there are tribulations and hardships on each level: individual, family, tribal, national and worldwide. This is what I have already had to withstand, even as I was constantly pushing myself forward. Just listening to this, perhaps you think it is easy. Talk is easy, but think of what an impossible task it is for one lifetime.

In order to become a victor as an individual, you must be able to withstand having the weight of the entire spirit world on your shoulders. Then the burden of the entire physical world will also come upon your shoulders. To become an individual victor, you must first be able to sustain yourself. Then you must expand your own strength and dominion onto the family level.

As an individual, Jesus Christ withstood the weight of the spirit world and overcame all temptations, yet he could not quite move to the family level. He was prevented from organizing his own family to, withstand the weight of the world. When I organized the family of God, starting with the 36 Couple Blessing in 1961, there was tremendous commotion and persecution outside. We could not have a serene, peaceful ceremony. It was an emergency, so I divided the brides and bridegrooms into three different teams and we had one ceremony early in the morning, one ceremony quickly in the middle of the day, and another ceremony at night.

Their parents came to say, "Who is going to marry my daughter? Who is going to marry my son? No, you can't do that! Give me my son; give me my daughter!" The protest was extraordinary. But in the sight of God, the True Parents are the only parents who have the power to recreate fallen children as God's children and to give heavenly marriage to create heavenly homes. Physical parents do not have that authorization from God.

Even on the very day of the 36 Couple Blessing, not only the parents but the government, too, wanted to investigate our church. In order not to discourage the members, I had to go secretly to the police station to testify on the very day that I was to bless the couples.

Actually, the entire world was so satanic that when I came to earth, there was not even a tiny spot for me to stand on. I had to push the surroundings away to make room, little by little. Each battle is a risk and an adventure. The family of God is being organized, beginning with the installation of the True Parents in 1960. The first Blessing of the family of God was given to the 36 couples, who represent the entire dispensational history and who will become the ancestors of mankind. The 72 Couple Blessing represented 36 Cains and 36 Abels on the family level.

Since Jesus Christ had 12 disciples who were supposed to begin 12 tribes, the 120 Couple Blessing represented 12 tribes of 10 couples each, making the worldwide foundation for God's worldwide family. On the basis of that victory, I had the right to set up holy grounds all over the world, thus claiming the land for God.

Next, the Blessing of 430 couples represented the entire Korean people as the chosen nation whether they believed in God or not, thereby setting the condition for everyone to be restored. Korea has a history of over 4,300 years. Therefore, these 430 couples came out of Korean history, but their number is also equivalent to the 430 years that the Israelites suffered in Egypt. The Israelites' exodus began after 430 years of exile in Egypt; in the same way that they left Egypt, we began the journey to Canaan, the symbol of the Kingdom of God.

Since the journey into Canaan, the Kingdom of God, had begun, God had to link the entire dispensation to the worldwide level. So I gathered 43 couples from among the worldwide leaders. The 43 Couple Blessing was the worldwide symbolic counterpart of the Blessing the 430 Korean couples. Through the 430 couples, all the Korean people have conditional salvation in the sense that they can come to realize the truth. In the same way, through these 43 couples who were chosen from all around the world, all the nationalities and races of the world have a chance to be saved. The next Blessing is commonly known as the triple seven or 777. Couple Blessing. This represents spinning a silk thread to all mankind on a worldwide basis, making Blessings possible all over the world. The first of these truly massive worldwide weddings came with the 1,800 Couple Blessing in 1975.

### ***My worldwide ministry***

After these Blessings, I started my worldwide ministry, my public life. I came to America in 1972, and for three and a half years I swept through the Western world, declaring the message of God. That course was culminated at Madison Square Garden and the mammoth eight city tour that concluded successfully in Los Angeles.

During this period of the Day of Hope tours, I received several hundred proclamations, honorary citizenship and letters of appreciation from mayors of cities, governors, and prominent people of the world. I don't think any individual in America has ever received that many proclamations in praise of his work.

Because America initially welcomed me, the persecution I received in Korea could be restored. Korea persecuted me, but when I went out to the world, the world accepted me, at least initially. Therefore, I could return to Korea as a victor. At that time I brought a gift to Korea -- not a material gift or a gift of money -- but the most precious gift possible from the Western world: Western young people, members of the International One World Crusade (IOWC).

I laid the victorious foundation in America, in the Western world. Then to bring about the real fruit of victory, I returned to Korea with young people of the Western world as representatives of the Christian world. Spiritually, the victorious foundation had been laid, and upon that foundation I returned to my own homeland. Why? Jesus Christ was

crucified 2,000 years ago due to the oppression and persecution of the nation and government of that time. Together the national leaders of Israel and the Roman government had Jesus crucified. In order to liberate that sorrow, that indemnity, I had to go back to Korea, this time for glory.

Two thousand years ago, Judaism was in the same position as Christianity is today, and Jesus' movement was in the same position as the Unification Church is today. I created the same set of circumstances in our time. In this environment, America was in the position of the Roman Empire. America gave initial success to me and welcomed me as one preaching the truth of Christianity. When I went back to Korea with hundreds of young people, the Korean government, in the position of Israel, welcomed me instead of opposing me. Indemnity and restitution were paid. Two thousand years ago Judaism united with the government to come against Jesus. But this time the government sided with the Unification Church, almost pushing the existing churches aside.

In Korea there was a physical showdown between the Unification Church and the Christian churches. Starting from Pusan, I began a crusade of all the major cities. It was the first time I ever spoke publicly to the Korean people. In Pusan, Taegu, Taejun, Seoul and in every city there was a showdown. The IOWC recalls it very well. But it was a landslide victory. The people came like clouds. There was no way to even get all the people inside, so many thousands of people always stood outside listening to me.

Upon the foundation of the spiritual victory in the Western world, I could win a physical victory in Korea, which was culminated in the June 7 Rally for Korean Freedom. There were 1.2 million people gathered together, as well as representatives from 60 nations all over the world. The government could not even dream of creating this kind of rally. This was a victorious stand on the national level.

Instead of crucifying me, Koreans came and praised my success. They lifted me up in the greatest rally ever held. When the 1.2 million people cheered me, it was a national cheer. The 60 national representatives that came from all over the world were links to bring the physical, national victory of Korea back to their own nations. Because of that, I could come out of Korea again for a new crusade.

### ***The Washington Monument victory***

After the spiritual victory in the Western world, I won the physical victory in Korea. Upon the foundation of these spiritual and physical victories, I came back to America again to give the final dispensational push in the year of 1976. It was a dramatic, historical year, the most extraordinary year in God's history. From the victory at Yankee Stadium, we moved right on to Washington Monument the same year. The Washington Monument rally on Sept. 18 lifted up God's dispensation to its highest victory and fulfillment.

The Washington Monument and Yankee Stadium campaigns were not conducted in a welcoming atmosphere. It was hostile. The press was hostile. By then they knew who I was, and because they could feel the threat, they were trying to block our work in any way

possible. Since the Washington Monument victory was won under those adverse conditions, it was even more valuable and victorious.

The 40 day campaign in Washington was equivalent to Jesus Christ's 40 days of ministry after the resurrection. Only after the victory of those 40 days could Jesus ascend into heaven. In the same way, I consummated my physical mission here on earth through the 40 day campaign in Washington and through winning the victory at the Washington Monument rally.

The victory of the Washington Monument rally was the most significant event in human history and God's history. By that victory, the doors of heaven were open and all the barriers were broken down. An intermingling of the waters of life started between the spirit world and the physical world. All the separate compartments were opened up so that the water could circulate. That was the effect brought about by the Washington Monument victory.

The spirit world was liberated; the barriers were broken and they no longer exist. Spirits can now freely come down to the physical world and participate in our physical crusades here on earth. Even if I pass away, the mission will not stop; my mission is consummated. The divine purpose of God has been fulfilled. With this victory, I declared Oct. 4, 1976, as the Day of the Victory of Heaven. This was a very special day. On the Day of Victory of Heaven, God truly won His historical battle. This is the joy of the earth. There is no question about it.

It was therefore also a day of joy for Mother and myself, a day of joy for the blessed families, a day of joy for the members of the entire Unification Church around the world. Feb. 20, 1977, on the solar calendar, is equivalent to Jan. 3, 1977, on the lunar calendar. Therefore, on Feb. 20, the year of 1976 was completely over by both the lunar and the solar calendars. The year of victory had completely passed away, and the year of joy and happiness had begun. But I knew that there were certain 777 couples and 1,800 couples whose Blessing had been broken; some mates had failed me and run away, while the other mate was still standing in obedience to me. These were personal tragedies suffered by the 777 and 1,800 couples. Since they, too, should be happy, but couldn't be under the circumstances, I made a special dispensation to gather them from around the world and re-bless them. This was the momentous Blessing that took place on Feb. 21, right here in the World Mission Center.

Therefore, I set all the conditions for everyone to be happy. Heaven is happy. Earth is happy. God is happy. True Parents are happy. All the blessed members are now happy, and all the members of the Unification Church are happy. All the happiness and joy can be enjoyed by everyone. Therefore, today, three days after that Blessing, the entire cosmos will celebrate this day, Jan. 6, 1977, by the lunar calendar, not only as the day of True Parents' Birthday, but also as the day when the historical new era began.

***Surpassing age 33***

Do you know that Mother's and my birthday really are on the same day? We did not arrange it that way; it is the same day by birth. Furthermore, today Mother is going over her 33rd year; she is now 34. Jesus Christ could not go over the age of 33. He wanted to celebrate his 34th birthday with God, but he could not because of the crucifixion. Now that Mother's age is going over 34 this year, she is going beyond the level of Jesus' life of 33 years. Therefore, today is an even more momentous day. From this time on, Satan has no right to bring accusation to the throne of God; heaven will not allow it.

Why could Satan ever have brought accusation to the throne of God? The universe that God originally intended was to have God at the center, with Adam, Eve and the archangel all united into one. In that world, no one would have accused anybody. There would have been no opponents or adversaries in that world. If anybody had opposed such perfect harmony and unity, he would have been crushed. That is the Principle.

However, instead of uniting with God, Adam, Eve and the archangel kicked God away, separated themselves, and created the fallen world. Mankind fell below the level of the archangel, who was there like a barrier between man and God. Therefore, Satan has always been in the closest position to God, and could speak to God. He could always accuse people before God.

Because Lucifer was the chief archangel, the good archangels Michael and Gabriel could not intervene. Even though he was fallen, Lucifer was still boss. The junior members could not speak out. Lucifer has been arrogant, directly confronting God all throughout fallen history.

During this fallen history, God could deal only with the fallen world, because there was no alternative; there was no sinless or perfected world for Him to deal with. Therefore, God had no choice but to deal with the fallen archangel and fallen mankind. The True Parents came to establish individual perfection and to expand the true Adam's territory. True Adam had to first create his own small place on the earth and then expand his territory to a family level, to a tribal level, to a national level and a worldwide level. By confronting Satan, he won territory, and suddenly God had an alternative; there were two worlds He could choose from.

When did this battle occur? The world-level confrontation between the satanic world and the perfected Adam's world occurred at the Washington Monument rally. That is why it was so significant. Now God has a choice; He now has His son, Adam, here on earth. Furthermore, there is also a perfected Eve here on earth, and God's family, tribe, nation and world. Symbolically they are all set up. Since Lucifer is fallen, the true archangel position is now being filled by Jesus Christ. Taking the role of archangel in the spirit world, Jesus has united with Adam and Eve here on earth and with God. Through that action, all four parties have united for the first time in history.

Jesus is reigning in the spirit world as the spiritual head, and the True Parents are leading the physical world. Therefore, the spirit world and physical world are finally united with

God. This is the one perfected realm that God has been seeking to build for 6,000 years. It has finally been done.

### ***Satan cannot approach God***

For 6,000 years, Satan has enjoyed a position of closeness to God. But the unity between the True Adam and Jesus Christ created a new world, pushing Satan aside. Therefore, the fallen archangel, Satan, cannot come to speak to God anymore. When he tries to speak to God, God will say to him, "Go through the True Parents first; don't come to Me directly. Read the Principle. According to the Principle of Creation, you are in the servant role. Adam is my son, and you are supposed to obey My son. Don't come to Me directly. I'm not going to see my servant any more."

If the archangel comes to Adam and Eve, then the True Parents say, "If you want to send a message to God, first you must obey us. You must come back to your original position before the fall." Then the archangel would no longer be Satan.

Since Satan knows that True Adam and Eve will never budge, he tries to go through Jesus in spirit world, but Jesus says, "What are you talking about? I am the second Adam. You were victorious over the first Adam, but I am the second Adam, perfected Adam. I have lordship over you. You must obey me before you ask me to send a message to God."

According to the Principle, this victorious achievement completely blocks Satan's route to God. Satan no longer has a route or a way to accuse man before God. If you believe this 100 percent, you can talk to Satan in the same way; you can subjugate Satan. Mother and I are giving you the privilege, the authority to speak to Satan that way. You have the power to subjugate Satan, you and the posterity of the Unification Church members.

The topic of today's message is: "Today in the Light of the Dispensational History." I am declaring to you that as of today, all the dispensational history has ended, has been completed. All the conditions of indemnity for history have been met and paid in full. From this moment on, the more opposition we face, the more victories we will win. We will not be harmed or take a beating. Any persecution, suffering, or pressure that the outside world gives us will be returned to us as an equal amount of blessing. It is not indemnity.

We will win God's territory back to him, inch by inch, until the year 2,000. We will win physically, substantially, and each day's work will accumulate so that every effort will contribute, inch by inch, to the Kingdom of God from this time on up to the year 2000.

Even though the satanic world is attacking, it is no longer advancing. We are the group, we are the power, we are the force that is advancing. Satan is shooting at us, but he is retreating. At least by the year 2000 we must complete the realization of the Kingdom of God here on earth.

Today let us truly proclaim the day of liberation. I am going to lead three cheers, the most significant, victorious cheers of all history. Let's make them that way. These three cheers

include the victory of God, of True Parents, of the entire angelic world, of the human world, and even of the satanic world. They bring liberation to all five levels. These are three cheers of victory to liberate the five most significant levels, from God down to the satanic world.

This is the new beginning of the new history of God. Therefore, this is the first year of the Kingdom of God. Year One of the Kingdom of God.

## **Chapter 24**

### **True Parents' Day from the Historical Point of View**

**April 18,1977 -- New York, New York**

Today we commemorate the 18th anniversary of Parents' Day. No other group on earth celebrates True Parents' Day. We have four major celebrations during the year: God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day and the Day of All Things, and by celebrating these holidays we are truly celebrating the rebirth of heaven and earth.

If there had been no fall of man, we would never have seen such holidays as God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day and the Day of All Things. Adam and Eve would probably have been the only two people who would have celebrated these days, while their descendants would have celebrated only the victory of their established foundation. All of mankind was supposed to have been born on the foundation of these days.

Through the fall of man, however, there was no fulfillment here on earth, and all joy was lost. Consequently there was no day of joy for God, no day of the True Parents, no day of the true children, and no day of all things. All mankind is born in sorrow and suffers in sorrow, and struggles to recapture the original world; because of the fall, however, that perfection has always eluded man.

There are many celebrations in our world, but all of them are for the joy of the satanic world, not for God. There has never been one day in which God could declare His joy. For example, each one of you celebrates your birthday and those who are married have your wedding anniversaries, but are they above the realm of fallen mankind? No, they are still outside the dwelling place of God.

When is the day going to come that mankind will establish a new kind of holiday? It will be the day that all people and God can be joyful together. That day will not be your own birthday or wedding anniversary or day of national independence. Throughout history all mankind has been looking forward to the day of fulfillment when God could declare His joy and personally commemorate God's Day and Parents' Day. Once God's joy is declared, and God's Day and Parents' Day are established, then automatically the true children will come into being, and all the things of creation will declare their joy too.

Throughout history, however, no one has seen God's Day or Parents' Day, and all the things of creation are in agony in this fallen world. Out of 365 days in a year the most important day would be the day to honor God, the day on which God could declare His joy -- God's Day. The day we can declare God's Day to the earth will be the king of all days,

and that year will be the king of all years. I do not know whether you have ever heard of such expressions as "king of all days;" or "king of all years." Do they make sense?

Today you are all here to celebrate Parents' Day, but actually you are not entitled to celebrate on this day. Since meeting the True Parents you may rejoice over this Parents' Day, but this joyful day is also sad because only this small group of people has recognized it and come together to celebrate. We also feel sorrow that we are still surrounded by the fallen world.

There were several consequences of the fall of man. One, the dignity and authority of God were damaged; in addition, man was separated from his intended state and fell into the dungeons of hell; at the same time a portion of the angelic world also fell; finally, all the things of creation were brought down. Thus it happened that everything suffered when man fell, including the dignity of God, and since then the entire creation has been trapped in a place of sorrow and despair. The world has become sick, but in the same way that patients cannot cure themselves, the world is helpless to restore itself. Who will come to restore the world? There is only one superior person who has the ability, power and will to bring man back to his original place -- God.

The fallen process has been like a healthy person becoming ill, and in reverse process; man must be restored to his original place by reversing the process of the fall. The work of salvation is equivalent to the work of restoration, and involves bringing a person from an abnormal state back to his original state, just like bringing a sick person back to health. Salvation and restoration are the same, but the point of observation is different: From God's point of view of man who is to be saved, the process is restoration.

For man to be restored, indemnity must be paid. That is the vital principle of this process. To liquidate sin man must pay the debt of sin. In the same manner, a patient must often endure suffering when being treated by a doctor. Sometimes the doctor must prescribe a very bitter medicine, and even though the patient is reluctant, he must take it to be restored. Fallen man is like the patient and must assimilate indemnity, pain and suffering in order to be restored into his original wholeness.

### ***What can cure fallen love?***

What kind of disease have you caught? The diagnosis is that fallen man has the disease of fallen love. It is the disease of love centered on Satan and controlled by Satan, and through it men and women have become prisoners of Satan by inheriting his lineage. All people are born as direct heirs of Satan.

How did this disease of love start? The fall was initiated when one person claimed self-centered love. That person denied the value of all other relationships in his desire to make himself the center of the universe. He sought to bring benefit only to himself, and when his desire entered the realm of love, the disease was begun.

We must find a cure for this love disease. What medicine should be prescribed? Because self-centered love brought the fall, we must find a God-centered or unselfish love in order

to be cured or restored. If Adam and Eve and the archangel had forgotten themselves in the Garden of Eden, thinking only of God and their desire to place themselves in a God-centered love, then there could have been no fall or any of its consequences here on earth.

What is heaven? Heaven is created by those people who love here on earth with unselfishness and an absolute, God-centered love. This is the most basic principle, and all other principles you learn are expansion of this basic truth. What I have spoken to you thus far is the very heart of the truth of God.

Do you love yourself most of all? Are you the center of your love? Is God the center? Twenty-four hours a day and 365 days a year have you been loving yourself in a God-centered way? If you cannot say "yes" then you are not destined for the Kingdom of God in heaven, and need liberation from your bondage. This is the most severe battle which you are waging every day, and each of you must become victors in this battle for your liberation. Without becoming victorious you will not deserve the Kingdom of God.

Suppose someone suddenly attacked you without any reason. The usual human reaction would be to yell, "Why did you hit me?" and try to hit back. But you must be patient, not because you are weak, but because in the name of God you are becoming different. Jesus Christ waged this different kind of battle when he blessed his enemies. Jesus was thinking about his mission for God 24 hours a day, looking at everything from God's point of view. Before seeking revenge against the world, he remembered how God had patiently persevered. Knowing that God's will was ultimately the restoration of mankind, Jesus did not wage his battle as Satan does.

Because Jesus prayed for his own enemies, especially at the moment he was being destroyed, he transcended all satanic realms and totally liberated himself from accusation by Satan. From then on he was free to go to the throne of God and exercise the grace and power of salvation. Satan is always looking for some loophole or hook of fallen nature, and since most people have a thousand hooks Satan does not have to make much effort to snag them. But Jesus' life was absolutely pure, and no matter how much Satan tried to find some weakness in him, Jesus was not vulnerable.

Jesus Christ was completely free from satanic accusation and by rising above the satanic realm he could become one with God in heaven. Since Jesus could enter that realm, God could use him as His instrument without any reservation. After Satan killed Jesus on the cross, God was free to resurrect His son. God did not have to pay attention to Satan, but could exercise His power to the ultimate degree. Because of Jesus, therefore, a new world could come into being which was completely free of the satanic world.

By knowing this principle we must clearly realize that when the Messiah comes for the salvation of mankind he will not come in glory. He will come in misery and assimilate all the pain and suffering of the world. He will be attacked by the entire satanic world, yet persevere without seeking revenge, being patient as God has been, and finally winning out in the end. Any religion or any work of religion which teaches the need for such

patience while going the road of indemnity will be the religion which ultimately meets the Messiah.

### ***Our motive for unification***

Who are we, the Unification movement? The word "unification" is a big word, indicating that we want to embrace all religions so that we can unite all of them into one. Do we desire that for our own satanic purpose? No, we want to bring them up to the throne of God. That is the meaning of the word "unification." The Unification movement must walk the messianic road, the road of suffering and beatings. It is the road that commences at the very bottom of mankind's misery and rises all the way up to the very throne of God. That is the road that we as Unificationists are undertaking.

We are assuming the responsibility to become that world religion. However, we must make our motives very clear. Are we here for the sake of the Unification Church, or for the sake of heaven and earth? The Unification movement exists solely to serve God and mankind. That is the way God thinks, and that is the way we must think. For that reason we receive the pain of suffering and difficulty, but we cannot be liberated from the satanic realm unless we think, "This is for God and humanity." The satanic world is totally self-centered and in order to liberate ourselves from it we must live an absolutely different way of life. As we live this life absolutely, we will liberate ourselves from satanic influence. Is this clear?

When you go out witnessing and fund raising you might sometimes think, "I am not good for this. I am so tired I just cannot go on." That excuse is acceptable if you are thinking only of yourself, but when you put God in the picture, and claim that you are universe-centered and mankind-centered, then you cannot complain or say you are tired. You may think that many members of the Unification Church are working very hard, but from God's standpoint this is not true. You have not yet met the standard that God has established. You may persevere for a time, but then you come to the point where you give up. "No more" you say. "I want to rest now and do things my own way." Then your attitude becomes a big hook. Satan is always watching and will say, "Look, you said you were working for God and humanity 100 percent, but your actions have given you away."

### ***Harder times are coming***

Of course sometimes you get tired and weak, and sometimes you get sick, but at those times you must think, "God, You have suffered more than I have. True Parents, you have suffered more than I have."

Heavenly Father, there are many brothers and sisters in this world who are suffering more than I am. I am so grateful that I can do this, and as long as my life remains, I will continue."

When you speak your gratitude and live by it, Satan has no way to hook you. Then you are totally free to go beyond the satanic realm and to be like Jesus, completely one with God. I do not say this to bribe you to work. This is the basic principle of God. I want you to

know that the logical conclusion of this principle is that even tougher days will come to the Unification movement.

You may think that every day our way of life gets tougher, with more persecution and pressure, but I want you to realize that this is the sign that we are near our total liberation from satanic influences. That final segment of our journey of freeing ourselves from the satanic realm is the year of 1976 through June 1977.

A congressional source informed me a few days ago that ever since our involvement in the Watergate issue, the U.S. government has received many letters of both protest against and approval of the Unification Church, and disputes over our church have developed within high levels of government. That source said that there has not been such a heated battle over one particular issue since Watergate. We are creating a world event, aren't we? We will see the entire world come against us, and even now we can feel the pressure of the world upon our shoulders.

Our enemies will not only create national and worldwide protest against me, but will use dirty tactics to undermine us. For example, communists will infiltrate our ranks and behave like dedicated members. Once they are trusted they will begin to make all kinds of trouble, and ultimately their actions will reflect back on me. That is their goal, and I am clearly aware of this tactic. How pitiful my situation is. Already I am receiving all kinds of accusation and persecution from outside, but even worse, there are people who are calculating how to shame me from within the Unification Church. There is no place where I can escape the heated battle.

How do you see me? Am I a tough man of conviction and iron will, with the drive to go to the end, or am I the type of person who is so timid and afraid that I cannot even speak? I am a man of extremes, and no one has a more determined will than I do. On the one hand I am hot tempered and blazing like a fire, but I am also like a person with no bones who can take beating after beating and remain patient, never desiring revenge and never cursing anybody. I think that being hot tempered and iron willed, as well as patient and enduring, is how God wants me to be, and I am trying to fulfill that.

At the moment of his death, Jesus forgave those who killed him. My determination is that in my own life I will bless my enemies by persevering and absorbing all the beatings and pain the world may give. I want to establish that condition while I am yet on earth. Jesus Christ liberated himself from the satanic world by his crucifixion, but I intend to go past the realm of crucifixion while I am here on earth.

Why do I have this determination? God wants to see that victorious pattern sealed here on earth, not just in the spiritual realm. We need a victorious foundation here on earth -- the complete liberation from satanic influence. This is my mission. I came to liberate mankind from all satanic influence, and to be victorious I have to go beyond the satanic realm here on earth.

Do you realize that the pinnacle of this providence was reached at the Washington Monument rally? Then on Feb. 23, 1977, True Parents' Birth-day, I offered an

extraordinary prayer, forgiving heaven and earth and declaring a new day and a new history. Can you grasp the significance of the new day and new history? This is the work we are undertaking right now.

Today is the 18th anniversary of Parents' Day. Your 18th year marks the beginning of your maturity, and I understand that in America some states allow 18-year-olds to vote, recognizing them as adults. The truth of the matter is that women mature before men do. Women become adults at the age of 18, but men generally take three more years, maturing at the age of 21. The three years remaining until the 21st anniversary of Parents' Day will be a buffer zone in which we can fully consummate our work. This is the period where we will restore the dignity and authority of the Unification Church. The Unification Church will then be able to stand before the world as mature.

### ***God will ask us to claim His love***

It is not God's mandate that I forever remain silent and humble while receiving persecution. When all the conditions are set, God will ask me to declare my dignity and authority as an individual, and the center of a heavenly family, society, nation, and world. The time will come when we will claim God's true love and authority.

The 6,000 biblical years of God's history actually equal many thousands of physical years. God has been waiting that long for the day when one man would come to the earth who would truly grasp His concept, possess His own will and conviction to fight, and declare victory over the entire satanic world. That is happening now. Only with that viewpoint can you see how truly momentous this day is. Even if I were to die now I would not be a failure. I will go to the spirit world with dignity and power and authority and stand before Heavenly Father to receive His welcome. In the meantime my work on earth will continue. Do you believe this? We are already outside the satanic realm; I have already gone beyond it.

The work of restoration has been proceeding by the application of God's Principle, and that formula of restoration will endure. It was there in the Beginning, it exists now, and it shall remain until we totally liquidate all satanic influence. Then we will no longer need to apply this formula.

When I declare that I have won over and transcended the satanic world, I do not mean that I have gone alone: the entire spirit world has also moved with me. As you know, the spirit world is equivalent to the angelic world. Angels by nature were supposed to follow Adam's path as his servants in the original creation. Yet not only were the angels to follow Adam in his growth; even God would follow Adam. It is the Principle.

I am leaving the satanic world behind, and as I move further and further away from it God is establishing a new sovereignty here on earth. When that sovereignty is finally declared by God, anyone or any power which opposes it will be shattered. The Christian nation of America is a great giant among the sovereign nations of the world, but if America stands against the dignity of heaven, America will be shattered. That is the judgment of heaven.

Christianity prospered for 2,000 years, but in the two decades since 1960 it began a steep decline. I want to clearly declare that the reason for that decline is the opposition of Christians to the new sovereignty, the new power and truth of God. If the Christian cultural sphere continues such a trend then it will be caught in an unavoidable decline. On the other hand, if Christianity will accept me and repent, and if America will accept me and repent, then there is a ray of hope. There is no other way for either America or Christianity to find hope. Many people may think this declaration is boastful and blasphemous, but I have declared this with the authority of the entire spirit world, which already supports it. I merely bear testimony to the truth.

### ***Satan must acknowledge you***

Once we can create our own society outside of satanic influence, should we stop worrying about the rest of the world, and say, "Let them just go to hell"? If we leave the world alone it will certainly decline and die. Do you think that is God's will? I know that is not God's will. Though we are now living in the same world, our kingdom is different, and just as God sent His son Jesus from His throne to this fallen world, God is now sending you to save it.

I am now ordering you to go into the satanic -- world to save it, even risking your life. I want you to set the condition that you walked the same path the True Parents walked. I walked this suffering road for 33 years, and by your setting the necessary conditions in the next 3 1/2 years, I would like to give you all the blessing of having walked the same path I walked. I am sure that by now you desire to forget about your missions of selling and witnessing and just desire to unite with me, now that my way is easier. That is not what I want. If anyone follows me to go the easy way, I will turn you around and send you back into the satanic world. You have not yet set the condition of indemnity that you might be completely free, and only after working to pay your indemnity can you come with me.

Who is going to testify that you have paid your indemnity? Satan must be your witness, and you must go out to Satan's world and get his signature to bring to God. Many people do not understand that they must go this course to overcome the satanic world, and they think that God is just weak and vulnerable; they even say that there is no God. But God is waiting for man to go out to the fallen world to suffer and win over Satan. Satan must say, "God, I have no accusation to make about this person." God has been waiting for His children to win that kind of recognition so that He might freely exercise His power. Do you want to take the easy way and merely follow me, or do you want to go into the satanic world and fight? Would you want to challenge any difficulty you might encounter, even at the cost of your life?

You must love those in the satanic world as much as you love God and as much as you love me. It is only upon that condition that you will be given approval by God and myself. That is God's way. God and I will not complain at all if you love the satanic world most.

You need two elements before you can come to God's throne. First you need your spiritual children, for by having spiritual children you can liberate the spiritual world. Secondly, you

need physical children, for through them you can liberate the physical world. God and I want you to go to the satanic world and fight to win these two conditions.

In the usual pattern of your life in the Unification Church, your first three years are devoted to winning your spiritual children. In the three years after receiving the Blessing you can receive the blessing of having physical children. Altogether seven years are involved. Each of you must go this seven-year course in order to win all of heaven and earth. Creation took six days, with God resting on the seventh day. In the same way we must set the condition of working for seven years in the course of recreation. If you cannot do this you are only following me externally, even if you are a leader in our church or one of the 36 Blessed Couples. As long as a person does not work for his own fulfillment in this Principle he is not worthy of me and cannot truly follow me.

Even now I am going the path of more suffering and pain, but not out of stupidity. I came to America to stir up this nation, expecting it to come against me. I did not come to elevate my own honor or dignity, but only for the purpose of God. For God's sake I stirred up controversy and let America come against me. The turmoil of the hurricane lies in our path, but we are going to be victorious. I am the captain who is steering the ship through the stormy weather. America has entered a new age, the age of the deprogrammers, and Americans are closely scrutinizing me, trying to find fault. They will not find fault because I have done nothing wrong.

Who among the pilgrim fathers on the Mayflower had a visa to come to America? They came with religious conviction in the name of God. They came to this land to unselfishly fulfill God's will. For the same reason, but on the universal level, the Unification Church young people have gathered in America in the name of God, to establish the Kingdom of God here on earth.

When the pilgrim fathers came from Europe in the name of God they were actually illegal aliens, but God's dispensation lay with them. We are the new age pilgrim fathers of the universe, and even though this nation may think we are illegal aliens, God is on our side. Ultimately God will overcome this negativity and opposition. The Unification Church is the first movement of liberation. No religious leaders today are even thinking on such a scale. Only I am taking a stand without fear, speaking out directly for God so seriously that I am willing to give up my life to declare my message.

There may be some communist spy or government agent listening here, anxious to find out what I have to say. Let them listen. Regardless of who is listening, there are certain things which I must declare. If I do not declare these things then I am not obeying God's order. Who is going to bring the resurrection of mankind? Not Christianity, Judaism or communism, but the members of the Unification movement. We have the power, we have the knowledge, and we have the conviction to resurrect this nation and all the nations of the world. Do you have the confidence to do it? Raise your hands, those who have such confidence. This is our responsibility.

***Your beachhead in the fallen world***

This 18th Parents' Day is a very meaningful day. You must fully realize where you are standing and what your mission is. I have explained to you what kind of attitude brought about the fall, and how by wholeheartedly undertaking your mission you can liberate man from the conditions that led to the fall; in the future nobody will accuse you of being a self-centered person or of indulging in self-centered love. You now have the opportunity to be liberated from the satanic lineage and influence.

Even though you are leaving the satanic realm, Satan still has a claim on your body because you were born in his lineage. However, if your loyalty is with God 100 percent, then even though you still have that string attached, Satan has no power to pull it. You must remember that the string is still attached, for Satan recognizes that your blood is his; but he must also realize that you have been restored to a position outside of the satanic realm, the position of angels who have not fallen.

How can you create your beachhead in the satanic world? When God created man in the Garden of Eden, He was assisted by the angels. In your recreation as well, you need the help of God and the angels. An angel is good and pure, but until the appearance of perfected Adam and Eve, the angel is not free to perfect himself. Without the perfection of Adam and Eve the angelic world cannot be perfected. For you to elevate yourself to the position of physical Adam, you must be surrounded by spiritual children in the position of the three archangels.

Now that you are in an area isolated from the satanic world you can create your own spiritual defense by winning spiritual children from the satanic world. With the help of God and those in the angelic position you can bring yourself into Adam's position. Then you are ready to have your own children.

To establish your physical resurrection you must give birth to physical children of God who can be restored in the satanic world. Those children will serve in the role of your body.

In bearing and raising your pure physical children you are linking the spirit world to the physical world through yourselves. Because the fall of man came in the growth stage, you must first restore yourself to the growth level, the position of Adam and Eve before the fall. The perfection realm was left unfulfilled by Adam and Eve, and shall be filled when you make yourself perfect Adam and Eve and win the right to give birth to your own sons and daughters.

You can go through this entire process in seven years' time, just as the total creation was accomplished in a seven-day period. In this seven-year period you will go through three stages. First, you have already separated yourselves from the satanic world and are being elevated to the position of unfallen angels. Second, you will elevate yourselves into the growth level, the position of restored Adam and Eve. Because the fall occurred between husband and wife, you must fulfill the level of Adam and Eve as couples.

The third stage of perfection is the parents' level. No matter how great you become as you are restored, you are still the product of the satanic world; you were born into the satanic lineage, and you still have ties with the satanic world which you cannot completely sever.

Your children, however, will be born in the name of God, having nothing to do with the satanic world, and they will be the stepping stone by which you will elevate yourselves to the position of perfected Adam and then parent. There is always a chance for something to go wrong while your sons and daughters grow toward perfection and the Blessing; you must take constant care in raising your children until they are mature and you can bless them in heavenly matrimony.

At what point can you be totally grafted into the lineage of heaven? The moment that you receive the Blessing from the True Parents is the great moment when your bonds to your satanic lineage are severed and you become part of the heavenly lineage. Most marriages in the world are not God-centered, but in the Unification Church our greatest pride is that in the name of the True Parents couples can enter into the heavenly, God-centered lineage. At that moment they become direct heirs of God. Through

the Blessing the process of the fall can be totally reversed. But that reversal must be complete, for if some tiny hole remains then Satan will dash in to claim it.

### ***You must become true parents***

I know Satan's secret, and no matter what the satanic world will try to do, it is destined to crumble. We stand on the side of God's Principle; however, a pioneer or harbinger is needed to open all stages of restoration. Until one man can pave the way no one else will be able to find it. This is the most important key. The road of restoration follows a precise formula, but someone must pioneer that formula. As soon as you understand the formula all you have to do is apply it in order to gain the same result. You can be restored as individual men and women as far as the growth level, but to enter perfection you need to receive the Blessing and bear children. After a seven-year period of raising your children, you can reach the perfection of perfection.

You must also be protected and escorted by your spiritual children in the angelic position. You need angels around you, and that is why having spiritual children is a most essential requirement for receiving the Blessing. With them in the position of angels to escort you, you can attain the level of Adam and Eve before the fall and qualify to receive the Blessing.

You must be able to come to the throne of God having completed each of three levels in your life on earth: the level of restored angel, the level of perfected son and daughter, and the level of having raised your perfected children. These three positions must all be regained from the satanic world. Your lineage will gather behind you, beginning with your children, with each of them in one of these three different levels of maturity. Among your descendants you will see every level of accomplishment. From generation to generation your lineage will expand onto an ever larger scale, from the family level to the societal level, national, worldwide, and universal levels. Even though I will be gone, this expansion will continue. Progressing further and further through the years, the realm of your own lineage will get bigger and bigger.

Your destination is the eternal dwelling place of the True Parents. Mother and I are not going to be the only True Parents. My goal is to make all of you true parents. It is the greatest honor that I can give to you. In your own area and lineage each of you is to become the true parents.

I am not just theorizing now, but speaking of the way of the Principle which I have lived and walked. I have done this on the individual level, family, societal, national, worldwide, and cosmic levels. I have gained invincible victory at each level of accomplishment, and thus I have declared the liberation of the individual, family, society, nation, world and cosmos. Now I am declaring the liberation of God Himself. Can you grasp the significance of this formidable statement? Some people exclaim that I am a heretic for saying such things, but let us wait and see who God believes is the heretic.

Every mission we undertake must be accomplished on both the physical and spiritual planes. Anything we establish in the spiritual realm must be duplicated in the physical world, and those physical accomplishments must then be united with our spiritual accomplishments. The entire spiritual world is in the angelic position; therefore, to find the physical element they must work with the level of the physical world. Even though it is not God-centered, this world is invaluable because it is only here that you can find what you need. When you can bring your physical children together with your spiritual children, you are truly in the Kingdom of God. In the Garden of Eden children and parents can rejoice together in God's glory, freed from any acquaintance with the fall.

I am declaring the absolute standard for you Unification Church members: Unless you find three spiritual children in three years you are not entitled to the Blessing. Jesus' ministry was focused on precisely that. He wanted to find his three major apostles and raise them in faith so they could establish the foundation for their physical families here on earth. It was God's wish and also Jesus' desire that Jesus claim his throne and elevate himself to the position of True Parents. Instead Jesus met with such opposition that finally he was crucified without attaining it.

### ***We witness to restore relatives***

Jesus must indeed come again; however, if God were to send Jesus the way Christians predict, on the clouds of heaven, not only would Christianity crumble, but the entire world would crumble. The fall of man did not occur in the spirit world but in the physical world. Salvation must also take place in the physical world. No one can even talk about his kingdom of heaven until he establishes his kingdom here on earth, for without establishing the kingdom here on earth, there will be no kingdom in heaven. Jesus did not take the keys to the Kingdom of God with him to heaven, but left them here on earth. Jesus said:

'Whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.'(Matt. 16:19)

Without understanding the significance of the physical world, there is no way to understand the Scriptures and the true meaning of the Bible.

We members of the Unification movement are proud people, hand picked for God's mission. We have undertaken the liberation of the satanic world and the declaration of the glory and victory of God before heaven and earth. By now I am sure you understand that restoration must go through that process. No one can enter heaven without walking this path and fulfilling this Principle. Christians have been very naive in thinking that believing in Jesus is all that is required to end up in heaven, while they leave this world unchanged. Their idea of a guaranteed place in heaven is a crazy concept that could never enable man to fulfill God's will. From God's standpoint that is heretical thinking, not the Principle of the Unification movement.

In the Last Days, the truth will seem to be a lie and lies will seem to be the truth. That is precisely what is happening today, isn't it? Though I represent the genuine goodness of God, the world thinks I am some kind of monster; some people even think my organization is worse than the Mafia. I studied science and mathematics and unless everything we do is scientifically possible, I will not even do it myself. I am not a foolish man with blind ideals.

Why does the world come against us? The reason is very simple. They are afraid of us. Jews and Catholics and Protestants have been fighting and killing each other for 2,000 years, but when I appear they hastily get together as allies to make a statement against me. Without even knowing me some people now say, "Reverend Moon must be some kind of giant because the denominations were enemies before, but now they have come together as allies against this one man!"

This occurrence is prophetic. In uniting to come against me, the Jews, Catholics and Protestants have shown that there is room for unity among the three faiths. Yet, without me there is no way they can become one in the sight of God. We must become the catalyst, for it is with our blessing alone that they have the possibility of truly becoming one.

Our diligent witnessing is for a dual purpose. We are restoring our spiritual children, of course, but we are also restoring our relatives; our closest relative is Protestantism, and our cousin is Catholicism, while our distant cousin, yet still very much our relative, is Judaism. The non-religious people of the world are extremely distant cousins. Their restoration is the job the Unification movement has undertaken.

I have fully expounded on the external meaning of Parents' Day in its historical context, but I have not yet spoken of its internal aspect: Is your flesh, blood and bone related to God or not? No matter how much you may say "yes," even if your "yes" brings the roof down, at best we could say that your flesh is only conditionally related to God; in actuality there is no relation. Now you call me your True Parent, but do you really have any connection with me? Does my flesh have something to do with your flesh? Does my bone have something to do with your bone? Does my blood have a relationship to your blood?

Restoration itself is only conditional. You will never be able to pay your whole debt, but by the conditions of restoration you can accomplish what would otherwise take a million years. That is a beautiful secret.

### ***Love makes restoration possible***

What condition will make this possible? Money? Power? Knowledge? Faith? Even faith can change from morning to evening. What is the unchanging condition by which you can relate with God and the True Parents? You are correct: True love alone will make the connection. When Jesus Christ came to this world as the Messiah, he had an external and an internal mission. His external mission was to rule the world as the Messiah, the king of kings, establishing God's sovereignty. His internal mission was very tender, for he came as the parent of mankind.

How could Jesus internally elevate himself? He could not elevate himself to the position of True Parent with power or kingship. Those would have been to no avail. It was only by a love that was higher, deeper, and wider than all the love the satanic world could offer that Jesus could fulfill his mission. As the Messiah, Jesus could declare that whoever would follow him must love him more than anyone or anything else -- more than country, parents, spouse, or children. Jesus could not qualify as the Messiah unless he were capable of declaring such a thing. From his desire to declare to the world the supreme love of God Jesus said,

'He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me.' (Matt. 10:37)

He was indeed the Messiah, and he knew that he was capable of giving that supreme love to anyone who could love him above all else.

By giving their greatest love to Jesus, Christians are entitled to inherit God's kingdom and the True Parents' love. Jesus actually came to make a trade of love. He brings heavenly love, and we bring worldly love. God's love is so superior that His love will not come to you unless you can offer Him the best love you can give. In this trade of love you can restore your eternal kingship; you will inherit the visible kingdom that God possesses externally, but more importantly, in loving Jesus the most, you can even possess him and you can actually possess God. When you approach Jesus in that kind of love he will respond, and even God will have no choice but to respond to you. This is a beautiful exchange, isn't it?

Jesus declared to his disciples and to the world that unless they could love him more than anyone else, they were not worthy of him. That is a most extraordinary statement! There was no way that he could avoid being accused of blaspheming. "We will stone you for blasphemy because you, being a man, make yourself God." Finally he was crucified. In a way Jesus actually set the stage for his own crucifixion by making statements that angered people enough that they wanted to kill him. His statements were certainly ambitious and bold; how could people accept such statements in those days? Imagine a husband and wife with a very deep relationship listening to one of Jesus' sermons, saying that unless they loved him more than their own spouse they were not worthy of him. Do

you think that husband would turn to his wife and say, "Yes, go love him more than me"? Any husband would say, "Forget it! You love me most; you are my wife."

The Messiah's course is a truly stony path. Over and over God asks him to do impossible things. Raise your hand if you want to volunteer to become the Messiah. Anybody who would volunteer must have something wrong with his head. The Messiah must be able to eat his own stool and say, "This is as sweet as honey." God is continually asking the Messiah to do absolutely insane things. Does this discourage you?

### ***God's efforts to restore true love***

Why can love set a significant condition? It is only with the condition of love that you can leap the many millennia to restoration. God made love so supreme that with true love there is nothing that cannot be surmounted. Love alone transcends time, and does not know history. Among the congregation I see some elderly women. Think about that time years ago when you first fell in love; even though you are now 60 or 70 years old, it is as vivid as yesterday, isn't it? The love that they tasted many decades ago is still fresh and sweet, and they want to dwell there even now.

Love knows no distance. If your beloved is trembling on a chunk of ice at the North Pole, do you think that your love will be frozen and weak? Distance makes no difference. Love can never be confined by time and space. Even God cannot revolutionize true love. From the beginning to the end, from alpha to omega, love remains the same, forever unchanging. If this little handkerchief were love, it would have greater value to lovers than the entire continent of North America. Isn't that right? Only that timeless, spaceless, eternal love can set the condition for you to be restored into heaven.

How has God been working to restore this true love? Not just mankind and the angels but the entire creation was affected by the fall. Even the dignity of God was lost. The work of restoration means bringing everything that became fallen back into unity with God.

God divided the restoration period into different segments. In the Old Testament era all the things of creation became the mediator between man and God. Why? Everything became upside down because of the fall of man. Originally man was supposed to be closest to God, but after the fall the things of creation were purer than man, and thus closer to God. For this reason man could reach God only by symbolically sacrificing himself through the things of creation. In addition, God created all things in the world before He created man. For these reasons the Old Testament era was the time in which God was restoring all things. God had to restore all things first, before He could turn to restore His children.

Israel was the nation in the position of servant; through Judaism people were lifted from the state of fallen sinner up to the position of servant. Then in the New Testament era Jesus Christ came as the son of God to bring an era of great transformation. During Jesus' lifetime people were to be lifted from the position of servant to the position of sons of God. As God's servant, the nation of Israel was to support Jesus as the son of God, elevating him to the position of sovereign and then to the position of True Parent. The

Bible referred to Jesus as a great teacher, but did not reveal the mission of Jesus as the parent. While Jesus was on earth the entire dispensation of restoration could have been shortened; the son of God came to restore true sonship, and to elevate himself into parenthood, raising the chosen people into direct sons and daughters, the true heirs of God. Then the entire nation could have been elevated to parenthood. That was God's scheduled program.

Because Israel did not accept Jesus, however, she could not advance that far, and instead of becoming a living sacrifice, Jesus was killed as a sacrifice on the altar of God. Thus Jesus actually died to lay the foundation for the future coming of the Messiah. By his own death he paid the indemnity and paved the way for the Second Coming of the Messiah; thus began the Christian era of the New Testament.

When the Messiah comes, he will bring those in the adopted child's position into the position of direct sons and daughters of God, and then elevate mankind into true parenthood under God. The Second Coming of the Messiah will be highlighted by the work of the True Parents. It will be the most brilliant new age, the final consummation of the work of God. The True Parents will be the mediators between God and man and all people shall be saved, becoming the direct children of God and true parents of future humanity.

### ***We must build our own foundation***

Judaism was the national, external foundation for Jesus, but Christianity bears that responsibility for the Second Coming of the Messiah. Furthermore the Messiah is coming on the worldwide level. Therefore, the Christian free world as a whole is in the position of the nation of Israel. When this situation is ripe you will know that the day of the Lord is near. When the messianic work is fulfilled by the free world, then God will take direct responsibility for the communist world. The restoration process can never be completed without this worldwide unity between Cain and Abel.

Presently a Cain-Abel struggle is taking place between the Unification Church and other Christian churches, and between the Unification Church and America. World restoration can be speeded up after the Unification Church, Christianity, and America find the way to unify. However, because the free world opposes us, we ourselves must rebuild and stand upon our own foundation. History records the vertical process of restoration the Old Testament era was for the restoration of all things; the New Testament era was for the restoration of the children; and the Completed Testament era will see the restoration of the parents.

Here in the Unification Church we are horizontally restoring the 6,000 biblical years of God's work in our lifetime. Within our own movement these three ages are unfolding horizontally. We are establishing an economic sphere; in addition we have children; and in the center we have the True Parents. We are restoring all of these things ourselves, and together we are bringing all of them to God as an offering. This work does not yet

represent the kingdom, however; only when God returns our offering to us as a blessing will the kingdom begin.

I am unfolding this dispensation in my own lifetime. After offering to God the spheres of economics, children and parents, the next phase to unfold will be that of the society and then the nation, world and universe. I came to America in 1972, and my 3 1/2 year campaign here was my offering to God of all the necessary conditions on the worldwide scale. My offering on the worldwide scale was completed by 1976.

New York is the symbolic center of the world, and in this city we are working to firmly establish our economic strength. All the buildings we own in New York are part of this economic dispensation: the Headquarters Building, the East Sun Building, the World Mission Center, the Tiffany Building, and the Manhattan Center, as well as all the land we own in Tarrytown. Compared to the wealth of the world all this is still small, but we must offer it all to God as the heart of our worldwide offering. The energy of the world must be mobilized; every bit of money used to restore the economic sphere to God came from the blood and sweat of all our members around the world.

### ***I fulfilled my covenant with God***

The final climax of this offering was the Washington Monument rally. That was the altar upon which we offered to God everything that we had received. I want you to know that Sept. 18, 1976, was the day of offering for the sake of the world. Centering on the worldwide dispensation for America, that offering was made in Washington, D.C., the nation's capital. The five races of the world gathered together there, symbolically proclaiming, "God, we have made this an altar of ourselves; please accept all of us." That day of offering was the most serious, most divine and sacred day of the history of the world. Because a pure offering was made that day, the salvation of the world is destined to be consummated. On that day the entire spirit world declared victory. All the people of God united to declare victory.

America should have declared victory together with us, but America failed to do that. Many well meaning people even advised me that for the sake of the church we should be a little more quiet, "Why do you want to make all the commotion of a Washington rally?" Even some of our leaders came to me saying, "Father, this will be a blunder. We just did Yankee Stadium and we need more money, more men; it is really impossible to do it this year." But I remained determined. "This is the showdown of my lifetime. I will give my sweat, my heart, and my life to do it." I decided to give everything -- myself, my family, our members, whatever economic strength our movement could mobilize -- everything that I could possibly give to successfully make that offering to God in Washington.

This was not actually my showdown; it was God's showdown. I knew that God could not afford to fail in Washington, and I knew that God was the most anxious. Therefore, I was confident that God would come to our aid and I had only one conviction, "We shall succeed. We shall win."

I want you to know that Sept. 18, 1976, was like my day of execution. I deeply felt like a criminal who had been sentenced to death and was going out to be executed. That is how serious I felt that day, utterly dead serious. Until Sept. 18, I completely lost track of time. I mistook my breakfast for dinner and my dinner for breakfast. Time swam in my mind. Even on my way to the bathroom I would suddenly find myself in a completely different place because my mind had gone blank. You cannot imagine how serious I was during that campaign; only God knows.

How can I express to you the seriousness of Sept. 18? The showdown of God was at hand. The showdown of the entire struggle of good and evil was at hand. The entire destiny of the Unification Church was before me that day. Unless all the conditions could be established for God's power and the entire spirit world to be connected to the earth on that day, I knew that I would not succeed. I was utterly serious, and I did it.

The victory of that day was a miracle. It was the work of God, not of Reverend Moon or the Unification Church, that we succeeded in Washington. Extraordinary numbers of people came. The whole event was totally beautiful! Without rain or accident, all was beautiful from beginning to end. Do you think that could be the work of men? No, it was God's work. That victory established a new tradition. No matter what may happen to America in the future, nobody can remove that footprint which I so strongly imprinted in Washington on Sept. 18, 1976.

One child got lost that day, and announcements were made all over Washington. There was deep suspense as people wondered what happened to the child who had come to Reverend Moon's rally. But he was found within three days, happy and well. I felt that he symbolized the lost, wandering world which shall be restored. It was a beautiful symbol of resurrection.

When I came to America I was a lonely man. As I crossed the Pacific Ocean I prayed to God, pledging that the mission would be fulfilled. Three and a half years later, through the victory at Washington Monument, my prayer was answered; I was able to fulfill my pledge and covenant with God. Thereafter I could declare liberation. On Oct. 4, 1976, I declared the Day of the Victory of Heaven as one step of liberation. On True Parents' Birthday, Feb. 23, 1977, I declared that all heaven and earth, spirit world and physical world together, shall be forgiven. Forgiveness and liberation have now been declared. The new age has dawned; the new calendar has started. The Year One has been pronounced.

This particular 18th Parents' Day is a very meaningful and extraordinary day for these reasons. Now, centering on my mission, you can begin to see how the Unification Church has evolved; what mission we are pursuing, and where we are going. You know why we need funds. The economic sphere represents all the things of creation that have been groaning in the satanic realm. By winning that sphere to the heavenly side by our own hands and our own sweat, we are establishing the condition to restore all the things of creation.

***Love is the key***

I am laboring harder than any company president in the world. I will strive harder and be more dramatically victorious than anyone in history. It is the love of God and love of mankind that makes this possible. In the name of God I want to break every record ever set.

Even more than I love my own children I love every one of you as direct sons and daughters. I watch you more closely than you realize and seek to nurture you so that you can grow into giants in the sight of God. Why do I care about you so deeply? I know so well that not only Christianity but the entire religious world is crumbling. You are the people who will replace those who were lost, inheriting their foundation and their mission. You are very precious in the sight of God and I want to pour out my heart to you. I am from a poor country, but even when I came to work in America, the richest nation in the world, I did not spend American money to advance this movement to its present level. Instead, people poorer than Americans gave the money with which I have been raising up the American people and establishing the American church.

Because America is vitally important to God, I determined to love America more than my own children, more than my own country, more than my own Asia. God deeply loves this nation and has done more and sacrificed more for this country than for any other country of the world. What is America's role? I will never say, "You must pay me back." Instead America must go out to the world, the six continents and five races of the earth, and give of itself and its wealth. Four billion people are waiting for the touch of America's hand. You must go out and serve them.

If America succeeds in this mission then the glory of this nation shall be astonishing and have no end. America will then remain the most prosperous country on earth. Love is the key. It is love alone that will connect all things together and bring them to the altar of God. When that happens God will turn around and give everything back to you as His blessing. That will mark the beginning of the Kingdom of God on earth.

That is the purpose for which I came. No matter what the people outside of our church may have said, no matter what persecution or hardship the world may have given to me, I have never minded; instead I have been too busy giving everything to construct this mission. While Americans enjoy bread and meat, many of our members do not even enjoy a glass of milk, but only water. While American young people are idle and pursuing pleasures and relaxation, you and I have been giving totally of ourselves.

Many of the great leaders of America have been applauded, respected and given glory, but instead of receiving glory and respect I have received persecution, misunderstanding and ridicule. Even under those circumstances I have survived. I came to America for the liberation of this nation and I was ready to go to jail if necessary; I am ready and willing to give my life for the sake of this nation.

Presently I am a miserable man in the eyes of the people. I walk the humble way, but I do it solely for the sake of God. Do you think God will always remain silent while America ridicules and persecutes His prophet? No, God could justly seek vengeance. I pray to

God, "Do not unleash Your revenge. Here are the Unification Church members. Look at these beautiful, shining faces. They are the hope of America, they are the true America. Because of them, won't You forgive this nation?" That has been my prayer. America has become indebted to God, indebted to me, and indebted to you, the Unification Church. Some day America must pay everything back.

Please understand me. I love you, but I cannot be soft with you. Under the circumstances that would not be the expression of love. I have become a cruel person in a way, chasing you out to the battlefield. I want you to understand what I am doing and why, and I want you to support me.

If America had supported me with its mammoth wealth, even to the slightest degree, you would not have to go out and fund raise with such struggle. If America had supported me by freely giving of its young people, in such a way that negativity was not nurtured and spread, good people would have joined us freely and you would not have to go out to witness with such effort. However, America failed to respond in both ways.

I cried out in prayer to God, pledging and swearing that every dollar our members made represented every penny of America's wealth, and that every new member that joined us represented the entire population of this nation. "God, honor their effort, honor their success, honor their sacrifice. God, each one of our members is taking up America's role." Each dollar you earn must be glistening with your tears, such money is more precious than any amount of money earned in business. Each member you bring must be the fruit of your sweat and blood and hard work.

Do not worry, the American government will not have to chase me out; the time will come when I will go, voluntarily. If I were to leave I know that every one of you would feel no more attraction to America, but would want to follow me. How could I leave this country at this moment? If I sent away all the Japanese and European members, it is clear that this nation would decline like a ship without a captain. Do you want to watch this nation die or not? Do you clearly understand why we have walked this path, the purpose for which we are here, and the meaning of the work we have accomplished thus far?

As soon as you were born you came under satanic lineage. Had there been no fall, all of you would have been born of God. Whether first, second, or third-born, you would each be a child of God. Instead, you are all destined to be born again. By the love of God you shall be reborn into the level of servant, adopted child, true-child, and finally God-centered, sinless parents. Then you will inherit all things.

We must give rebirth to the created world, to the angelic world, to children of God, and to God-centered parents. From there we must expand our territory to the worldwide level, going beyond the satanic realm on the worldwide level and even giving rebirth to all things on the universal scale.

***Cain and Abel must unite***

Since the fall of man everything has been upside down, but we are reversing the process of the fall to make everything straight. God and Satan are intently fighting a tug-of-war over the children of Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve were directly claimed by Satan, and God postponed His hope for them. The angel was supposed to come under the dominion of Adam, but this became reversed through the fall, and Satan, the servant, controlled Adam instead. Cain as the elder brother was born in the position of Satan, while Abel was born in Adam's position, representing the side of God.

The original channel of command could be restored only by a reversal of dominion in which the younger brother took the position of elder brother, thus putting the archangel back on the servant level. The fallen, stained parents could then be restored on the foundation of Abel's victory, and the unstained, perfected Adam would then come as the Messiah. The children of God would then be born within that lineage. In the Garden of Eden there was only Adam's family; therefore, if that family was restored, all things would have been done.

God intended to complete this providence within three generations and then send the Messiah. At that time he would have established the True Parents, and the rest of the family members would have been grafted into their lineage, restoring the entire family at one time. This was the dispensation of Adam's family. However, Cain slew Abel, creating a repetition of the fallen act in which the archangel killed Adam instead of obeying him. Cain's act multiplied the consequences of the fall.

The division and struggle between the Cain side and Abel side has been perpetuated from the family level to the tribal, national, and worldwide levels, and man's history has been the history of struggle. Man's struggle has only brought greater division, and because Satan's dominion expanded to cover the entire world, restoration had to encompass the far ends of the earth.

The tug-of-war that started with Cain and Abel has today expanded to the worldwide level. God is pulling His world and Satan is pulling his world; God is pulling Abel and Satan is pulling Cain. However, if Abel's will to pull becomes strong enough, God can even pull Cain all the way to His side, leaving nothing more to be restored. The dispensation of Cain and Abel is for the younger to achieve the position of the elder, and the elder to take the position of the younger. This process of restoring the birthright to God's side must be fulfilled up to the worldwide scale. God has been winning through heavenly struggle, slowly fitting things back into their original order. Through the process of reversal God started His work at the far end, bringing everything back to its consummation at the center. The religious world today is in the position of Abel, the younger brother, while the non-religious world is in Cain's position. Cain will always seek to persecute Abel, and throughout history the religious world has always been persecuted. Cain always claims that Abel must submit to him, but the religious world responds, "No, we represent Adam and you represent the angel. You must follow us." Always the satanic world takes the initiative to suppress the religious world, and always there is struggle.

If the necessary conditions had been fulfilled in Adam's family through the unity of Cain and Abel, all would have been completely fulfilled horizontally in one family. But that failed and the entire restoration became vertical, descending through history and expanding into ever broader levels as the family expanded into a tribe, the tribe into a nation, and the nation into the world.

Cain and Abel must become one. In the sight of God there was no difference between Cain and Abel when they were born. Only because of the fall was there a vast difference in the meaning of their positions as elder son and younger son. The ultimate dominion in the world should begin with the positions of Cain and Abel united into oneness. You know from Old Testament history that the Cain and Abel providence which failed in Adam's family continued through Esau and Jacob, and also through Tamar's children, Perez and Zerah. There the continuing providence for the younger brother to win the birthright of his elder brother was consummated on all levels, even in the mother's womb. From this lineage Jesus was born.

### ***Jacob and Rebecca***

Cain and Abel were born separately, while Esau and Jacob were born together as twins. As twins they were much closer in their relationship than Cain and Abel. Why was Jacob blessed? According to the Bible's description he was a cunning man who lied to his elder brother and father, conniving with his mother to get Esau's birthright. Why could God continually bless him in that case? Rebecca, his mother, also deceived her husband and son. In the Garden of Eden Eve deceived both her husband and God, and this double deception brought about the fall. Eve did not listen to God but listened to Satan, and lied to her own husband; she lied to two generations, father and son.

In restoration Rebecca took the position of Eve, doing so by lying to her husband and her son for the heavenly purpose of assisting Jacob to restore the birthright. Through her fervent desire to fulfill the work of God, Rebecca was able to restore herself to the position of mother on the side of God, and help restore Jacob as a son on the side of God. Step by step, Rebecca cooperated with her heavenly son to restore everything:

Biblical scholars are confronted with an unsolvable question of morality in Jacob's course; he was a cunning man and a swindler, yet the Bible indicated that God continuously blessed him. Why? Without knowing the deep significance of God's dispensation, there is no way to understand.

When Isaac was close to death he blessed Jacob, believing that Jacob was actually Esau. When Esau later went to receive his father's blessing he discovered Jacob's deception, and he demanded,

'Have you but one blessing, my father? Bless me, even me also, O my father.' (Gen. 27:38)

But Isaac Insisted, 'Behold, I have made him your lord . . . What then can I do for you, my son?' (Gen. 27:37)

Jacob was a man of wisdom, and in order to avoid the accusation of his elder brother, he had already conditionally gained his elder brother's birthright by trading it for a bowl of lentils. Strictly speaking, Esau had no right to be angry, for he himself had already sold his birthright. Even so, Esau was consumed with anger and determined to kill Jacob, just as Cain had killed Abel. However, Rebecca again assisted Jacob and he fled from danger.

If Isaac had actually given Esau the blessing he gave Jacob, then God would not have had a condition to side with Jacob, and confusion would have emerged in the dispensation. However, God was always with Jacob, and through him God's dispensation was successfully fulfilled for the first time. All the conditions for physical restoration were met and fulfilled.

After a 21-year sojourn in a foreign land, Jacob returned to Canaan. On his way Jacob was confronted at the ford of Jabbok by an angel who represented Satan. The fall of man came when an angel subjugated a man; therefore, in restoration man must subjugate the angel. For this reason God sent the angel to confront Jacob, wanting Jacob to win not only physically over Esau, but also spiritually over the angel. By doing so Jacob could restore man to his proper position and bring the angel down to his proper position as servant.

When Jacob confronted the angel at the ford of Jabbok, he had to give his entire heart and soul, even more than he had during his 21 years of servitude in Haran. Indeed, Jacob was determined even to die, and though his thigh was knocked out of joint he did not hesitate, but continued in his struggle. The angel finally acknowledged that he could not prevail against Jacob and blessed him, saying,

'Your name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel, for you have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed. (Gen 32:28)

What was Jacob's victory? Jacob won a spiritual victory over the angelic world. From that time on Jacob was assisted not only by God but by the angelic world in whatever he chose to do. Spiritually Satan could not assist Esau when he confronted Jacob after 21 years of separation, and Esau had to embrace his brother.

You recall that Esau received a great many gifts when Jacob freely gave of his earnings of 21 years. What is the significance of this act? In doing so, Jacob set the condition by which we also can purchase our birthright through giving out our fortune. Thereafter all truly religious people have given up their material wealth to the satanic world, and in doing so, could not only win the satanic world but also win their birthright. Jesus also gave up everything, possessing nothing throughout his entire mission. Once you know the Principle, the Bible suddenly becomes very logical.

The restoration of Cain and Abel was completed for the first time through the lives of Jacob and Esau. God won His first victory on earth at the moment the two brothers became one and Esau embraced Jacob. Through his unity with Jacob, Esau and his descendants also received the blessing of God. Esau was born into Satan's position, but during the process of restoration Esau cooperated with Jacob, however unwillingly, and

when Esau welcomed Jacob the two positions were restored, and God could extend an equal blessing to Esau.

### ***Further preparation of Jesus' lineage***

Jacob and Esau were about the age of 40 when they finally fulfilled the will of God; however, their success could only affect those people of that age or older. No one below the age of forty could benefit by this process in the restoration. God prepared another step in His dispensation that would protect His children from the period of their life in their mother's womb until the age of 40. This providence had to be sealed within the next three generations of Jacob's descendants.

Judah was the fourth son of Jacob, and Judah's son married a woman whose name was Tamar. According to Jewish tradition, if a son died without leaving sons, his brother had to act as a husband to the dead brother's wife so that the dead brother's lineage would be continued. Tamar did not have children when her husband died, and when the next brother refused to fulfill his responsibility, he died. However, the third brother was not given to Tamar when he became old enough, and Tamar saw that she had no hope to bear children.

She knew that her mission was to continue the family of her husband and Judah, his father, and she finally decided to sacrifice even her honor in order to fulfill the will of God. Disguising herself as a prostitute, Tamar enticed her father-in-law to have a relationship with her. Without knowing she was his daughter-in-law Judah consented. In order to save her life for the sake of her child, Tamar asked Judah for his signet and staff as a pledge for payment, and confiscated them.

Three months later when it became obvious that the widow Tamar was pregnant, she was brought before Judah to be judged. At that time adultery was punishable by death. You can imagine Judah's horror: "Bring her out, and let her be burned!" But she answered,

'By the man to whom these belong, I am with child,' (Gen. 38:25) and she brought out the things that Judah had given her in his pledge.

Man fell through fornication, so why would God use adulterous women in the dispensation? Tamar was one example of how God frequently used women of most unusual character in restoration. They are in a satanic position, but if they completely deny their satanic nature when summoned by God, then they can be restored from one extreme to the opposite extreme.

God selected His champions from the most miserable situations. Tamar was a righteous woman, and though she was originally in a sinful position, she completely dedicated herself to God's mission, risking her life, honor, and prestige. Paralleling the way Eve lied to God and her husband to bring about the fall, Tamar deceived her father-in-law and her husband-to-be, the third brother of her original husband. She was in a position to reverse the position of Eve by reversing Eve's actions. The significant thing is that she risked her life to do God's will.

Tamar conceived twins, and in this case the struggle of Cain and Abel began within her very womb. The Bible records how Rebecca's twins also struggled within their mother's womb. She had prayed to God to understand what was happening, and God answered her, saying,

'Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples, born of you, shall be divided; the one shall be stronger than the other, and the elder shall serve the younger.' (Gen. 25:23)

Ultimately Jacob did gain the birthright from his elder brother, Esau.

When the time came for Tamar's children to be delivered, the struggle ensued directly within her womb. The first child started to come out and the midwife tied a red thread around his wrist. That sign foreshadowed the emergence of communism in the Last Days. However, before the first child could be born there was a struggle, and the younger brother pulled the other back inside and was himself born first. That son was named Perez, and the other named Zerah. The result of this struggle was that for the first time the restoration of Cain and Abel took place inside the mother's womb, the younger brother having subjugated his elder brother even prior to birth. Tamar's extraordinary action cleansed Judah's lineage and rendered it intact from satanic invasion from the time of conception.

### ***Mary's foundation***

Through the victory of both Jacob and Tamar, God could claim a foundation that spanned man's entire life. Jesus was born in the lineage of Judah, and Satan had no way to invade his life because the cleansing process was already completed. Jesus came years after the dispensation of Jacob and Tamar because God had to wait for the national foundation to be established. Conditions were all fulfilled on the family level at the time of Jacob, Tamar and Judah, but God needed to create a foundation to receive the Messiah within a nation, that he might gain victory among the satanic nations.

Finally after 2,000 years, God chose one more woman, whose name was Mary. Mary was a revolutionary woman of faith who could follow God's revolutionary tactics. Because the fall of man came through the archangel, an angel was needed to assist Mary by bringing her God's revelation. Mary completely believed what the angel told her of her mission: that she would conceive, that the child would be great and holy, and that his name should be called Jesus.

Mary's situation paralleled Eve's in the Garden of Eden before her blessing. Mary and Joseph were engaged but not yet married; Adam and Eve were also in an engagement period as they were growing up. An angel brought Eve to the fallen act, but an angel brought Mary to the fulfillment of the heavenly dispensation. Mary was also in a position to deceive her husband and her father. Do you think Mary could discuss with her father or Joseph about how she had conceived her baby? She was risking her life because in those times, an adulterous woman was to be stoned to death.

Mary was the third woman to be chosen by God in this way. Through the previous victories of Rebecca and Tamar all satanic conditions had been cleared from Jesus' lineage, and even though Mary conceived Jesus outside marriage, Satan could not accuse her. Even inside his mother's womb Jesus was already the only begotten son of God, and after his birth everything he did was with the authority of the son of God.

The events recorded in the Bible have always puzzled the world. For instance, in the genealogy of Jesus the names of four women who bypassed the marriage bond are recorded: Tamar, Ruth, Bathsheba, and Mary. Another puzzling question was why the elder son was often in the position to be cursed by God. Without understanding the depths of the Principle there are no logical explanations for these things.

Jesus was in the position of Adam without sin in the Garden of Eden. Did God intend for Adam to live his entire life alone in the Garden of Eden? No. In the same way Jesus was destined to create his own family through restoring his bride. Jesus' family was to become the cornerstone of the Kingdom of God by creating the new lineage of heaven on earth as the center of the universe.

The son of God came alone, but in restoring his bride and his children from Israel, and establishing Israel as his own nation, Jesus could have completely restored the world. But Jesus was crucified, and could not leave the foundation of the Father and Mother of mankind established here on earth. With no True Parents here on earth, how could anyone be reborn for earthly life? Without parents how can you be born in the first place?

### ***How to receive physical salvation***

Forty days after Jesus' resurrection the Holy Spirit descended from heaven. What is the Holy Spirit? After Jesus died without installing himself and his bride as the True Parents of mankind on earth, God's concept of the True Parents was confined to the spiritual realm. Jesus came as the manifestation of God's concept of true Adam, but no one was raised up to manifest God's concept of Eve. For this reason the Holy Spirit comes in the role of spiritual mother. The Bible describes the Holy Spirit as being like fire or water or like a dove because it is without form, but the role of the Holy Spirit is that of a mother spirit.

The Holy Spirit has served as the womb of a spiritual mother, completely embracing and covering Christians and giving spiritual rebirth. Jesus' spirit as the father, together with the Holy Spirit, can bring the power of rebirth to Christians. No spiritual resurrection can come about until one truly receives both Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

God never intended that physical birth and spiritual-birth should come separately, but Jesus could not establish full salvation 2,000 years ago, and left only the power of spiritual-salvation here on earth. He must come again to the earth to complete the portion of his mission left undone at that time.

An unusual phenomenon is taking place within the Unification Church; you are seeking to be recognized and loved by the True Parents. In your deepest heart you want to become one with them; without doing this you cannot be given complete restoration or rebirth.

Physically it is impossible to become a part of the True Parents, but through your love, your total unity with them will be acknowledged by heaven. Did you ever dream of such a principle?

I want you to deeply realize that the emergence of the True Parents did not happen all of a sudden by decree one morning. Thousands and thou sands of years passed in which God shed sweat and blood and tears to lay the necessary foundation. in accordance with His. principle and schedule, yet this work was continually being hampered by man's failures. I unlocked the deep secrets of heaven and earth and determined to pioneer the path beyond the level on which all the dispensational figures previously suffered or accomplished -- figures like Noah, Abraham, Jacob, and Jesus. I learned precisely what they accomplished and what they left undone.

I knew from the very beginning that. unless I set my standard higher than all of those dispensational figures, I could not fulfill the role of the True Parents in heart and love. I have now succeeded beyond the level they established in terms of heart and love. From the beginning I knew what to look for, what to ask for, and what to strive for.

All the confusion and chaos. of history had to be resolved. I came like a doctor to operate, to straighten out the problems of mankind within the shortest possible time of 30 years, and to complete the foundation upon which God's history could begin and all mankind could be brought back to life. It is a miracle of miracles. What would you have done if I had not come?

Right now I look miserable in the eyes of the world. I have unlocked the most important secrets of life and have freely given them as a gift to the world; yet instead of being grateful the world has come back to ridicule me. You are God's only hope; you are my only hope. However,. since your previous life was so sinful, you can never deserve the blessing of God in the Unification Church without totally changing from your previous philosophy and way of life.

### ***Who will inherit my mission?***

Your lives must be different from yesterday; each day you need to be recreated. Will you change yourselves today? On this Parents' Day, let's forget what you have done in the past because what counts is what you do today and tomorrow. Boldly take the responsibility that God has bestowed upon you; courageously challenge to fulfill this mission. I want you to know that through you God will change the history of mankind.

I am not delivering this message today solely for your benefit. My audience is the world, history, and the spirit world. I am speaking to the world and every person here on earth shall listen to this word in due course. The entire spirit world is listening right now. The entire world will be without the excuse that they did not hear me.

Did my explanation of the Bible sound like a lie, or is it clear and effective truth? If the 240 million people of America and Christians the world over could really humble themselves to

listen to the truth, there is no way that they could say, "Reverend Moon, you are seeking to deceive and I do not trust you." The power of the truth will unite men.

I am very anxious at this time. God wanted me to have fulfilled this level of accomplishment by the age of 40, yet now I am almost 60. I am anxious to recover those 20 years of time by declaring God's truth to the world so that the world which has been destined to death shall see some sign of hope for restoration.

It is not yet too late, but America and the world must repent. God still wants to bless America. No one ever even imagined that the emergence of the True Parents could be this difficult and precarious. To come this far I had to persevere through and overcome impossible opposition; I want you to inherit these experiences from me. Unless you inherit this heart of mine, you will have nothing to do with the place where I dwell and where God dwells.

When I die, I shall ask God, "Is there anyone who loved You more? Is there anyone who loved the world more? Is there anyone who really gave himself more totally for the sake of the world? Heavenly Father, can You name one?" There is no other such person. Therefore, I want to live longer because no one has yet come who can succeed me in my situation. I pray that among you someone can come forward to say, "Father, I can inherit your mission. I feel precisely as you do; I am another Reverend Moon. Leave it to me." My prayer is to see even one person like that come from among you. The greatest blessing, the greatest gift that God could give me, would be to see such a man. That person will say, "Father, I shall not only equal your own record, I shall exceed your record so there can be glory and Sabbath for you and for God." If many of you feel like that, then this is truly the glory and victory of Parents' Day.

Can you pledge in this sacred room, "God, I give You my covenant, my pledge, that I will never let you down, that I shall persevere even more than Father himself persevered, and with my hands Your mission shall be done. This world shall see resurrection and health because of me." If that is the pledge you can give, then this is the place where God will look down and take great joy. Those who can solemnly pledge this serious and most difficult yet down-to-earth commitment, raise your hands. Thank you.

With this thought and conviction let us rejoice on this Parents' Day. God bless you. Thank you all.

## **Chapter 25**

### **God's Preparation for Our Church, and Its Early Days**

#### **May 1, 1977 -- Tarrytown, New York**

The Unification Church was formally established in 1954; however, prior to the founding of our church a most incredible series of events took place to lay the necessary foundation. I want you to understand that God had been working for this new dispensation for approximately 40 years prior to World War II, fulfilling His promises to the Korean people for the forthcoming great event of the new age.

Through the Principle you know that God has been working to fulfill His will by having His vertical dispensation indemnified horizontally. This morning I would like to reveal some of the extraordinary works of God in connection with our church's founding.

According to the Principle, the history of God's providence is developed on three different levels: the dispensations centering on God Himself, centering on the angelic world, and centering on man. The Old Testament era is the period during which God Himself worked directly in the forefront; in preparing the foundation for the future dispensation God was revealing the pattern of restoration. The New Testament era is equivalent to the work of the angelic world because salvation could be achieved only spiritually. The Completed Testament era, or time of the Second Advent, is the era in which people on the earth assume the major responsibility. Therefore, in order to consummate human history one nation must be found whose history encapsulates the entire vertical history of God.

Abraham made three types of offerings to God on his altar: a dove and pigeon, a she-goat and ram, and a heifer. The intriguing part of Abraham's offering was that there were two animals representing the growth stage, but only one animal representing the perfection stage; this indicated that perfection was yet to come. Korea was chosen as the stage for the fulfillment of the last chapter of human history in God's dispensation, and consequently Abraham's offering had to be physically and spiritually manifested on the horizontal level in Korea. The work of God Himself, or the equivalent of the Old Testament era, plus the work of Jesus and the Holy Spirit together in the New Testament era, all had to be manifested in that land in order to fulfill the final chapter of human history. The foundation for those events had to be laid physically here on earth.

### ***Eve's role in restoration***

The ultimate goal of God is to find one perfected Adam, but that Adam cannot come into being unless an Eve is found through whom he can be perfected. In other words, even though Adam might be appointed by God, he could never entirely fulfill his responsibility alone. In the Garden of Eden, Eve was responsible for initiating the fall of man; therefore, unless an Eve can be found who can indemnify the fall in the Garden of Eden, Adam would have no way to assume the supreme position of perfection.

Eve also had no way to reach perfection without Adam. In order to reach her perfection, Eve must either create Adam, meet Adam, or give birth to Adam. At the time of Jesus Christ, the role of John the Baptist was similar to the bride's role, and through the fulfillment of his mission the perfected Jesus was to truly stand as the Messiah. These events of 2,000 years ago occurred on the national level, but the coming of the Second Advent will take place on the universal level, and Eve must take the role of John the Baptist in bringing perfected Adam to the world.

The dispensation of restoration does not begin at the highest position in heaven, but must always start from the lowest possible human situation. Why is that? Ultimately Adam is solely responsible to bring God back to this world and bring mankind back to God. As the man who is responsible for all mankind, Adam should begin his journey at the very bottom

of hell and pass through every kind of human life and environment on his way to the throne of God. In this way he can embrace all of mankind in the bosom of salvation. Furthermore, the Lord who is coming for that mission must ultimately serve Eve. He must come all the way up from the bottom of hell and perfect himself, then meet her and serve her almost as devotedly as he serves God.

Women have many qualifications, but the most precious title a woman can have is that of mother. Adam must serve Eve even more than he would serve his own mother. Another precious title that a woman can win is that of a bride, or wife, and apart from her family the greatest responsibility and glory that a woman can assume is that of empress or queen of the Kingdom of God. When someone asks a woman, "Can you be a -- true mother?" and her answer is yes, then she is already speaking in universal terms. Not every woman will become a queen in God's kingdom; many more will become entitled to the roles of true mother and true wife. But you sisters here all want to become empresses also, don't you?

Who is authorized to bestow these titles upon women? God? Jesus, who represents the angelic world? You women will not assume your true rights until you meet the true Adam. That is principled, isn't it? Since all the men who ever lived on earth were fallen, then in the sight of God, women have actually never met a true man, and for this reason were not able to assume their rights. Women have been mistreated and miserable throughout history, cast out of their true position. They have been exploited by evil individuals, evil families, societies, nations and by Satan himself.

There have been many queens in the world, but their positions still had no value, because until women meet the true man who is appointed by God they cannot assume the true rights of the woman's role. When will that day of liberation come?

### ***Women's liberation***

Christian history reveals the culmination of God's dispensation most clearly. All the women of the world are waiting for the one moment when the Messiah will come into this world representing the universal man. Always in the past women have been taking positions above men, even trying to control them. This trend in the history of women will continue until 1988. The women's liberation movement has certainly been successful in this country, with American women seizing the role of empress.

In biblical history women had no rights and the men assumed the major role in God's dispensation, but that was an extreme situation and in one sense American women have the right idea. According to the Bible women are supposed to wear veils, meaning that women should be humble and meek in preparation to meet the Bridegroom. But instead of just taking off their veils, women have even taken off their clothes! Throughout the world women are accepted even when they are practically naked.

In this country women have a commanding voice at home. In a typical American home the wife is master of the house, while the husband is like a servant; his shoulders are hunched over and he is always checking to see what his wife's mood is. How about you women, do you agree with that? The other day in New York I saw an incredible scene. A bunch of

poor miserable men had gotten together in a picket line and were carrying signs proclaiming a men's liberation movement: "We want liberation from women." Your laughing testifies that these problems are real. Actually all those men are wasting their time demonstrating; they should just join the Unification movement.

None of these things are happening at random. There is a reason and a principled meaning behind them. This is a critical time, and God is consummating His entire history; 70 represents perfection, and so for 70 years women will be trying to assume their rightful, original role. This is their time of preparation to meet the true man.

I understand the reason behind taking such initiative in America, but it is also time for restored women to resume the objective aspect of their original role. All you sisters, would you like to be recognized for being feminine and charming, or would you like to be known for being very courageous and tom-boyish? All you brothers who laughed, would you like to have tom-boys as your wives, or women who are feminine and charming? When I was matching couples for the Blessing, I asked the Western men what nationality they would like their wives to be. Ninety-nine percent of them asked for Oriental women. I am sure it was very embarrassing for the Western sisters to hear this.

It would not be easy for most of you American women to have an Oriental husband, because most of them are shorter than you are. Would you sisters like to have tall men or short men as your husbands? Generally a man thinks that his wife should be at least slightly shorter than he is; that looks very normal. God gave women the privilege of always looking up to their husbands. They should not look down on men; that is the Principle. God actually made women shorter than men for the sake of women. If women were taller than men, then throughout history their lives would have been even more miserable because they would have to do all the reaching for high things.

God thought a lot about how to create women. Instead of making women taller than men, He made women a little shorter, but with bigger hips. Why? Because women are to assume two roles. First, in giving birth to children women need a strong foundation, and second, they will be living most of their lives in a sitting position, so God provided built in cushions. Men have narrow hips without cushions because men are supposed to take the initiative and always be in action. A woman is to be objective, receiving grace from her husband and always sitting home comfortably waiting for him. That is the way it should be. At the same time a man should be masculine, and that is why he has broad shoulders and strong arms. Going out into the world is the man's role.

Now the time has come for women to restore their original role, particularly American women. Nowadays American men just do not want to get married and become the slaves of domineering women. Sometimes women get married intending to take advantage of men by divorcing them later and getting their money in alimony. Currently in America, a man who is divorced more than once can become miserably poor because the courts award everything to his ex-wives, while a woman who gets divorced more than once gets richer and richer. Again, there is a dispensational reason for this. Women are important in the sight of God since they are in a position to take more of an objective role to the

Messiah when he comes. Previously Satan used women to take everything away from men, but at this time God is using women to take everything away from Satan. However, such actions will be justified only if the wealth is subsequently given to God.

Where in American society can we find the true mother, true wife, and true empress? This is the problem, and a recreation process must take place. We should reeducate women to become true wives and mothers, and then they will be eligible to become queens. Are you Unification women being reeducated? Is your thinking different from that of ordinary American women? Your answer is very spiritless. If you have to be asked to answer willingly, then you have not met the standard yet.

This phenomenon of women being able to rise and entrench themselves in power is very recent, showing that the time has come when God will elevate one woman to completely embody the Holy Spirit on earth. This is the time for the birth of the true Eve. God is looking for the ideal woman who has the qualifications and potential to become a true wife and true mother, and eventually the true queen or empress of the universe. Every woman is a candidate for this position, which is why women in general have been given a chance to rise. But God is looking for one perfect woman to summon out of the satanic world. She must have the potential to become the true wife and mother and queen, in order to be established as the first God-centered wife, mother and queen.

### ***Beginning my public ministry***

There were symbolic internal conditions that had to be fulfilled before I was eligible to begin my ministry. You now know that the appearance of the Messiah is drastically different from the conventional belief about the Lord coming in glory. The history of God's dispensation starts from the servant period of the Old Testament era, continues through the adopted son's period of the New Testament era, and culminates with the Completed Testament era as the period of true son, true father, true husband, and true king. The entire vertical history of 6,000 biblical years has to be indemnified in the life of the Messiah before the physical dispensation even begins.

This internal dispensational history that I speak of all took place before 1947; my public ministry began after that year. The 7-year period from 1947 to 1954, the year that the Unification Church was formally established, was the period in which I set physical conditions. The first place I went was North Korea. That 7-year period was truly an incredible time. Having spiritually recovered the qualification for lordship before 1947 I had to set the condition of physical suffering in order to launch my own ministry, as well as the organization that came about in 1954. Those 7 years were a time of incredible suffering.

That foundation was finally laid in 1954, when the formal name of our church was established as the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity and our church began as a legal entity. From that year on through the 7 years leading up to 1960, I built the substantial foundation of our movement in preparation for the installation of the True Parents in 1960. This was the greatest turning point of all; God's blessing came to

Adam's family with the Blessing of the True Parents. The first 7 years of the True Parents' 21-year course took place from 1960 to 1967. This was the foundation for the heavenly family. My personal 21-year course, which paralleled Jacob's 21-year course, also ended in 1967.

I worked to lay the national foundation during the 7 years from 1967 through 1974. In order to lay the national foundation, the members in Korea, particularly the blessed members, completely sacrificed their family life. For a 3-year period the Korean family endured incredible suffering and tribulation.

By 1972 I had already established a victory on the national level, and had begun working on the worldwide level. Therefore, in 1972 a tremendous movement was initiated in America, while in Korea a fierce battle was yet being waged, both spiritually and physically. The Korean family members had gone out and were confronting tremendous physical sacrifices. They were leading lives of great physical suffering during the time I came to America to build the spiritual foundation on the worldwide level. In other words, I began working on the worldwide level while the Korean family was still working on the national level. The dedicated efforts of the blessed families of Korea were symbolic of the fulfillment of Jesus' mission.

In 1972, by undertaking the Day of Hope tours, I launched the spiritual condition of declaring God's message throughout America. Do you think I was victorious? America had never seen such a man. For 3 1/2 years I moved like a whirlwind through every state in America, meeting this nation's leaders and receiving many proclamations from mayors and governors, including Jimmy Carter, who was then governor of Georgia. At that time I received spiritual acceptance from America. This was a most fortunate condition for America to make. Even though many Americans have since become very negative, America at least welcomed me when I first came. In the future some Americans will beseech God, "Please forgive us. Even though people don't understand now, please remember that as a nation we gave Reverend Moon more proclamations than any other nation."

By the end of 1974 I had successfully completed the Day of Hope crusade, in Los Angeles, and on Dec. 26, 1974, I returned to Korea. My return was needed to directly link to Korea the spiritual victory that we won here in America on the worldwide level. My worldwide victory must finally become a physical one. In order to do that I had to reap spiritual victory here in America, bring it back to Korea, and then begin the physical worldwide dispensation from that land.

### ***The worldwide dispensation***

The worldwide dispensation on the physical level began in 1975. That was the year I substantially turned Korea upside down. On Jan. 6, 1975, I invited all the prominent people in Korea to the banquet room of the Chosun Hotel in Seoul, and there made the first address of my public ministry in Korea, in my native tongue. I invited people from all walks of life -- the prime minister and government ministers -- all were in one room. That

was the first time they had heard me speak in public. That banquet was the beginning of the Day of Hope tour in Korea.

Before that time I had never made a public appearance or address in Korea; instead I only spoke behind the scenes to our church members. The mission of the Messiah must be manifested on a worldwide level, and for this reason I first spoke publicly in America, which represents the world. In addition, America is the Christian nation that is playing the central role in God's dispensation.

In 1975, a most important dispensational victory was won in Korea. After the Day of Hope banquet at the Chosun Hotel I went to every major city throughout the Republic of Korea, declaring God's message to tens of thousands of people. It was the most historical evangelical crusade that ever took place in Korea. It was climaxed by the Korean Rally for World Freedom on June 7, on Yoido Island, which was attended by 1.2 million people. At that rally I publicly declared that communism is the enemy of mankind and the enemy of God.

It is most interesting that at that time the Korean government was in the position of supporting me instead of opposing me. The major Christian denominations were accusing the Korean government of violating civil liberties, but their opposition to the South Korean government could only benefit Kim Il Sung of North Korea. However, the Unification Church took a stand representing the true spirit of Christianity, supporting the South Korean government and declaring war against Kim Il Sung. The rally on June 7 was a most tremendous dispensational victory. Why? When Jesus came 2,000 years ago, the leaders of Judaism, the central religion of God's providence, cooperated with the governments of Israel and Rome in crucifying the Messiah. But in 1975 the Korean government and the Unification Church members accepted me and raised me up in a most dramatic way instead of rejecting me. It was also most significant that representatives from 60 nations participated in the rally under my leadership.

The Christian population in Korea is said to be 4 million. The Christian leaders saw how the Unification Church was able to mobilize such a dramatic demonstration against communism, and to keep from being outdone by us, they hastily organized a rally against Kim Il Sung that was held several weeks later. But even with 49 Christian denominations supporting it, attendance at their rally was less than one-third of our 1.2 million.

The situation at that time was like a showdown between the Unification Church and all the Christian churches, with the government looking on. The Unification Church had won such an obvious landslide victory, however, that the whole nation had to acknowledge what I had accomplished. Shortly afterward the government decided to compete with me and they also held a big rally against Kim Il Sung, but even under government auspices less than 1.2 million people came. The Korean people just couldn't imagine how I could have been so successful that year; it was almost as though some ghost had appeared and overnight done incredible things.

By attracting world attention and gathering the representatives of 60 nations, the June 7 rally accomplished a physical victory on the worldwide level. On the foundation of all our successes I could expand that substantial victory, and so I returned again to America, this time with a different, heightened mission. My previous mission in America had been on a spiritual level, but in 1975 I came back to America to fulfill a physical mission. You know what we have done in this country since then.

The first 3 years of the third 7-year course were 1975, 1976, and 1977. You are the eyewitnesses of the Yankee Stadium and Washington Monument campaigns, which culminated in physical victory. on a worldwide scale. Initially I had planned to have the Washington Monument rally in 1977, but we were even ahead of God's schedule. The purpose of the Yankee Stadium crusade was to completely win American public opinion in support of us, and to demonstrate our strength. However, God was wiser, and He gave us rain that day, thinking, "Instead of being deterred by the rain, I know Reverend Moon will be spurred on to do more. I will give the rally a little sprinkle of water so that he will even be inspired to work ahead of schedule." That was God's plan.

Within 100 days, God's prediction came true. I was determined to schedule the Washington Monument rally ahead of time. However, the total time devoted to the Washington Monument campaign only amounted to 40 days. We had to make plans and get all the permits, and that took so much time that we didn't even know whether we could legally have the rally that year. By the time all the permits were secured there were only 40 days left, but I said, "The die is cast. Go ahead."

The Washington Monument rally will remain recorded in American history, but not just as a record breaking religious crusade; its tremendous impact will be felt even more in the days to come. Scholars in all the social sciences and in all religions will research it very deeply, trying to find out how one man from Korea could accomplish a rally that not even the American government or any churches had thought about attempting. Whether they like it or not, and whether they accept me or not, people everywhere have to recognize my tremendous impact. This is one decisive result of the Washington Monument rally.

I have explained before what Washington Monument means in light of the dispensation. No matter what difficulty or opposition comes to the Unification Church, it will not disrupt our advance and prosperity. I am the only one who can build the superhighway that will enable mankind to reach God.

God has three major headaches. The greatest problem of mankind is communism, and we are the only group with a solution to communism. Second is the decline of Christianity, and third is the immorality of today's young people. Only under my leadership can we bring new life to the young people of America. Does President Carter have solutions to these problems? Are the Christian churches posing solutions?

### ***America since World War II***

In reality the decline of Christianity is like the rushing waters of Niagara Falls. Even the famous evangelists and religious leaders cannot reverse the tide. However, suppose

today's Christians and the media were open minded enough to assist us in what we are doing. The Unification movement has the conviction and philosophy that can reverse the tide of decline in the churches with 3 years. There is a way back to true life and we have a God given solution. But because most people have closed their minds and become negative, they are unfortunately missing this great opportunity to be revived. The entire free world has become helpless, crumbling before the threat of communism, yet the solution to communism is resting in our hands. There is a solution for the present dilemmas of the world; there is a way to liberate American young people from being victimized by drugs and immorality. We have the solution, yet most people refuse to look.

Because you know the solution, you are responsible for America. You are going to save this nation and give the young people a new vision and sense of morality. Through the victory of World War II, God gave America the chance to influence a vast portion of the world. If America had truly been God-centered, then significant groundwork would already have been achieved for the Kingdom of God. But what happened after World War II? America retreated constantly from her worldwide responsibilities, becoming dangerously isolated.

God has given America a most extraordinary chance to work for Him by literally bringing the free world into a God-centered kingdom. America was in a position to take the initiative for good in Africa, Asia, Europe and South America, but look at the world situation now. One by one America has closed its door to those continents; already America has almost entirely retreated from Asia. Unless America advances in a new direction, it will soon be trembling alone. The Soviet Union was demolished during World War II and was struggling to survive against great odds, but even under those circumstances the communist leaders expanded their power and influence in the world. If the Soviets could advance in such a way in 30 years under adverse conditions, then what can they do in the next 5 years, when world conditions are more favorable?

In the next 5 years America is going to face a very difficult time of danger and crisis. It is like a locomotive racing toward a cliff. I am the one man who is single mindedly trying to brake that locomotive. I am trying to turn this nation around by mobilizing a handful of young people. It may seem to be an impossible task, but you will see that what we are doing is God's mandate.

If I had never known God, then I could be America's worst adversary, even worse than the communists. But the only reason that I have the capabilities I do is because I know the dispensation of God. In looking at what America has done to me, my personal reaction is sometimes an intense desire to get revenge; I even sometimes feel that this nation cannot be forgiven. But by knowing God's feelings I can suppress these emotions.

I have a dual position regarding America. I love this nation and I want to be America's guardian, a real champion for this nation's survival. At the same time my mission has a most fearful aspect because if God were to say, "All right, My son, you have done your job. Leave that country alone;" then there would be no mercy given to this nation. If God

ever cut Himself off from America, you would see for yourselves how quickly this nation would decline.

I did not come here to take direction from the State Department or to win the little green card that permits me to live in this country. I am only here because of the mandate of God. Put yourself in my position; look at what the media has done in the last 3 1/2 years, portraying me as a monster. If you were in my position, how would you feel toward this country on a personal level? From that point of view this nation has committed unforgivable acts. Yet if I were to leave, this country would be in a miserable state.

You should not just know these things, but take up the responsibility for them. Even more than I, you have got to go and awaken these people and turn this nation back to God. I am determined to train young people to become responsible for this country. For example, I am now training the seminarians; they are making up a new fishing net now, and I have had them fishing in the icy waters of the Hudson River in order to see what kind of young people they are. They are not making nets and fishing for the sake of making money, but in order to build their own iron will and to become the determined young leaders who cannot be stopped by anything.

I do not only deliver sermons to you. When I get down to action I can do anything, and do it better than anyone. The seminarians are really rediscovering me, finding out that I do not just have theories, but that I have the kind of knowledge that can only come from experience. I have studied fishing and designed several patented tools for fishing. For instance, sometimes the hook gets caught in the fish's mouth and fishermen have an awful time getting the hook out. I have invented a small tool to push the barb through and get the hook out easily.

One member saw me cutting the metal to make this tool myself, and he said, "Father why do you work so hard? Why don't you just go to a tackle shop and buy one?"

I told him, "America doesn't have such a tool. If I could buy this kind of tool then why should I make it?"

I invented a new net at Barrytown, one you have never seen. It is a one-way-street net, and once the fish goes into the net there is no way it can turn around. Yesterday I had an appointment with some people at Belvedere, but I had a new inspiration for the net and got caught up in directing the seminarians about how to make it. We worked hard all night and I could not come here on time.

Do you want to come fishing with me? I don't want you to come, because you just don't know anything about fishing; I would have to yell at you and give you a hard time. How can I train you people? Do you still want to join me?

### ***Why I accept this path***

Through this dispensational history that I have partially described this morning, I have come to the position where all the debts in history have been paid. We are now beginning

to erect a new history and I have declared the opening of a new age. Based on the victories I have described, I was able to proclaim the Day of the Victory of Heaven on Oct. 4 last year. On Feb. 23, the first day of the Year One could be declared. Tens of thousands of spirit men have been assigned to each one of you, and if you reach out you will feel them around you. If you feel you are accompanied wherever you go, then you shall be successful. You can fight hundreds of battles and reap hundreds of victories. If you have gained confidence by knowing what age we are living in and who I am, and you also know what victory has already been won and what kind of foundation has been laid, then wherever you go you can bring victory.

The foundation and cornerstone of the worldwide victory have been laid. This year and next year we will expand our substantial strength, aiming to raise up 30,000 dedicated young men and women in this country. By mobilizing this force the three major headaches of God can all be solved. The time will come when this nation and government will say, "Reverend Moon, won't you stay longer? Don't go; we need you." That is the time that I will go.

Many kings and queens and heads of state will urge me to come to their countries and I will accept many of their invitations. Even now I have many invitations but I decline them, saying, "I am more needed here in America. I have a challenge and mission in this country" The fact that I still receive opposition here shows that my mission is not yet completed, so I want to stay. Are you Americans or Koreans? As Americans you should love your country more than a Korean like me. If you fail to do that, then do not call me Father, because you and I have nothing in common with each other. I did not come here to serve Korea, but to serve America. Are you Americans going to do more than I? Are you ahead of me now or will you be in the future? I want you to be greater than I am.

The past that I described this morning was a lonely path that I walked all by myself; it is a lonely battle that I have been waging my entire life, having no friend to understand me. Now, 30 years later they come to me saying, "Father, now we understand what you said 30 years ago." That is their honest confession. You may not understand what I am saying this morning until 30 years from now. This is always my situation.

I have always been a lonely man, because no one has ever truly understood me. No one wanted to volunteer to go this lonely path, and the only reason that I would accept this responsibility was because I knew that God also was deeply lonely and sorrowful. Without this understanding I would never have accepted it. The true road of restoration is not an easy one. Following me also is not an easy path but a most difficult one. Many people, even yourselves, may-not be able to consummate this path in their lifetime. It is probably far better for those who have no confidence to pack up and go live as they wish.

Along with everything else, much of my hard time here in America is because of you. Without you no one would criticize me. I am so well known that when I go to New York I have absolutely no freedom. I cannot even buy clothes or go to a cubbyhole of a restaurant without people asking, "Aren't you Reverend Moon? Would you please sign this?" I have never preferred this way of life, but since I did not want it God gave this role

to me. What can I do? I have become famous and I want you Americans to also become famous; the American people love to be proud of themselves. Please go ahead and make yourself famous for doing the work of God, and after doing so you can become a shield around Mother and me and we can relax a little bit.

Can you become famous in the name of God? If you cannot do that by yourselves, then I can make you famous. Do you prefer to become famous on your own in the name of God, or do you want me to make you famous? If you do not go ahead of me and really give yourself totally for the sake of this nation, then when you go into the spirit world all the Americans there will be pointing accusing fingers, jeering, "What a poor American you are! You knew the dispensation and met Father but how little you did!" You do not want to be ashamed, do you?

When I had some American women go into the Hudson River to fish the other day, some of them became stiff and numb. I have a mammoth task to make you into real women and then bless you. It might take 10 years for you to pass the test, but do you want to pass before you get married or after? It took God 6,000 years to restore one Adam, but that is using biblical terminology. Counting by our years, it took many thousands or even millions of years for God to recreate one Adam. Is 10 years very long for me to recreate a perfect Eve?

At the recent Blessing here everybody's appetite was whetted, with even young brothers and sisters asking, "Father, what about me?" At East Garden one of the staff, who is only 23 years old, said, "Father, can I be included?" I had to laugh. "You are hardly even born yet!" On the other hand, in America you have every freedom to get married, even five or ten times. Why don't you go ahead and exercise your freedom? If you all go away, I will have fewer problems.

This is the 23rd anniversary of the founding of the Unification Church. These 23 years are just the external history of our church, but the true history, prior to the founding of the Unification Church, is known only to a few people whom I can trust. I was destined to suffer -- as a servant, adopted son, son, husband, father, and king -- more than anyone in those positions ever suffered in history. This was my destiny, and by doing this I could totally restore those who suffered on every level. This period of indemnity and suffering shall be over by 1981 at the latest.

If white America fails to respond, then God will raise up another people or another nation that will come against the white people of America. I do not have to defend my actions; I can just be silent, waiting and knowing that God's timetable is ticking by. On the other hand, however, since primarily white people are denouncing me, God can send more young white people to us, and in the future more white people will rise up in my defense. That is the way God will work.

### ***Most of you are not qualified***

Before I came, the universe was engulfed in darkness. All the many philosophers and religious people did not know of the heart of God and the deepest meaning of the Bible,

and when I revealed many things for the first time it was like the sun rising. Now everyone can see the true picture of God and history. I have not only discovered the truth, but I have lived it, and through experience I know how this universal truth will work.

The Unification Church is a school far greater than Harvard or Yale or Princeton, and is a place where only the elite of the universe can enroll. Harvard University can graduate a Ph.D., but that person can only turn around and teach theories at a blackboard. Even a thousand Harvards together could not create one son of God, but our school turns out sons of God every day. Millions of dollars could not pay the tuition at this school, and only a special kind of people can come here. To make sure that only God's elite come to the Unification Church, God is purposely letting opposition and negativity be stirred up. In the face of negativity from society, those who can come to the Unification Church have to be special. Under such adverse conditions, you could not join unless you have received special revelation from God, or have a brilliant conscience and heart. That is why I say that this is really a gathering of the elite.

Only those who are given direct revelation from God are actually eligible to join this group, but all of you are like bystanders who all of a sudden had some good luck. Why? The Principle is bringing people faster than the revelations are coming from God. This is where the blessing of receiving God's revelation can be seen. But because you joined the Unification Church by using your logic, then you analyze and evaluate everything too much. When I give some direction you stop and think about whether you will obey or not. However, the person who has received revelation from God directly knows who I am and does not even have to debate about following any direction I may give. God has told him who I am and he can instantly respond.

You are not actually qualified to be in this school, but God has made a special dispensation. You are like freshmen and sophomores in this great school, just eager to soak up the truth like a sponge. How could you ever say, "God, You must make me famous"? Just to be here is such a privilege that you cannot presume to expect that you will automatically receive the Blessing. From God's standpoint it is laughable for a person who is not even crawling like a baby to think about being married. After 2,000 years even Jesus does not yet have his bride with him. How could you assume that you deserve the Blessing? You older sisters may be thinking, "Father, I am 30 years old. It is getting late!" But think of Jesus who is 2,000 years old.

You think you know me well, but you hardly know anything about me; only God knows me completely. Actually you have met a most unusual person. How are you different after meeting me? Those who say, "I am an absolutely different person since meeting you," raise your hands. What is the difference? You have been fund raising and witnessing and getting all kinds of persecution and scornful treatment. Is that what is different? Have you just done all of those things passively and reluctantly, or because a gigantic change has come about in you so you can tackle those things willingly?

How do you know I really sacrifice myself for humanity? After a long trip in the car my back aches very much, so would you buy me a giant plane? When? You may answer,

"When you need the plane, we will buy you one ' but don't you know that I needed a plane the first day I landed here in America? America is a huge country to travel around. The time will come when contributions will come from all over the world from people wanting me to buy a plane that I can fly to their countries. But if I do get a plane, the American State Department will say, "He just sent his young people out and exploited them to buy his gigantic plane." My buying a plane will bring even more criticism.

I have already done many things, creating factories to manufacture many varied products, and certainly before you buy me a plane, I can create one. These things are easy compared with the work of restoration. The process of restoration is such a complex labyrinth that even for me it is never easy. I am glad that you were not given direct responsibility restoration by God. You are lucky not to have received that mandate.

### ***Your only connection to me***

You will never know me fully. No matter what you think, even though you call me Father, you will never really know my true value until you die. In spirit world you will all of a sudden discover how much you are indebted to me. In all of biblical history, starting from Adam and Eve, and Cain and Abel, every mission ended in failure. Noah, Abraham, Moses, all of the Old Testament prophets and John the Baptist all ended in failure. Even Jesus' mission was left uncompleted. The record of biblical history is a record of failure. In my own lifetime I have to mend everything and replace all those past failures with success. Do you think that is easy?

The foundation you stand on in the Unification Church is truly miraculous; all the historical failures have been mended properly and put into one unified work of God. I have successfully laid the foundation on the family level and expanded it to the worldwide level. Now I am ready to rest and welcome my Sabbath. Now that I have done my job I can stand before the throne of God without shame and say, "Father, I have done what You asked." Can you grasp the significance of this? All the events in the history of God are not some blind sequence of human behavior; there is a definite pattern and formula behind them all. I not only unlocked all the hidden formulas behind history, but I have put all of history together into one victorious harvest.

I am a complex and difficult person to meet. If you meet me in the wrong way you could be ruined. Your own conscience and the spirit world will come against you. I have witnessed the downfall of people who met me incorrectly. America and the world shall not be an exception to this. I think it is impossible for you understand this, but I say it anyway.

I came to stop the destruction of the individual, family, tribe, nation and world, to brake this rushing locomotive that is racing toward its doom. You also have the power to do that once you make up your mind. Once you are firm in your commitment to serve God, then God will be with you; there is no exception to this. Once your mind is completely set, then I know God will be with you.

God's work has been that of taking serious, drastic action to reverse the rush of human history toward its doom. I am sure you have a certain reservation in your commitment

because this is so vast to grasp and digest. You are in awe of what it means to have the weight of history on your shoulders; Can you seriously say, "All right, I'm going to lift up history. I can be the moving force to turn history around." Have you ever thought about it, and can you realistically feel that weight upon your shoulders?

Equivalent to the Old and New Testament eras, many spiritual groups appeared as the forerunners to raise up this one religious movement. They all came to serve a certain purpose, but they are all gone and the Unification Church is thriving now. From its very birth in Korea the Unification Church has been controversial, really upsetting the nation and world. Do you think this is a movement that will eventually decline and disappear, or will we not only ourselves prosper, but bring new life to the rest of the world? We shall either be destroyed or enable the world to live. Either we will be victorious or our opponents will be victorious. If down in our guts we have the hidden potential power to transform our enemies into our friends, then nobody can doubt us. Restoration' is very difficult, and in living the Principle you have to follow the formula'. There can be no jump, and each step must be taken with your entire life at stake. If you are holding anything of yourself in reserve, then you can never progress.

The 7,000 years of biblical history extend from the original creation of man to his recreation or perfection. The indemnity for this 7,000 years must be encompassed in one man's 7-year course. In one 7-year period of my life I paid the debt of %000 years of history. Would God recognize that I had done that if I simply made an announcement of it? Do you think Satan would acknowledge that? I waged an absolute battle to go each step of that course. I had to literally pay, so that even Satan could not find fault. You are now riding piggyback upon that victorious foundation. You are like a hitchhiker. I have acquired a car and put gas in the tank and become an experienced driver. You just happened to be nearby and I said, "Come along." You will be eternally grateful just to have had the privilege to ride in this car, but do you as a passenger have the privilege of telling the driver to get you food and give you a heavenly marriage? That is exactly your situation.

Outside of the will of God, there is no connection between you and me; I do not need you. I only give 100 percent of my attention to you because I know God's desire. Do you understand? Actually you can contribute very little to the fulfillment of the dispensation, since it is already done. Do I still need you when you are only a burden?

God cannot abandon this country upon which His will is so directly resting. You at least have a chance to do something to help God's providence here so that you can receive eternal credit in spirit world for your accomplishment. If you have no strong desire to dedicate yourself for the salvation of this country, then do not even mention that you are a Unification Church member. If your goal is not parallel with mine, then you are no longer a member of the Unification Church. Are you fully aware of what you are expected to do? You have no right to call me Father unless your purpose is parallel with mine. Before you call me Father you must become worthy to be my child. Before I speak about anything, I live through the situation and fulfill it. Will you do that too?

April is over and one-third of 1977 is gone. If America does not change, if you make no remarkable headway in 1977 and 1978, then I will have no further interest in this country and will go elsewhere. You may rest and relax, but I will never do that. I will always reserve the right to say before God, "There is nothing I have left undone for the sake of America's dispensation. The American people never responded to me! but Father, You know that I have done every single thing I needed to do." Are you serious about the salvation of this country?

### ***You must follow my path***

To find the path for restoration you have to search diligently and you have to go every step. The secrets found in my search for restoration have been revealed. I have completed that search and put the Principle together so that all can find it. All you have to do is live it. I organized the 7,000 year history of mankind's failure into a 7-year course, and I have showed you how to walk that course. You must do that, but you must be deeply serious about it, like Jesus was while walking toward the Mount of Calvary. You must adopt the seriousness of that moment.

Are you looking forward to the day of fulfillment and hope? You are now burdened by the responsibilities of yourself, your family, society, nation and world, and you must go individually, just as I have gone. I have laid the superhighway of the Principle so that everybody can go, but each one of you must actually do the traveling. In this 7-year period of time you will start by going the servant's path as obediently as a lamb, then going through the period of adopted son, the period of the son, husband and wife, father and mother, and finally the emperor and empress of the universe. You have to precisely cover this in 7 years' time.

When you are triumphant in this 7-year course, then the past emperors and empresses will bow down to you when you are elevated to the spirit world. This is a very precious time because we can live through this while on earth. I have been walking this path for 40 years here on earth and now I am asking you to successfully go this course for only 7 years. If you say, "Father, please give me an easier task ' then you have the mind of a thief.

When I began the Unification Church in Korea, our headquarters was a small shabby house. On May 1, 1954, I set up a small plaque in front of that shabby house, probably the smallest sign you could find in history, but the biggest words ever spoken: "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity." The biggest words, but the smallest sign and smallest house -- that is the way the Unification Church began!

The room was so small that when I lay down, my head hit one wall and my feet hit another wall. I was utterly penniless at that time, and that shabby house was not even owned by the church but was rented. But now here in America, there is a concrete foundation laid in all 50 states in terms of having physical centers. You are going to do precisely what I did 23 years ago. You live in a small cubbyhole, but you will treat every person who comes to you like a king and queen, serving them like a servant.

If any of you state leaders want to be served because you hold some position, then you will never be successful. You have to start out as a servant of servants, and go through each step. Unless you demonstrate the true spirit of service you will never be successful, because the Unification Church was not built that way. You must go the path that I went.

Unification Church women have to think, "God, don't worry about me. I am not even worthy to look at any man as my husband. I am not quite ready, and I would only be a burden to the man who would marry me. I am perfectly content with what I am doing, and I will give every ounce of energy for Your purpose." Is that how you think, or are you proud women instead, thinking, "I am capable, and I certainly deserve the respect and admiration of men"? Are you that confident?

Have you ever imagined having a beggar from the street as your husband? Internally that beggar might be a godly man. Have you ever thought, "I am not even worthy to receive this man as my husband"? I started out as a servant of servants and you also must start out as a servant of servants.

For the sake of God and for the restoration of mankind, there is nothing that I cannot do. After you are successful in the servant position, you will be elevated to the position of adopted son. But remember that such a recommendation does not come easily. Does a master lightly say, "You are even too good to be my adopted son. I will make you my son and my heir"? That kind of recognition is not given freely. You are starting as a servant. Will God soon pronounce His blessing upon you, saying, "You are truly my son, and I am going to give you my blessing to become husband and wife"?

Unless you as parents have the firm conviction that you have been totally liberated from Satan and from sin, how can you ever give birth to a sinless child? Do you have the confidence to say, "My children are born of God and no longer have anything to do with original sin. They are not born of Satan and are eligible directly for the Kingdom of God." That is not easy, is it? Furthermore, can you raise yourself up to be an emperor or empress so that when you go to spirit world the highest possible saints will bow down to you? You are going to be the ancestors of your restored family tree, and those who carry your family name shall be your descendants. I have covered that entire territory and consummated it victoriously. The Unification Church is the school where you can be taught, and I am now in the position to show you the way.

My 40 years' experience and fulfillment can be organized so that you can go that entire path in 7 years. I am 57 years of age; 40 years have passed since I started the dispensation at the age of 16. Ever since I was 16, I have encountered intense experiences and walked the thorny path. I am the pioneer who cleared away every obstacle and made a broad, smooth highway ready for anyone to find and follow. I not only laid the highway, but I created an automobile for you. All you have to do is get a license to become a driver and then go to the gas station to get gas. At least that much is your responsibility. If you deny and reject even this small responsibility, then forget about driving quickly to heaven; you will have to walk and nobody will sympathize with your foolishness.

Will you drive on that highway? It is necessary for you to complete your 7-year course and establish your own qualification to be blessed. You are not working for anyone else -- the Unification Church, Reverend Moon, or God -- you are working for yourself. First you must become victorious on every level, starting as the servant of mankind. I will give you more and more detailed truth, expounding on everything so precisely that you will realize, "I thought I had been a good member of the Unification Church, but now that I understand Father's criteria, I see how phony I am!"

### ***Your Blessing should be unexpected***

Do not worry about anything else for these 7 years, but become literally crazy for God and crazy to serve mankind, forgetting about yourself. All of a sudden I will say, "You are my child. The time for Blessing has come; I want you to get blessed." Then you might respond, "Have 3 years passed already? Oh no, Father, I still have more to do and I must become more mature." That is the natural response. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were not to tell God that it was time for them to get married. Instead, God was to call Adam.

. When a News World staff member wrote to me asking, "Father, I want to get blessed. Can't you bless me?" I wondered, "Does that brother really know the Principle?" Another brother was extraordinarily lucky; he was not even a candidate for the Blessing, but was just driving the candidates up for the matching when he happened to be selected. He never expected to be blessed at that time. That should be the natural situation. If you really know the Principle, you will know that this is the way the Blessing comes, just all of a sudden.

The True Parents' wedding in 1960 was not done on my own initiative. God gave me revelation after revelation, insisting, "The time has come My son. You shall prepare the altar to receive holy matrimony, and I shall bless you." This is the principled way. Even Mother never considered herself to be Mother. She was just living as a member of the church when all of a sudden her name was called to be married. Some members are thinking that they need the Blessing or that they deserve the Blessing, but that is closer to satanic thinking. All you have to do, actually, is to find your path in the Principle and just keep busy, running and running. Then all of a sudden you will find yourself kidnapped by God for the marriage ceremony.

In the strictest sense, when I observe the American family members, there is not even a single one who passes the test. If you die in the state you are in, then you cannot be fully elevated into the Kingdom of Heaven, but will only end up in a middle level like a waiting room. You need to be reeducated before you can enter heaven. You cannot avoid this principle; you have to walk and live this principle and there is no room for complaint. Could I complain to God about having so much hardship? Could I cajole God to come up with some kind of easy path or solution for me? If I ever complained, God would say, "Reverend Moon, you are not worthy to be My son. I will have to wait for another man to come."

Dispensational history was necessitated only by the fall of man. I founded the Unification Church 23 years ago and I am giving you the feeling that I had at that time. You must inherit that spirit and make it your own path. This is the meaning of this day. You must feel my heart of 23 years ago, and you too must be a pioneer of that day. My situation was just impossible at that time; under those circumstances could anybody even imagine that 23 years later I would lead events like the Washington Monument rally?

### ***Those committed will remain***

At that time I was always being investigated by the Korean government, which was constantly trying to find some reason to put me in jail. Under those circumstances could you have thought that some day I would come to America and gather together all these young people and speak at such fantastic rallies? At that time nobody else believed it, but I know who I am and where I am going, and how successful I will be. The basic determination I had then has never changed. Many people who were following me have since become tired and left the movement, but the movement still continues. Those who were self-centered just could not stay but had to leave sooner or later. Only those people who can give up their lives for the sake of the mission will remain. Compared with my 40 years, your 7 years will pass very quickly.

Shall we go or not? Without any question, we absolutely must go. In those 7 years you must experience heartbreak and tears for the sake of the family, society and nation. You must spend anguished, sleepless nights for the sake of others and the sake of the dispensation. Do not try to get by in some easy way. In the same way that I have struggled from the most lowly place all the way to the point where I could receive God's greatest blessing, you must also progress through every step. You have to realize that you are reaching higher levels as you progress with the movement.

Do you sometimes experience uplifting feelings? These are not just your feelings, but spirit world actually inspiring you. Spirit world has to be one with you for every inch of your path. From this time on my teaching will be more precise and analytical, and you will know the truth word for word. You cannot avoid your 7-year course.

You came to our movement at the most opportune time; in the shortest possible time you can cover tremendous ground and be given full credit for helping in the overall dispensation of God. You shall become a person who can help pioneer the final chapter of God's dispensational history. You are participating in the nick of time, and all you have to do is get down to work. You have the great privilege of working together with the True Parents, which millions and billions of people have been in anguish to do. They will not have that opportunity. Instead, you are the ones with me in person.

Even the people who come to join our movement now are one step behind you because they did not help to bring the great victory in Washington. You fought the battle together with me, and there will not be any more opportunities like that in history. Now our task is to win America to God and win the free world. The more you realize this the greater will be

the burden you feel, but that is the way it has to be. With that realization you will know precisely what responsibility you carry.

### ***Your 7-year course***

You have heard before about your 7-year course, but you did not feel it to the bone. Those who can say they are already committed to it, please raise your hands. Have you prayed, "God, at this moment I pledge to You that I will begin my 7-year course. I shall no longer follow the course of Adam and Eve who failed, but within 7 years' time I shall finish the path of perfected Adam and Eve. God, trust me." Have you had that showdown prayer with God? Then how can you begin your 7 years? The Bible predicts that in the Last Days there will be 7 years of chaos, suffering and hardship. All of world history will be condensed into that 7-year period of time that the Bible describes. The Bible says that very few will survive this period of suffering, and that is very true, in that the only ones who will remain within the will of God will be those who are truly determined and who truly know God, committing themselves deeply to that 7-year course.

As soon as you undertake that 7-year course of your own, you will automatically draw opposition. Nothing will occur according to your desire. If you want to go this way, then Satan will be trying to block every inch of your way, and inevitably circumstances will drag you down to the lowest possible level. You will be deprived of all honor and left with nothing, feeling completely naked. Satan will push you down, but you must welcome it, swallow it, and digest it.

What is the method to be elevated to the position of adopted son or son? You must become a person who is ready to sacrifice yourself for the sake of a servant. When you are willing to give up your life for the sake of a servant, then you will begin to find your life. At every step of the dispensation you have to be willing to give up your life. That is the quickest way to meet the heavenly requirement.

You must come to think of your own life as a trivial matter, like the morning dew. When I discovered the entire meaning and secret of the dispensation, then I felt the teachings of Jesus all the way to my bone. I felt so deeply such teachings as, "He who loses his life for my sake will gain it." Not just once but many times you must totally give up your own life. That is the only way you can cover this ground. When you give up your life and go beyond the 7-year course, then all of a sudden the universe will change and you will find your life protected. I was ready to die for the sake of the mission during the Yankee Stadium and Washington Monument campaigns. On the way to Yankee Stadium and on the way to Washington Monument I prayed, "I am willing to die for You. Whatever is required of me, God, Your will be done." There were many assassination plots and threats but I never hesitated to risk my life.

Those were truly extraordinary emergencies. Unless you can be in a position to commit yourself to that degree, you will never understand God's mission, or know the heart of Jesus, or become one with me. Whenever you encounter hardship, you can see how

miserable and inadequate you are. At that time you can rediscover yourself and spur yourself on to higher levels. This is my everyday life. .

The best way for you to safely journey through this period is to put yourself down on the lowest possible level, where you can even envy the beggars, where even sitting down at a table to eat becomes a luxury. Servants do not have the luxury of sitting down to eat at a big table with napkins and wines and so forth. We must put ourselves in the position of servant of servants.

With that attitude you can leap forward, and then you can understand humanity. Until I was 30 I never bought even one suit for myself, and for the clothes I did get I always went to a second-hand store. I never wore ties or used hair tonic or body care items. During those years I put myself in a sinner's position; I never had the courage to lift my face up but was always looking down.

Nature is asking to be seen by the true man, but unless I could fulfill my dispensational role, I did not feel privileged to even look at nature. I was so humble in my thinking that I wanted to hide in the presence of nature. Now I go to movies, but at that time I never even walked in front of a movie theater. Now I have graduated from that path, and nothing can affect what I have accomplished. I have perfected that course and transcended it.

I am like a rock and no one can entice me away from God's will. There were many women who actually wrote love letters to me with their own blood, showing their genuine devotion to me. The religious path is not easy because of the many temptations around, and you have no idea what it takes to lay the foundation. But I have done it and I am freely sharing the fruits of it with you. No one has the right to complain; rather, continually be grateful and put yourself in a meek position. Even now, that is my basic attitude toward God. After all the dispensational success so far, I still put myself in a humble position before God.

For 7 years in the Unification Church you should be determined to fulfill your mission, forgetting about eating, sleeping, and everything else. Even after your Blessing I will give the couples separate missions, and for 3 years they will go their own respective ways to fulfill another significant time period. Through all of that you must be absolutely obedient.

You must have a true picture of yourself. Some members look very substantial externally and seem to be doing a great job, but inside they are empty people, who are not worthy in the sight of God. In this period you will be given the opportunity to experience everything, being cursed, or struck, feeling great hunger, and even envying a beggar's situation. It will be a precious period, and then you will be able to say, "I know the heart of God, I know Jesus Christ, and I know Reverend Moon." My hands are not so big but they have gone through much. The Unification Church was built upon my foundation of pioneering this hidden spiritual task. This foundation is not the product of easy living, but of the most incredible suffering and spiritual endurance.

When fund raising have you ever been kicked, hit, or spit upon by others? When you taste these experiences then you must think, "This is the path that was walked by all the saints and men of God in history' Being spit at or hit is not that painful to bear, but being spit at or

hit by someone who was previously a member and who has now betrayed God is very painful. It is heartbreaking and you have to taste even that. You will finally know Jesus when you experience these things. Jesus had not only external enemies -- the people who physically nailed him down on the cross -- but he had internal enemies who betrayed him.

I have tasted prison life, not only under the communist regime but also in free Korea. I can never forget one former member who came up to me when I was being taken to the West Gate prison in Seoul. He looked at me and laughed scornfully, "You fool! Are you still doing this stupid thing?" I can never forget that man. At that moment I did not say anything to him, but in my heart I prayed, "God, give me a chance to testify to how righteous You are, and how I was obedient to You." This is just one instance of personal betrayal; there are too many to count. When I close my eyes and start to pray, tears always come forth. I have experienced so much agony and pain and heartbreak that I know God, and I am in a position to comfort Him.

### ***I have no way to sit still***

No one understands me. My parents never understood, even my wife and children can never really understand. My understanding of God is a lonely understanding. You also can be a companion to that lonely God. I always feel how vulnerable and weak I am, but I know that God trusts and is depending on me to fulfill. When I see God's expectation I just have no way to sit still. I feel, "God, You are Almighty. You can do anything You want, but because of Your own precious children's failure You put Yourself in a position of such suffering. You don't need to suffer, but You have been helpless, waiting so long for some man You could depend on. God, I really sympathize with You. I understand You."

If anyone truly knew me internally then he just could not help but be crushed by sorrow. Spiritually enlightened people who can receive revelations and instructions in their prayers are the people who stay. When they pray about me God's response is always the same; He responds to their prayer in tears because when God thinks about His lonely champion here on earth, God just weeps. The vast entanglement of human history seems utterly impossible to ever reorganize, and even God hardly knew where to begin the dispensation. But one lonely man found the secret and lived through everything to bring the movement this far. Even for God that was something to behold.

Day after day I continuously wept. My eyes became swollen and painful because the tears poured out in gallons. I could not even open my eyes to the sunlight. So many tears were shed in laying the foundation of this church. I will not explain this to you completely; you will never know because I will not tell you. If I were to tell you then you would be responsible to also go that way and I do not want that. I would rather leave an easier way for you.

That is why I do not want every one of you to repeat my entire 40 years' experience; I want to have sons and daughters who can inherit from me instead. However, if in your prayer you receive a glimpse of my path and agony here on earth, then you will certainly be blessed. If you can understand this, then in a short time you can do on earth what

would take many millions of years of experiences in the spirit world. You will eventually know anyway in spirit world, but actualizing it would take a millennium of effort. Here on earth you can cover that same ground in the shortest possible time.

I am very sympathetic with Moses' position. When Moses went to the mountain to fast and pray for 40 days and nights he could receive the Ten Commandments, but when he came back down, his own people had created a golden calf and were worshiping their idol. Moses was overcome with wrath and cried, "How could you betray God in this way?" He flung the stones to the ground and they were shattered. I have felt that same furious impulse many times. Moses went to the mountain and worked so hard to win the truth for his people, but their hearts were so

betrayal I just want to cut off that person and turn away. I have to impose the strictest discipline on myself in this area. I have my own credo and judge myself, saying, "Before you want to conquer the world or be the lord of all creation, you must attain lordship over yourself." I want to conquer the weaknesses of my own temperament.

### ***Personal relationships are the key***

If you truly want to become sons and daughters, you have to inherit the spirit of the True Parents -- my spirit and my way of thinking. If you want to be a leader you must inherit my spirit. In whatever mission you are doing, if all of a sudden you just burst into tears, feeling such a sense of urgency and sorrow for God, then your mission will definitely prosper.

We are talking about the universal salvation of mankind. We are going out fund raising to earn pennies and dollars, almost begging. How pitiful God's situation is! But you must put deep meaning into the money you earn. Compared with the wealth of the world one penny is nothing, but when your heart is resting in each penny you earn, then it shall become a gift of extraordinary value to God. The face value of a bill may be one dollar, but no millions Or dollars can purchase your heart; when you have invested your heart in that dollar it becomes priceless. When you receive the people's money and offer it to God for the sake of their blessing, every deed of yours becomes holy and divine. Then you feel such an urgency and sense of closeness with God that sometimes you just embrace a stranger and in your heart you cry out for the people. There have been many times like that in my own life.

Once I wanted to rescue a prostitute, a young girl who came to be in that pitiful situation. I loved her as my own sister, and wept with her and truly uplifted her. At first she thought I had an entirely different purpose, but instead she found a big brother, someone who really cared in the truest sense; That memory is as vivid as if it were yesterday. That kind of deed is greater and more precious than prayer.

When you are fund raising and working hard all day you may sit alone by the roadside, feeling lonely as you eat whatever humble food you have. In the middle of eating you may break out in tears. When you put yourself in such a miserable position then you will feel God so strongly. When you are selling newspapers you meet all kinds of people. Do not curse them or yell at them if they do not want to buy. They are busy people and

sometimes they do not want to be bothered, so when you stop them and they complain to you, you must accept them.

Your personal relationships are the key to everything. You do not understand how much I am training and disciplining you, molding your character according to the path that I have gone. I am taking you along that same path. When I was in school I wanted to give my friend a chance to be educated so I worked extra time at night in order to earn his tuition. Earning money was very difficult at that time, and it had to be saved penny by penny. Why was I able to do that? Because I knew the true God.

If I had developed my skills in a secular way, then I would have been the president of many corporations by now. I would have been successful and respected in an entirely different manner, but I never undertook that direction. There is no one who has shed more tears than I have, and God knows they were shed for His sake. I willingly chose the route of suffering for God's sake.

### ***I want to stand up for you***

I have been unreasonably treated by the people and persecuted. There was no personal reason for going through that suffering. But I know God's position, and instead of trying to be respected and admired by other people, I wanted to side with that lonely God. Do you think that I actually did not have personal ambitions? As a young man I certainly had ambitions and dreams, but I cut them off and closed all those doors. That is the only way I could have come this far. Even now many people think I have a great deal of money, but actually I am still penniless, even though I can influence the spending of millions of dollars. Whenever I spend money I always think of you. I never like to spend money on just myself, eating out or buying clothes.

One time I took about 20 young members out to get them seafood in New York City. The restaurant manager saw me but did not recognize me, and since I was not wearing a tie he said I could not be seated in the restaurant. I said, "Thank you very much" and left. All of a sudden he discovered that the 20 young people were following me out, and he realized who I was. He tried to fix his mistake, but I simply said, "No thank you." I am sure he knew that he missed a great opportunity, but I will not go to that place any more. Is human value decided by wearing a tie? If they treat me like that, how will they treat black people? They may kick them out. You are all suffering people and I want to stand up for you. I do not want you to be mistreated.

Every penny you earn shall go for the restoration of this country, not for personal things. The Mobile Fundraising Team members are working very hard from early morning to late at night, but they have no word of complaint toward me. If it were not for Mother I would change my underwear only once a week; it is only out of courtesy to her that I change every 3 days. Why? I know your position, and sometimes you never have a chance to change your underwear, and sometimes you have no time to do laundry.

In the past I have gone through precisely what you are doing now. You are truly inheriting my path. You and I are comrades with one thing in common we put ourselves in a position

of suffering only because we know God. If we have ever committed any crime, it is that of knowing God. We willingly chose this route; nobody has imposed it on us, so how can we complain?

Are we pursuing the wrong way and bringing destruction to the world? Is knowing God a crime? The whole world is in chaos and communism is expanding because people do not know God. The churches are breaking down. No matter how miserable such a life might look, knowing God is a privilege, and it is the one thing we cannot ever relinquish.

### ***Who will take care of God?***

A wise person will go all the way once he has made a commitment; Do not go only halfway or be mediocre, because you will only end up as a loser. If you want to become victorious, then you have to persevere all the way. In doing God's will I want to go the fastest way, never being mediocre or half-hearted. For the sake of my followers I took every precaution and checked everything about the Principle two and three times. I wanted to be absolutely sure that this is the true way of God. A true researcher tests and re-tests to make sure of his results before he announces anything to the world. I have tested this out in every way possible. You can see then what an incredible discovery I have brought to the world.

Since we are committed, we cannot afford to go just halfway. Is this month of May a new beginning, far different from April? Let's go forward with tremendous excitement. I am waiting for the kind of champion who can defeat me. Many times I am sad, feeling that I cannot afford to die because I know that even at this stage no one is competent enough to inherit my mission. No one has given me that comfort yet. I have given my life to God, but now who will love Him as much as I do? This is my only concern. When I die, who will take care of my God here on earth? I want to see someone emerge who can do that.

Is there anyone who could truly say, "Father, let me take care of your God and my God. You can go"? The person who could live up to that statement would be the center of the mainstream of history and would never perish, but prosper.

Counting in the Korean way I am now 58, and in 12 more years I will be 70 years old; in 22 more years I will be 80 years old. Recently in a serious conversation with Hyo Jin, I said, "As my son, do you know what road you should take and what preparation you should make?" When I was so serious, even that most energetic Hyo Jin became very serious. I feel that I can give myself totally for 15 more years, and in that time I must find someone to succeed me.

I cannot afford to leave the world as it is, destined to more suffering. I must leave behind a world that is being resurrected. People think that after I die the Unification Church will die. Is it true? Would you prefer the movement with me or without me? Indirectly what you are saying is that after I am gone the movement will suffer. As long as I live I want to bear the burden of persecution so that after I leave the persecution will be finished. In my lifetime I want to bring this movement to success.

As your generation reaches its maturity, our movement will soar into prosperity. In my own lifetime I want to take care of all the bitter experiences, suffering and turmoil of restoration. I have already-made up my mind to take the burden with me. How about you? Will you join me in taking care of these, or are you going to wait for the easy time? Do you wish this persecution would go away, or do you welcome greater challenge and persecution? Have you made up your mind already? That is the way you should be. Starting this month of May, let us have a new day so that a new history can be erected.

If you feel just like I did when I initiated our church 23 years ago, then you are initiating your own movement in your own area of responsibility, saying, "Today I, too, am erecting a new church. I shall be like Reverend Moon in my own area." Are you going to do that? Those who are determined to go that way, raise your hands. Let us pray.

## **Chapter 26**

### **The Heart of Reunion**

**September 11, 1977 -- Tarrytown, New York**

I am very happy to see all of you again after being away for 70 days. When you are separated from someone, you long for them the most if there is a common purpose or goal between you. Then you both yearn to see each other and look forward to the day of reunion. I am Korean and you are Americans, and we come from the opposite ends of the world. There must be a providential purpose linking the two extremes of East and West; otherwise, you would not miss me and I would not miss you, and we would not look forward to meeting each other again.

To the ordinary person it may seem as if the vast ocean is one stationary body of water. Actually the ocean is continually in motion, with cold currents and warm currents running their separate courses and colliding at certain points. All kinds of movement can be found in the ocean. The tides come in and go out twice a day, and tidal flows all over the globe are linked together.

Beneath the ocean's surface are a great variety of fish, which are influenced by the currents and the tidal waters. Very often many fish gather where the warm and cold currents collide, creating areas famous for fishing such as the northern part of the United States near Boston and northern Europe. Different types of fish live in fresh or salt water, but at spawning time certain species go to an estuary, where the fresh water and salt water flow together, to lay their eggs.

It is very intriguing and even mystical to see how the places and times of coming together are very important to all forms of life. For instance, the ancient cultures such as developed in Greece and Rome without exception began to grow at places where land and water meet. No early human civilization could prosper apart from a river or the sea.

### ***Extremes drawn together***

When the distance between two parts is extreme, there is always greater joy, emotion and drama involved in their reunion than if they had not experienced such extreme separation.

I came from a land on the other side of the globe, a land that many Americans think of as being a remote country. In their minds they still envision Korea as being ravaged by war. It is as if the United States was on the pinnacle of a mountain, while Korea was in the depths of a valley. That is why many people cannot understand how a man from Korea can attract such attention in a nation that stands at the pinnacle of modern day culture.

In the vast ocean a tremendous variety of things happen when the warm and cold currents meet. When we gather together we are like five kinds of ocean currents flowing into the same area, and extraordinary things can happen as a result. It is not my will or your will, but some providential will, that makes this so. There must be a universal power that pushes two extremes to unite for a greater purpose.

Exciting music is not made with just one or two notes, but with notes that range from high to low and come from a variety of instruments. That blending of extremes makes exciting music. At the same time, one instrument alone can create excitement. In order to make the drums exciting, the drummer has to combine many motions and gestures as well as rhythms. The violin combines different extremes, using thin strings to create very feminine, beautiful sounds. The beauty of the violin is that even though it has only a few strings, it is possible to produce extreme variation in sound.

The union of people from the East and West can be compared to playing the violin; Westerners are like the low notes of a violin while Asians are like the high notes. Americans walk with a long, swinging stride, like King Kong, but the Japanese: walk lightly, taking small steps. More excitement is created when the two extremes unite to make one harmonized picture. Usually we do not use the word harmony to describe the unity of similar things. The most moving, beautiful harmony is created when extremes come together. The value of harmony lies in this unity.

What color flowers do you like? Everyone has a different preference. If everyone liked only the color yellow, however, then everything in the entire world would soon be yellow, with yellow clothes and even yellow lipstick. The result would be a mad, mad world of yellow! The blending together of all kinds of colors can be interpreted and understood in many different ways. When you can see your feelings reflected in different ways you never tire of such beauty.

In just one person you can see many different colors. Bo Hi Pak, for instance, has black hair and a tanned forehead and a gray suit. Women always wear ornaments to enhance their appearance, but they don't wear everything of the same color. When they wear red, they want to wear some jewelry that matches, something of a different color that harmonizes.

Would everyone without exception like to have blue eyes? Why did God give blue eyes to some people? The people who have white skin, high noses and blonde hair need some contrast, so God gave them blue eyes, like two little ponds. Because American noses are so high their eyes are very deep; you have to peer in several miles to see their eyes! If they had black eyes at the bottom of such deep wells they would look fearful, almost evil

in a way. Having lighter color eyes creates beauty and harmony in a much more dramatic way.

Imagine a person laughing whose teeth were all black. He would look strange. When you examine the creation you know that God is really an artist, and that no better harmony could have been created. Everything is interestingly blended, with people having precisely the features that would harmonize with a certain skin color.

One action may have two entirely different meanings. Imagine a person whose mouth was always open. You would usually think that something was wrong with that person, that he was out of his mind. But that person might be intoxicated by some magnificent emotion or some tremendous shock. Laughing and crying change your features in similar ways, but one expresses joy and the other sorrow.

Light is always created at the boundary when two things meet in harmony. Why should people from one culture follow someone from an extremely different culture? Why have you Americans come to the Unification Church, which was founded by a man from Asia? You are here to unite the universal beauty of the two extremes of East and West together into one harmonized culture. When two great cultures meet to form harmony, turmoil is inevitable at first. When a flowing stream hits the rocks in its path disturbances are created. It goes through many convolutions, splashing over rocks and churning at the bottom of a waterfall, but that does not alter its destiny. All streams eventually join the mainstream, which flows to the ocean. All water is connected to the same source and flows to the same destination. In the same way many parents are currently opposing the Unification Church, but the day will come when they will join the mainstream, just as all running water eventually does.

There is tremendous variety and purity of creation in the mountains, and the water from mountain streams is also very healthy. Mountain water absorbs essences from the varieties of creation found there, but rivers that run through the plains and flat lands, like the Mississippi or Nile, have no clean taste or special characteristics. Every pebble on the bottom of a mountain creek, every weed and every leaf play an important part in harmonizing the entire environment. When looked at from this viewpoint, everything becomes more beautiful. The running streams that start in the depths of the mountains will never make you sick, no matter how much you drink. Mountain animals drink the pure water and breathe clean air all the time so they are strong and healthy.

Everything that I am speaking of comes down to one simple word: harmony. The ideal world is not a world of uniformity and regimentation but a world of harmony in which each person plays a distinctive role. It is not one species alone that creates the grandeur of the mountains. They are made beautiful in part by the infinite variety of trees, some gigantic, some crooked, and of all different shades and hues.

### ***The pinnacle and the valley***

Why do we meet here? Why do we need to create harmony? I have a reason for selecting the topic of today's sermon as "The Heart of Reunion." External unity itself has shallow

meaning, and I want you to appreciate the fact that there must be deep meaning and love in our gathering together. There are all kinds of subjects to study in our world, but I think the study of harmony is the most important. After being educated in the "Department of Harmony" would you want to marry within your own cultural and racial background?

White and black people live together here in America but have they created perfect harmony in this land? Who is responsible for that lack of harmony, white people or black people? Be honest and frank. I agree with your answer that basically white people have been responsible for that. Even though God meant for harmony to exist when he put two extremes together, there is little harmony among the races here in America. The white people must take primary responsibility for the lack of harmony in this country.

At high noon the sun is bright, but even at that moment the sun is moving toward the opposite extreme of midnight. In living you must be willing to go through the darkness of midnight to arrive at the high noon of the next day. The Western culture is primarily a white culture, and in general white people think of themselves as superior to the black and yellow people. Westerners think of their culture as being self sufficient, but that is comparable to refusing to go through midnight. The sun cannot always remain at high noon. The Western culture will never see broad daylight again unless there is unity. When Westerners can be broadened by absorbing elements from other cultures, a new day will dawn and there will be the glorious prosperity of another high noon.

The cultures that can go from the pinnacle to the valley and vice versa are closer to perfect harmony than those that never change their positions. The Greek and Roman empires thought they could stay on the pinnacle forever. They had no intuition that they would be destroyed, but now their civilizations are gone. Today the Western culture is enjoying being on the pinnacle, but this civilization will also terminate unless it seeks the valley. This is a universal law and no one can escape it.

The key to the continuing prosperity of the cultures is harmony, but a harmonizer is needed, someone who can bring unity between two extremes. That unity cannot be accomplished all at once, but will require time. It is logical that a yellow man would be the mediator between black and white. Because God needed such a mediator, He asked me to come to America to heal the rift between white and black. It is the white people who have been rejecting me, while the black people have embraced me. That does not mean that God is showing special favor to the blacks alone, however. That phenomenon will help to save the white people by giving them another chance to transcend the barrier of race.

White people feel threatened by two things primarily: the power of communism and the increasing power of the yellow race. When Western leaders look at me and at our movement, they wonder whether I am a communist or the leader of some yellow menace and they easily feel suspicious. But an even more formidable enemy would be the yellow race mobilized by the communist influence. America is obviously fearful of Red China, and the American government policy makers are in effect trying to charm the Chinese leaders.

Why should America, only 200 years old but the mightiest nation on earth, be so intimidated by Red China, whose present form of government is less than 30 years old? Anyone who is aware of world affairs can sense a threat to the Western world from the Asian communist powers.

I may be from Asia but the position I take is opposite the communist stand. The Asian communists say that there is no God, but I proclaim that there is a God and that He is our Father. Instead of supporting communism I have come to the West to educate the young people about God. The communist Chinese declare that the yellow race has unjustly suffered because of the white race and that the oppressed people of the world should now unite under communism to conquer the world. I declare that we cannot allow that to happen and that our solution instead is to unite all the races together under one common parent, God; that will be the governing power of the world.

Two powers within the yellow race are confronting each other in a fierce battle. One, the Asian communists, wants to swallow up the West, while the other, our Unification Church forces, wants to defend the West from that menace. I have come to this country for a purpose that is like filling a container with everything necessary to accomplish that mission. Once everything necessary is gathered, that container will overflow and then nothing will be able to stop us from defending the West. The power that is gathered will certainly not be for yellow people alone but for the salvation of the Western culture and all races of mankind, coming together as one gigantic river more powerful than Niagara Falls. We are building up that stream, starting out like a small creek and building into a big river.

### ***The seasons of history***

In what direction should the Unification Church go? We must move to the extremes. If we are in a high place we must head toward the lowest place and work there. If we are in the lowest position we must head toward the highest position. In America, the Unification Church is in the lowest position. We should be ready to aim as high as possible and move America back to God. It is realistically beginning to happen this year. Eventually we will not be on the bottom but will find ourselves way on top.

Where should we go after that? To Moscow! The tropical waters of the earth are slowly turning toward the North Pole, while at the same time the waters of the northern areas are heading toward the warm areas. The ancient cultures were found in semi-tropical climates -- for instance, Egypt by the Nile River and Greece by the Mediterranean. The present nations leading the free world are found in the temperate climates, however. The trend of history is inclining toward the cold weather zone, with a northern power like the Soviet Union determined to dominate the world and cover it like a blizzard.

The Garden of Eden was located in the tropical zone, which can be compared to spring. Human civilization eventually spread to cooler climates comparable to autumn, and now has penetrated the coldest, most winter like areas. History has entered the autumn, and just as winter's winds blow the last leaves from the trees, the cold wind of communism is being felt in this autumn culture. But at the same time, autumn represents the harvest,

when new seeds enfold the promise of a new generation. Now the leaves of the old culture are falling, but at the same time we are harvesting the seeds of a new culture.

I want you to know that this trend of human civilization precisely parallels the patterns of restoration. The seed is protected by its hull and cannot be destroyed by weather. It is protected until the new day arrives. Who will greet spring when it arrives? The seed is the only element that can go through the hard cold winter to start new life in the spring. This is not my theory at all but a historical principle.

The new way of life will not be contaminated by either the communist ideology or democracy. In other words, the seed will not be affected by any of the four seasons. Where can we find the ideology that can be that seed? The Unification Church has the ideology, and you will be the seeds that shall survive the severest weather to meet the spring. Have you ever before thought about yourself as being a seed?

You are just starting to think that way. If you are absolutely convinced that you can cultivate that seed, then this is a historical event. This concept is so gigantic and the reality is so soaring that once you deeply realize your position, you would feel as if you have been struck by lightning. I know you have never imagined that such gigantic things could happen.

### ***Absorb from all cultures***

Today's Western culture is equivalent to the autumn season. No matter how much you may want to delay winter's arrival, its coming is inevitable. Even now winter is knocking at the door, and in order to be a fruitful seed, the Unification Church needs a shell of discipline and training that will enable it to survive under any circumstances. In the summertime people go to cool places on their vacation, and in the wintertime they go to warm places like Miami Beach, trying to escape the cold weather. But Unification Church members do the opposite; we meet the seasons head on and conquer them. That is our way of life. Your living that way is a manifestation of formidable spiritual power. The degree to which the American people say you are brainwashed is a measure of your conviction.

You know you will go through winter but you must also envision spring's coming. Your job is to make yourself a solid seed so that when the spring comes God will cast you on very fertile ground and you will be fruitful. Are you ready to be tested by the cold weather of communism? Could you withstand torture by people who want you to recant your faith? If you are that strong, the fallen world will call you a problem child because no-one will be able to bend you. But in studying the trends of history it is obvious that people like us must inevitably appear. The existence of the Unification Church is not an accident but the fruit of history.

We are thankful to be chosen for this job because we have the hope that after the cold weather of communism passes a new world will be born and spring will come. That is the day our hope shall be realized. The winter is never permanent. By gathering together people from all races and cultures we are trying to exchange each other's indestructible

elements in order to arm ourselves to overcome any circumstance. We can never be destroyed if we are trained for survival. .

In order to become one solid seed, you must draw energy and nutrients from all elements: the soil, water and sun's rays. All year round a seed is gathering the elements it needs. Do you white people still have some feeling of separateness from black or yellow people? Do you black people feel resentment toward whites, even after learning the Principle? Unless each of you can draw good elements from the others you cannot survive to grow in the springtime. The whole point is how to create one indestructible seed. When the spring culture of the ideal world comes I would like to name it "choon wha" which means "one central harmony" or "central peace." Are you ready to become the essence of the central harmony?

### ***Our contribution***

History is advancing toward one spring culture of the Kingdom of God on earth. That is the ultimate goal of human history. You are supposed to be the seed that will grow in that springtime, but where does a seed come from? God is the ultimate origin or root from which each seed grows. You are the seeds of God, created through the process of love, and two gigantic loves are essential for your life and must be harmonized within you -- the love of humanity and the love of God.

Love must always freely move into the center and then back out to the world. Love is not stationary but flowing all the time. The center of that circling movement is the Messiah; in occupying that position he channels the heavenly love so that you can transmit it on a horizontal level.

Throughout history man has thought that the ideal society with perfect love between man and God and man and man was only a dream, but the Messiah shall make the dream a reality. The Unification Church is born for that purpose and we can attain that goal. The greatest contribution we can make to the world is to knit all of mankind together with the love of God. Throughout history there has always been conflict between North and South, East and West, not just between nations but within families and on every level of society. Historically unity has proved to be an impossible task, but I am striving for that today.

Even on the small peninsula of Korea the Southerners and Northerners have a sense of different identity and have had animosity toward each other throughout their history. Even in our church, when a southern man and a northern woman were blessed together they were like two knights ready for battle. When they initially confronted each other with animosity their families were also hostile, but as their relationship became happier their joy naturally influenced their surroundings and their relatives. Now their hearts have been melted and they are united as one family.

Initially there was a great deal of criticism of our mass weddings in Korea, but now many Korean young people anticipate becoming part of one such wedding. Even non-members feel a great deal of excitement. There was also violent opposition in Japan when our members were married apart from the usual traditions, but now the parents have seen

how happy their sons and daughters are and how beautiful they are together. Parents have even said there must be some magic to those mass weddings to make those people so happy.

Americans think you are just foolish young people, but wider acceptance of our movement will come when people see the fruit of the Principle. The quickest way to unite mankind into one family. is by intermarriage of the different races. The movement that can elevate such marriages will inevitably bring harmony and unity to the world, without war or conflict. In the future more and more Americans will seek international marriages uniting the different nations and races; these will bring honor, not shame.

To accomplish this gigantic historical task, you must discover the extraordinary power of love, love that does not become the circumstantial victim of society. Supreme love transcends every national, racial and cultural barrier. People have always talked about love, but human love alone will never accomplish the task of universal unity. Therefore, the Unification Church rallies around one love -- the love and heart of God. We are the first group in history to talk about the heart of God.

If it is really true that we know the heart of God, then we are like the sun rising in the morning and no one can ever stop us. Furthermore, the brightness of that morning sun shall brighten the entire world. There will be one center of heart here on earth, linking all mankind to the heart of God, spreading all over the world and constantly pulsing through the action of give and take, unable to stay in just one place.

### ***Love is most precious***

Your whole purpose for reaching the center is to meet the heart of God. That experience is so overwhelming and exciting that you cannot disappear there forever, but must emerge again to embrace your family, society, nation and world. As you touch each of those areas you will always leave a bit of the Kingdom of Heaven.

This is the joy in the heart of reunion. The East and West are meeting here today, not merely because we want to see each other for personal reasons, but because the heart of God is linking us together into one. Words cannot describe that heart too well, for it is beyond words. Intuitively you can understand; that something is what warmed your hearts and brought you here today.

If the heart of God is not moving within your heart then you feel empty, even though you may be a member of the Unification Church. Once the invisible but powerful axis of the heart of God is moved out of you, everything becomes empty. Once the heart of God dwells within you, no matter how lonely you may be you will be filled and the universe will be filled. A person who is completely filled is a joyful person because he lacks nothing.

Once you have felt the heart of God you feel that you cannot survive if it should ever leave you, and until you are reunited with God's heart you feel lifeless. Often a child will dearly love his mother and want to be home just to be with her. If he runs home one day and finds all his brothers and sisters home but his mother gone, then he will grumble and say,

"Nobody is home." Everyone else may be there, but if his mother is gone then to him it seems that nobody is home.

If there is a center of love then you can give love unselfishly and without limit and you can become a subject of love. When you give out of the fullness of this love, you multiply love and can realize the ideal. Love transcends distance and time.

The speed of light is nothing compared with the speed of love; you have no idea how fast love travels. Love is fastest, brightest, fullest and sweetest. Love is the best of everything in all the universe. Only through the power of love can this miracle occur, not through bullets or threats. The Unification Church's philosophy and conviction are connected to the center of the universe -- the heart of God. We shall become the shining examples of that love and heart. I want you to realize that each of you can possess the highest thing, the brightest thing, the sweetest thing and the fullest thing.

What kind of mood were you in when you came here this morning? Did you want to get here quickly or did you grumble that you needed more sleep? Why did you miss my ugly face? I didn't bring you any gifts from Boston.

You came because you can feel a special power of love when you are around me and you want to receive it. But you can manifest and give that love too, right? Love cannot be seen but it can be felt. When the True Parents are not present it feels as if nobody is home, doesn't it? As soon as I walk into a room, the room is filled. Although I am the same kind of person as you, this is true because I devote my entire life to receiving the heart of God.

Anyone who is strongly connected to God can become a life giving object, even though that life is not visible to the human eye. You may not become a sun, but you can at least become a lighthouse in the dark. When you first started selling newspapers I'm sure you were scoffed at, but now if you don't appear in your area each day there are people who miss you. You have become a lighthouse already.

You must have the faith and conviction that you are a lighthouse lighting a dark world. The lighthouse will shine forth even in the worst kind of weather because that is the time ships need the lighthouse most. When you are surrounded by the thickest fog you must shine forth all the more. The more adversity, the greater must be your light.

### ***I have set the fishing tradition***

I have become a legend in the Gloucester area; the newspaper there wrote several articles about our fishing and we were a topic of conversation for the whole town. Hundreds of boats come every year from all over to fish in that particular area. When the New Hope put out to sea and dropped anchor, then often many other boats would follow and anchor in the vicinity. When we had a tuna strike then other fishermen would bring out their binoculars to watch what I was doing. At first the negative people would want the tuna to break loose and escape, but after a few days of successful catches they began to change their thinking and the rumor began that I have something good working for me.

I was always the first one out to sea. Some of the seasoned professional fishermen would go out early to outdo me, but no matter how early they got out, the New Hope was already there. The fishermen were not only inspired by this but when they tried to compete with me they had to work so hard that they had no time for their usual drinking or laziness. By the end of the summer a rumor was going around that declining town that I am the only one who can save Gloucester.

Without any exception I got up every day at 3 a.m. The New Hope went out in the moonlight and in many cases returned home with the stars and moon shining. Do you like to get up early in the morning? The staff members working on the boat were never told what time to get up, but since I arose at 3 they followed me, no matter how sleepy they were.

This has been my tradition for 4 years in America. It is not easy to follow me, because no one can outwork me. My crew knows what I would do, and if I tell them to be out by 1:30 on the Atlantic they get up and go out with no grumbling. I have even set the tradition of staying out and working all night.

This summer I did not earn much in terms of money, but in terms of tradition, I earned billions of dollars worth. By following that tradition, the fishing industry in our movement will blossom and contribute much to America's entire fishing industry in days to come. Because I have now set the fishing tradition, no one will hesitate to go out to sea, even the women. If I were a coward then no one would go seriously, but now people will be eager to go. There is a record of when and where I caught each fish and how big it was. In the future fishermen will be trying to challenge that record.

Even though fishing is incredibly hard work, I wanted to give myself without any reservation to set the tradition for the posterity of the Unification Church. That has been my work for the last 70 days. What would you do if I were to go out selling the News World 24 hours a day? Would you be selling 24 hours a day also? I might bring the victory if you do not.

You don't know how hard I worked in witnessing. For 7 years in the early days in Korea I slept only 2 hours a night, and day after day I spent preaching the word of God and teaching the Principle myself. Sometimes members would become drowsy and sleepy and then all of a sudden be chastised by an angel saying, "How can you sleep like this when he is working so hard, day in and day out?"

I'm sure this is the first time you have heard these things. The things I ask you to do I have already done many times in the past. Now I am asking you to do the same. You have no cause to complain.

Throughout my entire life I have accumulated a wealth of experience and spiritual power, and now I am bringing it all to America. When visitors come to America they usually try to take something back to their home country, but I am doing the opposite. Everything I have accumulated I want to freely give to the American people, but instead of welcoming me, America is rejecting me.

If you were not here giving me love and listening to me, then I would have no more interest in America and I would leave this country. You are the ones holding me in America and you represent 240 million people. You are the hope of this country; without you America will be lost. While you are alive and strong you must let 240 million American people know that the Unification Church is a movement of reunion centering upon the word of God. Once you harness the power of the heart of God, you will have the energy to be a lightning bolt, lighting up all of America. The important thing is whether you have that explosive power in your hearts. You are now like living bombs, just waiting to be ignited and then explode, not for destruction but for salvation.

Today is a new day of reunion and this is the reunion place for the East and West and heaven and earth. The implications of this unity are vast; with this kind of heart New York is much too small to be our stage. When you reach out you must feel that New York is not large enough to hold you. Have you felt, "I am the harmonizer of heavenly culture and earthly culture. I am the focal point of love. I am a messenger of love of God, having the infinite energy that will bring springtime to this nation."

When you live with the heart of reunion, with the heart of God and the heart of parents, constructive and creative power is generated. By having this nation as our center and all coming together as one, we can truly become dynamos to create a new world culture.

There must be purpose for having reunion because, otherwise no one would want to meet a second time. We must be ready to meet again after creating some achievement. This morning you should be different, making a new beginning with your heart of reunion and marching forward to the ultimate fulfillment of your goal. Those who can be different this morning, raise your hands. God bless you. Let us pray.

## **Chapter 27**

### **A Stimulating and Adventurous Life**

#### **April 16, 1978 -- Tarrytown, New York**

It is springtime and everyone loves spring. Young people, especially teenagers, long for some season like springtime. The love within them desires this season. Springtime brings a natural, instinctive longing for something untouchable. Unlike the young, however, older folks approach spring with a sense of responsibility. Those who have raised children now have an empty nest, so they have a different feeling in spring. Their children have married, left home, and now have made homes of their own. This is the season for senior citizens to reminisce about their past accomplishments and about their families and children. For them, spring is the time of recollection and reevaluation of their lives.

This doesn't necessarily apply only to human beings, but to the animal kingdom as well. For instance, during this past winter in New York we had an unprecedented heavy snowfall. Deer and other big animals, as well as birds, sought shelter during winter, but now that spring has come they have a new hope and resurrected feeling. They enjoy this precious time of spring. Witness the flight of the birds; during the winter season they were gone, but now they are back, singing and looking for food. They have aspirations too.

Spring would be proud to say, "I have the capability to revitalize all creation." Spring would declare that we are given new life and refreshing elements in its season. During winter we can't see leaves on the trees, but now buds are emerging with new life. Everyone loves to see new buds. Plants, animals and man all have the same feeling. The migrating birds will find their way back north and enjoy the regenerating forces of spring. What kind of migrating birds do you think of? Robins, ducks, Canadian geese, swallows, swans. They never miss migration.

You urban people don't understand birds. If you live in the country, they sometimes make nests under your roof or on your porch. When the swallow is singing, it sounds to Westerners like an Oriental language, but to Orientals it sounds like they are speaking English! The swallow looks like he is wearing a tuxedo, and to see the male and female singing together is very impressive. No single bird sings; they sing together. If a bird is alone, then he sings to invite or woo the opposite sex. Wherever birds sing together it seems like love is there, right? The same thing applies to mankind. An individual longs for someone else with whom to have a subject-object relationship of give and take.

In the Unification Church the majority of members are younger people. Do you like songs or not? Because you are young you like singing. This youthful spirit is the characteristic of the Unification movement. You young people are in the spring of your lives. Your faces are shining just like the trees and flowers that bloom after the winter.

You sit straight and have vigor and energy instead of being sloppy and lazy. I don't like to see women with their hair falling messily over their faces. You have to lift it up in back to look fresh, like the season of spring I understand that you don't have so many extras, but in spring you can wear some bright pin, or even put some decoration in your hair to fit the spring season. You might carry some pink handkerchief to reflect the spirit of spring.

You have to know how to adjust your mood to the seasons. There is a wonderful feeling here this morning, isn't there? If you come to doze off in the spring, then you don't fit in here. Spring brings new vitality. If you can't be like a swallow, be like a sparrow or Canadian goose.

### ***What animal represents springtime?***

Let's talk about the animal kingdom. Which animal would you like to resemble? A tiger or bear? People would be scared if those creatures appeared, and no one wants to kill anyone. The most loving animal in springtime is the deer. Therefore, if you want to become a spring animal, I would like you to be a deer. All in all, spring is good for everything.

I love the big tree in front of the main house. here, but in winter you can't tell whether it is dead or alive. Now spring has come and some vital element is moving throughout creation. Spring is the season of planting seeds. A seed planted in the earth has a sleeping feeling at first, but then moisture seeps in through its shell to waken it. Spring brings many changes in all of nature, adding a developmental and advancing element.

Do you think America is facing the season of spring, or the autumn before the winter? A scientific observer would say that America is in its autumn season, but Moonies don't necessarily belong in that category. Are you in spring or autumn? We are not talking about the Moonie who never has new buds and sprouts; a true Moonie becomes like the branches of a tree. Would you like to be the leaves of the tree or the branches? Branches. Why? A branch produces leaves. It is important because the blossoms and new growth come from the branch, not from the leaves.

The branch is the connection to future life. It not only brings flowers but bears fruit, and through the fruit other trees will be produced. That is the process through which the life of the tree continues, and that's why the branch is so important.

Who in the contemporary world will be the branches on which flowers will blossom? Christians and hippies will say they are the ones. Communists will say they are the ones. Young people will say that they will be the new branch out of which new hope for all mankind will come. It is a wonderful thing to be that branch, but Unification people are the only ones who belong to this category. You must know what goes on before the flowers appear. Think of the leaves and branches. More than that, you have to think of the atmosphere, water, earth and all other necessary conditions for sustaining this tree. A tree does not just come up suddenly; preparation is needed. Various elements must be harmonized, and that same kind of thing has to go on in the world.

The same thing applies to the five different races if they are ever to come together. Instead of fighting, they must harmonize. The water inside a tree is circulating, and then in spring the flowers come. Instead of fighting, the various elements must exist in harmony and beauty and have a peaceful relationship. This preparation must be made before the glorious flowers and branches and leaves come out.

It won't work if one branch of the tree insists that its water should not go to another branch. The roots can't insist that their nutrients not go to the topmost branches. Seeing how all the races are harmonized in the Unification Church, some racist will say, "It is not natural." However, the world cannot flower without this harmonized unity among its peoples. In this perspective, no other organization parallels the Unification Church.

The roots of a tree never stop growing, but spread everywhere, even through rock, splitting it apart. Nothing can stop them. You people should have that kind of power. It is hard for ordinary people to go fund raising door to door. but you do it anyway. Persist penetrate and march forward and your root and branch will be the ideal branch for the whole world. We can easily declare to the world that we may become the worldwide branches, roots and beautiful flowers to save the world.

When branches come out, do they look toward the ground or toward the sky? Why do they turn upward instead of downward? The sun is there. The branches will naturally turn toward the power of the sun, the power of life. The universal sun is God, and we receive the power of life and love from Him.

***White is a symbol of peace***

One single flower is a more superb masterpiece than the greatest painting in a museum. There is no comparing their value. A masterpiece will result when all five racial colors are put together. If all colors in the spectrum are combined, white results. White is symbolic of peace; for example, a white flag in wartime means truce. Actually, white people should be the symbol of peace, but according to past history they have never brought peace, only exploitation. Always other races had to submit to white invaders.

Very soon the time will come when those black people who worship God will have a chance to receive a great blessing, on the condition that they unite with goodness and are entirely loyal to God. Blacks who worship God, and are not lazy, have hope. God has to work through the restoration providence, and the reason white people have been able to dominate the world in the past is because they had Christianity. Without Christianity they would be nothing. Black people shouldn't become discouraged or disappointed, because in reality they have a great hope ahead. In the past white people have been aggressive and conquered other countries, but that must end. Orientals are very religiously and philosophically inclined. When they eat the fruit from trees they meditate about life, while white people are used to killing animals for survival when they get hungry. I am not implying that one is superior or inferior, but I'm interested in the kind of tradition each race has. Tradition is what determines inferiority and superiority.

The Unification movement will bring the hope of spring to all mankind. You have to seriously think about what it means for us to be the spring branch of the whole world. Do you have that kind of pride?. Are you growing as branches and leaves, or just sitting and doing nothing? Do the buds only grow when the sun is shining and not at night? If you ask the buds whether they only grow in the daytime, they will answer that they grow during both the day and night. Buds will say they prefer to go forward instead of backward; they would prefer being transplanted to a place where they can grow big, rather than stay small. They would rather be a total tree, not just branches.

If you are an entire tree, then you have everything -- limbs and roots, leaves and flowers. In order to be a whole tree you have to separate from the parent tree. Is there any other way to be a perfect tree? Would you rather be cut off quickly or slowly? That is why I kick you out. The first step in being transplanted is to get out of the World Mission Center and go form a home church. You may agree with the philosophy of this, but in your hearts you feel a little pain. Maybe you will resent the idea, but by doing it you will form a better tree. Multiplication is mobile in nature.

This personnel change won't take place in winter or autumn but in springtime. Spring, rather than autumn or winter, is a good time to transfer to another mission. The whole universe is changing in springtime, and according to that law our personnel change should also occur then. We don't need heavy coats when spring comes. If I elaborated on this point, I could go on endlessly.

Does spring bring only goodness, or hardship and sacrifice as well? It is not just a time of sitting, but of hard work and moving. Spring is a hopeful time, but only those who are moving have hope. The adventurous person has great hope and desire, which is why he

is moving, but without that hope he has no motivation. History advances through that kind of person. Do Unification people fit into that category? We have a great, adventurous nature. Do you want sweet adventure, or do you have grave, noble, high ambition? Adventure fascinates young people, but some young people talk about sweetness, while others talk about great feats. Which is better? A man and woman can talk about romance in a flower garden, but instead they could work together with a bulldozer. Which is better? We are working together.

### ***Spring brings stimulation***

Spring is sweet and feminine, but when you bring this kind of adventurous hope to it, spring will respond to you. Sometimes in spring you doze off, but it is better to be stimulated and excited in spring. Some of you might have thought I would talk about sweet things, since the topic this morning is spring. But no, I am going to push you out! You know that now.

Now let's talk about celestial things and ask God questions. If we ask God whether He has experienced spring, He will answer, "I made all four seasons. There is nothing new there." But if you say, "God, You must have had some experience of love with mankind," He will reply, "No, I never have."

"Then even though You made the universe and all four seasons, You have never experienced love in the spring?"

"Yes, that is true."

Then can we say that God is fortunate and happy, or sad and miserable?

God would be very happy to hear someone say, "Since you have been so unfortunate, let's work this situation out and make it better." He would say, "It would be wonderful if someone would work this problem out." If someone promises to make Him a happy God, however, He still cannot just automatically go with that person, even though He might want to. There is a hidden reason for this. Until the problem of sin is completely solved, God cannot act freely. He is a limited God.

Because of the human fall, God never had a time of spring. He made all of these things, but because of the fall He has been living in the winter season, with everything white and inactive. How are we going to unfreeze Heavenly Father's loving heart? Only a powerful warmth will melt the ice and thaw God out. Who is going to defrost this freezer God is in? Because love has been frozen, God cannot function. The problem is that because of the fall all creation is in the same situation. Some other element should help defrost it all.

All the creation is waiting for that time to come. Can we bring that change with power and knowledge? What shall we use? Love. What kind of love? Love between man and woman, or love between you people? Pure, unchanging, unique love is needed. This is the element that is inside God, so it is the only thing that can unfreeze His frozen heart. Who

is going to provide all this? Because God cannot provide it alone without an object, we have to actively give love, not passively wait to receive it as in the fallen world.

Somewhere on earth, some kind of movement must influence God with absolute, unchanging love, so that He can be happy and fortunate. One part of this mission has been given to religion, which has been able to take partial but not total responsibility. When people are united in love, there will be no war. In light of this mission, if religions fight each other then they are disqualified. Conflict is no way to resolve God's situation. The power of all horizontal and vertical love and universal, global love must be concentrated in order to liberate God. The power of vertical love must be added to love coming from all four horizontal directions.

Will God's heart be defrosted only by white people's love? No, that is not enough. Love of all five races together must come to cover God, and the power of love from three generations must also be involved here. Instead of being scattered, this love should be focused on one point. All races of the spirit world, the contemporary world, and the world to come must first come to one point, and then the ice that has accumulated for 6,000 years will begin to melt. Only that kind of situation will begin to defrost God's heart.

Some powerful movement on earth must teach mankind about this; otherwise, there is no hope. We have this kind of hope. Is it within reach? The kind of person who is hooked by God's love is going to launch this movement; that kind of person can liberate God. That person himself will be melted on earth and be intoxicated by God's love. He will be addicted to God so much that with just the word of God's love he can go beyond all hardship and have no problem with persecution.

### ***Anything for the sake of God***

Even though men and women in the world may love one another, once God's love comes they will abandon their old love and follow Him. Even after the Blessing, when husband and wife are supposed to love one another, if they receive God's love they can leave each other to go to two separate missions if necessary. That kind of power can enable blessed couples to separate with no problem, and they won't mind because the power of God's love is so great. Even if I ask all the sisters who are already over 30 to give up their Blessing and go to the field, then for the sake of God's love they can go without resentment. This is characteristic of you church members.

For the sake of helping God defrost, we can go everywhere, even to Africa or the most unfamiliar countries. I can go anywhere when God commands it. Even though you feel pain when you get a shot, if God's love is inside the syringe, you can keep receiving it. Even though you may be working hard, you cannot give up when you get upset. God's love is that sweet. You in turn are giving an injection to Heavenly Father. He has always been receiving passive love, but now that He is receiving an active element, His frozen heart is going to be defrosted. This is what I am trying to do on the international and universal levels. There is no other method of liberating God. Will He be glad or not to see this kind of movement come about?

Bit by bit God is beginning to thaw. His eyes are blinking, His hands are flexing, and His arteries and veins are coming unfrozen. You can make Him dance. Even though God made all the seasons, including spring with all its fragrance, when He meets this new spring He will announce His first spring to the whole creation. Then the whole creation will enjoy spring and laugh together with Him.

You have to give a shot of love to God, each one of you. You will each be God's physician, but the shot you give should not contain any satanic elements. It must be pure. Where do we get the contents of that shot, in an easy place or in the midst of hardship and persecution and rejection? When you want to give the shot to God, Satan is always there, trying to nullify it and give his own instead. You cannot give the shot as long as Satan surrounds you. Instead, you have to find the place where Satan cannot come, and that is the place of hardship and persecution. The place where Satan cannot invade is the worst place, where even your family gives you a hard time. If you are willing to give up everything, however, and go on alone, then Satan cannot invade. That's the secret.

You have to also go to the world and give this shot to all the people, immunizing them. How can anyone who claims he is going to liberate God be easy going and lazy and sloppy? He has to fight and find the place with the most hardship. Do you have the necessary equipment now? You are the doctors and nurses who are going to give the injections of love to God and mankind. Even though people don't like it and accuse you, you have to give it regardless. When babies go to a doctor and get inoculated, they cry and fight. Nevertheless, the doctor has to give the shot. People may not like you giving them this shot, but later they'll appreciate it.

A pickpocket mingles with people and somehow diverts their attention in order to steal from them. You may have to divert people's attention, but you will do that to give them the shot. Because the people are ill, you have to inoculate them. At first they will persecute you, but later when they are healed and their sickness is over, they will show their appreciation. They will see that their rejection of you was unjust and they will apologize.

Shall we have an enjoyable time since spring has come, or shall we work harder to give this kind of heavenly injection of love? You are concerned with the heart of God, and even when you sleep you dream of God. When you witness or sell papers going door to door, you are thinking of God's heart. Because of you and the True Parents, God's heart is melting and the whole universe is finding a new spring. It is a glorious day. We are renovating everything, in the name of God's love. In God's providence, a person can choose to be just a spectator, or just a follower, or he can be an active participant. There are three different categories. Which would you like to be?

Let us pray.

## **Chapter 28**

### **The Inheritance of Love**

**September 21, 1978 -- Kamikawa, Japan**

Scanning the vast expanse of the history of God's providence, we come to realize that it took not just 6,000 years, but tens of thousands and even millions of years, in order to restore a single individual in the sinless likeness of the original person, Adam.. For this purpose, many individuals, families, clans, and nations sacrificed themselves selflessly down through the millennia. The person who came on the foundation of this selfless sacrifice was the Messiah. Then, what is the mission of the Messiah? First, it is to be a man who measures up to the original principles characterizing mankind before the fall. The sinlessness of Adam is thus recreated. Next, that of Eve is recreated by Adam.

Therefore, it is an awesome event when Adam and Eve are restored and both of them stand in front of God, are blessed, and go through a host of indemnity conditions. Billions of people who sacrificed themselves throughout history are watching us critically from the spiritual world. They think that if they were in our situation, they would not do many of the things we are doing now, and, especially, which Japan and the world at large are doing. The concern of these spirit people shows that any problem is not the problem of one single individual but is a cosmic problem.

You are here as Blessing candidates but what condition do you have for being blessed? In many cases, only two or three years have passed since you joined the movement. Spiritually, in the sight of God, you have been like worms in muddy water and you have not yet internalized the principles concerning God-centered relationships. To ignore a woman is the same as to ignore Mother. To ignore a mother is the same as to ignore a father and heaven.

A person who cannot understand that he must live in a web of such relationships is not worthy of living. That kind of person causes problems for his good ancestors over 70 generations. If he goes to the spiritual world, it is worse than hell for him. The Unification Church is trying to restore even hell through teaching how to live God-centeredly. However, there is virtually no way to save a person who tramples the parents' perfection level heart, treating them contemptibly and spurning the parents' love. If there is a way of salvation for that kind of person, it is only after the fulfillment of God's ideal. But, in one sense, a person who tramples on a heart of love is never forgiven and never saved. After the third 7-year course, reblessing will never take place.

The teaching of the Bible is that a person who commits adultery is stoned to death. Those who are blessed by heaven, and who then are unfaithful, separate, and remarry on their own, leaving their lineage on the earth, pose a very serious problem about which I am very worried. Should that kind of adulterous person exist in the Garden of Eden? Should that kind of person be forgiven in the establishment of the ideal Heavenly Kingdom? There is no principle which allows things like that. A wife who is unfaithful to her husband, or a husband who is unfaithful to his wife cannot turn his or her face to the universe. They are the very people who totally violate the sphere of heart. Such people have nowhere to go to be at peace.

For a man, his wife represents mother, elder sisters, younger sisters, and, indeed, all women of the world. To love a wife who has such a significance means to love all races of

humanity, all women, and one's mother, elder sister, and younger sister in the home. Accordingly, the family is the "basic training" center that educates people in human love. Therefore, to be trusted and to live a happy life in a family means to live a happy life as the center of the entire universe and to be situated at the center of happy love. There is nothing meaningful without love. Likewise for a woman. Her husband represents father, elder brothers, younger brothers, and all men on earth. This is our ideal of the family.

### ***Passing on their love***

The reason why parents desire their children to marry is because they want their children to pass on the love they inherited from them, the parents. Parents will die sometime, so they seek to leave their substance to their descendants. Parents need their descendants, since love should last forever and is the highest desire of mankind. Because parents leave behind such a precious thing, they can proudly go in front of God in the spiritual world. The family is the: place where they can accomplish leaving behind a wonderful heritage of love. Through the bonds of love generated in the family, people can go to the Heavenly Kingdom. Without learning such embracing love, it is absolutely impossible to go to heaven.

If a man is born not because of his own wishes, then by whose? By the wish of his father and mother? No. A man is born by the wish of heaven. A person is born due to the love of his parents, who are heaven's proxies. In essence then, when a person is conceived, he receives all of the love of the universe, and is born as the being who stands at the central position of the entire universe. Man is born by love, and is meant to grow by love, to live by love, to be loved and to give love. This is the highest purpose of our life. It doesn't matter whether you conquer the world or even the cosmos. To fulfill in your own family the mission of love, which is the center of the universe, is the most wonderful thing. The purpose of creation is the perfection of the four position foundation of the family centering on love.

In human relationships as well, we should think in that way. I understand that when a husband and wife start married life, sometimes they don't feel comfortable together. But when they confront the conjugal relationship with much stronger confidence, they can grow into the ideal.

You do not have enough gratitude for the Blessing. Satan challenged me throughout my life in order to destroy the foundation of the Blessing. A person of adulterous tendencies cannot take responsibility for heaven. A man whom his wife cannot trust is never trusted in the world, either.

### ***We must overcome temptation***

When we confront this world centering on the heavenly Principle, only the firm and strong things can remain. We are now in the midst of a battle in which we must expand the realm of goodness by applying the Principle. In this battle, we must overcome not only temptation from men, but also numerous temptations and tests from Satan. Satan, who has been accusing God throughout the 6,000 years of biblical history, has great power

and subtlety. Most people are defeated by him. The reason why I myself could proceed successfully until the present is because I clearly knew the Principle, the heavenly Principle. That is why I'm not snared by temptation.

I am nearly 60 years old and do not have such a long time left on earth. Thinking about this point, we must establish a universal tradition in the world. Having established that tradition to a certain extent, I am returning to Korea for a period of time.

God has been working so hard until now centering on this problem of restoring love and loving relationships within the family. It is because of this problem that the people of Israel were ruined. God has been working so hard in order to let the Unification movement live. The most central issue of letting the Unification movement live is letting the family live. The blessed families, from God's point of view, have such a significance. The director of the family department must understand this very well and provide good education on that topic. I'm doing this at the risk of my life for the sake of the human race, which is falling into a ruinous condition, I am opening a new way, repairing people one by one and letting them live. This is God's dispensation. This is the repair factory of the family and the repair factory of love.

Strictly speaking, those among you who have indulged in premarital sex are not really qualified to start a blessed family. The fact that you have written a letter longing for your lover is itself a shameful thing. We can say so from the point of view of the Principle. In spite of this Principle, Japan is engulfed in chaos. Young people are totally confused like animals. And it is you -- who have a background of being that kind of people who are now going to be blessed! If you presume to receive the Blessing of the Unification Church without repentance, you are utterly in error. My mission is to restore virgin men and women in front of God. This Blessing that is going to be given involves a special forgiveness. I declared previously that the Blessing would not take place until we finished the third 7-year course.

Without solving these ethical problems, the Unification Church cannot fulfill its mission on the earth. It is our task to clean up this corrupt world and create a clean one. Then, why has the kind of person appeared who casually, unrepentantly asks to be reblessed? He has no qualification to say, "Rebless me, Father, please." I never imagined such a mission for myself. Now, however, we are engaged in the 21-year course of restoration, and many of the world's constraints upon us cannot end until the third 7-year course. So I have to burden myself with and solve that problem.: But after the third 7-year course, there will no longer be reblessing.

After 1960, radical changes began to occur throughout the world. This was simply due to God's dispensation centering on the Unification Church. Today's historians do not know why history has entered a period of such enormous flux. It is because of this small Unification Church.

***You should be an example***

Your Blessing is for the purpose of setting an example for the rest of the world. I clearly know what conditions will be most beneficial for people in the spirit world, for those presently alive, and for future generations. Thus, I have clearly understood the providential significance of your Blessing, and upon this understanding I am initiating it. It is your mission to understand its significance just as vividly as I do and to live a blessed life in accordance with that understanding, examining yourself constantly to see that your way of life conforms with the way you know you should be living.

We are all brethren. If you have a disabled person among your brothers and sisters, it is proper that compassionate love should well up in your heart and you should sacrifice yourself to care for the individual. Parents feel that way, so to sacrifice yourself, following the example of the parents, is the way of filial piety. This is the Principle. In the case of the Blessing, Mother and I are in the position of parents. In this situation, if you stand in our position and look on your spouse-to-be, who may not be nice looking, who may be of below average intelligence, and very short in height, you should feel very loving toward that "child" of ours. It is the parents' heart to view a child from the standpoint of the heart of heaven and to love that child more than anybody else.

I take responsibility for blessed people eternally -- not just for a lifetime. If they go to the spiritual world, I will guide and take responsibility for them. To be blessed means to have an eternal relationship with me.

If I go to Korea, I feel like the father of Korea. I have the experience of severe torture at the hands of imperial Japan. If I think about that, it is conceivable that I might hold a grudge against the nation of Japan. But I don't think in that way. When Japan was defeated at the end of World War II, I contacted all of my former torturers one night and told them that they faced great danger if they remained in Korea. Then I helped put their luggage on their vehicle and sent them off. Although Japan had been an enemy country up until that time, I knew that it would become a brother in the future because of God's will. So I determined to forgive Japan which was not the "reasonable" thing to do at that time, since Japan had persecuted Korea so terribly. But I knew so strongly that Japan would work for God's will together with Korea. Now thousands of Japanese members are following me at the risk of their life.

It is the same as in my college life. There is nowhere I didn't go, from the shipyards of Kawasaki to the slums around Sanya. I know Japan very well. The Communist Party is working hard to destroy Japan, but I am doing everything I can for the sake of the future of Japan. As it stands now, Japan has little hope for the future because there are few young people who can inherit and pursue this work of building up the nation. In Japan, today, in elementary school or in middle or high school, there are some who even reject saluting the national flag. If there is a problem which we should worry about in Japan, it is not the economic problem, it is not the political problem, but it is the problem of finding young people who can build up the nation. I've been thinking in that way for decades. I've determined to raise up such young people who can not only take on the nation building responsibility, but also be able to develop a commitment to build up the world. We cannot find such young people except in the Unification Church. Here, we have the theoretical

foundation to achieve the perfection of the individual, the perfection of the family, the perfection of the community, the perfection of the nation, the perfection of the world, the perfection of the cosmos, up until the liberation of God. To reach the sphere of God's love we have to go through all those stages, even if we die on the way.

### ***I have been consistent***

Thirty years ago in Korea, people did not consider Reverend Moon of the Unification Church to be even a human being. I was dealt with in a miserable way, indeed. But there is not much difference between my personality today and at that time. Now I am nearly 60 years old. But at that time, as today, I was full of courage and vitality and was a very trustworthy person. But I was treated like the scum of the earth.

Why did things go that way? Clearly, because there is Satan. The sphere of Satan and of Cain is never satisfied until they beat the realm of Abel to death. Ironically, however, they do want Abel to appear again. This is the heart of Satan. Because of this reason, I've been accepting without complaint and digesting all the persecution that has come my way from thirty years ago until today. Facing all the persecution head on, I have been fighting with perseverance and will power in order to overcome it. I'm a man who has very strong will power. Once I determine to do something, I go forward, even at the risk of my life. There isn't much difference between my body and yours. Any difference between us lies in the realm of thought and will power. I am strong because I have a way of thinking which is not only for the moment, but which extends to all of past, present, and future history and to the whole human race. In addition to that, I structure my thinking according to the pattern of God's dispensation.

Thinking about that point, if I fail, it is not only I who fail. In that event, the whole human race would have no future and the ideal of the restoration of the cosmos would be destroyed and God Himself would be profaned. I know these consequences very well. Therefore, even if I receive tremendous persecution, persecution in thousands of ways and by millions of people, I stand up without flinching for the sake of the human race and in order not to profane God's name. This is the way I think.

It was the same when I left for the United States. Nobody knew of my departure from Korea on Dec. 18, 1971. But I had a plan with God in my mind as to what to do for the world-level course. In the beginning, the American people thought that a Korean man, coming to give speeches without knowing anything about the Western world, would never be successful. However, I was perfectly victorious in this long battle in the United States, and I also just established the European foundation in England. I'm going back to Korea for a 40 day vacation before I return to the United States. I stopped off in Japan for this Blessing. But you have the attitude of enjoying the Blessing for yourselves, not for God. It is true, even if you make excuses to the contrary. Yesterday, I came to Japan after riding in an airplane for 24 hours. I've come through here just overnight. It is really something, then, for which to be grateful. I'm even doing this at the risk of my life. But I have suspicions about how grateful you are feeling.

Concerning this Blessing, the spiritual world will kneel down to me in an expression of gratitude. You don't understand the Blessing as having such a significance -- a significance that would make you choke with gratitude. You think as you like. If even you members think this way, I certainly have a lot to do to restore the world, don't you think so?

### ***A woman must be careful***

When a man feels embarrassed, he brings his hand to his chin. A woman covers her mouth with her hand, coughing delicately. It is noteworthy that Western ladies behave in the same way. This means that a woman has to be careful about her mouth. In the family, the problem is usually the woman. Women speak very quickly, like a motorcycle revving. So a woman must be careful with her mouth. Then how about men? A man has to have authority. He must be a person who has the authority with which he can judge evil people.

The more people come to know the meaning of the Blessing, the more they will be thankful to you. Please become a wonderful couple and make a wonderful family that you can be proud of at any place, at any time. But the weak, shallow, ungrateful type of person whom we saw today is no good. Everyone has a tendency to become that kind of person. I have a lot of experience of my trust being betrayed. If circumstances are a little disadvantageous, a man tends to run away. and if they are advantageous, a man feels like returning. That's the reality of man. You're the same, aren't you? You have it written on your face. History shows this and reality shows this. Even the 12 disciples of Jesus ran away. The 12 disciples were better people than you. Man is indeed a weak being.

Depending on the depth of the heartistic standard between husband and wife and depending on their degree of unity, a certain quality of child is born. Therefore, to become parents is not an easy matter. And to become a wife or a husband is also really an awesome thing.

The history of the Unification Church's Blessing started in the midst of battle. Satan's world was crazy to oppose it. But now in Korea, those who opposed us are now members of the church. In Korea, people gave a nickname to the Unification Church: "mass weddings." Let's establish such a tradition.

## **Chapter 29**

### **A Day When We Welcome the Blessing September 22, 1978 -- Kamikawa, Japan**

Today we have before us two ceremonies -- engagement and changing of blood lineage. These are indemnity ceremonies to set a condition through which we can be reborn by True Parents. Rebirth is necessary because we were born into a satanic world. A woman fell first, so a woman must be restored first, and then a man must be reborn. Through the Holy Wine Ceremony we pass through this process internally. Forty days after the Blessing, there is a ceremony by which we are reborn in the external sense. Both are ceremonies of indemnity. Through them, we go beyond the standard of fallen Adam and Eve to the standard of spiritual completion. After a man and a woman preserve a position

centering on heaven, they can connect this standard of love to the love between husband and wife, and their marriage is established.

The other day, I gave the following explanation in England: A woman's beauty is not limited to her face. People generally decide whether a woman is beautiful just by looking at her face. But a face is only part of the body. We have to look at the whole. The face is the third place to look at. We have to see a woman from the front, from the side, and with regard to the whole person, such as her arms and legs, her way of walking, her voice, etc. Likewise, a man's good looks involve much more than his face. Therefore, you should not say that your wife's face is good or bad. Many beautiful women are deficient in quality of spirit, and a woman of virtue and good fortune may not be beautiful. A woman whose beauty lies only in her face seldom keeps it after two or three children. It is always interesting to see whether such a woman can retain her beauty after having children.

There are various ways of analyzing couples. Just as each person has a different face, likewise, people's fortunes are different. Each person's destiny in life is different. If a man's fortune is bad, he can compensate for it with his wife's good fortune. Likewise, if a woman's fortune is bad, her husband's good fortune can balance it. Therefore, matching a couple is like creating a level area out of a mountain and a valley. Many things can be cultivated on a plain -- grains, fruits, vegetables, etc. This helps us understand that all the many external aspects of a husband and wife need not fit together immediately. The face reveals the personality of an individual. It is important to realize this when you guide people or assign them to missions. Even the nose or ear of a person can indicate his entire personality. God also created animals according to this principle. Take the lion, with his well shaped front legs and balanced proportions. He indeed is worthy to be called the king of beasts. People are the same. When I look at a person's hand, I can understand immediately whether he has talent in sculpture or literature or art, or if he has the hand of a thief. When I look at a person's legs, I can tell whether he can run fast or not.

If the spiritual conditions in a marriage are not good, many misfortunes can occur, such as death in an automobile accident. Therefore, please understand clearly that invisible laws beyond your awareness are at work. Looking at a single generation, you cannot tell whether a family will prosper. You need to study at least three generations, or ideally, more than seven generations. Even if you think that you and your spouse do not fit together, please live together at least three years. Please have confidence and make an effort to unite, realizing that I have followed the same course.

Fallen man has never even dreamed of being blessed centering on God. God has been guiding His dispensation until now through religion in order to welcome that very day. God inspired the concept of a chosen people in the Israelites and taught them about the Messiah, planning to restore through them the victorious national foundation. But that dispensation failed. Because a relationship of trust and love failed to develop between the Jewish leaders and Jesus, God was forced to choose the Christians as His instrument. So Christianity became the second Israel. Shorn of the special blessing and protection that accompanies the chosen people of God, the Jews were ravaged by Satan, and walked a rootless, persecuted and bloody path.

## ***Worldwide standard of heart***

In the age of the Second Advent, Israel and Korea each established their independence at the same time. Israel, such a tiny nation, fought with the Arab nations and defeated them. Because this is the age of the Second Coming, Israel can be blessed. Two thousand years ago, Judaism stood in the position to fulfill a central mission for the world; there were Jewish communities throughout the Roman Empire. However, because Jesus was crucified, not only Judaism, but Christianity as well, lost the foundation for achieving victory on the earth. The histories of both Judaism and Christianity for the past 2,000 years are stained with blood, as they aspired to open up the spiritual Heavenly Kingdom. Israel shed its blood in the external sense and Christianity shed its blood in the internal sense. Together they have been blazing this trail physically and spiritually.

In this age of the Second Coming, we have to solidify this spiritual foundation into a physical foundation -- namely, Christianity has to believe in the Lord of the Second Advent. The Unification Church has pioneered this path by proclaiming that the Second Coming is at hand. After the liberation of Korea in 1945, when the Unification movement started, if established Christianity, centering upon the Korean churches, had united with and welcomed us, the democratic world would have been safeguarded, and would never have become the divided, immoral society it is today. Furthermore, communism would have disappeared from the face of the earth. However, opposition by the established churches blocked our way.

Christianity had developed from the individual level to the clan, tribal, national and world levels. At this crucial time in the providence, the spiritual foundation of Christianity could have been linked with the physical foundation on the earth, centering on the Unification movement, within seven years. We contacted people from the highest levels of the Christian churches for this purpose. My job after the liberation of Korea in 1945 was to conclude this dispensation by uniting the churches around the Unification movement's goals.

But I was bitterly opposed. So all the spiritual foundation of Christianity was lost in the providence. Therefore, I had to begin with no physical foundation. I was left in the basement of the providence. All the conditions set during the 6,000 years of dispensational history were nullified. I cannot say that I have fulfilled my mission on earth until I establish the condition for one worldwide standard of heart and ethics, centering on the land of Korea.

Therefore, in order to set this foundation, I have been blazing the trail and expanding this movement without a word of complaint, by receiving and absorbing persecution up until the 1970s. We have to mature to the extent that we can achieve the victorious standard spiritually and physically by the activity of the Unification movement alone, in the event no one helps us. To do this, we cannot live for the sake of just the Unification movement. The mission of the Unification movement is to set up the ethical standard for a nation before moving on to the worldwide level. We must set it up even if the movement itself is crucified for doing it.

That has been our direction throughout the 1970s -- the age of the 777 Couples. I think you understand that the heavenly dispensation is first to fulfill the internal family standard of heart and ethics, and then to advance to the national ethical standard. For this purpose, we have been organizing families since the 1960s. There have been the Blessings of the 36 Couples, 72 Couples, 124 Couples, 430 Couples, and 777 Couples. All these couples are meant to build a successful foundation as the conditionally restored families on the worldwide level. I achieved the successful foundation on the national level. Then I had to start my path toward world-level restoration.

Even if I had made a successful foundation in Korea, because the Christian foundation is on the worldwide level, I have to reach the Christians of the world. Established Korean Christianity opposed me, but British and American Christianity did not at the critical time. Of course, Western Christianity failed to intervene to dispel the persecution, but they did not oppose me directly.

The reason I came to America was to free the American Christian world so it could be used more directly by God in His providence today. In the United States, I laid the victorious foundation on the national level in three years -- 1972, 1973 and 1974. At that time, I received an enthusiastic welcome in all the American cities I visited. The general public thus welcomed me, although official Christendom did not. Ancient Rome and official Judaism united in opposition to Jesus, but now the situation is different. The general public welcomed me. Christianity opposed us only as a group within society at large. Therefore, I gained a great victory after

On the foundation of this success, I formed the International One World Crusade (IOWC) by bringing members from around the world to Korea. Why did I do this? The standard of spiritual salvation had already been recreated through the warm reception by the American public, but it had to be connected with the physical standard: people had to be inspired to join us in pursuing our goal of restoring the world. The IOWC campaign in 1975 was initiated with this purpose in mind. Centering on the IOWC, we worked to establish the American movement in the physical sense. Although Satan came against us, I was not crushed in that battle and did not return here defeated. Instead, I came back completely successful.

Providential history has so often been prolonged. God's dispensation is to fulfill the ideal of restoration centering on families; it aims to create ideal family type relations on all levels from the individual to the world. Now the Unification movement is resolutely marching forward toward family restoration on the world level.

### ***The foundation of the Blessing***

All these things help us to understand God's toil and sacrifice throughout history in order to welcome this one day when fallen man can receive the Blessing. Down through the millennia, countless individuals fell by the wayside, and in families, clans, tribes and nations, billions of sacrifices were made. However, no one could receive the Blessing centered upon God. The Unification movement had to reach the worldwide level by

establishing itself in Japan and the United States after many battles. Now we have entered a very historical, victorious sphere.

Before you receive the Blessing, you have to see the historical significance of your life. God's dispensation has passed through a sacrificial history of thousands of years to bring you salvation. In God's providence there were many prophets, many pioneers, and many religious people who made countless sacrifices. All of them were an expression of God's love for you in order to let you stand as a victor today. The history of the Unification Church has been the same. The reason why I worked so hard was to open the way of the Blessing to all people, as well as to pioneer the path for full salvation. God has labored tirelessly for the sake of each one of us. We should feel so much gratitude! Even if we offer our entire lives, we can never repay all the debts we owe God.

But if we offer everything, God will welcome us as victors in the eternal spiritual world, the world of glory. This is an awesome thing. So please be aware that you are the ones who are bearing such a historic responsibility. You are called upon to save the 4 billion people in the world today by yourselves. In order for you to occupy such a responsible position, God has made sacrifices, and each religion has been toiling hard. However, such historical sacrifices will all be rewarded if we embrace and fulfill our responsibilities in faith. You must clearly understand that you have such a central mission. Therefore, if you move, history moves, Japan moves, and the world moves as well.

There is another thing to consider. Because Adam and Eve fell, they created the conditions that caused their descendants to shed much blood and to suffer a miserable history. But you must be different. Whatever you do, you should never pass on sins to your descendants. Rather, you should leave them with a new dimension of goodness. Whatever hardships you may endure in your life, try to go forward with gratitude. Harboring anxiety or complaint is a serious matter. You have a mission to liberate three ages -- the past, the present, and the future. You must leave a thoroughly victorious tradition so your descendants do not inherit a tradition of indemnity. The blessed position has a most serious significance. The entire human race, past and present, will come to rely on us. It is so inexpressibly valuable that the Messiah has come again and established the position of bride and bridegroom to confer the Blessing.

The responsibility of the child of a great father is to inherit everything from him. Both of them stand on the same central ground, but the scope of their lives is different. The central point that I am standing on and the point you as blessed members will be standing on is the same. There are not two points. Please remember this. I have a world-level mission and you have an individual-level mission -- but you can expand its scope freely by striving toward the clan level, tribal level, and national or higher levels. You should not put limits on yourself because you are Japanese. The center is the same and the formula for success is the same, in both my family life and your family life, in my clan-level life and your clan-level life, and our various modes of life on the tribal, national, world and cosmic levels. The only difference is that you must become a clan Messiah. I should speak at this point about Home Church, but I don't have time for that now.

I have not yet completed the victorious sphere on the world level. I am still fighting and using various strategies at this time. When you reach the world level, you can do everything in the biggest way, so please learn to do things thoroughly where you are now. Please be aware that this is the position you will have in the future. Do you understand? Remember how serious your mission is if you are laying the foundation for the Heavenly Kingdom and erecting the pillars for the temple of world goodness. Are your pillars of the best quality? Can they become the pillars that set the standard of goodness? If not, you have no spare time to take a rest or get into arguments or command others imperiously.

Man is born for the sake of woman, and woman is born for the sake of man. If you assert your ego, God leaves your marriage; if you respect your spouse, God will come in. A couple should walk together as two legs in harmony, balancing each other, not as one unsteady leg.

Have you understood the standard that is demanded by the Blessing? Your position and mine in relation to that standard are not the same. You are not yet standing on that standard and have not received the inheritance on the family level. What do you have to do in order to stand in that position? You must overcome Satan. Have you overcome Satan? If all of Japan opposed you, I think many of you would run away.

In front of God's love, we must be absolutely unchangeable. God is a unique, absolute, and eternal being. Those who speak about the sphere of God's heart, as we do, must stand on such a heartistic position. Those who join the Unification movement and then leave and return at their whim are not trustworthy. Only when we seek the absolutely unchangeable, eternally immutable sphere of God's love can He begin to live with us. To do this, we have to develop an unchanging and eternal self that can subjugate Satan. You are not standing in that position yet. To achieve it you must inherit my victorious standard.

### ***The Engagement Ceremony***

In Japan, there are huge buildings. The person whose name appears on the title papers owns the building. You can become the owner of the building through just a piece of paper. For you to inherit everything from me is similar. I achieve all the victories of the restoration of the cosmos and build a wonderful building on the world level, draw up the title papers, and then transfer them to you through the Blessing. It's simple, isn't it? All of you here are the owners of the building I have erected. Your position comes just like that. It is as though you are all now standing at the same starting line on an athletic field. Try to run as hard as you can. Surely the central tribe of Japan will spring from you. By ourselves we have no value; we simply preach and try to live the Principle. Because of our inheritance, Satan can do nothing. Today, we will go through the ceremony of transferring the "title papers" according to the Principle.

We receive the Blessing upon the promise that we will guard it and leave it as a treasure to our descendants unto thousands of generations. If you violate it, your clan will be in trouble. Therefore, the key point is how to maintain the pure blood lineage that heaven is now bestowing on us. To do this, we have to live with sincerity and heart. Adam and Eve

fell in the pure Garden of Eden; therefore, a crucial issue is how to keep ourselves pure in this sinful world. We face enormous problems, even if we work hard and sacrifice ourselves. We must quickly prepare the social environment so that coming blessed children are not defiled. This is my concern, and we must hurry.

There are two ceremonies through which to inherit the pure blood lineage. The first is the Engagement Ceremony. Why do we have the Engagement Ceremony? Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden were in the period of engagement. Today, their fallen descendants have multiplied and cover the world. The Blessing takes place in such an environment. Our eyes are distracted by so many men and women in the world.

The Garden of Eden contained only Adam, Eve, and the archangel. The archangel fell and became Satan. Accordingly, we have to gain victory over Satan. But to gain such victory, we must know what kind of being he is. Satan failed to unite with God, and instead devoured love centered on himself. But we are different. We practice love centering on God.

All men and women in the secular world are in the position of fallen Adam and Eve, sons and daughters of Satan. Therefore, the problem is how to transform such men and women into God's sons and daughters. It is done by the Principle, which teaches that when the perfect Adam arrives, the perfect Eve is restored.

When the perfect plus appears, the perfect minus automatically manifests itself. This is the principle of creation. When someone becomes a perfect minus, the perfect plus will appear. Notice that the population of men and women in the human race is about the same. The wisdom of heaven and earth decreed that. Likewise, air circulates freely, in order to maintain atmospheric balance. When the perfect man is born, the perfect woman is supposed to be born. When the Bible says that a woman was made from Adam, it is symbolic of this point.

You are fallen Adam and Eve. Because of the fall, you are advancing toward the realm of perfection from a fallen condition. There is no way to overcome the sphere of indemnity except through the perfected Adam. This is the Principle. This perfected Adam must be the substantial object of God's love. He must stand on that standard. The Lord of the Second Advent comes in order to realize this position, so he is the perfect Adam. He comes as the magnet to attract all people, centering on love. A minus magnet is pulled by a plus magnet, even if somebody demands that it stop. A minus magnet even has the power to attract a plus magnet.

The principle of restoration is the same. Adam and Eve fell after their engagement. Therefore after engagement, people must symbolically pass through the dispensation of restoration. We hold the Holy Wine Ceremony to create the perfect man through a woman who has been reborn as the perfect minus, or perfect Eve. The Holy Wine Ceremony sets a condition for spiritual restoration. A woman is reborn spiritually and then Adam is reborn spiritually through her.

Forty days after the Blessing there is an indemnity ceremony for substantial restoration that ordinarily takes three days. The 40 days is an interval of historical indemnity. In the formation and growth periods people do not have the authority to make restoration centering on love. Only after entering the completion period is that possible. Therefore, Adam's era and the next are the ages of failure. As a result, people could not fully inherit the sphere of God's love on the formation level (Old Testament age) or the growth stage centering on Jesus. Yet only by inheriting the sphere of God's love on the formation and growth stages can people enter the sphere of the Completed Testament age. The Indemnity Ceremony has the significance of symbolically accomplishing this inheritance. The first day is to restore the Old Testament age, or fallen Adam. The second day is to complete Jesus' mission and restore the New Testament age. In the Completed Testament age, represented by the third day, the man stands as the bridegroom in the place of Jesus and recreates the bride. Then, for the first time, he can assume his proper position as a restored Adam. Restoration requires such concrete and specific indemnity conditions.

### ***The Holy Wine Ceremony***

Jesus said of the bread and wine, "This is my body . . . This is my blood." The holy wine has a similar meaning. Through the Holy Wine Ceremony we set the condition through which we become one with True Parents. A person who has become one with True Parents cannot become one with Satan. For eternity, he is cut off from Satan. From now on, you must have the determination to create the new ideal Heavenly Kingdom as restored Adams and Eves in the eternal Garden of Eden.

Why do we hold the Holy Wine Ceremony? Adam and Eve were living in the period of engagement before their fall. So we must restore that period without any possibility of accusation from Satan. If Adam and Eve had been blessed in marriage by God and had loved each other, God's will would have been completed. But they could not fulfill this. The order of love was reversed when people began to love themselves more than God or each other. That must be corrected. This is called the changing of blood lineage, or the ceremony for the reversal of dominion of Adam. Eve lost Adam by the fall; therefore, she cannot regain her intended spouse before God unless she humbly places Adam in the position of parent. Then God can make him her husband. Up until now women have suffered and endured much throughout history. Japanese women, especially, have had a miserable history. All women became the prey of men, who after the fall took the position of fallen archangels. We are going to restore this.

What is holy wine? It contains a portion of all things that cannot be accused by Satan. If a person who has received this holy wine and has become one with True Parents profanes it, it is a very grave matter. His position becomes even worse than Satan. Satan profaned and violated the completion sphere of the growth stage, but how can an unfaithful blessed person be forgiven, when he has violated not only the completion sphere but also the substance of God? It is a terrible thing.

You may not have known this, but now you can understand clearly by listening to this principled explanation. To fall is a very serious matter. After we finish the third seven-year course, this will be truly strict. Our war is against the betrayal of love. If you do not have the confidence to be true to your intended spouse it is better for you not to participate in this ceremony. Because the Principle solves things, Satan is completely defeated by me. A man who found the secret of history and stands on the substantial victorious foundation of world restoration is a thorn in the side of the satanic world.

For many years, Satan challenged me in whatever way he wished. He tried in so many ways to defeat me. I never really took the offensive until 1976. In that year, for the first time, I made a new start. With the declaration of this new start, the age was changed. Until now, our strategy has been conservative. But we have entered into the age when Cain pays indemnity for Abel, leaving behind the age in which Abel pays indemnity for Cain. The restoration will go faster from now on. In the past, Satan corrupted good people and took them into hell. From now on, we will restore those who were ruined and usher them into the Heavenly Kingdom.

Our path is clear. We are going toward the Heavenly Kingdom. There are various levels along the way: the individual, family, clan, tribal, national, world, and cosmic levels. Every level in turn must be sacrificed in order to reach the next level. Finally, we must gain the level of God's heart even if we have to sacrifice the cosmic level. God's heart is the eternal level, where everything is completed. Everything follows this formula.

I know very well how difficult the restoration has been: When I think of how severe and burdensome it has been, I cannot fail even if I were ordered to do so. You may think that the Blessing is a light thing, that you are entitled to it after two or three years, but it is never such an easy matter.

I want you 1,610 couples to become families that God can admire, by living a sincere life with all your might. To be blessed is a serious thing. Viewed from dispensational history, God's central thought is to recreate the pure, sinless family of Adam and Eve. That family will be the model.

In industry, once a prototype is made, thousands or millions more can be manufactured. I've been working tremendously hard until now in order to create that prototype. The focus of God's dispensation is the family of the Messiah, the family of restored Adam and Eve, the victorious family beyond the realm of the fall. The central focus of man is to surmount the realm of the fall and to form the family centering on love within the realm of heavenly victory. So the focal points of God and man are really the same.

You were born in the course of fallen history, but you have attained the goal of mankind. How precious and valuable that is! Never before has it been achieved! Such a Blessing is based upon the clear contents of the theory of restoration. We have entered into a wonderful era. We must therefore think about the nature of the family in a new way. The family of Suzuki, for example, is not only the immediate family of one individual, Mr. Suzuki; it is a historical central lineage that may last for millennia.

## ***A clan-level foundation***

The perfection of Adam's family was to be the start of the perfection of the clan, society, and nation and the beginning of the Heavenly Kingdom. You are about to enter the level on which you can fulfill your clan-level mission centering on your family. I have a world-level mission, but the central point we are standing on is the same.

Jesus did not achieve the clan-level foundation; therefore, he did not marry. You must understand this clearly. If Jesus' mission had been initiated successfully centering on John the Baptist's family, forming the clan-level foundation, the Heavenly Kingdom would have been created, even if Jesus did not witness and only did carpentry work. All he really had to do was form the family four position foundation by having children.

For that purpose, Jesus did not need to trust himself to fickle crowds and expose himself to persecution. If he had gradually erected conditions to indemnify providential history, centering on the four position foundation, his life would not have been so miserable nor his death so untimely. He could have completed these conditions step by step, slowly but surely making his foundation. Had he formed the family foundation and had children, Christianity would have been far different. The world would have come under the influence of Jesus centering on his direct descendants. But all these foundations were never realized. Jesus died without having the clan-level family foundation. Therefore, we must restore it by paying indemnity at the risk of our lives. This is the way of the Unification movement, which is blazing the path of salvation for all people. The three-year course and the seven-year course are the standard course until the completion of the Heavenly Kingdom on the earth. You cannot ignore this destiny. You have a course of three years before marriage and seven years after marriage. Jesus was to build his family in his three-year course and to accomplish his seven-year course. In our case, we restore three disciples and then 12 disciples within three years, then bless them and walk the seven-year course. This is the view of the Principle. Jesus wanted to establish the foundation upon which he could expand his mission through the nation of Israel to the world. We must embrace all the things that Jesus did not accomplish and restore them by paying indemnity. This is our mission, our 5 percent responsibility, which symbolically encompasses all of history.

Centering upon these coming seven years, you should successfully witness to 84 people, one person per month. This is part of the clan-level sphere centering on 12 apostles and 72 disciples. The 72 tribal elders are the tribal leaders. If you accomplish this you can have 12 apostles on the clan level, three of them being a foundation for the family level.

Our mission is still to establish the foundation of substance by working with sweat and tears, spiritually and physically, in the place of Jesus, even if we are crucified substantially on the family level. Therefore, in the Unification Church, even if we are married, we are still going the way of the cross on the family level in order to accomplish this mission. Do you understand this? Jesus was resurrected after the crucifixion and gathered followers and made a spiritual start centering on the 12 apostles and 72 disciples.

If we do not accomplish such a foundation while we are still on this earth, the bridge connecting us to the Heavenly Kingdom will dissolve, and we will have to fight hard to find it again. This is the meaning of the seven-year course. We must witness to one person per month -- 84 people in all. This is the formula. I'm not just picking numbers at random.

The first goal is three disciples. In the restoration of Adam's family, eight people form a family. In order to protect that family we must have 12 brothers representing the 12 children of Jacob. They become the foundation of the clan. That clan is expanded and becomes the foundation of the tribe. The central figures for leading that tribal foundation are the 72 elders. Had they taken responsibility to guide people centering on Jesus, he would have never been crucified. This failure still remains in the course of restoration. I myself followed this formula, blessing three families, then 36 families (which actually represent three eras with 12 families in each era), followed by 72, 124, 430, 777, and 1,800. Since three times six is 18, the 1,800 Couple Blessing establishes the condition to transcend the sphere of Satan, to go beyond his reach.

You must follow this path absolutely. If we do not take responsibility for the world's sins and pay indemnity for them on the world level, the national foundation of Abel's sphere will be lost. To gain victory means to make world-level advances in Abel's sphere. This is our home church activity centering on 360 homes. I already planned this two years ago. From now on, we will be totally involved in it. Those who do not have a home church area will have no way to pursue restoration through indemnity. Because Jesus did not establish his own family, his disciples could not be blessed in marriage or begin Home Church. Even if you worked three years ago in London or in New York, Satan does not recognize it unless you do home church work. Even God cannot recognize it either. Because God gained a victorious foundation, I am able to form tribes centering upon Home Church. We can take the offensive in the world centering upon Home Church, centering upon tribes. Such a foundation was laid. We must subjugate Cain in order to establish Home Church -- the Cain-type individual, and Cain-type family, clan, tribe, and nation. We cannot return to our homeland unless we pay the indemnity on the world level through Home Church.

Up until now, those who led a religious life left their homes and served society, sacrificing themselves in pursuit of the ideal heaven. You also left your homes, didn't you? I did the same. I know how wonderful and precious the Principle is. So I wanted to teach the Principle to my own parents and brothers and sisters first, before anybody else. But God's dispensation is not the dispensation to save Abel. God's dispensation is to save Cain by offering Abel. That is why precious things are given to Cain, not to Abel. This is the Principle. I sacrificed all my life without buying a single piece of clothing for my own mother. I did so many things for all of mankind, but could do hardly anything for my own children. We are supposed to return to our homeland after we establish the home church condition on the individual, family, clan, tribe, nation, and world levels. We are now on the road of return.

***An Abel is known by his love***

This year I bought clothes and gifts for Mother and the children. Even though I bought them, it does not violate the Principle. Japanese leaders aren't you teaching a principle that I do not teach, when you say, "I am Abel because I am a church leader. You are Cain. Cain obeys Abel. This is the Principle. So obey." There is no such principle. The person who does not fulfill his mission and become the embodiment of love is not Abel.

People automatically and naturally bow before the power of love. The same holds true on the family, clan or tribal level. So if the Unification movement is the Abel movement on the world level, it must gain victory by shedding blood on the world level, and it must gain Satan's signature on the certificate of victory. Only then can the Unification movement become the Abel on the world level for the first time.

Actually, Eve stands in Abel's position at the moment of restoration. So for three years, you husbands should absolutely follow your wives. It may be better for each of you to work separately from your wife so you can develop yourself and she can respect you properly when you do get together. The three-year course after the Blessing is such a period.

Japanese civilization is the "copy-cat" of the rest of the world. Therefore, Japan should not keep things for herself. If she doesn't use them for the sake of the world, Japan will be ruined. The Japanese who joined the Unification Church must become heavenly citizens. Heavenly citizens are the people who set the ethical standard for the sake of all people.

Even if you are blessed, you still must fulfill the historical indemnity condition, finding three and then 12 apostles, and 72 disciples. You must think seriously about that. You have no qualification to be blessed, but I'm giving you the Blessing anyway. Since this Blessing is your home, if you profane it, you will have to restore it at the risk of your life. Although you have no qualifications to receive the Blessing, you can inherit everything as the children of True Parents, because you are standing in the position to have your name on the title papers. Because of this principle of the heavenly world, your Blessing is possible. Your challenge is to transcend the realm of Adam and Eve's fall. Climb up on the shoulders of True Parents and leap from there toward God and all people. Hell may lie below you, but God and all the people in the spiritual world will immediately support you. Do husband and wife belong to themselves? No, they belong to God and the universe. Love is not yours. It belongs to God and to the human race. So during these next three years, run for the sake of God. Run, cultivating your heart of love. When you love your wife, the daughter of God, love her with the heart with which you adore God. If your love is not strong enough, God will not be moved.

If people around you do not consider your family exemplary, it is because your love is still not vibrant enough. When a woman loves her husband, she should love him with the heart with which she adores God. If the give and take of love within a family can move God, the four position foundation is formed and the family will prosper. If we spin a toy top, keeping the pivot straight, it will spin well. But if we and make the pivot unsteady, it wobbles. So if we create a family with a steady and unchanging standard of love, not only spiritually healthy children, but wonderful grandchildren, can be assured. So if you want to have a

good child, make your love top spin straight. Then everything will be solved. You must form a family of four positions centering upon such love.

A person forms a four position foundation thinking about heaven, all people, and his spouse. Thus, heaven, mankind, and husband and wife are united. Adam and Eve fell without setting such a standard. Therefore, first of all, we must each strive to set this standard. Our goal is to love heaven and all people, enhancing our love by sacrificing ourselves. Please remember that you were blessed for this purpose. If you do this, you will be free from accusation by the realm of the fall. This is the principled point of view. The fallen world is centered upon itself. People forgot about things such as God's love, the human race, descendants, all things, the universe, and so on. But we were created to think about these things.

We have seven years to achieve the standard of perfection in the completion stage. We prepare for the Blessing for three years and find three disciples, establishing the foundation of indemnity modeled on Jesus' course. This fulfills the messianic mission on the tribal level. Therefore, we are not working for the sake of the Japanese Unification Church, but for the sake of the nation. I am working for the sake of the world. I am one step ahead of you and have been working busily to prepare the way by doing engineering work, as it were, building bridges, and laying tracks, so that you can follow.

Satan corrupted Eve at the time of the fall. But, at the time of restoration, Eve must be pulled up to the level of perfection through the Holy Wine Ceremony. The next dispensation must take place through this restored Eve. You men, who were fallen archangels before the Holy Wine Ceremony, have become restored archangels, but you still need to inherit the blood lineage as children of God. Before the fall, Adam was the son of God. To be restored, he can become an adopted son by being "grafted" through a restored woman, and then can finally bear fruit. This is our strategy. By which principle is this possible? Since an archangel fell by Eve, he can be recreated by a restored Eve, regaining his original position through the payment of indemnity.

It is important to understand these things before we begin this momentous ceremony. Let us pray.

Heavenly Father, we are here laying the victorious basis for the restoration of Eve. We need the spiritual foundation by which we can restore the bridegroom as the eternal spouse. I long for You to bless these couples so they can stand in the position of children who can be born anew centering on this holy wine. I pray You will protect them so they can be reborn and can victoriously subjugate the realm of restoration by indemnity and follow the path which leads to Your love in the coming three years. Please protect them. I pray gratefully, in the True Parents' name. Amen.

### **Chapter 30**

**Address at the Eighth Anniversary of the 777 Couples Blessing  
October 22, 1978 -- Soo Taek Lee, Korea**

Earlier I spoke about Home Church -- the final barrier that we in the Unification movement have to go through. Since we cannot fulfill our mission without going through this last gateway, let me speak again on this topic.

Originally, if man had not fallen, there would have been no necessity for even the words "Home Church." The completed, perfected family of Adam and Eve would have become the family which could have directly attended God, and naturally communicated with the angelic world. This family would have produced children, formed their tribe and their nation, and eventually the whole world would have become the world of Adam's family.

Then what happened because of the fall? By falling, Adam and Eve were separated from God and cut off from the angelic world. They lost everything. They were expelled from the Garden, which means they lost the standard of true human beings, the true family standard, and the true national standard. Who was responsible for that? It wasn't God, nor was it the angelic world, nor the world of creation. It was the responsibility of mankind.

Therefore, we are destined to follow the course of the providence of restoration. A person cannot go this path alone. He or she needs the help of God and the spirit world. Therefore, God and the spirit world have been mobilized to help fallen man on earth complete the history of recreation.

God created man after He had created the physical world. Therefore, the restoration of man must start after the restoration of material things. In order to restore material things, people in the Old Testament Age made offerings to God using things from the creation. Such offerings united God, the spirit world and the creation into a substantial foundation. Through these successful offerings, the foundation to restore a substantial Adam was begun.

This foundation of offering was supposed to be established worldwide. To do that, a particular nation, Israel, was elected. It was God's hope that Israel would become the most important nation in the world, so that when the foundation was completed there, it would represent all the world. On that kind of foundation, perfected Adam and Eve would be able to stand.

### ***The way of the cross of love***

The New Testament Age started when Jesus Christ, who came with the purpose of completing God's will, became the offering. This offering expanded worldwide as Christianity grew and prepared the environment for the restoration of all mankind. Therefore, among all religions, Christianity became the central religion. However, its foundation is only on the spiritual level.

If man had not fallen, the original standard would have been the perfection of both body and spirit. So, since Christianity has only a spiritual foundation, the matter of the Second Advent becomes important. God has been developing Christianity, the second Israel, on a worldwide basis in order to lay the foundation to receive the Messiah, who will come as a substantial person. His task is to restore through indemnity the foundation of perfected

Adam, who is the center of the whole world, and to unify both body and spirit, physical and spiritual.

The Unification movement arose out of the need for a perfected person who can unify body and spirit on the foundation of worldwide Christianity. That person stands in the unfallen position and has the responsibility to establish the ideal of God's love worldwide. In the Old Testament Age, blood was shed through offerings. In the New Testament Age, martyrs shed blood, offering their lives to advance God's will.

In this age of the Unification movement, "blood" is shed through sacrificial love. Due to the fall, mankind lost God, the angelic world, and a true relationship with the physical world. People lost their grip on true love. To reach the goal of that true love, we have to go the way of sacrifice, which is in a sense the shedding of heartistic "blood." That is the mission of this movement.

You must understand that the path which I have been following on behalf of the individual, the family, the nation and the whole world is the way of the cross of love. If this movement fails to follow the way of the cross of love, it cannot complete God's will. But if it gains the victory, it can promote God's will and bring about the age of the Heavenly Kingdom here on earth.

Then what is the family? The family is the place where God can be welcomed. Originally, the family was to create the central foundation to attend God, but this was lost at the fall. Also, because of the fall, people could not establish a vertical relationship with the angelic world. Therefore, we must restore a direct relationship with the spirit world during our horizontal physical lives. The family is the place for doing that.

In the family we can also prepare the foundation for the restoration of material things and stand in the position representing perfected Adam, or God's true child. And finally, centering upon God, through becoming substantial parents, we can fulfill our responsibility to perfect the unity of spirit and body, that is, God's sphere of unified heart. That is the internal responsibility of the Unification Church.

What is the difference between the Unification Church and traditional religions? The primary purpose of the existing traditional religions has been the salvation of individuals. Many religions developed and expanded by preaching only about how to perfect the ideal personality. But the Unification Church was formed to bring the perfection of the family. In the past, in order to be saved through any of the individualistic religions, all that was required was that a person offer and dedicate himself on the individual level. But this is now the age of the perfection of the family, which will happen only if we are able to make an offering of our own families.

### ***Family representing mankind***

Unification Church members do not start their family life immediately after they receive the Blessing from God. After they are blessed, they are supposed to start an official three-year course of separation. Before we can have our own families, we must make indemnity

conditions to restore the historical background of fallen families and the many families today who are not God-centered. Then what is the relationship between your family and families in the secular world? To use the terminology of the Unification Church, your family is the internal, Abel-type family, and the secular families are the external, Cain-type families. Before Unification Church members were given the Blessing, the division into Abel and Cain was on the individual level. But with the advent of the Blessing, the division into Abel and Cain was established on the level of families

The sphere of families centered upon God expands through the Blessing. By attending our True Parents, these families inherit the internal heart of heaven. As these families expand horizontally, they form tribes and nations. Furthermore, you may be Korean, but your family is not limited to the Korean people; it is worldwide, transcending national or cultural boundaries. So even if your family is Kim or Park, its members are not just individuals but representatives of mankind and the whole world. In other words, you must understand that your families represent the whole world, beyond tribes, beyond nations, beyond cultures. You have been given that kind of responsibility. Centering upon True Parents, our family foundation has advanced from 36 families, to 72 families and so on, expanding the foundation of restoration through indemnity up to the worldwide basis.

### ***The third seven-year course***

After you receive the Blessing, you still have to walk the path of witnessing and the way of faith. The fact that we have been blessed does not mean that we have achieved a stronger position than the secular world. When we formed blessed families, there were already clans and tribes in the secular world. Even if we establish a sphere of God's dominion on the national level, the secular world has already established nations and they already have their own world. Therefore we still have the task of establishing God's domain on the level of the world.

God's Blessing has been given within this world of satanic dominion. Therefore, there are still stages for us to go through. Individual blessed families must go on to the levels of tribe, society, nation and world. The final level we must reach is that of the Heavenly Kingdom.

You may think that the Blessing is all you need, but that is not true. When you received the Blessing you were not in the position to overcome the secular world completely and go beyond it to the Kingdom of Heaven. You were blessed within this satanic world, and your Blessing establishes Abel-type families. The Cain world, which is ahead of us externally, will not immediately acknowledge and obey someone whose position they consider inferior. They will certainly try to persecute us and crush us. We have to go through a process to win them over.

My Holy Wedding ceremony took place in 1960, but my family was not formed on the foundation of victory over this world and the spiritual world. Even though it had a victorious foundation, it was merely the national-level foundation of Korea. It inherited the position of Jesus Christ who did not complete His mission. Therefore, unless the Korean nation could

support me, I was destined to be persecuted by Satan and the satanic world on my way to forming a new tribe, nation, and world.

Our family's destiny is to go beyond the fallen world during our lifetime by restoration through indemnity. To indemnify history, we must fulfill this task within a certain period of time, with certain conditional objects and with Abel-type people in Adam's place.

In my own case, the important thing is to establish certain conditions within a providential time period on the level of the nation and world. So in the Abel position, I have to go through persecution on the level of individual, family, society, nation, and world. I have to survive this persecution and prepare the victorious foundation to connect this Abel-centered ideology with all of these levels.

The Unification Church established three seven-year courses since 1960 centering upon me, in order to indemnify the 2,000 year history of Christianity and the struggle between the spirit and the body. The death of Jesus on the cross was the sacrifice of the physical body for the spiritual foundation. Therefore, the spirit and body were not able to unite, and they have been in conflict with each other. Traditional Christianity is based upon a spiritual foundation, while the Unification Church is based upon a foundation of both spirit and body. That is why we have been struggling through Christian persecution and opposition up to now.

### ***The course of restoration for blessed families***

The United States is the representative of worldwide Christianity. We went through all kinds of struggles there for three and a half years, from April 1, 1973, to September 1976, when we achieved victory. This victory established the worldwide victorious foundation for the Unification Church centering upon both spirit and body.

On February 23, 1977, we proclaimed the beginning of a new age. Now we can never perish, no matter how hard worldwide Christianity comes against us. We are entering the age when the more they oppose us, the more they lose and the more we gain. The spiritual and physical foundation and material blessings from the secular world will come to the Unification Church.

The blessed families in Korea have been unaware of many of the things going on in the world. Instead of sacrificing themselves for the sake of God, blessed families have been living for their own sake, because of ignorance. This keeps them from transcending their national boundaries. Not knowing how to live as blessed families, they thought that just by believing and following me, they would prosper and I would take them to the Kingdom of Heaven. But that is not the case. You yourselves must follow the path of restoration through indemnity centering upon your family and your nation, just as I have done. Everyone has to go this path. If you follow my path exactly, although it is tremendously difficult, you can inherit the foundation which has already been established, and you can be engrafted to it.

I sometimes hear members say, "I am too busy to do home church work," but this is because they don't know its real meaning. Home Church is not what you do because you like to do it. Unless it is fulfilled, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

To establish God's providence, you must go through the Abel-type foundation. You must become an individual Abel, a family Abel, a tribal Abel, a national Abel, a world Abel, and then you must become the perfected Abel who can receive God's love. Originally, this should have been done within the one generation of Adam and Eve, but it took God 6,000 biblical years to make this kind of foundation.

God's heart is unchanging. If God loses a beloved person, He will still have a heartache 1,000 years later. God is the being who transcends time and space. Therefore, no matter how much time passes, God's heartistic pain has the same intensity from beginning to end. We must understand and inherit God's heart. For that reason, the Messiah comes on the worldwide Christian foundation and connects the world through this nucleus of God's heart. Thus he brings together the present world, which is the horizontal plane, with the historical world of God's heart, which is the vertical plane. By so doing, the entire sphere of restoration is completed; the cosmos is connected with its proper center.

### ***The Blessing at the risk of life***

The Messiah comes in order to complete the historical providence and to connect all the ages, horizontally and vertically. Although he comes as an individual, he represents Christianity and the Christian nations of the world. He also represents the individuals, families, tribes, peoples of the Christian world. Since he has such a responsibility, his mission is worldwide. His mission starts from his family, because all the fallen elements began in the family of Adam and Eve. It was Adam and Eve who drove God out of the family. Because of their mistake, the angelic world was divided. Adam and Eve lost the world of material things, human value and human love, because they made a mistake as man and woman. From the point of view of the Principle, only when man and woman meet properly can they be restored properly.

What is the Blessing in the Unification Church? It is the union of man and woman centered not on selfishness but upon God. Everything was lost because man and woman came together wrongly, so by reversing this relationship and setting it on the proper foundation, we can come back to God. This is the meaning of the Blessing of the Unification Church. Who gives the Blessing on behalf of God? The Messiah must do it.

The Lord of the Second Advent of Christianity comes as the bridegroom to meet his bride. Although he takes his bride as an individual, still it has significance on the world level. Their union is the junction of the vertical and horizontal ages and the death sentence of the satanic world. Therefore, all of the satanic world will mobilize to prevent the Messiah and his bride from achieving success.

Unless the religions of the world unite and support the Messiah, they will be taken over by the satanic side. If they remain silent, they will also be taken over by the satanic side. Since the established churches in Korea did not support the Messiah, Satan could invade

the foundation of the nation and the church. The Messiah had to secure his position under maximum persecution and attack -- the greatest battle ever fought. That was in 1960 through the Holy Wedding. The Blessing of the 36 Couples also took place under desperate circumstances. The Blessings of the 36, 72 and 124 Couples laid a foundation on earth. By the time of the 777 Couple Blessing, we had established a foundation to expand worldwide. That is the history of the Unification Church.

After 21 years we will open the gates so that all humanity can be connected, the gates through which all five races or colors can enter.

### ***Restoration of Canaan***

The Unification Church made a new beginning and became a worldwide church with the Blessing of 430 Couples. That Blessing corresponds to 4,300 years of Korean history. Also 430 is the number of years which the Israelites had to suffer in Egypt in order to restore Canaan. Christians set out to restore the worldwide Canaan centered on the individual, not the family. The Christians, the Israelites of their time, upheld celibacy as a great virtue. The family level remained in the realm of Satan. So from God's point of view it was the age of restoring Canaan on the individual level.

For the first time in history, the family level movement of the restoration of Canaan is taking place worldwide, through the Unification Church. Korean, Japanese and American Unification Church members have been traveling around like gypsies, unable to settle down. Then where is the Canaan for the Unification Church? It is nothing less than the Heavenly Kingdom on earth. When the planet Earth has entered Canaan we will call it the Heavenly Kingdom on earth. The Israelites were headed towards a particular nation they called Canaan. For us, Canaan is the whole world. The Canaan of the Israelites was centered upon individuals, while the joyous world of Canaan we are seeking is centered upon the family.

Now we are walking the path of the 21-year course. If we have faith and follow in heart and spirit, within 21 years we can prepare the foundation for the worldwide restoration of Canaan. Then, within 40 years, we can make this whole world a peaceful Heavenly Kingdom. Forty years after 1960, by the year 2000, the Heavenly Kingdom will have been completed. So where are we in the Unification Church now? Are we going to be like the Israelites who wandered around in the wilderness for 40 years or like those who should have gone directly to Canaan within 21 days? Our Canaan is worldwide. If we cannot go within 21 years we may have to wander around for 40 years, perhaps witnessing worldwide destruction.

When we think of this possibility, we must succeed in 21 years, expanding God's territory centering upon America, which was prepared by God as the center of the world. We must begin in that country, where the five colors of people are included. Centering upon America the whole world will be connected to God.

The 430 Couples are the ones who connect all the families of the world, uniting the five races of the world. It is very significant for the Unification Church to have a wedding

ceremony centered upon the number 430. There were 430 Couples blessed in Korea and a total of 43 Couples blessed in Japan, the United States and Europe, corresponding to the 430 Couples in Korea. The original three blessed families were connected with them as well. That Blessing established the national foundation in Korea, representing the whole world; now all Koreans from all stations in life have the foundation to dwell in heaven on earth. The representative number 43 is the foundation upon which all the nations of the world can enter the Heavenly Kingdom.

This was the foundation for the Blessing of 777 Couples. By that Blessing the worldwide gate was opened, connecting all the races, nations and families with God. By going through the gate of the 777 Couples, which the Unification Church has made, all people can go to heaven. Therefore that Blessing can make a new worldwide start.

### ***The three-year witnessing campaign***

From 1970-72, many of the blessed families participated in a campaign to establish the foundation for the worldwide blessed land of Canaan.

Not only in Korea but also in Japan and other countries, blessed members left their homes and returned to their native provinces and villages to witness. Centering upon Korea all the blessed families worked for three years.

For that reason, I myself went to America, which is the center stage of the world. Up until then I had spoken at our small church at Chungpa Dong, but I had never appeared in a public place. All the revival meetings had been conducted by my disciples. But because it was time to transcend the national level and begin my mission on the worldwide level, I left Korea in 1971 and went to America. For the sake of God I gave up myself, my wife, and my children during those three years. In the same way, in Korea wives gave up their children; husbands went to the north, wives went to the south, and children went to the east; everybody was separated.

Then what is the foundation for Korea to receive the Blessing? When I asked the blessed families to follow such a difficult and severe path, I was denounced. The blessed couples all complained. Some people predicted it would destroy the Unification Church. When the blessed members left for their missions, they left their children with their parents or other relatives in Korea.

This action brought much criticism and accusation. People said, "The man named Moon is colder than wood or stone. Even tigers know that they should take care of their offspring. That man Moon gave the Blessing to his disciples and told them to live a joyful blessed life, and then when the members started their family life, he ordered them to separate from each other, husband and wife and children, and go in all different directions: north, east, south and west. He is a terrible man."

Most of those parents and relatives had opposed the Unification movement, yet they could not help but take care of our members' children. By caring for the children of our members, those Koreans fulfilled the condition of taking care of the children whom God

loves on behalf of the nation of Korea. Because of their condition, Korea could avoid being punished by heaven.

When did the economic recovery of Korea begin? In 1972, when the Unification Church families went out on their missions. Because of that condition there was a way for the Republic of Korea to receive the blessing spiritually. Check the facts to see if what I have said is true.

In 1972 I started a public speaking campaign in America, and within three and a half years, I became world famous.

What does "Pak" of Bo Hi Pak mean? It means round or revolving, and "Bo Hi" has the general meaning of being pleasant or pleased. "Bo" means wide and "Hi" means bright. Therefore, his name indicates that he brings something good to Korea and to America. Round Pak becomes bright and brings happiness to the whole world. He is a representative of the Republic of Korea and he himself goes around, bringing happiness and fortune to Korea. My name is Sun Myung. The word "Sun" means brightness with no clouds -- a very fresh and pleasant blue sky, clear, clean and bright.

### ***The battle in America***

The Unification Church has now reached the blessed land of Canaan on the family level; however, more burdens and difficulties lie ahead. Therefore, it is better not to purchase houses until the 21-year course is over. We need to have our own nation in order to have our own house.

The Republic of Korea can enjoy a Sabbath only when she has fulfilled her responsibility of inspiring the world and helping it to live according to God's will.

What kind of country is America? It was established by Abel-type people who came from Christian countries throughout the world. When Protestantism was born in Europe, Catholics tried to kill and persecute the Protestants in every nation. Therefore, many Protestants escaped from their countries at the risk of their lives and sacrificed everything in order to attend God and work for God. Many of them came to America and established this country. Providentially, if America moves, it can make the world move. We are advancing our 21-year course in a new country, on a new worldwide foundation, while other nations are abandoning God and Christianity is failing God's providence.

If God could have definitely recognized America as the ideal nation there would have been no reason for the Unification Church to exist. But God could not do that. Only the Unification Church could penetrate beyond national barriers and beyond communism and head toward the ideal world of God. When we go forward centering on God, regardless of the trials and difficulties that come our way, we will surely achieve victory. If we lose courage or fail to make a breakthrough then we will be defeated.

At the time of our fight with the Fraser Committee of the United States Congress, if I had not taken decisive action, we would have been completely defeated.

## ***The mission of blessed families***

Without such a victorious foundation, you blessed families would have had to go through the same course I did. But representing you, I have established the way, so you must be grateful to me. Therefore, centering on your Blessing you are in the same realm as I and can feel the same way I do. When I feel sorrow, you feel sorrow with me. Have you done something special for the sake of my victory in America? Have you made a special altar in your home, and are you praying in front of it? There is no question that you made efforts to bear children, raise them, and take care of them. Also there is no question that you have had a poor and suffering life. But beyond that, you should cherish the True Parents and unite with their heart. This should be the goal of the blessed families during the third seven-year course.

Can you afford to quarrel and fight? You feel horrible when your child bleeds from some minor cut. In this desperate time when the world may perish, when the country may perish, the tribe may perish, are you concerned about only your children and spouse? You should have dedicated yourselves even at the sacrifice of your lives, demonstrating your devotion and pledge to God. If you did not do that, today you should repent.

Here in Korea I do not feel easy or restful, so I cannot help saying things to scold you. Those of you who are seeing me for the first time may wonder why I am like this. Originally, I was not like that. When parents have no money to feed their children when they are sick and dying, they feel anguish. Have you ever thought seriously about God's problem? You have been living your own way, while I was suffering and having a hard time in foreign countries. Those who did nothing but quarrel with their spouse, those who neglected God's will, or failed to do their best should indemnify or cleanse all those failures. Do you understand that?

I am not saying this to be cruel. Please reflect on your devotion to God's will and how central it is to your daily life. If you fight or quarrel, God will leave you. I came back to Korea from my victory in America to bring the worldwide blessing to this country. I fought abroad and returned, just like a victorious army general returning from an overseas campaign. I have brought all the glory in the world back to this country. Those who helped me during that period will receive the reward of their actions.

Did I come back to give you suffering and pain. or to give you a good time? Because the 777 Blessed Couples represent the whole world, the indemnity must start from the 777 Couples. Are you still willing to receive the blessing in spite of the pain you may have to endure? [Yes] Then you can receive the Blessing.

## ***Crossing the Jordan River***

Brothers and sisters, please practice what I have been doing so far. You need to become engrafted onto me. If the body is dead you can regenerate it by becoming engrafted onto me. Our unity should be stronger now than it was at the time of your Blessing seven years ago. Your family should be bonded to the True Parents' family, so we can restore the worldwide Canaan together. If you cut yourself off, you will perish.

As Moses represented the 600,000 Israelites, I represent the Unification Church, centering on the blessed families. Don't focus on yourselves. If you are asked to go abroad, you should not refuse because of the situation of your children and your spouses. You must remember Moses' course. When the time comes, you must cross the river. You may have to swim across, pulling your children with a rope in order to keep them from drowning.

The Israelites who left Egypt perished and could not cross the Jordan River. The Jordan River represents the boundary between the satanic world and heavenly world. The parents have to pull their children across the river. Both husband and wife must be one with God's will and engraft their family to the True Parents. You are blessed families but there is still no family tree within the Unification Church. As a couple, unite in heart and body around the heart of God and True Parents.

Crossing the Jordan River is like crossing the Red Sea. When God divides the water and opens up the dry ground, step forward. If you miss the chance, you will drown. Many Unification Church members are not aware of the awesome nature of this time.

### ***Bear the family cross***

Since we are meeting after such a long separation, I expected you to rejoice together with God, shedding tears, dancing and singing with joy. But I found the atmosphere very secularized. I feel very disappointed, like an army general who returns from the front line expecting a hero's welcome only to discover that his wife has deserted him and his children, and married another man.

The Republic of Korea is the Adam country, and our achievement here cannot be inferior to that of the Eve country or the archangel country. What are you doing? Are the lecturers and educators sleeping in their lecture halls? Kim Il Sung is looking to invade this country by any means, so how can we sleep under those circumstances? From the northwest and the north, communist China and the Soviet Union are aiming at this country. Are you sleeping while communism is encircling you? All our members must do their best to join North and South and East and West, sacrificing themselves for the cause. The Unification movement is responsible for the destiny of this nation and for pioneering the way that will bring life to the world, yet many of you are concerned only about your own life. You fight among yourselves, and yet you tell me, "Please come back"!

Your wives ought to urge your husbands to do their best for God's will. But instead you complain that they don't love you and don't earn enough money. If your husband is a full time leader or center member without an income, you tell him to go out and get a job. Your husbands must have heard this kind of advice from your wives.

I am leading the third seven-year course and have been enduring much suffering. So the blessed families also go through the way of suffering. Unless you bear the family cross, God cannot be with your family. When you receive salaries, are you going the way of God's will? God would prefer to see families being sacrificial rather than eating nice food and living a happy life in the name of Heavenly Father. Those who sacrifice their families

for God's will could receive much more blessing. I do not feel much attachment to those members who work for companies and who are not able to help me.

Those of you who are not able to help me and give up things for the sake of God's will, don't you realize how much persecution the Unification Church has received because of your lukewarm support? I hope you will become more willing to sacrifice, getting by on less sleep and food, and not using heavenly things for private purposes.

### ***For the sake of God***

This is the family-level course to restore the worldwide Canaan. We are facing the Jordan River and the Kingdom of Heaven on the other side. You must know that your responsibility is to bring the victorious family foundation into the Heavenly Kingdom. Moses died looking across the Jordan River from the top of a mountain. The first generation Israelites became prey of eagles in the wilderness. Such a tragedy could also happen to us.

Since I know that, I am working at the risk of my life. I have no time even to get sick; I have no time to take rest, even if I want to. If you do not fulfill your responsibility while I am alive, you will have no excuse in the spirit world. You must be clearly aware of that. Unless you can offer to God the suffering your wife or children may have to endure, you cannot follow this path. I myself had to follow the path even without giving one grain of rice to my family. I could give nothing to my children; I did not save even a penny for my family. Therefore, you must be ready to follow my path.

Because you have been blessed, you have the foundation to overcome hardships. You 777 Couples represent the whole world; therefore, if you endure suffering now, you will receive heaven's blessings on behalf of the world. Such a precious gift does not come to you in a high and glorious position, but in a humble, sacrificial place. When you offer up your family, you can receive God's greatest blessing. Therefore, please continue on this course, especially when I am not here. Create unity in the family and in the church. Please follow this path so that God can remember you and bless you.

This is an occasion for repentance. Korea must follow this path so that the people of the world will have sympathy for Korea. Husbands and wives must become united and show the example to their children. You should be able to tell them, "Since your parents are completely one in heart and follow the path which pleases God, please follow our example." By being sacrificial as a family and reaching out to others, you will receive God's blessing and you can welcome God into your home.

You blessed families should develop and mature and fulfill the dreams God had for Adam's family. Then you will be able to welcome God and His angels into your home, and all good things will automatically come to you. If you live this way, you will never starve. God has been feeding and taking care of even the satanic world; therefore He will never allow His hard working children to starve.

I have been fighting on behalf of our country and the world. God has always helped me. Thanks to His unfailing help, I have been able to walk this path. Some of you care more for your children or spouse than for God. Offer your family for the sake of your tribe, your tribe for the people, the people for the nation, and the nation for the world. Finally, the world must be sacrificed in order to eliminate hell.

When the way before you is so clear, it is foolish to hold back because of your children or wife. If you are so foolish, you will lose everything. Our whole life is for the sake of God. Regardless of the difficulties we may face, we must devote our lives to God, the True Parents, and the whole world. That is the way of the Unification Church. Otherwise, you will wander in the desert like the Israelites. The ship that has lost its compass must locate the North Star to determine its position and plot its course. Likewise, if your life is not focused on God, you will lose your way in the desert of this world.

### ***The tradition of my family***

Those of you who came with your spouses, raise your hands, let me look at you. You wives are the ones who initiate the quarrels and give your husbands a hard time, right? Tell me frankly. Your faces reveal the answer. Because your husbands are calm and quiet, you do not feel good unless you fight at least once a week! You should cherish your husbands and love them as you love God. Take good care of them. They hold fast to God's will, so you should not fight with them.

God's will is for you to build the Kingdom of Heaven first in your home. What is the Kingdom of Heaven? It is the kind of place where a passing beggar feels welcome to take a rest, where birds like to make their nests, where village people like to visit. Such a place is the heavenly home or the Kingdom of Heaven on the family level. God will be attracted to such a home and want to make it His dwelling. You should be able to make your home like this.

When you have guests, don't hope they will leave soon because it costs money to feed them. Blessed families must take good care of their guests, even if they have to sell their own clothes to raise money to care for them. Those who do that will be blessed in the future. If you sell your clothes, far more will be given to you. This is one tradition which has been handed down from generation to generation in my family. We were raised to take good care of guests, even travelers passing through our village. When my grandfather was the master of our house, if a beggar showed up on a cold winter day, he would give the man all the food on his table. Then my grandmother would complain. Suppose you were a beggar. Would it be easy for you to beg door to door on a cold winter day? Therefore, if someone comes asking for food you must feed him.

You are the ones who are walking the path of God, developing a heavenly heart. You must understand that the beggars live day to day at the risk of their lives. If you understand their heart, you will let them eat as much as they want. My grandfather thought that beggars were more important than his own wife in a sense, and that he had to serve them for the sake of his descendants. My father also felt that way. He, too, would give

someone his whole meal. Because of that I often saw him quarreling with my mother, not because she did not want to help them, but because she was not serving them fast enough. But I am sure that God will never forget such a scene.

The head of the household is responsible for helping others. If the husband, the head of the household, doesn't help others, the family will suffer. So the center directors and the national leaders must take good care of their guests coming from abroad. Even when you don't have enough food for yourselves, you must give food to your visitors. If you do that, then one day when you are really starving, somebody will come and feed you.

### ***Become a good example for your children***

Why do some wives give a hard time to the poor husbands of the Unification Church? That is not the true way of God's family. Already seven years have passed since the 777 Couples were blessed, but up to now most of you have just quarreled with your husbands. So beginning today, Oct. 22, 1978, make a resolution not to quarrel.

As we build the family of the Kingdom of Heaven, the emphasis is on our children. You must become good examples for your children. If you are self-centered, then your children will become self-centered as well. They will learn everything from you. How tragic if sinless sons and daughters have to go the way of suffering because of their parents! If parents quarrel and fight in front of their children, the Blessing of the Unification Church loses its meaning and withers away. I have never quarreled with my wife and I never will. Will you promise me not to quarrel?

You must know that your own sons and daughters will become the official witness on earth and in heaven to testify that their parents never fought and that their parents were the best of parents. Do you want your children to say that? If you have already established that kind of family foundation, then why do I have such an unpleasant feeling after coming back to this country this time?

Go back to your local churches and tell the members there what I have said. Apologize to them. Since you are the 777 Couples you must do your best to fulfill your calling. It is better to be separated for three years than to fight even once. There is a saying that it is as easy for a husband and wife to quarrel as it is to cut water; but within the Unification Church fighting between husband and wife should be even more difficult than cutting iron. Please make a determination in front of God and in front of me that you will never fight with your spouse.

I did not come here today to scold you. What would I gain by that? It only gives me pain. So if you repent before God, He will forgive you. If blessed families of the Unification Church set poor examples, your ancestors will scold you. Can you become one in heart with your spouse and with your children? Even people in the secular world make efforts to become like this, so don't you think we should try harder? Only when a husband and wife become one in heart can God dwell with them. That is the Principle. If a subject and object become completely one, then the central core will emerge. The center of the subject and object is love. The goal of human history had been to establish this nucleus of love. When

love overflows and permeates the entire family, tribe, society, nation and world, the history of restoration will be completed.

When you go back home, tell your children, "You may have seen your daddy and mommy fighting or arguing, but from now on, we'll not do anything like that again. Please forget all of that." I'm going to tell the students of the Little Angels School that if they have seen their parents fighting before, from now on things will be different.

### ***The higher goal***

At your blessed family meetings, you should counsel each other. You are responsible for establishing the good tradition of husband-wife unity. Make your blessed family meetings significant and meaningful for the whole membership. Such meetings are necessary in order to develop your filial piety and faithfulness.

In the history of restoration, I have been establishing the conditions of indemnity on behalf of the whole, but you must be engrafted to me in order to inherit them. Before you can become one with me, you have to become one as husband and wife, and as parents and children. Then your whole family needs to be bonded to me. If you can do so, you will be the first to receive the blessings accumulated by me.

I came back to Korea at this time so I could extend all these blessings to you, but I found many of the blessed members, even the 36 Couples and the 72 Couples, living a life centered not upon God, but upon themselves. There is no excuse for you to continue this way, knowing how urgent the will of God is. Please understand this clearly and become fathers and mothers who can pledge loyalty to God. Be exemplary individuals and families, capable of inheriting heavenly tradition. I hope that you will make every effort to do that.

Your family must be able to set the heavenly tradition for your descendants to inherit. It is not good if you say to your descendants, "You should not become like us."

At this time, Hyo Jin and In Jin, even though they are in Korea, are still unable to meet with their own father. I feel sorry for them from the point of view of their parent. It is natural that children want to stay with their parents, but I cannot help the situation. I must make them understand that despite their own sadness, their father and mother are working for the sake of the whole, for the sake of all human beings.

You too must show your children that you are working not for your own benefit, but for the sake of the whole. If you do that, your children will be given blessings. So, women, from now on when your husbands come home tired, tell your children why. Explain to them: "Your father and mother are different from the fathers and mothers of other children. We are living like this for the sake of God, for the sake of mankind, and we are making history. Normal husbands and wives would quarrel if they were suffering as much as we are, and even separate and get divorced, but still your father and mother are patient and have hopes that God will give us blessing. We are living a life of gratitude to God. Because blessings come when we do our best, we give our utmost loyalty and sincerity to God."

When you bring up your children that way, they will be able to inherit your teachings, and your descendants will prosper from generation to generation. Your family should live for the sake of the world and for the sake of eternity. Expand your foundation of love to bring light and hope to the world, longing to reach out everywhere, to heaven and earth, and all the people for the sake of God. This is my greatest hope for your family. If your family becomes like that, even if the communists come and try to take over, God will protect you.

### ***The realm of family victory***

Up until now, I have been pushing you to the front line and I know you have been really suffering. And just as I myself have been slandered and persecuted, people will do the same to you. All this we have been doing for one purpose, to accomplish God's will. We have pledged to gain the victory. The glory of final victory will belong not just to certain individuals, but to everybody. If you really believe this, you can accept suffering with a humble heart, grateful to God and mankind. If you have such a heart then God will surely bless you.

Since I am that way, God can never desert me. No matter what difficulties come my way, even if I am overwhelmed by their burden. God blesses me and keeps me alive so that I can become His pride. He will do the same for you. I know that for a fact.

Build your family on this foundation. When you see your spouse sleeping in exhaustion, feel sympathy and pray for him or her. Mother is also miserable. Yesterday, she had only two hours of sleep and she doesn't feel well today, yet I brought her here for you to see. In her position, she cannot sleep just because she feels tired. Her position is sometimes not a happy one. She has to come here because she is in a responsible position for the sake of the whole. And yet, she does not complain.

I am very strict publicly. Mother knows that. She knows that I am willing to go forward even if I die on the way; and she follows willingly. Even if you cannot fulfill all your public responsibility, still you must make some conditions to surmount difficulties. Mother came here today to demonstrate this point.

You know what indemnity conditions mean. You have been following the path of indemnity conditions. Those who are mere bystanders will suffer. If you follow me with a responsible heart, you will surely be given blessings and your children will naturally follow the path of God's will. The older they become the more cause you will have for gratitude. Good things that used to happen only once a month will come to happen every day.

My path has always been a lonely one, but I know that the more I do, the more things I am grateful for. Your blessings come from within your family. I long for you to inherit the victorious sphere of family victory.

### ***Living for all the people***

The family of the Messiah represents the whole world. That family can understand and give love to the whole world. All five races will want to join that family, because it is the

center of the realm of heart. Through that family, all people can come to the central point and then reach out to all directions. The Heavenly Kingdom cannot be established unless there is one central family.

The family Kingdom of Heaven also must be established with one man and with one woman in complete unity. In order for an individual to establish the Kingdom of Heaven within himself, his heart and body must be completely one. Likewise, in order for a family to become the Kingdom of Heaven, the husband, wife, and children must be completely united, enjoying complete give and take with one another. In other words, they must be completely united with God's will.

God's will is to live for the sake of other people. Focus upon God and live for the sake of others; then your family can be connected with God. That is the way the blessed families should live until the whole world is restored. Become the family that can love all the people on behalf of God. Then you can save all the families of mankind. For this purpose you were blessed.

God is the center of the family. From the family, the tribe begins. And from the tribe that lives for the sake of God, the nation begins.

And from the nation that lives for the sake of the world, the heavenly world is established. From this point of view, the family has immense significance. Whether or not the world is blessed in front of God will be decided by whether the family can reach the ideal. You must clearly understand that. The Unification Church must be like one worldwide nation or tribe, one worldwide family harmonizing all five races. Wherever you live, you blessed families are the Abel-type families. Live for the sake of others. When you invest everything, even your blood if necessary, they will naturally want to follow you and be your Cain. The way to heaven begins from there.

### ***Restoration of the birthright***

Originally, every member of the family -- father, mother, elder child, younger child -- was to belong to God. But Satan claimed all people, all the whole world, because of the fall. The father, the mother, and the elder son became Satan's representatives, and restoration had to take the opposite direction.

Therefore, the way of Abel and the way of Cain are different. The way of the secular world and the way of the people of the Unification Church are different. The heavenly world is the opposite of the satanic world. In the satanic world people fight and struggle with each other in order to have dominion, while God's people offer their lives, even shedding their blood, to redeem the world.

I started to take the offensive right after the Washington Monument rally in 1976. Up until then, we were often attacked, but we never took the offensive. In the original struggle between Cain and Abel, Abel did not attack; he was attacked. Through enduring Cain's attacks, Abel had to show a heart that would bring Cain to overcome the fallen heart of the archangel. On the foundation of this individual victory, Abel's family can restore Cain's

family through the same process of being attacked and winning over the heart of the Cain family. The same process will restore all levels from the tribal to the worldwide level.

Then where does Home Church come from? In order to establish the Abel nation, Abel himself must be trained in everything in the satanic world. For that purpose, God called Abel-type people and inspired them to give up everything here on earth and separate themselves from the world. That's why true religions required that believers give up everything in order to follow the path of religion, always focusing on the larger purpose, rather than themselves. Many religious people have given up their lives in order to pursue the way of truth, trying to set an example for the world and win it over naturally.

The position of Cain is that of elder brother on the family, tribal, national, worldwide and universal levels. Therefore, people in the Abel position have had to win the heart of people in all those positions step by step. They trained for that purpose and when they came back to the satanic world they had to be victorious even if it meant giving up their lives. That has happened throughout human history.

Resurrection can take place only when Abel wins over Cain's world by shedding blood and establishing the victorious foundation. For that reason, up until the Washington Monument rally, I kept silent publicly, even though I had been so unjustly denounced. I just kept praying and patiently accepted the blows. Because I knew that God's will must be done by following this path, I did not take the offensive. Up till then God was unable to take the position of parents to the world, and God-loving people were unable to take the position of elder brother. We were the ones who had to bear the burden of the younger brother's position. From the position of younger brothers we have to restore the rights of parents and the rights of elder brothers. Because of the fall, the parents' position was lost and the elder brothers' position was lost, and thus the younger brothers, the people in the Abel position, had to bear all the responsibility. Therefore, people in the Abel position have to win their own parents over. In that way, if the Abel sphere can expand to the worldwide level, it can save the world.

This is why religious people have always had to shed their blood as they struggle against the power of the secular world. That kind of history comes to an end when Abel achieves the victory on the family, tribal, national, and worldwide levels, and subjugates the satanic elder brother. For the first time, everybody, elder and younger brothers alike, can all claim to be God's children. Until that kind of unity is established, the parents cannot be with them.

The heavenly way is established only when the elder brother exchanges his position for that of the younger brother. The younger brother has to convince Cain to follow him, even if the laws and rules of God's kingdom are different from those of the world in which he had been living in the past. The willingness by the elder brother to follow and attend the younger brother opens the heavenly way and is the basis for heavenly ethics. When a normal relationship between elder brother and younger brother is established, the elder brother can receive his proper birthright.

To achieve this, God encouraged and helped Jacob take the birthright from Esau. For the same reason, the Unification Church has to gain the birthright. In order to protect their birthright, the Israelites also had to overcome many difficulties. Just like Jacob at the ford of Jabbok, they had to overcome those who were controlling the elder brother position, and after doing that, form a nation in the position of elder brother in front of heaven.

### ***Mainstream of a new age***

In this way, when Abel takes the position of elder brother and establishes a victorious worldwide foundation, he establishes the position of parents, representing the heavenly way on the worldwide basis. Through the parents, people can then receive their Blessing. People can enter the Kingdom of Heaven only by attending the parents, who represent the new heavenly foundation. Those who attend their parents enter the Kingdom of Heaven together with them. In the Unification Church, the True Parents are already in the dominion of God and have blessed many families in the course of worldwide indemnity restoration. And yet, blessed families are still not all they are supposed to be.

There are Cain-type blessed families and Abel-type blessed families. Those two must become one. In order for the heavenly way to be established, there must be the heavenly elder who can teach the younger brother with proper authority. In accordance with heavenly ethics, the elder brother can lead the younger brother on behalf of the parents. In the past, evil people in the position of elder brother were able to dominate other people. Together with the True Parents, we need to achieve victory in the struggle over the birthright. When the parents gain the authority of God, the elder brother can also establish his rightful position. Then the age of Cain will be over and the age of Abel will start. When Abel becomes the elder brother in authority, he can, with authority of heaven, subjugate Satan.

In America I have been fighting to expand the authority of the younger brother so we can win over the elder brother. Our goal is to gain the elder brother's position and give internal direction to the Cain-type elder brothers. In the past in the satanic world, the Cain-type elder brother struck the Abel-type younger brother, but we are taking the reverse course; we have been attracting good younger brothers from the Christian world and winning over elder brothers and bringing them into the Kingdom of Heaven. People from Satan's side have changed and are now desperately seeking goodness.

On Feb. 23, 1977, we entered a new age. The Unification Church is in the mainstream of the new age, so no matter how much the world opposes us we will never perish. Unification Church members have been shedding tears of righteousness and have gained the sympathy of the righteous God.

In the past it was necessary to be persecuted and attacked. Unification Church members may have a lot of reasons for resentments, but please be patient, knowing that the time will come when I will be joyfully accepted by all the people. You young members who have been patiently working so hard day and night are establishing the basic foundations for Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

## ***Home Church and the birthright***

You need a certain conditional foundation to participate in all this. That is Home Church. Home Church is the altar of God, the microcosm of the worldwide victorious foundation. Your 360 families represent the 360 tribes and nations of the world. They also correspond to time and space. The number 36 is three times the number 12, the product of three and four. It symbolizes the Old Testament, the New Testament, and the Completed Testament.

One year consists of 12 months or 360 days. During the course of restoration, most days contained failures. The loss of one day may cause the work of restoration of five years, 10 years, or even 100 years to end up in failure. Also the number 360 symbolizes the day of resurrection of the earth. In representing the world, the number 360 also symbolizes Cain. Your Home Church area is the Cain world, which stands in the position of elder brother.

If you want to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, you as the younger brother must win over the elder brother and restore the birthright. Otherwise you cannot stand with the True Parents. I have achieved the victory on the worldwide level and want to pass it on to you: Your condition is to win Cain, who represents the world, within the short period of 3 1/2 years. As sons and daughters of True Parents, you can now have substantial dominion on the basis of our victorious spiritual foundation.

Home Church is supposed to establish the position of parents, beginning from the position of servant of servants and rising to the position of servant, adopted son and true son. That is the essence of home church activities. In other words, it is the one altar upon which all the historic conditions for the restoration of the birthright can be consecrated. It is so amazing that at this time within the Unification Church the foundation has been laid which can bring the Heavenly Kingdom here on earth. What light and hope to this world of misery this news brings!

Please be hopeful and repent for what you have not fulfilled in the past, with renewed determination to do your best in your home church activities. You can indemnify all the past history by fighting a good fight against Satan. For 3 1/2 years invest your most sincere effort. Husbands, work so that people will say, "Please bring your wife as soon as possible. We will prepare your house, your furniture, everything." Wives, work so people will say, "Please bring your husband. If you need anything, we'll be responsible for those things." When both of you have areas like this, they will become the territory for your clan. Centering upon the blessed couple, 720 families in your home church areas will form a tribal sphere. Wherever you go, people will ask you to teach them the heavenly way. That means a new Israel, the Heavenly Kingdom, is going to begin. From that tribe, you will grow to form a new nation.

## ***Tribal messiah***

After becoming a tribal messiah in your home church, you can go back to your hometown and become the tribal messiah for your relatives. When these two realms, the internal

Cain and external Cain, become one in heart and in spirit, you will become their tribal messiah and true parents.

Unless you establish the conditions to truly love your spiritual children, you cannot love your own physical children. I myself had to abandon my family and go to North Korea in order to establish the condition of loving other people. Only then could I return to my family in the South. Countries must be won over, on the individual, family, tribal, national, and worldwide levels. For this reason the Messiah comes representing the whole world and achieves worldwide victory.

The 33 years of Jesus' life on earth and Unification Church history have been condensed for you into 31/2 years. That is your period for restoration through indemnity.

We have now gone over the national dimension to solve the resentment of Jesus. For this reason today the Republic of Korea welcomes my return, even if established churches still oppose us. From now on in the Republic of Korea, there will be many people who are willing to fight for Reverend Moon of the Unification Church.

If we blessed family members become completely united and if the Republic of Korea can be completely united with God's will, then it can absorb North Korea which is the Cain country.

Once such a nation is established centering upon the heavenly tradition of love, everybody will long to come to Korea. Following the third seven-year course and after the additional three-year period until 1984, no matter what kind of ambitions North Korea may have, it will be impossible to attain them.

One national altar will be prepared, and the whole nation will march forward hand in hand with all the nations and peoples of the world. You must do Home Church so you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven and become a tribal messiah. You have the privilege of indemnifying what Jesus did not complete on the tribal level. You have the opportunity to establish the national foundation and connect it with the worldwide level. The age of persecution against the Unification Church will soon be over. We must bring it to an end during the third seven-year course. No matter how much Americans may criticize, it will be over.

Therefore, I hope your families will become the example in this nation of Korea. Within the Unification Church, especially the 777 blessed families have this mission. You must become good examples. Most of you are under 33 years old and are at a good age to do leadership work. Don't imitate the failure of your elder brothers and sisters in the past. They spent much time at home with their children. You can do your work carrying your children on your back. Are you willing to do Home Church in that way?

### ***Home Church and the new family tree***

Spacecraft may be able to travel to the moon but not to the Kingdom of Heaven. Home Church is the base from which you can fly up to the Kingdom of Heaven.

Home Church is a historic idea. If you go to Africa and start home church activities for 360 families there, that means you have transcended your nation. The whole world may oppose me, but if one country in Africa welcomes me, we can start the new world from there. In the future, numerous countries in the role of John the Baptist will appear. In that truly amazing time we can march forward in a brightness even greater than daylight.

Is Home Church difficult? Here you can work freely and we have no language problems in this country. You have no excuse not to achieve victory in your home church area.

Whether you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven or not will be determined by your dedication to your activities. For those who seek God and religion, that is the truth, the tradition and the way. Those who want to go this way may do so, and those who do not want to, don't have to. If you refuse, other people will move in. Those people among the established churches who now oppose the Unification Church will find their way of spiritual survival through the people they once persecuted. The time will come when all the people in this secular world will work together with the blessed members of the Unification Church.

Centering upon the True Parents and those who have gained the birth-right through their victory of Home Church, the Unification Church family lineage will be established. If you inherit the birthright and dedicate your sincere heart in the presence of True Parents you will be included in this family lineage.

When world peace is established and love prevails, all the people of the world will rejoice and remember you. So even if you are a person over 30 years old, you must strive to make more effort than others to establish this victorious tradition in which God can dwell. God remembers everything, so never do things the mediocre or lukewarm way. So far, all of you have been like refugees, or gypsies. Now is the time to establish the eternal tradition through what you do in your life to plant heavenly ethics and love in the fallen world. That is the responsibility of our home church work. You have to inherit the birthright of the elder brother. You must inherit this in the right way, the heavenly way. I hope you will succeed in achieving victory for Home Church, so you can pass on your heavenly tradition as true elder brothers.

## **Chapter 31**

### **Let Us Know Ourselves**

**September 30, 1979 -- Tarrytown, New York**

Knowing ourselves is probably one of the most important things in our lives. When you say "us" or "I" you have a certain identity in mind. For instance, there are around 240 million people in America who would say, "I am an American." However, one could be either the lowest possible American, a very noble American, or in between. How do you think of yourselves?

Apart from being American citizens, what else are you? You are children of your parents. In this country your parents might be descended from many combinations of nationalities, and when you investigate your family tree there may be many variations. Your lineage

may be a proud one or a humble one and your ancestors honorable or dishonorable. Your parents' lineages might even have conflicted with each other at some time. As members of the Unification movement we can ask, "Who are we?"

Again, there are basically two types. One person might be part of the backbone of the movement, while in the case of another person, it might not make much difference whether he is here or not. You may have come to some realization about whether or not you are a person of importance here.

It is always true that each person has the viewpoint that he is the center of each situation because each person thinks that he has some value or importance. Everyone also has some ambition or aspiration, and there is no limit to what man can desire. Do you feel that you are important? Do you have some aspiration in life? In this regard are there differences between races, or between people of the past, present, and future? No, each person is the same here. You can conclude that you want to be important and be recognized, and that you want to better yourself every day. This is a common human aspiration.

Let us determine whether we are good people or bad people. In the category of good people there are many different classifications or levels. It is important to know who determines whether one is a good or bad person; will you do it, or will someone else? Is that the individual right of a person, or will the majority opinion decide good or evil? Goodness must be determined from the public point of view, and whether a person is good will be decided by his contribution to the overall well being. Someone may pride himself on his good looks, but if he is missing one finger can we say his appearance is perfect? From the overall point of view, a part is missing Value is derived from the entire point of view, or point of view of wholeness or perfection.

A good person is one whom the whole can recognize as being good. Suppose I think I am the best in my family. My parents might think I am good, but if my little sister thinks I am terrible then something is lacking. Who determines whether you are the best in your family? It is the consensus of family opinion that decides. How can you be admired by all your family? When you serve them unselfishly and make them important to you, then they will respect you.

What is the basic formula for being recognized by public opinion? Two key elements must be there: sacrifice and service. Will you become a good person if you expect others to serve and sacrifice for you? No, you have to be the center of sacrifice and service. Will some of you protest this?

This is an important congregation because it is a miniature of the world, with all nationalities and races represented here. If this representative group can agree that this is the principle for determining who are good men and women, then this must be the principle that will work for the entire world. One category of people will agree that service and sacrifice are good and they will try it; others will mull over the issue, while yet others will agree that this has always been their way of life. Which group do you belong in?

If you feel you have been practicing this way of life, are you in a position to be recognized as a person of goodness by the entire world? Do you practice service and sacrifice by expecting service from 240 million Americans, or by thinking that you must serve 240 million Americans? Obviously, you must do it. Now that we have agreed on the definition of a good person, would you want to become the best person within the limited scope of America, or on the worldwide level? America is a microcosm of prejudiced man be described as a good man? If he dislikes black people, then would only blacks think he was guilty of prejudice, or would people of his own race also criticize his attitude? Is this a racial judgment or a universal one?

### ***The universal principle is a judge***

We must recognize that there is a universal principle involved, regardless of what race you are. You can see that the universe has certain fundamental laws, and anyone who violates them will be judged accordingly, regardless of his race or stature. What is the spirit of that constitution of the universe? It aims to preserve or uphold the men and women who try to live for others. It would also try to eliminate people who take advantage of others and seek to benefit only themselves. This is why we can say that good people are those who exist for the sake of others, and good deeds are those actions which benefit others.

If a person is brought to trial and convicted of violating the constitutional law, would he feel good? Often a convicted defendant reacts strongly to the judgment of the court, demanding to know what is wrong with him when there is so much wrong with society. Normally a court will not reverse its decision just because the defendant objects. If even a human court won't do that, would the universal court be likely to reverse its decisions?

There is always room for mercy in a righteous legal system, but in order to be entitled to receive it, a person must show his sincere repentance. Repentance is the key word. This is why Jesus' pronouncement was, "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." What should we repent for? Very simply, we must repent for all those actions which violated the rule that says we should live in sacrifice and service for others. This was Jesus' first teaching.

The essence of Christianity is to seek repentance for the sin of greediness and selfishness. Sin can be defined as violation of the universal law of service to others. Stealing a dress from even a big department store chain is wrong. That dress has value which comes from the person who prepared it. If it is stolen, its public value is nullified by the thief. That is the sin. Another person might realize that he tells lies all the time, but his conscience doesn't hurt him. The motivation for lying always involves hiding something to take advantage of others; otherwise, there would be no reason to lie.

Everything is embraced by this universal principle and every deed can be judged accordingly. Imagine a person who sees an ugly woman on the street and knocks her down, thinking that he can't stand to see her and that he is also doing a service to other Americans who wouldn't like to see her. If that is his motivation, then is his deed a sin?

That individual might try to justify his deed but the universal law will not. Universal law would decree that no matter how ugly that woman might be, she is just as valuable as everyone else because she was made by the Creator. Therefore, no one has a right to knock her down.

Everything about this principle is epitomized in two key words: sacrifice and service. In our human courts today, is there any judge who would uphold a conviction that a person did not live his life in service and sacrifice to others? What law judges deeds of sacrificial service? Such deeds are not governed by the law of the nation but are upheld by public recognition. If a person gives sacrificial service to his nation, then his country will honor him with a medal and national acclaim.

Perhaps someone will complain that this universal law about service doesn't fit him and want to know why he can't be given a citation and still enjoy his self-serving life. Would the society which honored selfish, greedy people endure very long? If that way of life prevailed, then no, unity and harmony would be possible. If the Creator enforced selfishness as the universal law, that law would apply not only to all humans but also to the whole material world. Then each tiny cell could claim that everything in the universe exists solely for him and that no other cell has any rights. That kind of attitude would bring nothing but division and destruction.

Universal law doesn't work like that, however. No one denies that the cells of the eye are important, but those cells exist for the benefit of the entire body. The purpose of the whole precedes the existence of the eye, so the eye must obey the universal law of the entire body. That eye should obey simply because the universe upholds this point of view and that is the way of life which will flourish.

You eat breakfast every morning, don't you? Where do the animals and plants come from that comprise your meals? In order to have food, you have to ruthlessly cut down different plants, then chew them up with your teeth and swallow them. The vegetables in your salad bowl won't protest, however, because they know the universal law and think that they are there to serve a greater purpose. With that attitude they can thank you for eating them so that you can serve the public purpose.

There is a harmony of purpose here. The food on your plate has a certain appreciation of what you live for and is willing to serve your body. That's the only way there can be harmony between you and your food. Otherwise, your food would hate you for eating it and resent hearing you laugh. The key point is that your food accepts you only because it knows you are living for the public purpose. Food will resent the laughter of a greedy person who wants to eat it.

### ***Defining good and evil***

If you are not living for a public purpose, then sometimes your food will stage a demonstration against you in your stomach. Then you get sick or even die in some cases. Under the universal law, goodness should flourish and evil should decline. Now you know

precisely that the direction of goodness includes service and sacrifice, but until now that definition has been hazy in history, lacking a focal point.

Let us examine whether that definition is right or wrong. Everything in this world exists in one of two classifications, and even the tears trickling from your eyes can be either good or evil. Your ears and eyes could serve in two ways. If your eyes want to look at the world to find a person in need so that you can go and serve him, then your eyes are serving a good function. On the other hand, if your eyes are trying to spot someone's weakness so you can exploit him, they are serving an evil function.

There are all kinds of music in America, but who is it played for? Disco and rock music in themselves are not good or evil, so what purpose they serve becomes the main consideration. If they serve the public purpose, then they are good. If music and dance are used only for personal physical pleasure or for getting money from others, then they are serving an evil purpose. Is it likely that disco music is played for an unselfish, public purpose today? That's the reason I would not favor going to discos. If dancing and listening to that music will help resurrect people from darkness to light, then go right ahead, all 365 days a year. Do you have that confidence? Would it be correct to think that this is just my idea, and that once I disappear it will no longer apply because it is not universal?

There are two great examples of how this universal law is unchanging through the past, present, and future. Jesus Christ lived a most miserable life on earth, but on the cross he could forgive his own enemies. When he died, he looked like a defeated person, in the secular sense. But his ideology has practically conquered the world in the last 2,000 years, and history is counted from the year of his birth. On the other hand, the Hitlers and Napoleons who thought they could conquer the world with military might have appeared successful temporarily, but have their accomplishments remained? No, because they, too, are under the dominion of the universal constitution, and that activity was unacceptable.

The saints in history are those who lived up to this principle and completely practiced this way of life of goodness. Saints are those who belong to God and at the same time to mankind -- people who live on the universal level. People are proud of any connection they may have with a saint, whether they are relatives or come from the same nation, and so forth. Why do they want to be proud? Because the saints exemplify the most basic principle of the universe.

The topic today is "Let Us Know Ourselves." What kind of people are you? You have some guidelines for evaluating your own deeds now. Perhaps you have a part of your body, a hand, for instance, that wants other people to work for you. Perhaps your body doesn't want to work at all for others but wants the rest of the world to work for it. Normally you have a rebellious attitude if someone gives you commands, but in the heavenly world you would think instead that you are linked to the universe through that person.

In that respect, do you like me? [Yes!] Why? Because you know I am a mediator through whom you can leap forward to greater well being. What kind of man am I? Some people

describe me in the worst terms, saying that evil people like Hitler and Stalin paid their own people to work, but Reverend Moon is the worst because he doesn't pay anyone and yet he still makes them work hard. They say I am the worst because instead of giving you money, I send you out fund raising! If I am as evil as they say, why don't you leave? Am I evil or not?

### ***The purpose of pushing***

I can accept the charge that I am ready to push you harder than any other leader in history, but the issue centers around what my purpose is. My purpose is to let you work for something greater than yourself and even greater than your nation: it is for the world and for God. Mine is a totally unselfish motivation. While you work hard to raise funds, I am working harder than you to raise even more funds; then, when they are pooled together, it is spent for the public purpose. Each of my actions is within this principle of living in sacrifice and service for others.

I am not only doing this myself, but am pushing others to live for the public purpose as well. Does that make me an evil man or good man?

Parents sometimes seem very cruel when they push their children to study, but their motive is not to benefit themselves but to strengthen their children. These parents want their children to be future leaders and have a good impact on the world. Are those parents good or evil? Another kind of parent lets his child do whatever he wants. Though that may sound wonderful to the child, it is better for a parent to be firm and push his child in order to mold his character in a God-centered way. The leniency that seems wonderful on the surface actually reflects the fact that the parent doesn't care about the public purpose.

Teachers can also be classified in two ways. Students as a rule don't like to study and want the teachers to just leave them alone. There are two kinds of wives, as well. One kind nags her husband about where he has been and how much money he spent and why he doesn't spend more time with his children. The other kind decides she will just have fun on her own while her husband is away. In this case the nagging wife is serving the public purpose.

Some husbands are strict with their wives about not going out without first getting permission, and about caring for the children and the house. Another kind is lenient and feels that each of them should do as they please. Should the first kind of husband be criticized in this case?

Which person is more likely to be on the side of good, the person who has ten supervisors or the person who has none? Supervision can seem like a burden, but its discipline and demands can push you to accomplish more. My policy is that members of the Unification movement can't afford to do only one thing at a time. Sometimes I give so many instructions at one time that the American members are immobilized and don't know where to move. But even the smallest Oriental members will run like ants, jumping from mission to mission, and somehow bring the result.

You know how to evaluate good and evil now. What kind of person is God? God is the master and center of the public law of the universe. One thing can be said: God exists solely for the sake of others. He is the supreme public person in the universe. God is the creator and the originator of the two basic principles of service and sacrifice. Let us call these distinct characteristics A-type blood. If both your parents have A-type blood, most likely you will, too. In the same way, if we are created by God, then His principles must become ours as well.

Since God is proclaiming that way of life, everything should come under that way of life as well. That's the way God designed the universe and anything that goes against that principle will receive pain. When we establish give and take with God by living that way, it brings harmony and energy to life. Whoever is linked to that kind of give and take shall enjoy eternal life because there is no end to it. Why do we have to live the life of sacrifice and service? Ultimately, it is in order to have give and take with God and plug into His energy.

Why should we become one with God? By doing so you will enjoy eternal life. God is the source of power; He is the highest, so by uniting with Him you become highest as well. God is absolute. By uniting with Him you also become absolute, and in that unity you will be protected because no one else will have the power to harm you. In unity with God, His power and energy become your power and energy and you become a child in His image. There are all kinds of love, but none better than the love of God, which shines like the sun. You then become the recipient of that love.

The sun radiates warmth and light, and when you are part of the sun of God's love, you also become a life giving element which can bring harmony and life wherever you go. Such a person always brings life and energy and melts ungodly things. Many of you first came to the Unification Church to discredit the doctrine. You were like a cold chunk of ice, but when you heard the Principle you began to melt into water. Is that true or not? If this is true, then this is an historical event.

### ***Leading the way***

What technique do I use to inspire you this way? Am I a hypnotist or magician? There is no magic here, only universal law at work. All I have to do is teach this law. Sometimes I seem very cruel when I ask you to go out and work for the universal cause, but is it for the sake of good or evil? It is for goodness so big that it is the size of God.

I don't have any assets of my own except this universal law. Further- more, I aspire to work harder and suffer more than anyone else for this cause. God knows very well what principle I am living under. If Satan complains to God that I have been permitted to acquire too much success and prosperity and he wants me to demonstrate what I have done to deserve it, would God hesitate to let Satan test me? It is because Satan is trying to deter me that I have faced incredible persecution and torture in communist prison camps. But did I change even when I had to go through all that?

Is it true that the entire world has persecuted me? Has America welcomed me with the red carpet treatment? Do many heads of state want to welcome me to their countries? Christians and Jews are supposed to be our friends, but are they? Do the communists call me their friend? I think that in all of history there has never been one individual who was persecuted by the whole world or who has suffered more opposition than I have. Have I crumbled into many pieces because of this opposition, or am I getting stronger than ever? Even people outside the Unification movement must come to the conclusion that I am not lukewarm or mediocre. Either I am really evil or really good.

I am Oriental, but even white people are telling me I am good. It is a puzzle to the world and they can't figure it out. Do you really believe I am good? That is why people think I have brainwashed you -- it is too incredible for them to believe. Is that what I did? All you have done is link yourself up to the universal principle, but even you yourselves don't realize when you changed. You used to be just like the people in the secular world, but as you followed this way of life you covered a great distance and changed a great deal.

These days each faith has its pride. The Pope is visiting many nations, and millions of people gather to see him. Are their cheers for the Catholic Church, or for the salvation of the world? If that sound is for the sake of the Catholic Church, it is not good enough. But if that gathering is intended to help God and man together to save mankind, then it is good. If they gather to strengthen their resolve to sacrifice themselves more for the public good, then such gatherings are good.

Is the Unification movement a good group of people? What is good about us? We don't gather for the sake of the Unification movement, but for the liberation of God and mankind. What we do is for the supreme good. If we only gather to receive God's blessing and privilege, then we are not good people. We gather to give ourselves for the liberation of mankind and God, so we are a God-centered movement. In that case, the leader who founded it must be good as well. The more ardently we pursue the goal, the more success and prosperity is bound to come. My philosophy and ideal is to live for the liberation of God, in addition to that of mankind and spirit world. No one ever spoke of that goal before.

Are these empty words or am I really doing it? There is no night or day for me because I am always working for that goal. Were you lucky or unfortunate to meet me? Indeed, I am resolute, ambitious for God and greedy to do His will, but I am applying all these characteristics for making each of you a God-centered leader. That means I will push you into hardship and difficulty with an iron will to push you to be a winner and not be defeated. Even if someone threatens to poke your eyes out unless you renounce this movement, you can reply, "Even if you destroy my eyes, I will not change. They are being sacrificial for the sake of goodness." After you feel this way, then you can say ouch. Then God will receive that pain as well. When you are ridiculed and mistreated, you naturally feel pain.

But if you are serving the absolute goal of the liberation of God, then everything that you bear shall be borne by God as well. Your own death will be felt by God and He will

acknowledge that you died for Him and for mankind. Then God and mankind will bow down to you because you made your sacrifice on the most divine altar.

### ***Responsibility in God's behalf***

Those who are here for the first time, raise your hands. Do you think I am speaking the truth or not? Did you come just to watch, or do you want to be a part of it? This universal principle must be taught to American youth who are in darkness and confusion today. Is the light we bring necessary for America? Night or day, the answer is still yes. If I don't fulfill this duty, then God must find someone else who will. This is the only course left to America and someone must do it. Otherwise, there is no hope.

The person who tries to fulfill the will of God every day is not going to be glorified by Congress but will be persecuted and ridiculed by the people instead. His duty must be fulfilled in that position. Sacrifice and service must be the credo of our life. Would a beautiful woman be willing to give up her attractiveness for the law of God? Imagine the most handsome white man and the most ugly black woman being blessed together in marriage, giving themselves to God at the altar. That is the most dramatic thing you can imagine. They will probably be the happiest and most attractive couple under the sun. They will open the door to historical heaven and God will be liberated by their marriage. God is truly life and love, and He is looking for this kind of dramatic marriage.

When I look at your eyes, I feel a certain vibration and it is not yet 100 percent pure. If the best looking man has the confidence that he can accept the worst possible wife and still be the happiest man, then this gap will be closed. When the two extremes can unite and be happy, everything in between will be overcome, and all people encompassed by those extremes can become happy couples. When a couple representing two extremes reaches heaven, they will enjoy total freedom to go anywhere and meet anyone they want.

That is the spirit of the Unification movement, the spirit of the founding nation for the Kingdom of God on earth. . Before the entire world comes against you, I will train you myself by asking you to pursue a very rigorous way of life. Will you accept it? Not only that, but God will be harder on you than I am. Why can you accept that? It is because you know that by passing the worst test, you can inherit the deepest love of God. To receive that unique love, you feel you can bear any burden.

Will the people of this conviction look gloomy and unhappy, or will they be the most exuberant, rain or shine? Why do we have to take up this duty and go through the narrow gate of this life I am describing? God created all things and made them with His dual characteristics. Not only are they connected to Him vertically, but to each other horizontally. God is invisible and the created world is substantial. The substantial world is horizontal while God is vertical. God's invisible dual essentialities were manifested in visible form, so everything is made in the image of God. Where do you belong here?

Each man is a microcosm of the universe. Your body is made of all the elements of the world. Nature supplied all the ingredients that make your body, which means that the universe made you by donating itself. If nature demanded that you refund everything that

nature loaned you, would there be anything left of you? You can feel that the universe gave you birth and made you, so nature is your first parent. Do you feel good that you are a microcosm of the universe? All the universal formats or formulas can be found in you. You could accurately say that you are a small walking universe that can move, whereas the cosmic universe is stationary. Because you can move and act, you can govern the universe. The universe would want you to exercise dominion over it, so your first duty would be to love nature. Then, wherever you are, you can love the creation and appreciate it.

Since you feel such an urge to love the grass, trees, and flowers, the birds and running water, how can you not love your fellow man? When you lie on the beach, you can feel that you are lying in the bosom of your parent, or that when leaning against a tree you are leaning against your own brother. Would nature protest, or feel that you truly love and know it? All things exist for you, so you can appreciate them for that reason. As a man, you are the only begotten son of the universe, and as a woman you are the only begotten daughter of the universe. Then how much love would be possible between the two?

Have you ever had a conversation with the sun, saying that you love it and singing a song of love for it? Many of the people who think of themselves as poets don't even appreciate the depth of this truth, and their poetry is superficial and shallow. Am I telling the truth, or only seeming to?

### ***Parents, and other family members***

Your second parents are your own father and mother. They represent the universe and labored to bring your life into being. Men and women can feel that they are the center of the universe because their parents, representatives of the universe, brought their life to this earth. Your parents represent not only father and mother but all mankind -- teachers, neighbors, and relatives. When you serve your parents, you are actually serving mankind, not just two particular people. By doing so, you will be loved by all mankind. This is the historical background out of which we can say that our virtue as sons and daughters is to serve our parents with filial piety. Your immediate family and neighbors represent a microcosm of mankind; your sisters represent all women and your brothers represent all men. Therefore, your family is a microcosm of mankind.

The true people are those who look at all people as one family of man. If you are a true man or woman, when you see a senior citizen, you look at him as your own parent or grandparent. Other young men and women are your own brothers and sisters. If you are a true man, then you love not only your own family but also all mankind. It is against the Principle to care only for your family and not the rest of the world. If you happen to be white, then it is a most exciting adventure to find your black family, and to find senior citizens and young men and women whom you love as much as your own grandparents and brothers and sisters.

If you see someone in dire need, then you want to fill their need because they are not just your fellow man, but your brother or sister. Here in America, when parents become old

and can't take care of themselves, do they go to their children's homes or to senior citizens' homes? Would a grandmother be happier to live with her grandchildren or be visited by them in a senior citizens' home?

Are you willing to accept your grandmother into your home? Would you do it in reality, or are you only saying yes because you are here? As a new wife, would you rather go to live with your husband's family of many in-laws, or to live only with him? If you want to live up to the public law of the universe, then you want to go live with his family.

You have your own physical parents, but ultimately you have one most important parent who created you -- God. Your parents were the tools God used to create you. The journey in search of the True Parents begins by loving nature, which is the first parent, then loving your physical parents, and then to the ultimate parent, God, who is our creator. God is the ultimate destination, our eternal Parent. The moment of death, which everyone now fears, is actually the moment of fulfillment. If you live your life in the right way here on earth, then your life leads ultimately to the one common Parent. Then the moment of death actually liberates you to live with that parent for eternity. He is the True Parent to us all, who has true love with no end. Life with Him is what we call the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven.

The principal atmosphere of that world is supreme love. That love is not selfish, but is based on sacrifice and service. Because it is based on that universal law, that supreme love flourishes. The Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world is our ultimate destination, and our physical life here on earth is only a workshop. No matter how long you live, it all nurtures you to enter eternal life in heaven. When I discovered the core truth of the universe, this is what I found. Earthly life is merely preparation for eternal life, and it is here that we pass or fail. With that realization, I then prayed to know the basic principle of the universe, and the answer came -- the parent- child relationship is the backbone of the universe. That is the relationship you have with the creation, with your parents, and with God. The central theme of that relationship is love.

While we are here on earth, we are attending the most important workshop of all, learning this principle so that we can ultimately reach our destination in heaven and enjoy our parent-child relationship with God for eternity. This is why the Unification movement exists and -- why I am leading you. Life on a mobile fund raising team is training to make a relationship with God for eternity. Any money we raise comes out of nature and we value it accordingly. You can tell the money that after it has longed to be used for God's purpose it has finally come to the right place because you will connect it to the True Parents and God.

Wherever you go in the world, you face certain difficulties and persecution, out of which you gain greater value for your work. If everything came easily, then it would have little value. Your desire is to apply whatever money you have, whether large or small, to heavenly causes so that it will have true value. All things have been fervently waiting for this relationship and you are the mediator who will make it happen. No matter how old and distinguished and socially accomplished you are, you still need to make this link with nature and restore material for the sake of God.

Another important part of our mission is restoration of people. When you see other people, you can think that they have been waiting a long time to be restored to God. Now you can go to them because you know the way and purpose of life. You can be the mediator to bring them to God. By reaching out to people, you are actually serving your parents as well, and by having you as their children, they shall be glorified and saved. By finding the lost sons and daughters of America, you are serving your own parents in addition to loving them, and together you can come to the True Parents.

When you truly live this noble life, there are no parents who will not welcome you. As much as you practice loving the people of the world, you can certainly love your own parents and brothers and sisters to that degree. You love them as representatives of the True Parents and as someone who was commissioned by God. They have that value. No family would reject such a child, but instead would bow down before him.

There is one more training course left -- the training of the spirit world. You have to know how to deal with and serve the spirit world and liberate it. You should be in a position to love the spirit world, and no one can make you realize this except the Messiah. That is the most important training remaining before you can love God.

The Messiah comes as director of training, setting the example of how to love people, the world, and spirit world. Then you can pass the ultimate test. Before the coming of the Messiah, the spirit world was divided, with no harmony or cooperation anywhere in the midst of all that complexity. When the Messiah comes, he will create unity, and barriers will go down. It is one of his qualifications that he must fulfill this while he is on earth. He is the one man on earth who has the power to control the spirit world.

The True Parents are those who represent not only this physical world but also the spirit world and God, under whom you practice love. If you go to spirit world without knowing the Messiah, it might take several million years to learn to love people there. But when you accept the Messiah while on earth, you can accomplish many millions of years of work in a short time. By obeying the True Parents here on earth, you are entitled to receive recognition for loving all spirit world and obeying its rules. The True Parents represent not only this physical world but also spirit world and God, and by obeying God's representative you demonstrate your obedience to God. By loving them, you can pass every level. Now you know why unity with True Parents is necessary. They represent the heart of God, so that by loving them you have already loved God and the spirit world. That is the culmination of loving all parents -- nature, your physical parents, and God.

Until True Parenthood was installed, all love was divided and there was no harmony. Now, by loving the True Parents you are in a position to love them all. If you fail on other levels but in the end you accept the True Parents, you have demonstrated your loyalty and love to indemnify all the past. Everything culminates in that supreme accomplishment. If you are given a paper signed by the President of the United States, it has power everywhere in the land. In the same way, if you pass this final level of loving True Parents, you pass every other level as well. That is why it is an absolute necessity to have True Parents.

By fund raising, you inherit the material wealth of the universe. By witnessing to the people of the world, you inherit the condition of loving your own physical parents. When you love True Parents, you are inheriting the world of God and his love. We can conclude that by practicing loving the True Parents, God's representatives on earth, you can practice loving everything you need to love on earth. Here you can finish all the qualifications you need to be entitled to the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven. You have that center here in the Unification Church.

The people of the world just scoff or ridicule you, but in spite of them we are proud of being Moonies. Your voice of pride shall be stronger than the voice of negativity, both here and all over the world. If anyone is reluctant to speak up as a Moonie, I will not speak up for him in front of heaven. Tomorrow is the first of October. These nine months of 1979 have been months of indemnity for everything so far, and it is culminated with the birth of the new baby, Hyung Jin.

We know ourselves -- we are Moonies and proud of it. We rejoice over what we are, so when we deal with the world we shall be strong and bold. Don't be intimidated by the world, but be proud and quietly say, "You just wait and see. In a few years you will find the truth. The time will come when you will understand, and in the meantime we are proud." As long as the people misunderstand us, we will just tighten our belts and work harder to bring the victory. If you move forward and I am pushing behind you, there is no way you can fail.

Spirit world is pushing behind us. You know that the intervention of spirit world is becoming stronger. Is there anything to be afraid of? How proud we are to have found the truth and be children of the True Parents. In the morning when you stand in front of the mirror, greet yourself and say, "You haven't been too proud of yourself. Now you are proud of being a Moonie."

Those who pledge today as a new beginning to walk proudly on the streets of New York and be central people to bring this city back to God, raise your hands. Thank you very much. Let us pray.

## **Chapter 32**

### **God's Fatherland**

**February 21, 1980 -- New York, New York**

Thank you very much from the bottom of my heart for your deep congratulations on my birthday. I owe you an apology. I myself limited the attendance at this meeting, and many could not come from around the nation and the world. We are in a war on the side of God, and I want to wait and have a great celebration after the victory is won over Satan and atheistic communism. Because we are still in the middle of that war I didn't want to make this a spectacular occasion. I want to thank those people who could not come from this nation and around the world for their love and prayers.

People normally want to be proud if they have something special that others do not have. If a person has only one thing but then acquires another thing, his pride gets bigger and if

he adds one more then he is even more proud. Does the same principle apply to getting older and acquiring more years? People under 20 years old don't care about age and are eager to get older, but when you are advanced in years and know more of life, then you know that each year brings you closer to something.

In Oriental philosophy, the 60th birthday completes one cycle in a person's life, so it has a special meaning. This is the biggest birthday celebration according to Korean custom. When I was a young boy, there was always a great celebration for grandfathers, with singing groups and dancers. I enjoyed the performance, but at the same time I pitied the man who was honored by the celebration; he was very old and it wouldn't be long before he finished his life. At that time, I felt I would never reach 60, but that memory seems like just yesterday, and today I am here being congratulated on my 60th birthday.

I am also concerned that since I am getting older you Unification Church members won't pay any more attention to me. That's true! I think so. There are many people who see only that I am a very controversial figure, and they are glad to hear I have reached 60, thinking that it will be only a few more years before I am not around to trouble them any more. There are many people who follow very complex thinking. On the other hand, you people don't care what they think and just give your single-minded devotion to following me. You wonder if there isn't any way I could age in reverse, and next year we could celebrate my 59th birthday.

Let's not worry about what other people think, or even what you think, but about what God thinks. Would God think that I have been on earth for 60 years and have suffered tremendous tribulation, and then want to bring me to spirit world out of compassion for me? Or would He feel that He knows how capable I am, so He wants me to stay and clean up the world a little more before He brings me to spirit world? Parental heart is always concerned whether children suffer too much, so maybe in God's heart He wants to have me come to spirit world. Do you think so? But I know that you want me to be with you for a long time to come because, if I am around, then the hardest battle is fun and victory is sweet. Does that mean you want me to stay and continue to suffer?

Now let's consider how Mother and my children feel. I'm sure the closest members of my family would want me to relax finally and be a little more comfortable and happy in the years to come, and maybe have more time to spend with them. Now God is very confused about what He should do about me!

Do you want to hear what I think? For purely personal reasons, I would not want to prolong my life on earth too much longer, simply because I know the spirit world so well. The reality in spirit world is so good that, for myself, prolonging life on earth has no special meaning. But I am very aware that we have begun the divine task, and it is not yet complete.

The democratic world has no direction and we must guide it. No one knows what will be the end result of the powerful, enormous communist world. But I am sure that no one here on earth knows the heart and will of God better than I do. Sometimes I think I would have

been a happier person if I had not known this truth and the will of God so clearly. Furthermore, when we talk about the destiny of the world, we are not talking about a hundred or a thousand years in the future, but about today, this year and next year. The world situation is deteriorating so rapidly that sometimes I am very fearful about how we can catch up with the situation.

## **Reverend Moon is the spark plug**

Then what about us as members of the Unification movement -- where should we be? You are the champions who are fighting every day, and sometimes you get discouraged. I know that if I were not here on earth with you, your fight would be much more difficult. Even though I am an old man, the fact that I am with you is a source of power and inspiration that energizes you and helps you keep going. You need my guidance and direction.

When I was a young man, I was pushing you hard and working hard with you, but now that I am an old man and still am pushing you, it might not look too good. Do you mind? But I know it is a necessity. The world needs a push because time is against us. It is quite true that when you get old your health declines and you feel less energy than in your younger years. But at the same time, the mission is greater and requires more attention. The situation is imbalanced, with the mission getting bigger and yet my age getting heavier to bear.

I have been a front-line soldier all this time and I will remain so. Will you be a burden to me and drag me back, or will you push from behind? Do you want to push me by yourself, or bring a nation and your race and mankind to push me? Would you want to mobilize even spirit world? Would they be on my side? Are they pushing me? Who is the head man in spirit world? Would you want spirit world to be pushing on the front line, or would you rather be on the front line and have them push you from behind?

Those in the spirit world are different in one respect -- they are not limited by time and space. They can continue 24 hours a day, and that is their advantage over us. Do you think spirit men need time to go to bed? Is that good or not? When you are really involved in some game or activity, you forget about eating or sleeping. If you are intoxicated in your mission to that degree, then working 24 hours a day might not be a burden. But how serious and intoxicated are you with your mission? Have you felt that the mission God gave you is so exciting and wonderful that you forget about eating and sleeping?

Are the witnesses and fund raisers really caught up in their missions? Are you knocking on the doors of home church with that passion? If not, then you are defeated; you are not confident and sure of yourself. Today is a happy day for me, so you thought I wouldn't scold you, but then all of a sudden -- boom! But I want you to become people who are proud in your missions. I am determined to make each of you such a person.

I know that a shortcut to finishing the mission is to be so busy that you don't even worry about eating and sleeping. Then you have so much power and energy that you can go on and on. Will you be upset if I crank you up with a winch when you are tired? Would you be

willing to let me use such a machine on you? If so, then I thank you very much. Do you promise?

Right now, the beautiful ceiling is complaining that I haven't mentioned how lovely it has become for this day. The beautiful ceiling and moldings [of the recently remodeled World Mission Center's Grand Ballroom] have the same birthday I do because they are born today and they want some attention from us. I can hear them calling to me. Why don't you say, "Happy Birthday, ceiling"? You know what this ballroom looked like before restoration. It has been completely revolutionized, and I designed it. I know you don't realize it, but this place is sanctified and consecrated by this day. This is the only place I have designed. It doesn't matter how big or how old this building is; the people of the world in years ahead will come to see it and remember what I did here.

People will come in the future to celebrate this day long after Mother and I are gone, but today you are celebrating with me. Would you like to celebrate in a more exciting way than people who will come here in the future? Look at everything here and appreciate it with your eyes. Open your mouth and your eyes and shout out.

You don't need any more serious talk, do you? You want me to talk even more?! You said you want to celebrate my birthday, but instead you want me to work some more. How unfair you are! You have seen me and heard me, so that is enough, isn't it? Who will decide, you or me? I don't want to speak. I am getting old!

Do you feel a little relaxed and warm and happy inside? Is there anyone here meeting me for the first time? Seated here in front are the missionaries who are returning now after five years overseas to report to me. Part of this group are native members who are meeting me for the first time. When you see me for the first time, you probably think I am an ugly man. New members sometimes think I am a superman who doesn't need to use stairs to go to the second floor, or even use a fork and knife to eat. Also they think I never need to go to the bathroom.

Sometimes people have a mistaken idea about what it means to be holy. It is not necessarily a super thing but a natural thing. A singing bird is a genuine thing, and a blooming flower and growing grass -- the creation that God made is always holy. When a person becomes a natural being the way God created him to be, he is holy. Then, blinking your eyes and smiling and moving your arms and legs is holy.

I have the same emotions you do. I can feel joy and sorrow and anguish, with the difference that the depth of my feeling is far greater than average. Sometimes people portray me as being cruel because I am iron willed, but sometimes I am warm hearted and even fragile because I have both aspects. The significant thing is that I live in rhythm with God and with nature, the way God intended man to be. I could talk in great depth about this area, but I am sure you hear something about this in Divine Principle lectures.

***God's fatherland***

We have some money and we have people, don't we? What don't we have? What doesn't God have? One thing He doesn't have is a nation of His own sovereignty. So what should we do? I would like the topic to be Fatherland or Motherland of God, or Ideal Nation of God.

What citizenship do you have? Many of you are Americans so, for you, America is your fatherland; What is my fatherland? Of course, it is Korea. Mr. Kuboki's fatherland is Japan. Dennis Orme's fatherland is Great Britain. Paul Werner's fatherland is Germany. I'm sure people sitting here in front will have many different countries as their fatherlands, but what is God's fatherland? It doesn't exist. God hasn't found His nation on earth. All the fatherlands which people claim have no connection with God. All the characteristics of the different nations resulted from division in the world, usually coming out of war and struggle. That's the way new nations are born. There are many boundaries on earth, all of which are stained by the blood of soldiers killed in hostilities.

The highest wall built to prevent invasion is the one you build between you and your neighbor. As technology advances, we can travel to the other side of the world in a short time, but because ancient nations didn't have that mobility, they struggled with neighboring nations.

The rise and fall of nations in history often occurs through war and struggle. National boundaries have always been stained by the blood of their people. For all the hundreds of nations on earth, there have been thousands of struggles throughout history, resulting in many divisions of sovereignty. That happened because of the fall of man and man's separation from God. What do we mean when we say the fall of man? It means that man and God became enemies instead of being one, that there has been struggle instead of harmony and peace between men and God.

The primary question facing mankind is that of peace. But in light of the background of history, can we really attain lasting peace? When the cause is wrong, the result is always wrong. The result cannot be changed without changing the cause. Human history so far has been sown in blood and war, so we can reap only such a result. Therefore, to obtain a new result in history, we have to begin with a new cause, with a fertile land to receive the seeds of peace.

Today the world is filled with more hatred than love between neighbors. There is division between individuals, between tribes and nations. Unless we can start with a new beginning, a new world cannot come about. Human history started from lies, so we have to restart human history from truth. Unless a new movement develops which can sow true peace, there will be no lasting peace.

If there is an Almighty God, would He be content to put up with today's reality, or would He do something to change the world back into its original shape? If there is someone here on earth commissioned by God to take over His mission and cause, what would that man or group claim? He would proclaim that the world's present course is in error, insisting that

mankind must turn around. He must tell mankind that their direction must be entirely changed.

What would be the slogan of that man? If you are clever, you should be able to figure it out. If the world began in hatred and lies, then a course which is 180 degrees different would be one of absolute love, love so great that you love even your own enemy. To me that is a powerful slogan which can change the course of history. Can you find anything more powerful than this? Some might think that it is an easy answer; once you know, then it seems to be an easy answer, but when you don't know what it is, it seems very difficult to find. All the saints of history have searched for this answer and never found it.

### ***The melting power of love***

If you have such great love that you can love even your enemy, that power will melt everything. God needs a movement that can melt the wrong world down and change it into the right one. The entire world of religion is pursuing this one slogan, though in varying degrees. Which of all the saints do you think God would love the most? The answer is simple because there is someone who proclaimed this slogan. Jesus Christ stands like a giant because this is what he said.

When Jesus was on earth, there was a great wall of hatred between the great Roman Empire and the little nation of Israel because one was conqueror and the other the conquered. Jesus knew that the only way to conquer Rome was through love. Rome conquered Israel with military power, but Israel could conquer Rome through love. Even though Jesus was crucified, he could still pray for God to forgive the very people who killed him. No power could be any greater. Love can overcome any walls, no matter how high and thick. Jesus knew that individuals have enemies, families have enemies, and tribes and nations have enemies. Hatred and animosity always cause killing on each level, and only one strategy can break down this wall -- love your enemy.

The fallen world always responds to animosity by seeking revenge. If God and Jesus had used the method of revenge to build the Kingdom of Heaven, however, then there would not be one human being left here on earth, because God would have extinguished them all in retribution. A great movement of restoration only comes from this ideology of love. Only the power of love could begin the new history and new age. When a person has the power to love even his enemies, he is truly a giant and there is nothing he cannot deal with or embrace. Ultimately that person shall conquer the world in God's way. Christianity has always possessed that ideology, and God sees that as long as Christians pursue that doctrine then they will win the world to God.

When you plant bean seeds, beans will grow. When you plant carnations, carnations will grow. No one can deny this principle. If you sow hatred, hatred will result. When you sow love, then the fruit of love will indeed come. The important thing is the size of that love. There is small love, and there is giant, universal love. Christianity has been failing to live up to this principle and failing to love its enemies. This has been its major difficulty.

Christians preach about loving one's enemies, but Jesus also said to love your neighbor. Who is a Christian's neighbor? Certainly it is another Christian. But are they doing it? Do Catholics love Mormons? Do Jehovah's Witnesses love Methodists? It doesn't matter who calls us heretics; whoever practices this principle of loving one's enemy is closer to God and is the orthodox Christian. That is my belief. Love can unite. If Christians practice love then we can unite Christians, and then Christians can unite all the religions of the world. But until we achieve this goal we cannot go on to the next.

Aren't we heretics? Why not? How do you know? If you tell the Christians of the world what the Unification movement is about, they will say you are a heretic. The important thing is to inherit the true tradition and spirit of Christianity, however, and as long as we inherit the doctrine of love and practice it, we are the most orthodox Reverend Moon? Many Americans say so. From your parents' point of view, their enemy is Reverend Moon. The media, business world, and religious world all think I am their enemy. They say I steal the children of American citizens.

If this nation had no foundation of law, I'm sure this nation would have done away with me already. Who is Reverend Moon for you? It is a very serious matter. The people who know me say they cannot change their religion, no matter what their parents, or the government or the media say. Even if those people are kicked out by the American government they would want to continue being Moonies. This is why people say you are crazy! People have no logical explanation for your attitude, so they found a word just for you -- they say you are brainwashed.

Many prayers have reached my ears, prayers by Christians who want God to take me away to spirit world because they cannot stand me. God is listening to what the Moonies are praying and what I am praying. We are asking God to forgive America and awaken this nation and let us bear the cross as a sacrifice. God is looking at these two groups -- the group which wants me taken away, which is rich and powerful, and the other group, which is humbly dressed and eats simply. Moonies look like insignificant people. Do you think God will decide He wants to be on the winning side and put the Moonies away? You say no only because you are Moonies, don't you?

### ***Love characterizes saintly people***

I have had the opportunity to peek into the Book of Life in God's house in spirit world. I saw that the people who were oppressed and persecuted and martyred all have their names in that book. They looked like they were defeated in their life on earth, but the millionaires and famous preachers and politicians aren't there. Sometimes people say, "Reverend Moon, you are a millionaire. Why don't you give all your money to the poor?" But the fact is, I'm not a millionaire, and all the hundreds of millions of dollars the Unification Church receives is applied immediately to the cause of restoring this world - - and all the poor people in it. Because the Unification Church does this, it is entitled to receive yet more money because it practices the principle of loving its enemies. We have been giving out not only money, but our blood, sweat, and heart, as well....

Sometimes I ask God for money for the Unification movement, telling Him we need resources to do His work. There are billions of dollars in the

world, so I tell God that He knows how we will use it. Anyone who can love their enemy -- whether individual, race, or nation -- will inherit from God any resources he needs. That is the kind of nation God has been waiting for. Once that nation appears on earth, it will become the center of God's dispensation, and through it He will fulfill all the promises of the Scriptures.

I know that with the power of God nothing is impossible. Therefore, immediately after the Washington Monument rally in 1976 I declared that the next rally would be in Moscow. Moscow is a very prophetic name. In English it sounds like "must go;" so Moscow means "must go" Some nation and some people must go to Moscow. Do you want to go?

The true dispensation cannot appear on earth unless an individual, family, tribe, and nation can practice the principle of loving their enemy. Until such a nation appears, you cannot talk about the Kingdom of God on earth.

I do not regret that the State Department, Congress, and the entire American government have been very hostile to me. Because of that, I have much more to show God as my achievement once it is all over. If everything had been rosy and peaceful, then I would not have had an opportunity to prove who I am through dramatic achievement. I have never once spoken against or cursed anyone who opposed me, because when a great enemy attacks me, God will send a great friend. When more people came against me in the government, more people stood up to protect me. God is fair.

Wherever there is a high pressure area in the atmosphere, a low pressure area is created. When a great negative force appears in America, some positive force appears around me. I have learned that persecution can be very sweet if you persevere with the right frame of mind. That way I can win more friends and comrades in arms without fighting.

In Home Church work, you go voluntarily to serve the people, but when you arrive and they find out you are a Moonie, they push you away from their door, and even beat you up. I know this is your story. When you are treated that way, some of the neighbors will support that hostile person because they don't like Moonies either; but then others will be outraged and ask how these people could treat any human being that way. When you show up again the next day and the hostile people confront you, the other neighbors will come out to defend you. When you keep coming back with a peaceful face, these neighbors will say that you seem even calmer than Jesus, because the Bible records that Jesus got angry on occasion, while you never get angry.

The people who see you are mistreated will be anxious to know something about you. First, they may think you are dumb and foolish, but they will see that though you are not elegant you are clean cut and neatly dressed and you talk intelligently. When they learn that you have a college degree, they will be astonished and want to know why you are doing this, and then you can tell them that it is because we believe in an ideology of loving people, that we have a dream to build God's fatherland in this nation. If they ask why God

needs a fatherland when He is already omnipotent, you can invite them to hear a lecture. Can you teach the Principle? I am telling you that absolute rejection will bring absolute friends.

The more dramatic the persecution you receive in your Home Church area, the better it is. If you are kicked and knocked unconscious, people may think you are dead and the headlines will proclaim that the Moonie was kicked to death. Then when you revive later, the headlines will announce that you resurrected! If this happens two or three times, then you will easily restore the whole area in the meantime!

On the outside, I seem to be mean and ugly instead of handsome and nice, right? The entire world may say I am mean and ugly, but God will be the one person who will definitely veto that statement. Because the power of God is absolute, there is nothing to fear even when the American government comes against us. I speak out strongly and without fear when the president does something wrong. God is stronger than any president. I don't care what the people say; I only care what God says. As long as God thinks I am His champion, then I don't care what the world says.

### ***Becoming princes and princesses of God***

If I were a solitary individual, then it wouldn't matter how much I was intoxicated by this doctrine. But the problem the world faces is that there are more and more Reverend Moons coming forward every day, hundreds, then thousands and millions more. Heavenly families, heavenly tribes, and heavenly nations are being formed. That is the world's problem. In the Unification Church, incredibly dramatic things can happen, with one extreme uniting with another extreme to create beautiful families. The couples I create will march forward as flag bearers who can love their enemies. Together, they will become princes and princesses of God. This is the exciting life we live.

No trivial barriers such as race or culture and language matter to us. We transcend them all with the love of God. A great blessing took place in 1978 in Great Britain, and in most cases the couples came from countries that historically had been enemies. In some cases, they couldn't even speak each other's language, so they created their own eye and sign language. It is dramatic to touch your fiancé's hands when you can't say anything. Then a kiss is really sweet.

There is no barrier we cannot overcome with the power of love. Some people might say they like everything about the Unification Church except mobile fund raising team duty. Today you have the solution -- if fund raising is your worst enemy, then do it and love it. Can you do it? Some people might think Unification Church life is exciting except for witnessing and meeting people 24 hours a day. Now today you have the answer: If witnessing is your enemy, then love doing it.

The New York members might have felt that Bo Hi Pak was their enemy when he pushed them every week to do home church. Now they say, "But now a new man has come, Reverend Won Pil Kim; he looks mean and he is old and needs eyeglasses to read with, and he is even worse than the previous one. I can't stand these Koreans. They smell like

kimchi all the time. They are my enemies" Today you have the answer -- if they are your enemies, then love them all, and the Kingdom of Heaven shall come from that love. From the moment you can love your enemy, the Kingdom of Heaven shall come.

My philosophy is very simple. If you have the attitude to love your enemy, then you can overcome any situation and there is no obstacle that can block you. In my lifetime of 60 years, I have experienced everything. There were many things I didn't want to tackle, but I did it because I loved my enemy. I did the worst things there were to do -- I was a beggar, a laborer, a farmer, a dock worker, a miner. I became a fisherman, and even the tough professional fishermen gave up trying to beat my record.

Every day I am living this principle, and when I look I see that there are many people of all colors following behind me. If I push them away and tell them to leave, then they go, but then they come in the back door again. The Principle of the Unification movement is rather simple and we live it. Other people trying to find our secret under a microscope won't find it there, but we live it and are serious about it.

Shall I continue? You cold blooded Moonies, you hate me! You make me work so hard on my birthday!

My topic today is the Fatherland of God. God needs a nation here on earth. We Moonies don't have our nation. God wants a nation that will practice this principle of loving one's enemies.

Today we are celebrating my 60th birthday. These 60 years have been years of paying incredible indemnity. From this day on, the years of my 60s are beginning, initiating the years of completion and the decade of fulfillment and perfection.

We are multi-colored here; this auditorium is a miniature of the Heavenly Kingdom, with five colors of skin from 127 countries. All we have to do is practice this principle. We are not going to destroy our enemies but will liberate them. We find love by loving them. You will practice this in your Home Church providence. That is the base of the Kingdom of Heaven. That is where you can learn to bear the burden and taste God's tears and broken heart.

You have your own territory, and as we get bigger we can cover all of New York, then America, the entire world, and the entire spirit world. Finally, we will cover God with Home Church. Home church people will tell God to stay in heaven while they do the work, but He will protest that He wants to be with them. God will shout out, "This is my home. This is my tribe and nation. The fulfillment is complete. Let us dance and sing together"

The day of victory is coming when God will see His people and nation here on earth. Then He will declare His heavenly constitution. Will it be inferior to a democratic constitution? Truly there shall be a real democracy for life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness under God. There will be a right to life. Life is sacred and has the right to exist -- that is the basic human right.

We are engaged in the work of liberating people in every field and arena of life. Therefore, we engage in every walk of life -- business, education, the arts. We will liberate people with the true heart of God. Eventually, I want to see a world without any national boundaries.

I am in a position to hate Americans because they have done so much against me, but I do not hate them at all. I have confidence that with our ideology we can break down all the barriers there are. We can do it simply through the restoration of a fatherland for God.

Where is your enemy? We have no enemies because we return debts of harm with love. We repay with love any damage and persecution that comes to us. Your real enemy is anything that your physical body likes. That is the one enemy you must watch out for. Don't worry about other people and what the papers say. Our real enemy is not communism, but the internal enemies of drug use and free sex and immorality, such as the infiltration of evils like homosexuality.

Today we are talking about the restoration of God's fatherland. Let us pledge ourselves to march forward for this fatherland here on earth. Those who pledge to God and True Parents that they will give themselves for the restoration of the Heavenly Kingdom and fatherland of God here on earth, raise your hands. Amen!

God bless you. Thank you very much.

### **Chapter 33**

#### **The Providence and the Individual, Past and Present**

**February 22, 1981 -- Tarrytown, New York**

You like English better than this complicated Korean language, don't you?

Since we have started speaking about language, I would like to tell you that language is something very mysterious. By the spoken word, dead men can arise. Also, people can be scared to death by hearing certain things. Indeed, language can give people life or bring them to the point of death.

Have you ever thought about what language we will speak in spirit world? Well, spirit world definitely has a language. In this present world, we speak first and then we see the result later. What about God -- have you ever thought about how He communicates? God's thinking is the same as His language. In other words, He doesn't think first and then speak -- as soon as He thinks, He has spoken. So we could say that in spirit world one hears thoughts more than language.

The conversation of thought is continued through the past, present and future. God can see the past, present, and future within one thought. Also, God expresses His thinking in language and communication.

How would you explain the country of America? When we talk about a country, we must talk about the people that comprise it. Where do the people come from? You American

people are basically immigrants from Europe. All the five colors of skin came from five different continents. However, all these people came together under one common language, and with that language they created a new culture.

The history of America is created by the thinking of American people manifested in everyday life -- as it accumulates, it becomes the culture and tradition, as well as the history. The basic foundation of American culture is the Christian thought and way of life. Therefore, America has become the center of the Christian culture of the world.

This year, America is celebrating 205 years of history. For 205 years, America has been forming a certain cultural character for itself. In God's sight, has America completely grown up, or is it still in its adolescence, or perhaps even the infant stage? Is America, in God's sight, a very healthy country, or is it quite sick? If America is sick, what disease is plaguing it?

There are all kinds of diseases -- diseases of the eye, nose, ears, as well as of the hands, arms, and limbs. According to God, physical sickness is a bad thing but spiritual sickness is worse. Is America spiritually healthy or ill? The most critical aspect of a person is his thinking, because the invisible, intangible thought is what manifests itself in the physical realm. Thus, if you have unhealthy thoughts, you will also have unhealthy physical manifestations.

Today's topic is "The Providence and Individual, Past and Present." We are always talking about the "providence," meaning events centered upon God. Can you say, "My providence is going very well"? No, but it makes sense to talk about the providence of God. Therefore, whenever you talk about providence, you mean God's providence. Likewise, providential culture, providential history and so forth, refer to the culture and history of God.

However, we can observe and evaluate human beings in the light of the providence. A human being can represent mankind, he can represent the providence; that is, he can stand for something bigger than himself. We are talking about providential history and culture -- centering upon God with the individual seen within the context of the providence. As a product of history, that self also exists in the past as well as the present.

Consider American customs. When you eat breakfast, your table is laden with certain things: bread, butter, jam, sausage, and so forth. What is the history of these American breakfasts? You are laughing at this, but from the eyes of God, everything in the present must have a root.

### ***The origin of simple things***

Take the fork you eat with. Before they had metal forks, people probably used wooden forks. Somebody designed the fork at some time because they wanted a tool to eat with. Look at your hand; notice that the fork was originally designed along that pattern. The hand is a "five-pronged fork." The hand served the role of fork in the beginning. But people became smarter -- after working all day with their hands, they came home with dirty hands

and they didn't want to use them to put the food into their mouths. So someone decided to create an extension of the hand and must have carved something resembling a fork from wood.

Initially, maybe the fork had five prongs, just like the fingers of the hand, but trying to get it into the mouth was too difficult -- it was too cumbersome. Perhaps they cut off one of the prongs to make four -- maybe that's why it's called "fork" -- "Four-k"!

Just as the prongs of the fork resemble the fingers of the hand, the handle resembles the arm. Maybe some old grandfather decided to trim down the prongs to only one, because four were too complicated to make. But as the food became more sophisticated, they needed more than one type of fork. So they made another with two prongs. Then they compared the one-prong fork with the two-prong fork, and the second kind worked better. Why? Because one of the prongs represented father and the other represented mother. Then they added another branch, which represents the son; and then another to represent the daughter.

So even on one fork, everyone is represented -- father, mother, son, and daughter.

I'm sure the history and origin of the fork stems from the human arm. If even a fork can be traced down to this root, how much more so the different aspects of human history? An explanation of history must be logical according to past, present, and future. The simple fork seems like nothing on the table, but when you dig down into its historical background, you can derive universal truth from even such a simple thing.

Suppose the fork declared: "The whole Western world is indebted to me! They must appreciate me because without me, their lives could not be sustained. Even though you have mountains of food, without me to provide the bridge between the food and your body, your body cannot sustain its life!" From the fork's point of view, more important than anything even God -- is the fork! The fork could claim a most instrumental role in the development of the Western culture.

But then, listening to all this proud verbiage, the spoon, sitting next to the fork, becomes rather jealous and decides to speak up. "What are you talking about, Mr. Fork? In spite of all your importance, you cannot scoop up even one drop of liquid!" The spoon can declare, "Do you know that three-quarters of the human body is liquid? Thus, it is clear that liquid is most necessary for the body, not solids. When a child is born, liquid is absolutely necessary for its delivery. Every cell in the body is also full of liquid. I supply all that liquid!"

Such seemingly trivial things like the fork and spoon can make the proudest claims. By the same token, even the smallest hair on your head can make such a declaration -- it can weave a universe around itself. Every portion of the human body, including the five senses, the arms and legs, has its own unique role and can proclaim its function as the most important under the sun. Even the clothes and shoes you wear could do the same. Everything we wear has a certain history or background.

Likewise, women have their history. Before you, there was your mother; before her, your grandmother, before her, your great-grandmother. All together, you form the tree of women, with Eve at the base. Likewise, you men have a father, and behind him your grandfather; behind him, your great-grandfather, all the way back to the super-grandfather, Adam.

Is the history of women, Eve's history, a proud and shining one? You may think you walk alone, but actually you are never walking alone. The history of women is following you. If you look around, you can observe the entire history of women -- the "women's museum." What would you find in such a place? All the different races of women -- black, white, yellow and all kinds of women. Ask yourself, "Who am I, as a woman?" or "Who am I, as a man?" Where do you fit in, in the history of women and men? For whom do you speak?

Have you ever considered how many words you have spoken so far in your life? Suppose each person lived to be 100 years old. That seems to be a very long life, but it is actually only 36,000 days. If you speak an average of 100 words a day, you will speak 3.6 million words in your lifetime. How many words do you think you speak every day? Are you women double that?

All right, let's say you speak 1,000 words a day. That means you speak 36 million words in your lifetime. Words arise from your thoughts. Thoughts could not be expressed without someone to communicate with. Language is the medium of communication. Thus the word is the tool of communication. When you speak, of whom are you thinking, yourself or the listener? Think about that.

Let's say you utter a sentence. Ask yourself, "Is that for my benefit and protection, or is it for the benefit of another?" There is always a purpose and reason for a particular sentence. Is that reason for yourself or for others? Most of a person's language is spoken for his or her own sake.

Actually, the most powerful weapon in the universe is language. It is like a machine gun, and even much more powerful. In a fight between a husband and wife, the wife may be really firing her "machine gun" of words at her husband. Words are sometimes that destructive.

If you speak 1,000 words a day, ask yourself, "Did I speak even one word today for the sake of my country? Was one word for the sake of God? For mankind?" Do you speak even one percent of your daily words - - that is, 10 out of 1,000 -- for something noble and good, for the sake of others and God? Can you devote at least that much for that purpose?

Have you ever compared a person's mouth to a gun barrel, shooting bullets of words? Some things you say may make no impact upon your parents, for example. But other words will hit them like cannonballs. If their loving son turns around and says just a few abusive and angry words, they will be shocked. Such shock waves are not only physical but also spiritual, shaking people's minds.

In another example, a loving husband might say some words to his wife that electrify her. Certain words give a shocking reaction to the body.

In the Unification Church, we are pursuing the public way of life. Thus when we speak, we have to ask ourselves if we are speaking more for the sake of ourselves or for others; Perhaps before you joined the church, you felt very apathetic, not caring much about your country. When somebody talked about the country or about God and the universe, you didn't want to pay any attention. That was your past. But then you joined the Unification Church and something happened to you. It was more than "brainwashing," something you might call "Moon-washing." The direction of your interests totally changed.

So you are now "spiritually-washed" people in the Unification Church. Your pattern of thinking has changed, focusing upon something greater than yourself. Much of the day, you think about the True Parents. You have so many things to think about -- home church, for example -- that never even enter the minds of ordinary people. But we think about these things day and night, isn't that true?

The self of the past rarely devoted his conversation for the benefit of others, but after becoming members of the Unification Church, what is the ratio? Are you concentrating all 1,000 of your daily words for the sake of others, rather than yourself?

### ***Balance your words and actions***

"Number one" means something good. Mathematically, one occurs when the upper and lower lines become equal. So number one means equal, left and right, up and down. Thus, the number one men and women are those whose words and actions are equal. If you say something while thinking something else, you are not number one at all.

Suppose you shoot out words like machine gun bullets, thousands at a time, but act upon only one of them: You are not a number one person. What if you act upon 1,000 words and only speak one? Then that number one becomes 1,000! That's not ideal either, because there is no balance.

Let's draw a conclusion, develop a certain principle: The person who speaks more for the benefit of others is a good person, while the one who speaks only for his own benefit is a selfish person.

When you really evaluate your past before the church, your way of life was really deserving of hell. It was a hellish life. Do you agree?

There must be a boundary between good and evil, a law to set the standard. What is the law in this country? It is the standard by which everything can be judged and divided between good and bad.

### ***Laws only set the minimum***

It's amazing that the law always defines the minimum, not the maximum. I here is no law or limit to how much good you can do, above the line of the law. No law says you should only be honest to this point, or loving to that point. . .

The law does set limits first upon the selfish person -- the one who always tries to live for himself. Such a person tends to bring destruction to the public welfare, so the law exists to limit him. The law is always watching out for the self-centered person. Next, the law watches out for greedy and destructive people. The law exists to protect the public from harm. Certain persons do not hesitate to resort to destructive methods to achieve their own selfish purposes; they will do anything. When someone speaks harsh, vituperative words that hurt others, he violates the moral law even though there may not be a written law against it.

The basic principle of democracy rests upon numbers; anyone who receives more than half the votes in an election will be the winner. Thus, democracy is always fluid, moving around. Suppose evil people got together and accumulated enough votes to win a majority. According to the rules of democracy, they are the legitimate winners. If evil can gain strength and exercise power, it is obvious that democracy lacks something. Even the forces of God-denying communism, as soon as they amass enough strength, could exercise power and become the instruments of "social justice."

### ***Standards of a public way of life***

So what is the more public way of life? We need certain rules and norms to determine this. The first standard is unchanging quality. Then, uniqueness. Finally, durability. Public things must be unchanging, unique, and everlasting. So when you are genuinely public-minded, you have room for the individual, family, nation and world.

"Absolutely public" means "absolutely gigantic" -- so big it can contain everything there is. Is America a big or a small country? You like to say that America is big. However, compared to the sun, the whole planet Earth is quite small. How big something seems depends upon what you compare it with.

What about the realm of germs and viruses? Do you suppose there exists a world even smaller than what human power has yet discovered? Such a micro-world must have certain means of sensing. I'm sure there must be some mini-micro hand, at a mini-micro table, reaching for the bread and butter!

As a young child looking at the ants crawling on the ground, you discovered that even creatures in that tiny world have eyes, legs, and so forth. Furthermore, those ants have antennae and their own little computers that guide them in certain directions -- and humans haven't even discovered their secrets yet. Even all the knowledge contained within the London Museum could not explain the mysteries of one tiny little ant. Think of it -- that seemingly insignificant insect is carrying knowledge too vast to be contained within the London Museum!

Law is amazing and strange, in a way. It defines the minimum which is necessary to preserve a society or existence from self-destruction, greed, and self-centeredness.

### ***Take things more seriously***

After I came to the United States, I saw how much the people here love comedy and comedians. Radio and television are filled with humor, and people laugh loudly and strongly. I wondered what was so funny and why there was so much laughing.

Comedy is a mixed-up kind of language, a strange combination of words -- it's never straight or sincere, just a funny way of putting words together to make people laugh. If Americans are so fond of such strange things, their characteristics must also be mixed up. When something moves people to laugh so heartily, they will act upon it, and live it. Comedy has no content, no seriousness, and no real meaning -- it is superficial. Likewise, the American way of life has become very superficial; people do not want to think deeply or consider the serious side of things. They don't want to search for spiritual things.

Something of real substance cannot be conveyed in light tones. You cannot joke when you are saying something serious. The meaning of a serious message must be conveyed in black and white tones. Still there are people who are fond of making light of things, cracking jokes; such a person lives only superficially. Anybody capable of steering the world and all mankind must be a serious person, one of few words. The thinkers of the past, present, and future are always pensive people -- those who prefer to sit and think -- never those who like to chatter, have fun and laugh.

There is a certain way to write a musical score. The notes must have a certain shape, with their flags standing straight up above the circles or going straight down. Suppose someone wrote music with the notes lying flat on the line? Many American people today want to live their lives in pursuit of "fun," with no allegiance to any laws. They want to jump around, doing anything they please. If they feel like saying or shouting something, they do it. Thus their music and dancing -- disco, for example reflects that.

Can you imagine dancing with your father or mother and kicking them for fun? Can you say, "Don't take me seriously"? The father's common sense would tell him that his son is doing something wrong by kicking people around him. That would be a very serious matter.

Our universe is the serious consequence of creation. It never came into being due to someone's sense of humor. Therefore, the central principle of the universe could never be imagined as a joke.

Suppose there are two diplomats arguing, one a communist and the other an American. The United States always loses in such discussions because Americans say too much; they give away too much, making jokes and fun. The American might try to stop the breakdown of such negotiations, claiming he was only joking and didn't mean it. But it's too late. There is no place for a joking tone in serious negotiations.

The Chinese, for example, are very serious people. They rarely speak but just stare at you. They are the most formidable opponents in poker they never reveal their cards until the last moment. Communists can lie in wait like serpents searching for their opponents' weaknesses. Then they will attack. They are always ready to strike at any time, like the serpent, as soon as you expose your weaknesses.

In this universe, there must be some serious central truth. If there were no such thing, then we would have to form one, because without it human civilization could never sustain itself. Even as a hypothesis, we would have to assume the existence of God as the central law and source of everything.

But of course, we don't have to settle for a hypothetical God. We have the real God. How much more fortunate we are!

Past, present, and future are all governed by one principle -- there is no joke about that. Do you suppose the taste of honey changes from the past, through the present, to the future? How about gold -- does its rich color change through time? Does the quality of a diamond change? The source of their value is their unchanging, everlasting qualities.

God is indeed a public God. He is truly the center of the public way of thinking. God does think of Himself, but only within the frame of public-mindedness; He never thinks of Himself as separate. Suppose God were like air, permeating the entire universe with that public-mindedness.

Within that universal space filled with that "public-minded air" God places Himself at the center. You should always try to locate yourself at the center of public life; Standing at that center, whatever you do, you will be accepted. Anything originating from that central point will be good and acceptable. The more that comes from there, the better.

### ***You need the center***

This is like the axle of a wheel on an automobile. The axle is small but the wheel that turns on it causes a tremendous amount of motion. Even a big wheel turns on a small axle. God is like that. The universe is like a huge, public wheel. God is at the center, like the axle. As he turns, the rest of the universe turns. Thus, in that position, an individual can say, "I exist for the sake of the universe and the universe exists for my sake."

People of five different skin colors, coming from different parts of the world, living in the past, present and future, comprise the masses of mankind, both vertically (past and present) and horizontally. God positioned himself in their very center. In that environment, all kinds of people exist. One person will be smaller, another will be larger; one person will have a particular shape and another will be different. The combination of all these creates a certain harmony. They are swimming in a certain environment. Even though they seem to move at random, they cannot exist independently in this universe, disregarding their center. They have to relate with the center.

Thus, whenever the world situation changes, then the situation in the United States changes as well. This country cannot think, "Well, don't bother me. The rest of the world goes its way, and I go mine." Any change in the government of the United States inevitably affects the men and women living within it. President Reagan has taken office and is trying to make a new beginning. He is asking everybody to tighten his belt, so everybody's life is affected, one way or another. If you are living under an austerity plan, then every aspect of your life is affected. For example, if you have a wedding reception, you will need to make it more simple. In other words, one central person here in America is trying to turn the nation in a certain direction, and everyone within that nation is affected, like it or not.

God is in such a position, except God's scope is much bigger than Reagan's. God's realm is the universe and He is always at the center, always public-minded, and trying to move the whole universe toward a certain goal or action. God is turning a giant wheel. The larger the wheel, the stronger the axle must be in order to turn it. Therefore, the giant wheel of the universe can be turned only by almighty God. We can use the word "almighty" in regard to God because that word applies only to the one who is in the center, at the axle. Anyone who is somewhere other than the center cannot be almighty.

We are investigating what good is. Good is whatever direction that God is pushing in. So a public-minded life, rather than a self-centered one, is always good in God's sight. The center exists for the sake of all, and all exist for the sake of the center. That is give and take. From that central position alone can God be almighty.

God is always living within eternity. There is no dull moment; every second is vibrant. From this central position alone, God can be the center of happiness and glory. The public purpose always comes first, then oneself. This is the correct sequence. Universal law says that men and women are made in the image of God, so we must live the way God is living.

Who is a noble person?

Historically, the noble man has tried to protect the interests of the public. The son of filial piety is the "noble man" of the family, because he is living for the purpose of the family. The patriot is the noble man of the country, because the nation is nothing but the extension of the family. And the saint or holy man is at the center of the world.

Let's say that you are lifted up into spirit world, leaving behind this physical world. At that point, you are accepted according to certain categories. Some may be children of filial piety, others patriots. If you are accepted as a holy man, that means you are already a patriot and a son of filial piety, because they come within the scope of the holy man. The scope of the saint or holy man is larger than the others. God's goal is to have everyone be a saint, more than a patriot or a son of filial piety. But you must begin at the training ground of filial piety. The next "workshop" for sainthood is to become a patriot.

Many "elder Moonies" are going through the 120-day workshop now. Some of them are thinking, "Why do I need more training? I've been teaching workshops myself." You have been serving at the level of a child of filial piety or a patriot, but now I want you to progress

to the level of saint. After this training, you should be given the world as your stage. You should begin to work for a whole continent and the entire world.

The public-minded person speaks from public-mindedness; he eats and sleeps and does everything from the public-minded standpoint. There is no such thing as his private standpoint. When you look at the world with a public-minded eye, everybody loves your eye. Even though my eyes are very small, I look out of these windows with a public mind, and everybody pays attention to those eyes. You love these eyes, don't you? It doesn't matter what shape your ears or nose may have, as long as they are working for the public purpose, then people love them -- because God loves them.

This has always been my way of life -- to position myself always at the center of the public-minded sphere. If that center goes wrong, then the entire universe goes wrong. It is a grave responsibility. If that center does something crazy, then the entire universe becomes crazy. The center cannot afford to do that. To preserve the universe and the universal order, the center must preserve its central position. That is the way of life of the Unification Church members -- everyone is standing in a central position. This is why you have to obey the laws of the Principle.

### ***Heavier burdens at the center***

Perhaps you joined the Unification Church from the outer rim of the universe. But as you accept more and more responsibility, you move towards the center. The more you practice the Principle and the traditions of the church, the closer you come to the center. Approaching the center, do your burdens become lighter or heavier? Some people might object: "I don't like the heaviness of that burden. I just like the authority of being in the center!" Is that good? That is worse than being a thief -- trying to steal only the sweet part of something while denying the responsibility attached to it.

I am always thinking, "I am going to dig right into the heart of God. There I will take every burden that He has upon my shoulders. I want to bear those burdens."

I am planning on burrowing into the heart of God and shouldering every burden God has. I will insist on bearing that burden. So when I am in the center with that burden turning around and around, I am really wrapping myself around God. Even God can't detach Himself. No way. So there's no distinction, no boundary between God and me.

You want to become very famous, don't you? You are going to be number one, aren't you? That's not a bad ambition. Yes, God created you to be number one, but not just for glory -- but so you can shoulder responsibility. Then inside and outside come together and you discover your new self. Discovering yourself you find that you belong to the public. The public owns you. Those who are trying to say they don't care about the public, about the rest of the world, only themselves -- are evil.

Living that kind of life, whatever you think during the day is public-minded thought and you can speak with true authority. So, because your speech and actions are motivated from

the center they have a true focus. No life, no action, no word, remains in the center, it always passes through it.

### ***The product of providence***

So, this is the concept of providence. You are the product of providence. You emerged in history to be a part of this providence. This providence is the purpose behind you, each one of you.

You are given birth in this world. From this public-minded purpose and your parents' example you were brought up. You are indebted first to your parents. So living as children is the first public-minded act. For the sake of the world and posterity, children are given to you. Therefore, truly God-centered parents should be thinking they are bringing up their children in the image of the universe, as representatives of the universe. A universal gift. So you raise those children to perfection and you truly love those children because they represent the universe.

Without even realizing this profound meaning, many parents truly love their children, because nature works in that fashion. This is a universal truth.

After bringing you up in the center of their family, your parents try to send you forth, to become an important citizen of your nation. Your parents say, "All right, do something important for the country. Become a patriot." Parents are always trying to push their children to study, to be disciplined. "Stay awake;" they urge, "Work on your exam. Come up with a good report card." Sometimes they become too pushy, insulting the children, disciplining them harshly. Parents might spank their children, urging them forward, trying to make them better. It has a good purpose if that son or daughter is pushed toward the center, to a more public place.

Your parents should push you to become not only a good patriot, but a saintly person or noble person as well -- a holy man or woman. Their greediness for you to become the best is for the public purpose.

### ***I don't mind the night***

I came to America and America came against me. It has never bothered me. America is a small object on our radar screen. Being the center, I have the responsibility to turn America around. The United States of America opposes me because it is now on the dark side of the earth; half of the world is always heading into the night. But the globe keeps revolving, and what is now dark will soon enter the light.

At night, only the moon sheds her light, and we don't always see clearly. But as the earth continues to revolve, we see the sun come up. Then we exclaim: "We see the sun!"

If you become number one, you have to keep a balance. You have to like not only day but also night. If you like only the day, you are not number one. In our way of life, if you want to become number one, you even willingly allow yourself to be persecuted, telling yourself

you can withstand it, you can persevere. Then when acceptance comes and people welcome you, of course you feel good. So suffering is okay, particularly when you are young. I am willing to go down the road of suffering because when that road ends and old age comes, there will be glory. There will be sunlight. That's the way, right?

### ***Don't be a victim***

So it's a great life. It's a great ideology, truly tremendous. It is almost like being a champion entering the boxing ring and challenging your opponents. In boxing what counts is the ultimate KO, the knockout. Until you reach the knock out point, you may be hit a thousand times, with broken teeth and blood coming out of your nose. Your eye may turn totally black and blue. It makes no difference as long as you persevere to the end, and knock the opponent out.

So no one should become a victim. You need to first face suffering and then hardship, because the ultimate victory never comes at the beginning, but always at the end. Stand up and persevere with a strong determination, even under persecution, until the end and then, in the final round, knock the opponent out.

You may think you want to become a world champion, but you want to avoid being hit. "I don't want anybody to come anywhere near me; I don't want anybody to touch me ' you think. "Then I will walk out and proclaim myself world champion. Yeah. I want to be like that." I say that such a person is a thief, trying to avoid all of the intermediate fights in order to bask in the glory of the final round.

Senior Moonies in particular may say, "Well, Father, I have had enough already; I want to take the smooth path. I don't want to have anybody touch me. And I don't want a big vicious battle in the ring. I fought in the British ring; I don't care about the world ring. I was fighting in the German ring; I became a champion there. That's good enough for me. I don't want to go ahead any more."

What I need are men and women who have already won the national championships. When I say, "Come here; I'll put you in the world championship race ' I want people who will say, "Yes, Father."

Are you ready to face a lot of punches? "No problem, Father. I am seasoned. I am very hardened. I am iron-fisted, iron-willed. Father, put me in the hardest fight you want." That's the kind of champion I want you to be. Is it a bad thing for me to push you up to the even greater challenge?

Who is pulling whom?

The Unification Church is within this world, inside the world, outside the world. Unification Church members are thinking, "No matter what happens to the world, I shall keep the center. I shall hold fast. I will not be thrown out of it."

Somebody may pull you, but if you are already connected to the center, as soon as the person releases you, bang, you go right back to the center. Even if you try to pull me, what I am actually doing is circling around, not being pulled out. Do you follow?

Suppose there is some lead on the wheel, near the axle. That dead weight causes a very unstable motion, jerking the axle all the time. What would you do? Would you say, "Oh the weight is too much for me"? Would you be broken at the axis, and give in?

But if you are always at the center, always strong, unfazed by anything, instead of the axle breaking, the lead will work its way out of the circle. Two things could happen; the lead chunk could fly out, or the axle could be broken. Which consequence would you prefer?

The lead today is communism. They are trying to jerk you off, trying to break the axle; but as they turn faster and faster, the axle is so strong that they will drop out. In other words, they will destroy themselves. That's the way God sees the providence of your past and present.

How would you view yourself? Would you say "Who cares about the world, about mankind? It doesn't bother me. I have nothing to do with those things, and I just live my life as I wish. It's my freedom. Don't bother me." Is that the right kind of attitude?

That is in our past. Some women have said, "I am a woman. Why should I be confined to one man? Tonight, I may go with this man, tomorrow another. So what? That's my freedom." Is that true freedom?

True freedom is harmony with the axis. That is freedom, real peace. Work is freedom. True freedom is when you are working in harmony and peace with the axis or the balance. Therefore freedom cannot leave the direction of the Principle. Within the scope of the Principle, you can enjoy freedom.

In the past, you may have spoken a lot, but was what you spoke the word of hell? If so, what you spoke was like a poison; it poisoned people and brought them down to hell, instead of bringing them out of hell.

Why did Father ask you to bring your wife here? Because you need complete harmony within your couple, within your home. Total cooperation. When the husband is going after the universal mission, the wife has a very important role. How does the husband react when his wife says, "Oh don't bother me. Why you going away? Pay some attention to your children! Pay attention to your own wife. What about me?" Actually the English word, "better half" is a good word. So the man is half of the circle, and the other "better half" is the wife. Not here. The essential line, the dividing line of the better half, is not a random position.

### ***Don't stay in a cubbyhole***

In talking about the providence, many people say, "I have to worry about myself, my family first, then I can worry about God. If I don't even take care myself and my own family, how

can I worry about God?" The Unification Church is expanding outward in a universal mission. When you go home, you think you are separating yourself from the universal mission. In many cases, when Unification Church members of good standing get married, they become changed. They say, "Now my mission is over. I now have my own cubbyhole, my own life. I don't have a universal mission now." But your family is within the universal mission. It is part of the universal mission.

Men and women should be together, strengthening their position to tackle the universal mission. You have found your better half, then by making yourselves a complete circle, you are standing in the center. That is the meaning of marriage in the Unification Church.

Often when a person who stands in the center gets married, he wants to leave and stay on the perimeter. Absolutely not! When you become a married man, a family man, your family is right in the center, revolving on the same axle. So when you get married, your mission and your wife's mission become one. Together you create the center and you become the axle. Nothing you do is separate from your central position. You might say, "I shouldn't have too many children, just maybe one or two, because more than that would be too burdensome." That's a bad idea, from the heavenly point of view. The more children you have, the bigger your circle becomes.

I would like you to cover each direction. There are four seasons, each divided into three different segments, making 12 gates. Each child represents a certain gate and a certain direction. You have to give your self day and night for your children, changing diapers and everything. It's an incredible burden, but if you have 12 children, you are giving an enormous contribution to the universe by offering 12 representatives that will span 360 degrees. In other words, your family will be able to relate to every direction to the world, not just one direction.

This applies not just to physical children, but spiritual children as well. That's why I want you to go out and win spiritual children. Your spiritual children will line up around you at 12 different gates, 12 different directions, and they link you to the world -- the black world, the white world, the yellow world. Every direction of the world is covered. Witnessing is not easy. Giving birth to that many babies is not easy, and giving birth to spiritual children is also not easy.

### ***I'm going to Moscow***

My goal is the Moscow rally. Is my mission easy? Communism is my worst enemy, but I am going to Moscow for a rally. You say unthinkable, impossible. Is it an easy task? President Reagan has the mighty power of the United States behind him, and Secretary Haig has the mighty power of the armed forces behind him and still they tremble; they don't know what to do with the communists. However, without even a small Pentagon or one small state department behind me, I am going right to the center of Moscow to claim it. In other words, I am going right into the enemy camp, right into the center. It's not easy. There is a high price to pay for it. We may have to pay the price, but it's no problem. That is the goal, that is the mission, and the mission shall be done.

## ***Send your husband to the forefront***

So if in paying the price someone is being martyred, that is most valuable. If it's for the mission even I am ready to risk being a martyr. I have no hesitation in saying it. What if the day of reckoning comes, and your wife says, "Father, that mission is very dangerous mission, don't send my husband. Send somebody else." How about that? If that is the case, your wife is a failure within the Principle. Your wife should say, "Father, could you have my husband be in the forefront of that mission? Use him, please. I will take care of the children. No trouble, Father. Send my husband to the forefront of the mission!" That is the true heavenly wife.

How many women in this room can say: "I shall be responsible for all the Soviet women, even if they all persecute me. Father, let me take care of them. I will yield not even one inch, not even one iota. I shall convert them."

How about you men? If all the communists of the world come after you, can you say: "Father, let me be in the forefront. I shall not yield even one inch. I shall be victorious in your name." That is the kind of man I want you to be.

When I came to America, I already made allowances in my plan that I might even have to go to a U.S. prison or a Soviet prison, or even to a concentration camp. It was all within the plan. Nothing is unexpected for me. When I watch a movie in which someone fails his mission, is discovered, and is executed by the firing squad, I am not just looking at the scene dispassionately. I put myself into that position, I put my life in that position; I am willing to accept it if that is God's will.

## ***The saints pay the price***

So when the nation is collapsing and the people are crumbling, you have to go to the forefront and pay the price to save them. Without paying the price, nothing can be accomplished. For the sake of the nation, the patriot must be willing to be a martyr. For the sake of the world, the holy, saintly people shall be in the forefront; they shall be the ones who pay the price first! So if that is the case, we want to die for the sake of the world and the sake of the country. Jesus Christ went precisely down that road. He died from a position in the center of the world, and it had universal impact.

Never try to avoid the things coming to you. Face them! That's what Jesus did. He stayed in the center. Think to yourself, "Whether I live or die, my victory will affect all of humanity past and present. and the entire universe." Look at Jesus. He erected his cross in the very center of the universe and died for the sake of mankind. He never grieved over his own death. He had room to forgive and to love his enemies even to the last minute.

## ***History fluctuates, but not God***

That's the way God sees the providence. Look at everything from this standpoint. Nothing can be outside of this interpretation. Even though history has fluctuated, this principle has

never changed, because God never changed. Because God's position is the principle, it remains as the Alpha and Omega.

The letter G is almost a complete circle. If God, as "G," were a complete circle, no door would remain for anybody to enter. So God opened a little door and then made an entrance for you and me. But then the "d" of God is at the end; when the time comes God will close the door. Judgment day comes and the door is closed.

That's the way God thinks, in the past, present and future. And God not only thinks that way, but lives that way. So in order to be the number one man, I should be like that God of the past, God of the present, and God of the future.

### ***Do you long for your past life?***

Think about the experiences of your past. After listening to Father, you know the truth. But in the past, did you have full realization of this truth? What kind of past did you have?

You had no self in a way, no awareness of yourself. You did not recognize yourself. Because there was no center, the self was abused. Your life had no principle, no direction, no reason. You have been a wanderer, straying and floating. In that wandering you caught the Unification Church. All of a sudden, you entered the door and discovered an entirely new world. First, you discovered something fantastic, amazingly refreshing, and good. But then you tried to live the Unification way of life. Then you started looking back, a little nostalgic, a little homesick, thinking, "Well, I had all kinds of freedom then. I could go anywhere I wanted. I saw everything I wanted to see. If I wanted to dance every dance I could." What about now?

In the outside world, you could think, "I am totally free to marry any girl I want. I can divorce any girl I marry." Then here you find, "Oh, I have no freedom to do that. I have to wait for Father to say something. What kind of marriage is that?" Also, here, your mission is incredibly difficult. You go out, trying to witness, and people say, "You Moonie ' pointing at you and spitting at you. The attack comes from all directions. Then you say, "Oh, I came to the wrong place. I'm sorry, Father. I have to go. Fortunately, I don't have too much luggage."

Suppose the Unification Church gave you everything you wanted, fed you the best meals, allowed you long hours of sleep, provided Hilton Hotel accommodations, and anything else you ever wanted. Of course, no one would ever leave. I knew that if I made you comfortable, gave you an easy job, made your job enjoyable in a worldly sense, allowed you freedom, and gave you all kinds of other things, everyone would stay in the church. I knew that. But real people, godly people, conscientious, patriotic people who are concerned about this country and the destiny of the world -- those people will stay. We will have the power to rally the true, genuine people.

### ***It might take 40 years***

The work of restoration might take 10, 20, 30 or 40 years. Well, I already determined that 40 years is nothing; it's only one stage. I started this mission when I was 16. If you truly want to accomplish something of worldwide proportions, it takes at least 40 years.

The 4,000 years of recorded history have been an entangled, satanic history. It will take at least 40 years to untangle. What if my attitude had been to avoid a harder mission? What if I said, "God, give me an easier job. Make my burden lighter." If that was my aspiration, I would have been suspended from my job a long time ago. But I always sought the difficult path of restoration from the beginning. I have not even begun to fight. This is only the beginning.

I am training you and sending you out into the world. That is the standard I am asking you to meet. Actually today your standard is lower than mine.

How many of you could survive being put in one of the catacombs of Rome? How many of you could endure the pressure and danger of those first-century days? How many of you would survive in such circumstances? If the first century Christians could persevere amidst those ordeals and be strong -- even we can survive.

God loves me not only because of my philosophy and way of life; God sees that I have the power and the capability to bring the billions of people around the world into the same conviction, the same direction, the same goal. In other words, I am the kind of man God needs here on the earth. God sees that I have the power to multiply myself. Now I am 60 years old. How many more years do you think I will live? I do not believe that my physical body will sustain life forever.

Many Christians think that once you accept Christ you will never die. But then what would happen? If everybody sustained physical life here on earth forever, eventually there would be no standing room. So then what about the subsequent generations? Do you think anybody could last under those circumstances?

Actually, God is scientific. God does not permit physical life to go on and on. That's the principle of creation. When you become a spirit person, and enter into the spirit world, space is of no significance. But it is not like that here on earth. You are limited by time and space. Everybody will one day die and be buried. But through both my physical children and the members of the Unification movement, I can multiply myself by the millions. Those millions will multiply into billions; and the billions into trillions. That's the way I will live on forever.

The tradition that I am teaching is the relationship between true parents and true children. That is an eternal relationship. This is our tradition. First we need education, and then implementation of the education.

### ***Become better than me***

I want each one of you to do even better than me. Go ahead of me. Don't just duplicate me; become superior to me. My succeeding generations will become superior to me.

Many people think, "Only Father can do this job. We can't do it." That's the wrong attitude! You could do even better than me, because you have so much support from God. The same God supporting me is supporting you. And you have additional support -- my support, True Parents' support and the Unification Church's support. You are in an infinitely better position.

Actually, impure elements in the church can only be destructive. We must preserve our tradition in pure form. Pure products always manifest power. Some people are always getting dark and weaker; instead of trying to take care of them, go out and win 10 capable people.

### ***Fresh Moonies are more powerful***

Don't ever be boastful because you are an old Moonie. The new ones, the fresh ones, are always the more powerful. This why I am asking you to go out and bring in fresh ones. They will be the exemplary Moonies.

Look at a plant: the old leaves just dry up and die out. The weak, early leaves become old leaves and drop off, but after that strong green leaves come out. I knew that many Unification Church members would come and go. But the Unification Church will not disappear, and I will never retreat. The Unification Church will never decline. That is a mandate from God because otherwise there is no hope.

Before you joined the church, most of you were almost human trash. You think that since you have been in the Unification Church 10 years, for example, and surrounded by the customs of the church, you don't really know the outside world now. Therefore you think that those times before the church, 10 years ago, were the "good old days." You may have some nostalgic feelings, some homesickness. Sometimes elder members tell the younger members when they join, "Well, you are very excited now, but just stay here four or five years. You'll settle down like me. I'm a normal Moonie, the modern Moonie. Don't get too involved. Don't get too excited."

That is absolutely wrong! The true model Moonie should be moving forward with increasing excitement, increasing enthusiasm, because you are going up stage by stage, to the family stage, the national stage, and the international and worldwide stage. At each stage you must develop greater vitality and greater vigor. That is the only way you can ultimately succeed. I see that person as the model Moonie. New Moonies must observe which elder Moonies are the model Moonies.

The model Moonie thinks, "Now I am working for sake of this country, but for the sake of the world, I will work harder. For the sake of the universe, I will work even harder." The model Moonie is the person who says, "When I get older in the Unification Church, I will take care of one whole country by myself, one continent. I will take care of the world." That is the model Moonie. As you become older in the Unification Church, you should shine with achievement.

### ***The public life wins respect***

When you eat a meal, you must consider whether you are eating for a public purpose or a private purpose. Are you eating for the sake of others? When you take everything and hoard it in front of you, thinking "Don't touch. This is my meal;" that's a private meal. If it's a public meal your thoughts would be, "Let others enjoy their portion. If there is enough for me, I will take it."

When you live a public way of life. you gather respect and love not only at the meal table, but at every moment of the day. Where you live, people will know there is a person living the public life. Even in some of our church ceremonies, some people dash to get the best seat. They think, "I want to get to the front and disregard everybody. I want to take the best." That's the selfish life. But public life is different. You know this is human nature; I don't even have to explain.

If you want to earn the respect of the country, you have to live for the sake of the country. If you want to sacrifice yourself for the sake of the country, you must go to the worst place in the country to advance it; that's the way you earn the respect of the country. Then automatically, even though you don't want it, people will push you to the center.

If there were a quicker route of salvation for the United States of America, I would certainly take it. If selling the New Yorker Hotel would expedite the restoration of America, I would do it immediately. It would be the easiest thing to do. If the sacrifice of America were necessary for the salvation of the world, that's the route I would take. Because once you save the world, you have already saved the United States, because the United States is a part of the world. That is the public way of thinking.

If you sacrifice your own family for the sake of the higher cause, for the sake of the country and the world, you never actually sacrifice your family, because your family will be respected and loved by the people of the world.

You should not think I am standing still, that I am taking it easy. Not at all. I am still traveling forward at the fastest speed. I always think of living publicly. Ever since I initiated the Unification Church, my eyes, ears, nose, and mouth were used for the public purpose. Even after I die physically it won't make any difference. I will live on. Just by looking at my picture on the wall, people will hear me. History cannot forget me. History will immortalize me and follow my path. I knew that would happen if I perfected the public life. So past, present, future -- there's no difference at all. One principle, one tradition.

You know yourself very well. You know if you are public or private persons. You know what is selfish, what is unselfish. Do you know that? . . . amount of money and make it go a long way for the sake of the country. That's the public way.

America must go under an austere plan of saving money. Why? So that America can save material things for the sake of the world. The American people are heavily taxed, but if they were bearing an incredible burden of taxes in order to save the world, then the entire world would bow down to America. However, the American government is taking a lot of money for itself, and many Americans live luxurious, affluent lives. That is bad! Money can do evil, just as much as money can do a lot of good. In America the dollar is doing more

the work of Satan than the work of God, isn't that true? I do not even keep one dollar for myself. I want to leave my children that legacy, that tradition, that heritage.

### ***Be unselfish parents***

We do not do this for ourselves, but we want to build a tradition and give it to our children, to posterity, to the generations to come, so that our tradition and our way of life will go on and prosper forever.

Children go to school for sake of the parents, in a way. They gain knowledge and come back to present their report cards to their parents. "Father, I did this. Mother, look at this. Here's my report card." Do you know why children do that? Because everyone wants to go to the parents, where love flows from, where the public-minded, unselfish love comes from. That's why the children come back to the parents. By the same token, you must be in the parental position, and let the world come to you for love and report everything to you. You must be the unselfish parents for the sake of the world. That is what our position should be. There are two kinds of love -- evil, self-centered love and good, unselfish, sacrificial love. One type will destroy this country. The other will build the kingdom. So we must inherit unselfish love and build the kingdom here in America.

Within American families, self-centered love must be abolished. The parents should become truly public parents. The more you are trying to live for yourself, the greater the destruction that will come to that family. There will be social destruction, and furthermore, the poison will destroy the nation and the world.

Those formidable powers of Satan, based on a self-centered life, are attacking you, wanting to compete with you, saying, "You keep saying that you live with unselfish love and public-minded love. All right, show it to me. Compete with mine."

You must win the victory. Once you win the victory, even if you don't want it, you will be elevated to the center. You will be moved towards the center. That's the way God is. Out of that teaching, I conclude that this is the way of the dispensation and the providence of God and the self both in the past and present.

You initiated this journey as an individual. Then you become two, husband and wife, working together to achieve the greater goal of creating a family. The family becomes the larger unit and an instrument of God to reach even greater goals in the society, nation, world and universe.

Always think of Moses' exodus. We are in a modern day exodus. Our way of life, our family, our marital lifestyle is that of gypsies; a wilderness life. We cannot stop here. We cannot settle yet. We have not reached Canaan yet. You have to leave your people, your clan, your wife, your children, and move on. On your way to Canaan, you always find a Red Sea, a mountain to cross, a waterless desert. That is why we must live with discipline. We must be trained for that purpose.

The Unification Church way of life is designed to give you exodus training. Your fund raising, your witnessing, your home church work, your mission -- all the varieties of missions there are -- these are designed to give you training for the victorious exodus. Suppose you have advanced this far, but one inch before the goal line you falter. That is still classified as failure. You've got to reach the finish line.

I am still running. Where are you? Are you dragging at me from behind and becoming a burden to me or pulling me from the front? Are you a tail wind or a head wind?

I keep pushing Mother. She just gave birth to our twelfth child, which was the incredible historical burden of her mission. Even so, I asked Mother this morning, "Can you lift yourself up and go with me to Belvedere?" I almost brought her here, but it is not good, medically speaking. At her doctor's recommendation, she still needs a few more days of rest, but still I wanted to push her to come here. If I think that way toward Mother, how do you suppose I think about you? Do you think I want you to take it easy and get plenty of sleep? No, I will never think that way. I will not be that kind of a "good" father. That is because I have the responsibility to train you and discipline you so that you will be worthy to inherit my mission. There is no easy way out.

We are moving to the ultimate victory. Until we reach that ultimate victory and great prosperity, we shall not lower ourselves. Be prepared to cross any oceans, mountains or deserts. Even if the seven satanic tribes of Canaan try to block your entrance into the promised land, be determined to overcome them. If the United States of America becomes an obstacle, we will penetrate it. When the communists block our way, we will break through.

### ***Single-minded warriors***

The speediest bullet is the strongest and most powerful; it can penetrate everything. When it loses speed, it loses its power. Suppose two bullets, one a communist bullet and the other a Moonie bullet, have a head on collision in the air. The communist bullet, even though it may be strong and moving very fast, has a dull point. But the Unification Church bullet is sharper, so when the communist bullet collides with it, it splits into two. That is the kind of bullet we must become.

Will we always have to fight and do battle? We are certainly not warmongers. When battle is inevitable, we will never hesitate to fight. But our goal is to bring the harvest to God. The harvest is when no condition exists for Satan to accuse the heavenly children and when those heavenly children can dwell together with God.

Satan always accuses you if he has any strings attached to you. Satan is an expert at grabbing you where you are weak. But there is no way Satan can grab you when you are a bold, determined, and single-minded heavenly soldier. Are you that kind of soldier of heaven? You may feel you are, but what about your children? If they become weak and half-hearted, then Satan will accuse them, and you as well. You are responsible for your posterity. Thus, most importantly, you must first free yourself from the accusation of

Satan; that is your protection. Furthermore, you must rid yourself of the accusation of Satan from your children and your posterity.

### ***Be more committed than before***

God has no room to be accused by Satan, either in the past, present, or future. You too should be free of Satan's accusation in the past, present, and future. Your best tool for accomplishing this is a public-minded ideology. Be totally armed and solidly equipped with this ideology so that nothing can deter you in the slightest. Can you say right now, "I am committed and determined"? How about the leaders here -- are you committed right now? Were you already committed, or are you beginning today? At least one thing must be certain -- now we are all committed. Of course, we were committed in the past, but now, more than ever, we need to be committed and determined.

If you give yourself totally, in perfect commitment, for the rest of your life, when you go to spirit world you can accuse me if you do not go to the highest realm. I would not be able to lift up my face before you, in such a case. The spirit world is a fair place. I can be placed in a higher position only if I am higher in my commitment and achievement. Spirit world is a totally public place. No one can bribe his way in there. Anyone who is elevated to the higher places has the right to be there, according to his achievement. No one can complain or accuse that person.

There are 230 people gathered in this room, and I want you to understand that there are 230 levels of achievement, 230 levels of spirit world to which you belong. So where will you position yourself? You must make up your own mind. I want to push you into the highest possible place, but in order to do that, I have to push you into suffering. Only in that way can you prove how good you are in the sight of God -- particularly you young people, under the age of 30. There is nothing else I can bequeath to you. While I am alive, you are obeying me. If you cannot obey me in a living relationship, how can you prove yourself worthy in the sight of God? Right now you have the best opportunity, because I am with you.

No matter how difficult it may be, you must be trained and disciplined. Nobody in the Unification Church is a tougher taskmaster than I. No matter what, I know that you listen to me when I say something. Even if you don't want to hear certain things and you don't want to be pushed, when I say something to you, you are ready to obey. But when other leaders say something, you might discount them completely. Which of you among you leaders is going to take my place? You national leaders here do you think you will be able to push the whole world, the way I do? Are you capable?

The best chance is now, during my lifetime. I will give you your man- date and you set the tradition of obedience, and then that tradition will go on. For example, here is one young brother whom I have pushed from one side to the other. He feels, "If Father pushes me around, I have no complaints." But if somebody else does it, he will be furious. In other words, during my lifetime I will push you and order you as much as possible, so you can

set the tradition of obedience. Your children will not have the chance to obey the True Father in the same way -- this is your privilege.

The only reason I am doing this is to give you the inheritance of heaven and earth, and I want that inheritance to be absolutely perfect. This is the only way we can be assured that our children will live in heaven. Do you understand? Actually, I hold back a lot before I give out discipline to you, perhaps as much as 50 percent. But do you want to be given diluted discipline or do you prefer 100 percent discipline? You want to receive 100 percent and I want you to have 100 percent, but I know that you must begin around the 50 percent level and then move up.

### ***Align your destiny with providence***

I never praise or compliment you, and there is a purpose behind that. In God's sight, no one is worthy of compliments. To receive perfection as your inheritance, you must be able to decorate it. I want you to be able to adorn your perfection with flowers and designs. That is the desire of providence, and heaven and earth as well.

We must align our destiny with the providence, with history, with the direction of heaven and earth. That is truly the wisest course.

I want to ask you a very personal question: Are you really trying to live up to the highest possible heavenly standard? All right, then, I will give you the secret. If you want to do that, you must suffer more than I did. Jesus became the Messiah and suffered the way God did. By that standard alone can you inherit perfection.

It really doesn't matter how imperfect you have been. While I am living here on earth, you have an opportunity. Today is your chance. This is your privilege and I want you to realize it; it is the greatest fortune I could ever give you. Those of you who can really make up your minds -- not just give lip service -- and say, "From today forward, I shall be different; I shall strive to suffer more than you do, Father ' raise your hands and say, "Yes, Father!"

Today is the anniversary of my imprisonment by the North Korean communists -- February 22. Not many Unification members know about this. However, this morning I designed my sermon for you. Decades ago in North Korea, this was precisely the attitude and conviction I had when I walked into the communist prison. That is why I have given you this important message today.

I was not wrong to commit myself to that cause. I have been proven right after so many decades, because I have been winning and prospering according to the Principle. On this significant day in my life, all you people have made the same pledge to me that I made when I entered the communist prison. This shall be remembered in history. I will not forget you, and I will not forget this dramatic event today. You shall receive heavenly blessings -- you and the Unification Church. Whoever preserves this principle shall be blessed.

From this point on, the sun of hope is rising for the world and for mankind. Up to now, we have been known as Moonies, but today you have been promoted to "Sunnies' shining

like the sun. Therefore, when you made your pledge this morning you were actually saying, "Father, it doesn't matter whether you are here or not. I have made up my mind to move forward for the rest of my life and nothing in the slightest will shake me."

That is the way the Principle goes -- those who seek to give up their lives for God's sake shall gain them; those who try to humble themselves shall be elevated. Amen!

## **Chapter 34**

### **The Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity**

**May 1, 1981 -- Seoul, Korea**

Dear loving Father, please forgive us that we could not end Your suffering. Mankind is still ignorant of Your great will, and no country on earth has ever been able to follow or understand You. I am very grateful from the bottom of my heart that this small Unification group, which has nothing to display externally, could become the ones who could understand and feel Your holy will, which is to establish Your victory in this universe by ushering in the day of victory for all people.

I know we need to transcend any individual or national position and represent all people of the earth. At the same time, we have to realize that we shoulder Your great providential will to establish the realm of perfection as representatives of the whole earth.

Heavenly Father, today May 1, 1981. Today the Unification Church welcomes the 27th anniversary of its founding on earth. We want to offer all our gratitude for the privilege of welcoming this day as a new anniversary day. When we reflect on our past, a panorama of events passes through our minds.

As we reflect upon what has happened, we want this to become a time of historical import, a time to make a determination for tomorrow's victory as well as a time to celebrate our joy. Also, please guide us so we can become deeply aware of our calling to be truly great and dutiful sons and daughters who can return eternal joy to You. Heavenly Father, please be with us during this time.

We are so grateful that You have been guiding this church with Your deep, precious love and protection. This church was nearly wiped out, but was not destroyed. This church swayed, but did not collapse. This church could never have been born without the chance You gave us. We really ask that You continue to guide our future path.

Father, we thank You for everything. Please bless us with Your joy to represent the future victory. We ask that Your abundant blessing be given at this time.

All members of the Unification Church in the world are celebrating this day and are longing for the True Parents who are here in Korea at this moment. We pray that Your deep love and life energy will be given to each of Your children throughout the world. Bless all of them that they will not feel depressed in the face of tomorrow's battle but will confront the enemy as heavenly soldiers. Let them embody Your love and resurrection of life. And bless them so they can practice Your will in reality.

Let all Your blessing and love be upon Your children.

I pray these things in the name of True Parents. Amen.

Today we welcomed the 27th anniversary of the Unification Church. I could speak so much about the situations of the past years. Needless to say, our organization was founded not to accomplish certain personal goals, but to fulfill! God's will.

Then, what is the whole content of God's will? First, to restore Adam through the process of the history of recreation. Next, to restore Eve on the victorious foundation of Adam. Then, to create a perfect family and perfect children on the foundation of the perfected Adam and Eve. To help children to attain perfection, a people or tribe should be formed.

Numerous saints and sages have worked as representatives of God. What have they accomplished? They gave rise to various religions. Chronologically, there are four types: religion of servant, adopted son, son, and parents. Geographically, religions have moved in different directions: North, South, East and West. Furthermore, the various stages of religion have geographic variations: there are East, West, North, and South types of religions of son, for instance. To accommodate local needs, religions of servant, adopted-son, and son appeared in various regions. Also, the essence of even a religion of servant corresponds to the content of religions of adopted son, son and parents. Whatever the religion may be, its goal is to fulfill God's will, and it follows a path toward the perfection of God's ideal of creation. That is the case even with a religion of servant. The religion of adopted son appears on the foundation of the religion of servant, but in a higher dimension. The same applies to the religions of son and parents.

This development is the center of the providence of salvation, and the main current of history flowing toward the completion of the providence of salvation.

What is an adopted son? He is not in the direct lineage of God, but he can substitute for the true son. A true son can inherit and understand all of God's situations and His heart; an adopted son can become a successor in the case of the parents' absence. The adopted son is higher than a servant and prepares for the true son.

A true-son religion enables people to know their parents clearly. "To know" means not only recognizing the title, but also creating the realm of heartistic unity. Neither the servant period nor the adopted son period could set the standard of heart of the true son.

A qualified son who can represent the parent (God) stands in the parental position for mankind. As a son, he can also represent the whole of mankind before God. The appearance of the true son establishes for the first time God's center on earth. There can be only one center. The delivery of His son is the great moment of fulfillment for God. What a joy to embrace him for the first time! That was God's ideal and longing from the start of the creation.

There have been numerous historical courses. The Jewish religion and then Christianity have been the mainstream of religion. The period through Jacob's family established the moral responsibility of servant. Then the Old Testament period built the foundation for the adopted-son position. Jesus came as the Messiah, the son who can receive God's love. The Bible says that Jesus is the only son of God, meaning that he is the first son to be born centered on God's love. With such a background, Christianity became the central thread of world history, eventually forming the democratic world which is preeminent in the civilization of the 20th century.

Now people say these are the "Last Days." Jesus was to go on to the mission of parents after fulfilling that of messianic son. Christianity promises the bridegroom and bride as the fulfillment of the Last Days. Bridegroom and bride symbolize the religion of parents.

Then what are the Last Days? The end of the period of sons and daughters and the dawn of a new era of parents. What is the desire of sons and daughters? To see the parents whom they had never met and to receive parental love from them. In the Last Days their deepest desire is fulfilled.

The Last Days is not the time for almighty God literally to set the world on fire and to condemn people to destruction, as today's Christians believe. It is the time to fulfill the purpose of children, that is to complete salvation on the earth through the appearance of the True Parents. It is the time to build the society, nation and world centered on God's heart, God's family and heavenly moral virtue. It is the time to be completely educated in all these points by the parents and to manifest the ideal horizontally, so the world can be united around God's love and parents' love. With such an education, society can progress toward that goal. The Last Days is the cosmic turning point.

### ***Uniting world Christianity***

What is the Unification Church? The Unification Church emphasizes True Father and Mother, and True Children. This is the most distinctive aspect of our church. Religions have had one person as a central core of faith. The Unification Church promotes the religion of both father and mother. The significant aspect of religious history today is that parents became the central core of religion for the first time.

What kind of parents are they? They stand in the position of historical ancestors who embody the fundamental parental tradition of God-centered people. These parents represent not only today's generation; they recreate this world by transforming impure children into God's true children. They teach unqualified children and guide them to become true children by engrafting them upon True Parents, persevering in this task until the fallen world completely passes away. This is the teaching of the Unification Church.

What will happen to other religions? The religions of servant, adopted son and son will link up with the religion of parents to create a new world: the unified world of providence.

The Unification religion is the religion of son, in a sense. It has the responsibility to march forward, united with all traditional Christianity, to a new world level, the new realm which human history has longed for. Therefore, the ideology of the Unification Church must unite world Christianity.

So why the term, "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity"? Someone once asked me, "Reverend Moon, why did you use the term 'Unification of World Christianity?' Because of so much persecution, why don't you remove that term?" If I removed that term, who would be opposed to the Unification Church? Christian ministers and elders have said, "The Unification of World Christianity? I don't believe it." It might be acceptable if Reverend Moon were like the pope, who has a foundation in many nations of the world. But when a marginal man such as Reverend Moon is attempting to unite world Christianity, everybody always feels uncomfortable. They cannot even sleep well.

Christianity has been fragmented into hundreds of denominations in the process of its 2,000 years of struggle and development. Then I attempt to unite them! People wonder what means I will use to unite them. Bayonets? Force? Dictatorial methods? All kinds of rumors have spread.

By what means can I unite Christianity throughout the world? By the Holy Spirit. Hence the name Holy Spirit Association. Do you understand? Not by fists or bayonets, but by the Holy Spirit. We cannot unite by human power, but by the power of the Holy Spirit, by the mobilization of the spirit world. It is more difficult to mobilize the spirit world than to mobilize human beings.

You can unite Christianity if you set aside the elements that cause disunity and preserve the core around which all Christians can unite. It sounds simple, doesn't it? Thus, we need to form a new system of truth, namely, a new view of the central truth of the Bible as it developed through the Old and New Testaments and points to the future. Such a view should be God's view and the view of the

spirit world. Christianity has not been able to discover this central core. Before the spirit world can cooperate with man, God must give a hand and offer His cooperation, for God is the king of the spirit world. If the king rejects something, no matter how anxious His soldiers in the spirit world may be to cooperate with it, they may not. Only when God the king becomes excited and approves something may His soldiers, the people in the spirit world, help us out. Therefore, when the Unification Church selects the central points from the Old and New Testaments, they must impress God enough for Him to say, "That is true! The Unification Church is quite good."

In order to move the spirit world, our teaching must not only be endorsed by God but also accord with the desires and hopes of the many saints and religious leaders who lived and worked on earth. It must explain the core of what Gautama Buddha wanted to propose, what Confucius wanted to carry out, what Jesus wanted to preach -- and even the content of things yet unknown. All these people must give their seal of approval.

The problem is how to connect the religions of servant and adopted son to the religion of son, which is their center and vehicle for reaching the religion of parents. Only then can a system endorsed by the heavenly spirit world and God emerge.

So, do you think we can naturally unite Christianity throughout the world? [Yes!] You may still prefer the name "Unification Association," but it remains the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. We are confident that we can make it a reality. Unification Church members are funny, crazy people, but not crazy in a bad way. They are crazy for the attainment of a purpose. What is the purpose? To fulfill the contents of the Old and New Testaments and, with all the spirit men in the spirit world, to build a world centered upon God's purpose. The goal of our movement is to attain the will of God. In the Unification Church, therefore, we are continuing the work of the Holy Spirit. Not that Jesus appears from the spirit world, and teaches, but that the True Parents do the teaching.

True Parents mean not only the Lord, the bridegroom, but the bride-groom and bride together, in a horizontal, reciprocal relationship. The father-son relationship is a vertical realm of heart, different from the horizontal, reciprocal relationship. Therefore, someone in the position of parent, with a substantial, physical body on earth, can teach you through spiritual phenomena, just as Jesus did. Do you understand?

I can channel into the physical world the work of people in the spirit world. Many Unification Church members have gone abroad as missionaries. Some were imprisoned; others were expelled from their countries, but returned again and again, undaunted. They did so because I appeared to them spiritually and directed them. They returned eagerly because I asked them to.

In Japan and the United States, members work more than 18 hours a day, not because they are forced to, but because they see spiritually True Parents working on the forefront, leading them. That is possible in the Unification Church.

Saints and sages of the past had to spend more than 40 years working with the utmost sincerity, in order to connect with the spirit world. In the Unification Church, members can attain that through working just 40 days with utmost sincerity.

### ***Go to the Lord***

Today is the age of the space shuttle. A marathon race is about 26 miles, but if a satellite were to run a marathon race, how long would the course have to be? It would need the whole cosmos. In today's space age, religion should have the capacity to measure the cosmos!

Since nothing special seems to have happened today, Christians are still praying, "Lord, please come." But wouldn't it be more wonderful to go and visit the Lord yourself? How about making something like a space shuttle and flying it to the Lord?

So instead of asking him to come, go to his gate and wait for him. Shine his shoes, get everything ready for him. Prepare his bed when he is ready to sleep, prepare his meal when he is ready to eat. Do everything to make him comfortable. Then he will think you are a useful person and may even place you in charge of his house. Become a better manager than he is, then when he goes out, he will naturally tell you, "Please take care of my house while I am away."

Then when he is ready to eat, do you think he will keep you standing in attendance? No, he will welcome you to his table. At first you sit at the corner of the table saying, "This place is good enough for me; I don't have to eat." When you see your Lord eating delicious food, your mouth will move unconsciously, as if you were eating also.

When he sees your mouth moving, do you think he will be able to eat alone? No, he will invite you to eat with him.

"No, I don't need to," you will reply. But you might taste a bit and discover that the food is very delicious.

When the Lord sees you eating the delicious food with joy, would he feel uncomfortable? No, he will feel better than if he were eating alone.

Then he will tell you, "Eat more," and maybe even pick up some food and offer it to you.

The next time, even before the Lord offers you food, you can ask him,

"May I eat this?"

"Yes, Yes," he will reply.

Then you can even eat up everything before he starts!

This is not just an idea. You could really do this kind of thing.

A man feels lonely if he lives all alone. Therefore, God created woman. So it is not surprising that women like men. What aspect of men do they like? Their handsome features, their rough skin and beard. Women's faces are smooth and beardless. Women blink their eyes. It's not good if men blink their eyes all the time, but women who do often have a deep heart.

Who was Jesus? He was the bridegroom prepared to love his bride. And his intended bride was ready to love him. Ministers of the established churches will be surprised to hear this, but I am talking in accordance with the principle of heaven and earth.

Jesus came as the Lord, and everywhere people pray to him with respect. But if we listen carefully, we often hear men praying to possess the world, and women praying for good husbands. Men pray like thieves: "God, make me the president of this country; God, make me the president of this world; God, give me Your position." Women without courage to pray like that ask God to give them a beloved husband. Which of these prayers interests Jesus most? Men pray to fulfill their own

purposes, but women pray for a bridegroom to serve with the greatest devotion. The answer is obvious.

Men should pray, "Lord, after I make You the president of heaven and earth, please let me become the president of the world. After You have become the president of the world, please let me become the president of one nation. As Jesus' younger brother, I will serve him. I will respect and serve Jesus as my great teacher, esteeming him above everyone else." If you pray that way, then Jesus will respond to you.

The principle of love

The name of our movement is the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. Therefore, by what means shall we unite? By the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the love which can harmonize the spirit world and the physical world. The Holy Spirit could open the eyes of the blind and make the deaf hear, but that is not important. These days, Christianity seems to think that since nothing is impossible for the omniscient and omnipotent God, the best thing for God to do is to make the lame walk. But this is wrong. The Holy Spirit is love. To unite by means of the Holy Spirit means to unite by the Holy Spirit of love.

The Bible says that we must worship God in spirit and in truth. But what is the truth? It is not the Pythagorean theorem or the Newtonian principle. It is the truth of love. What is the greatest aspect of the principle of love? It is the love between parent and child. What God wants is not money or power or knowledge. He wants love. Why? Because He wants to rejoice, having an object of love. We were created to be an object of love, giving God joy. Therefore, our value, even though we are a created being, is equal to the value of God when our relationship is centered upon love. Christian theologians would object that creatures can never be equal to their creator. But why else did God create all things?

The Holy Spirit, which we see in the name The Holy Spirit Association, produces harmony centering upon the love between parent and child. If we establish harmony on this earth, no matter how small its base may be, it can spread to the entire cosmos. When a broadcasting station sends electromagnetic waves to the cosmos, it doesn't matter how small they may be; they are still heading for the cosmos. In the same way, regardless of how small the realm of harmonious love may be, it can connect to the mighty cosmos. As the base of harmonizing love spreads, it becomes infinite, and nothing will escape its touch. Everything in the world will resound to its frequency of love. Therefore, God, who is the center of the cosmos, cannot help tingling with its vibration.

When we are in harmony God will say, "I love you." Then what do you think He would do? He would kiss you. Does He know how to kiss? His kiss is not like a worldly smack. Does God have hands? If He does, they must be more wonderful than hands filled with gold or diamonds. If you love someone, don't you want to touch him or her? When you make contact, harmony and unity are established. When two people rotate, the cosmos also revolves, heaven and earth and all things above and below become one. Everything becomes part of that oneness; the head can become a leg and the leg a head; the stomach can become a back and the back a stomach. God would find such a harmony interesting, wouldn't He?

Men and women laugh in different ways. Laughter has a rhythm of its own that can become singing. When you sing, you move your body, so singing leads to dancing. Embracing His beloved sons and daughters, God would laugh and sing and dance. Those who love God love laughing, singing and dancing.

If God is a real father and you cut His hair, will He sue you? Since you are His beloved child, even though He might say, "You rascal! How could you cut your father's hair?" He will not get angry at you but rather embrace you. I am saying these things to you because you need to develop this heartfelt relationship with God. I want you to have an unforgettable image of it in your mind.

Twenty-seven years ago, an unknown man tacked up a sign which read, "The Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity." My name has become big recently, but at that time it was unknown. When I started I did not realize how big the name Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity really was. But once I displayed that sign, I had to fulfill it as a matter of principle. Can I quit because of the opposition? Wherever I have gone, that sign was disliked, and even kicked and destroyed. So many things happened.

### ***Jesus' miserable life***

At the beginning of today's speech, I said that God's will was the perfection of Adam, Eve, children and clan. The perfect clan should be established in one nation. Jesus sought to build his clan on the foundation of Judaism and the Jewish people, on the foundation of the clans of Joseph and Zechariah, including John the Baptist. God had prepared these two clans to be related and to be Jesus' extended family. If the high priest and other Jewish leaders had united, centered upon these clans, Jesus would not have had to do anything more. Witnessing would have been unnecessary. People could have lived with Jesus in their daily life, and heaven would have automatically cooperated. The Jewish people would have been united and could have won the Roman Empire over peacefully. Everything could have been restored, and Jesus could have become the king of kings. This was God's original plan for the Messiah.

However, Jesus lost the country, which was supposed to have protected him. He lost the clans of Joseph and Zechariah and, as a result, Judaism as well. Then he had to leave his home and seek new followers. Those who joined him were uneducated people, beggars and lowly fishermen. I saw the place where Peter lived. It was a miserable cave. Could such people comprehend God's will and think of all humanity? No. Eventually, all they could do was desert their teacher, Jesus. He was betrayed and killed.

Jesus' life was such a miserable one. Christians affirm that Jesus gave his life for the sake of our sin. But if God is such a capable God, why couldn't He find another way to save man? Ask that question to theologians and Christian ministers and leaders. Since God is omniscient and omnipotent, why couldn't He find another way of salvation than to let His son's blood be shed? They cannot answer that question.

By reading our Principle, all these questions are solved. When you read it your eyes change, your ears change, your mind and body change. All problems are solved. But because they do not want to be defeated by Reverend Moon, religious leaders oppose me. If I were a Westerner, there would be no problem. But I am an Oriental and they think they are better.

In the case of Jesus as well, his parents and brothers and sister did not work with him. The Bible tells how his younger brothers ridiculed him. Therefore, Jesus had no foundation of nation, religion, clan, brothers and parents. He had no choice but to start his three years of public ministry.

I am telling stories that traditional Christians never heard before. That is why they call me a heretic. But whether I am a heretic or not cannot be determined until the end of my course -- whether I end up in heaven or hell. Our church's ladder reaches up to heaven. Christians are trying to visit the home of God's servant, but we are seeking the home of God's son. In this sense, we may be heretical.

After the unification of Christianity, how can God's will be perfected? Abel-like people have to take responsibility to complete God's will. There are many people in the spirit world who were saints and sages, but they could not meet the standard of ideal character which God desires. They are still classed as servants or adopted children of God. Even Jesus, who is in the realm of sonship, did not complete the entire mission. The mission of sonship includes governing your nation, church, clan and family and offering yourself to God on the basis of a nation. Since Jesus did not do all this, he must come again.

We have gone beyond the national level to the world level. Therefore, when the Lord returns, his responsibility includes dedicating the entire world to God. Christianity has the responsibility to unify the democratic world and prepare it for the Second Coming, connecting the entire world to God and dedicating it to Him. But Christianity has not yet fulfilled its critical responsibility as a mediator. When it does, its mission will be consummated. If Christianity is united, communism will no longer be much of a problem. Therefore, I cannot abandon those Christians who oppose me. Rather, I must stand firmly for Christian unity. This is the purpose of our movement. The Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity means an association, not a church. You must understand this clearly. Without the unity of Christianity, it is impossible to create one world.

### ***Patriot, saint and son***

So far, I have taught Unification Church members to be exemplary patriots. This is the first article of education in the Unification Church. The next article is to become a true believer, more faithful than the best Buddhist, Christian, Confucianist, Jew, Hindu or Muslim.

However, to become such a patriot and believer is not sufficient. You must become qualified as a servant of God. When somebody calls for a servant, you should be the first to respond. Therefore, when you begin your life of faith in the Unification Church, you do so from the servant's position. The Unification Church teaches, "Take responsibility for the most difficult problem in your nation. Take responsibility for the most difficult problem of the Unification Church, and take responsibility for the most difficult problem of the world." If you don't go this way willingly, you remain as a servant and cannot reach the realm of adopted sonship.

You have to be willing to digest all the problems of the world today with joy. Then you can rise from the position of servant to adopted son. When you stand in the position of adopted son, you should be better than any adopted son in the world, taking responsibility for the problems other adopted sons cannot solve. Such a path will lead you to the realm of true son. As a true son of direct lineage, if you do what no other person can or will do, you will become the central successor among all the other sons. Everything is systematic.

As you become older, can you urge all patriots to follow your example? Can you ask all believers in other religions to follow your example? Can you say it with confidence? Even if the Unification Church members are unable to go this difficult course, I must do it.

Recently I have heard Koreans say Reverend Moon is a patriot. I received tremendous persecution in the past, but I persevered. Do you know why? To go the path of a servant. If you become the best servant, you can become an adopted son. When Christian ministers say they are God's servants in their prayers, do they really want to become a servant? They call God Heavenly Father, but if you are a servant, you cannot call someone Heavenly Father. Only a son may do so.

You must know that you become a servant among servants in order to inherit the position of adopted son. After you go through the path of obedience, you should love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first commandment. Therefore, you

must devote not only your mind but all your love. As a member of the Unification Church, there is nothing more fearful than not to be able to do God's work. It has been my path ever since I came to know God's will to take responsibility for restoration. Therefore, members of the Unification Church should not avoid hard work and sacrifice. A person who does not like this path cannot fulfill it.

Those who suffer most for their nation become patriots. One patriot may be killed by a single bullet and another may be tortured, with his eyes gouged out and ears and nose cut off. Which of the two is at the head of the line of patriots?

Become a servant of servants first. That will qualify you to be an adopted son. If you become the best adopted son, when there is no other son, you will be chosen as the son. Through this process you will be restored to God's side and receive God as your parent. Unless you go this path you cannot restore the position of God's ideal son or daughter. This has been my course ever since I was born. This is the path every human being must go. I have pioneered this path and established the tradition for all humanity to follow.

Some of you may think this path is suitable for me but not for you. Does what I say apply to you? You may think that I can suffer for you and you can just follow. That cannot be so. Prominent scholars will join the Unification Church. They may complain, "I am such an eminent scholar, but the members of the Unification Church do not understand who I am. They talk badly about me." That person must understand that everyone must follow the path of restoration. If a president joins the Unification Church, even he cannot claim he is special. He must go the course of restoration. When a scholar visits me, I will not see him as a scholar until he has gone the path of hardship and sacrifice. Those who do not want to suffer cannot open their mouths.

The adopted sons who suffer the most can inherit the responsibility as true sons. If you get blessed without going through hardship, your Blessing is not a true one. In a way, I am the most foolish person on earth, taking a foolish path. Whether people speak bad of me or not, I go my own way.

### ***The challenge of Korea***

I am working now to revive our nation. North and South Korea are confronting each other. Satan is trying to agitate the masses and bring about a confrontation. Who is taking responsibility for that? The established churches are finding all possible faults with me, accusing me of trying to turn the nation upside down. They can say whatever they want. I am working for the survival of the nation. No matter how much evil they may say about me, what I want is for this to become a nation which can survive and receive God's love. Such a nation can shelter our families. Our church needs such a nation in order to live in peace, centering upon God's will.

I could cross the Pacific Ocean and live quietly in the United States. Why do I come back to Korea and try to cope with its problems? So the nation can survive. I have to do things no one else has done in all 4,300 years of Korea's history. How can we find a way to subjugate communism without confronting it? It would be so wonderful if we could do it. God's greatest headaches are the problem of communism, which -- denies His existence, the decline of religion, and the immorality of the young people. I have declared that I will take responsibility for these. As the son of God, I will solve communism, God's most difficult problem. By my own hands I will revive the Christian churches and raise up fallen youth.

Without going the path of hardship as an adopted son, you cannot inherit the position of true son. You must understand this clearly. The role of True Parents includes governing heaven and earth. True Parents have to prepare the worldwide foundation on the basis of the church and tribal foundations.

True Parents have to prepare the environment on a higher dimension. If they do not do it, their descendants will perish.

Therefore, in order for the Unification Church to survive, it needs a national environment. The nation needs the proper world environment in order to survive, and the world needs the spiritual environment. Therefore, I am influencing even the spirit world. I have the cooperation of the spirit world, so no one on earth can compete with me. Those who believe in this are in the Holy Spirit Association. If people do not believe in the Unification Church, they cannot understand these things.

The Korean Unification Church members have to go the way; of hardships, at the risk of their lives. When many of the 36 Couples go to America and speak to the brothers and sisters there, what are you going to talk about? If the members there are working hard, you have to be able to tell them stories about doing much harder work. In order for Korea to lead the world, you must work harder than anyone else. Representing the nation, you have to live for the sake of all people, the whole world and God. This formula applies anywhere. It must always be centered on love. It is not a mere method. The one in the position of elder brother has to sacrifice himself, as a representative of the parents, and care for his younger brothers and sisters centering upon the love of True Parents. This is the tradition and order of love. Do you understand what I am saying?

Parents should represent the children and suffer more than the children, centering on love for the children. Then even if the family is in a tearful situation, they will not feel like leaving each other. Even though they weep, they continue on the path. When you have children, you should educate them in this tradition.

As a true son, you must become the one who suffers more than anyone else. For what? For the whole, for the family, for the nation, for the church. If you sacrifice yourself for everything, you can become the center, inheriting the tradition of the True Parents.

So far, I have done everything for the nation and the world. Is there anyone who has not spoken ill of me? But because I have been following the heavenly principle, I have been able to advance steadily. God has been using religion to untangle problems throughout history. He has to develop one mainstream of thought so one primary ideology could emerge.

### ***Always a servant***

In celebrating today's anniversary, you must remember your position. In the position of a servant I walked the path of a servant of servants. Even as an adopted son and later a real son, I worked as a servant of servants. As a True Parent, I have suffered more than any parent in the world. But heaven gathered all kinds of love -- the love of servant, adopted son, real son, and True Parents, and connected them with the love of heaven. Heavenly love has always existed and tries to connect all the other loves. Love is what makes the spirit world and the human world rejoice. Therefore, the Holy Spirit Association was founded centered upon love.

To see things with the mind of love means to deny yourself and go the way of sacrifice. You must become a perfect minus in front of a perfect plus. When a perfect minus appears in front of a perfect plus, another plus is attracted to it. For example, if I am a perfect minus before a nation, the ultimate plus, God, will be attracted. This is the principle of heaven. Therefore, the tradition of patriots is one of blood, sweat and tears. The tradition of filial piety is one of blood, sweat and tears. The tradition of saints is one of blood, sweat and tears.

There is one axis in history: the axis that links the hearts of the heavenly child, the saint, the patriot, and the filial child. This axis is the standard of sacrifice for the whole, set on all levels -- filial child,

patriot, saint and heavenly child. No matter how ambitious you are, you cannot reach the goal unless you go through these stages.

I am a man of strong desire. My eyes are small, like the aperture of a camera stopped down to focus on the distant scene. People with small eyes have more wisdom and understanding of the truth. People with large eyes tend to be fragile and unstable. (But don't feel bad if your eyes are big!)

I pray to God: "If Your will includes the worlds of servant, adopted son, real son, and parent, then I will go the path to obtain these worlds. Along that path I will take more responsibility and be more sacrificial. I am here because I chose this way. If You let me be a servant, no one will be more sacrificial than I; I will work 24 hours a day."

Without eating, without sleeping, without playing, we must go such a path. We are different from ministers and elders in the established churches. Our prayer, witnessing and study is different. The Unification Church began from the position of a beggar. A beggar has no clothes, a beggar sleeps under a bridge. There is no job which I have not done: laborer, fisherman, farmer, dock worker. I know more about the world than anyone else. I can do God's will anywhere. If the predestined people do not follow, I will continue the path by educating laborers and farmers. I have the capacity to do all that. That is why I can be the teacher of the Unification Church. If an ordinary person were to try it, he would leave the church within less than a week. You cannot become the teachers of the Unification Church without knowing anything about this suffering path.

The teacher must guide all the work and take care of organizational details. That is why the people of the Unification Church like me. Men, women, grandfathers, grandmothers and children all like me. The day before yesterday, an 80 year old grandmother came up and grasped my hand, rejoicing like a child. Why do people like me that way? Not because I have money, but because I have love. Love, however, does not refer to secular love. How wonderful love is! If you could express it in art work, what a masterpiece it would be!

Now you can definitely understand the tradition. The servants who go through the most miserable hardships become the primary force and center of the mainstream. The adopted son whose course was the most difficult becomes the center of the tradition. The son who works hardest for the parents becomes the center of the tradition of love. The most sacrificial and uncomplaining parents can set the main tradition and go to the Kingdom of Heaven first.

When did you cry in the position of a servant? Representing the most miserable laborers and farmers, you should tremble in sympathy for their suffering lives.

Have you suffered as an adopted son? Handicapped people often lead miserable lives without anyone to whom they can appeal when they are humiliated. They may feel like failures before their parents or nation. Standing in front of them, you should be able to cry.

Next is the position of son or daughter. Today families in the democratic world are being destroyed; their young people are becoming immoral. If you can cry with them, you can become the greatest among the children.

For whom do you do this? For God and mankind, for your nation, clan and family. All are connected. Finally, you do this for yourselves. But Western people do all things first for themselves. If that is the way you want to live, go ahead. But you will be lonely and die in desperation.

Nations have opposed me. North Korea, Japan, the United States, the whole world has opposed me. Everyone opposed the Unification Church and Reverend Moon. Judaism, established Christianity and

especially communism have opposed me. Most people would want revenge. But I do not. I have no thought of revenge. I am willing to forget everything, as soon as possible. I am willing to forget even though I have been kicked and maligned. When people oppose me I take the attitude that they do so because I could not carry out what I wanted to do and give them more love. Because I could not achieve what I had pledged -- to love people before God -- and because I could not prepare the right position for them, they persecute me so loudly. But I love them even though I am persecuted. When I do this the world changes.

### ***Inspire God***

What kind of promise can inspire God? "Oh my God, I have power and talent and great scholarship. I became a great doctor and I can wield authority. I am a capable president; through my orders I can control everything." Such words cannot inspire God. You can boast of none of those things.

If you say, "I have raised many sons and daughters," you still cannot be proud of yourself or inspire God. Only one promise can inspire God: "I have decided to be a sacrifice in order to establish the tradition of Your love. I have been trying to live for others. All I want to do is continue living this way." Then God will reply, "Oh, I understand you well. You have accomplished the principles of loyalty, filial piety and fidelity." Otherwise, you have no true pride before God, even though you work hard witnessing and fund raising, trying to do something for the world.

What can God be proud of before us? He can say, "I have done every- thing for you. While you were sleeping and playing, I have been protecting you, even though you had fallen." We can see everything God has done, like a videotape, if only we press the switch. It was not with His power or knowledge that God has done things, but because of His wonderful, loving heart.

Today Western people are eager to visit Korea because I came from there. Western men want Korean wives, and Western women want Korean husbands. Is there anything handsome about Korean men? Their noses are so low! There are many handsome men in America. In the blue eyes of Western people, you can see everything as clearly as if you were looking into water. They are very fascinating.

I have done something nobody else could do. Women want to be married to a man like me, and men want a wife like True Mother. At the matching of 843 couples, all the woman said they wanted to be matched with a Korean. The men likewise.

The world which I envision is something that should have been established at the time of the liberation of Korea. Christianity should have united at that time. What would have happened if other Christians had associated with the Unification Church? Instead of a prison course, the way of new truth would have opened.

If established Christianity had opened its gates, it could have been won over within seven years. Look at what is happening recently. Ministers and church elders are so surprised when they hear three days of lectures on the Principle. If the church leaders like it, won't the established churches eventually change?

### ***Results of rejection***

If such things had happened at the liberation of Korea, the country would not have been divided into North and South. If established Christianity and the Unification Church had united on a worldwide level centering upon the United States, communist domination would have disappeared.

I know communism very well. I have greater ability to digest communism than anybody else. Established Christianity is largely responsible for the situation today. If officials at key Christian universities had not opposed the Unification Church, restoration could have been quickly accomplished. However, they attacked us in every possible way.

I knew well what kind of person Kim Il Sung was. It was so clear that he would appear as the head of Satan's side and do all the things he has done. I knew that a coalition of resentment, centering on the sovereignty of Satan, would rise up and penetrate into half to two-thirds of the world. It was like losing again the foundation of Jesus' 33 years of life.

Because of the opposition in South Korea, I went to the satanic realm of North Korea. There I labored and suffered in prison. After paying that indemnity, I was released from prison. At the risk of my life, I visited several church members in Pyongyang before escaping to the South in 1951. Then I wrote the original manuscript of the Principle and worked to rebuild the Unification movement.

Reunification of North and South Korea is possible only on the basis of our worldwide activity. They cannot unite as they are. Korea cannot survive and unite without the support of a worldwide foundation. This is the view of the Principle.

The division between North and South Korea was not accidental but was related to the heavenly principle and the failure of Korea and the United States to fulfill their responsibilities. Because of that failure, the United States, England and the rest of the democratic world began to decay. The blessings they had gained during World War II were claimed by the communist world. If we belong to heaven, we can stand on the worldwide level. If not, tragedies such as the division of Korea result.

Regions which Germany had occupied became satellites of the Soviet Union. Even China fell under the Soviet sphere. A military administration was set up in Korea centering upon General Hodge. However the historical tragedy which I mentioned prolonged the suffering and resulted in a 40 year wilderness course.

Then what nation can solve this problem? Neither the United States or any other democratic nation can. No church can deal with it. The United States and established Christianity have failed their responsibilities. Therefore True Parents have to resolve the destiny of the world. The dispensation of True Parents is to restore the entire history of Christianity centering on me, based in Korea.

The Unification Church has received world-level opposition. As a result, the world will be driven into circumstances more painful than those which the Unification Church has been experiencing for the past 10 years. According to the principle of indemnity, such painful situations will occur in families, societies and nations. Members of the Unification Church have endured much pain in their minds as they have sought to do God's will when the satanic world hit the heavenly side with growing power and authority. The Unification Church was persecuted because of God's will. There is a principle that the side which attacks another can be hit by heaven. Members of the Unification Church have been bearing countless difficulties in order to return the world to heaven. Now the Unification Church will rise, while the world will experience collapses of the family, society and nation.

But I cannot allow the world to collapse. That is why I made a base in Korea and am reaching out to the world. Christianity stands in the position of elder brother in Western society. I cannot allow my elder brother to collapse. God's love is to reawaken him. You must understand that this is why I have been struggling so hard.

Korean Christians are very aware of my activities. If they hear the name Reverend Moon even in their sleep, they cry out! I have a worldwide foundation of programs and activities. Recently I created a

strong educational organization to make coalitions with other groups and hold rallies on the state, city and village levels. In spite of my efforts to save them, I am still the object of enmity by the established churches and the nation. I have spent more money in ecumenical work than for the sake of the Unification Church. From a worldly point of view, I should consider them an unforgivable enemy, but I forgive them, because they kept the position of son of God before I came and because I need their foundation as a bridge for going further. If I can succeed, God will consider them successful as

### ***Social decline***

Because God thinks that way, I do too. This is the law of Cain and Abel. Established churches have gradually become sites of dancing and horizontal love. Many have allowed things in which Satan can rejoice, such as disco dancing. It is common for ministers and church leaders to tell lies about the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. I foresaw all these things before I started, and they have happened. Because the United States opposed the Unification Church, rapid damage has come to the world.

People opposing the Unification Church have kept us from finding a solid position, driving us into miserable circumstances and causing sorrow to heaven. And we were the ones who had been worrying about the world! As the situations of the individuals, families and nations who opposed us become more miserable, we will rise.

This follows the principle of restoration by indemnity. I became famous because of the Communist Party, which attacked me. From a Principle viewpoint, they emerged to promote my success, which would have been difficult without them. Lacking the Christian foundation, how could I have become famous without the communists? Christianity, communism and the free world all tried to attack and kill me, but I remain uninjured and unshaken. That is why I could become famous.

Now in the United States, scholars are lining up to study my thought. They take the initiative to study it, even if I tell them not to. They talk about me, even if I ask them not to.

People in the democratic world do not understand the true meaning of society or the nation. They have no idea about parents, history, and tradition. Their concept of men and women is animal like. They see the relationship between men and women in carnal terms. If a man and a woman like each other, they have a relationship. People see nothing wrong in it. That is why the democratic world will decline.

To teach the ideal of the nation, we have to teach the ideal of the state. To do that we have to teach the ideal of the society, and before that the ideal of the family. To teach the ideal of the family we have to form the ethical order of the family, by following the proper path and principle of love. My heavenly ideology is based on this principle of love.

### ***Onlookers or participants***

Then what is the Unification Church and its mission? Did you come as participants, or mere onlookers? If we are an active organization, why are you standing still? The Unification Church is a group of soldiers who take action. Because now is the time when we need young people, I am rallying them around religion and forming a worldwide movement. Who but Reverent Moon can be their hero at this time of history? Those of you who consider yourselves young people raise your hands. Who considers yourself old? There are no old people here! You cannot say you are old, since I also consider myself young. You know, I have become pretty old. I am 62 years old, but if I read backwards, my age is 26! So I consider myself only 26.

In order to make a new start in Korea, the course I was pursuing with Christian universities such as Yon Se and Ewha women's universities was the path God wished. However, they not only treated me coldly but tried to destroy all my foundation, as the Korean saying goes: "The man not only rejected the beggar, but also destroyed the beggar's cup." They even tried to catch me and kill me.

These are the last days of the human race, and the last days of the human race are the last days of the nation. People today are valueless human beings, having no religion or nation. People have said that the worst enemy of society is the man called Moon or Sun, the one who is standing and speaking here! Among those of you who came tens of years ago, some of you must have said bad things about me. This is the time for repentance. Who of you once thought that either I or the Unification Church was no good? Raise your hands honestly. If so, I raise my hand, too! If you didn't raise your hand, you were not truthful. If I can say bad things about what I myself did, I think it is natural for people to say bad things about me.

There is a difference between the strategies of God and Satan. Satan's strategy is to rob by force, while heaven's strategy is to succeed by being beaten. By being beaten, we get victory. Treacherous leaders perish after they gain power, but loyal leaders become powerful after they endure the path of hardship. You must understand the difference between God's strategy and Satan's strategy. God's strategy claims compensation for damages after being beaten; that is how God restores things. But Satan's world tries to claim the right of ownership by force.

Because I learned God's strategy I trained myself to go that way. I wanted to become a true patriot, better than any patriots in a righteous country, race or church. I tried to be better than the most faithful Christian.

This is the kind of attitude God wants to see in His champion. In the satanic world, however, people persecute me by calling me the worst kind of person. But those who do so have to pay for it, making compensation for the damage they cause. You have to know this is God's strategy. Check and see if people who oppose the Unification Church and me prosper in the long run. Investigate it through three or four generations of descendants. Certainly you will find some disabled, insane or criminal people. That is what happens when people betray and oppose God.

### ***Sacrifice your family***

As a person who stands in the position of ancestor to a Unification family, you must fulfill the responsibility of parents to your sons and daughters. Your responsibility includes pioneering and preparing this path before you can concentrate on loving and living with your wife and children. This is the not the same as the worldly way. Your wife will surely oppose you and your children will complain. But the time will come when the nation and world will officially recognize that your actions as parent were not wrong. Then you will be able to stand in the position of parents, inheriting the tradition of the true family under heaven. This has been the motto of my family.

My sons and daughters say that their parents think only of the Unification Church members, especially the 36 Couples. I eat breakfast with the 36 Couples, even chasing my own sons and daughters away. The children naturally wonder, "Why do our parents do this? Even when our parents meet us some place, they don't really seem to care for us."

It is undeniable that I have loved our church members more than anybody else, neglecting even my wife and children. This is something that heaven knows.

If we live this way, following this course in spite of our children's opposition and neglecting our family, eventually the nation and the world will come to understand. Our wives and children will understand as well. This is the kind of path you have to follow.

The family foundation must rest on the basis of the nation and church. But the foundations of the nation and church were lost. Without them it was impossible to lay the foundation for the family. Because of the opposition of the Korean government and established churches, my family was shattered. Because I knew that my family was destined to be broken, I did not do anything to help them. I did not care for my family for seven or eight years. I heard all kinds of rumors, but I didn't even write any letters to tell them what kind of activity I was involved in or how I was living.

Why? Because I knew the heavenly principle, that if you cannot fulfill your responsibility, your sons and daughters will have to assume the burden. Until I fulfilled that responsibility, I dedicated myself to the public mission by staying away from my family until a condition was set for heaven to support them.

The same principle can be applied to the members of the Unification Church today. That is why, when I sent members of the church to do pioneer witnessing in the 60s, I let them go without extra clothes and carrying only their train fare. Is there any other teacher like this? There is no other path for the Unification Church than this miserable one. When the democratic world and Asia decline, when the nation and the church decline, we are affected by that downward spiral. Under such circumstances, the only way to survive is to go to the bottom and make a new start, erecting the pillars of tradition one more time.

### ***Exemplary patriots***

Korea and the established churches tried their best to crush me, but they could not. I set the foundation anew and moved up from the individual to the family, the tribe, the society, and the nation. Now I am creating the chance to establish the world level foundation.

In Korea no one can speak about patriots without including our church members. They cannot mention a patriotic organization without including the Unification Church. Our church members set the true standard of filial piety, showing more sincere loyalty to me than others have for their parents. Their devotion was so great that even their own parents were jealous. People who were formerly strangers have united to form a new family. Families with no blood connection form a new clan and prefer their new relatives to their old ones. And when different races assemble to create God's new nation, they can love their country and bring more renewal than a single race. This is the path which the Unification Church is supposed to go. Do you understand?

Therefore, we have to love the Japanese and American people. The Japanese are our traditional enemies, from the common sense point of view. The Japanese and the Germans were recent enemies of America, but I took Japanese and Germans to America and told them, "Love America more than you love your own country." I was the one who did such a thing. That is why I got opposition. I inspired people from formerly enemy countries to love each other. That is why we are opposed. But if we plan this way, we can restore the situation by being persecuted.

From this point of view, the seven-year course that started this very day in 1954 was the age for all the established churches and social organizations, and even the nation, to attack one person: Reverend Moon. Even the babies attacked me! You know this very well. What kind of period was this seven-year course? I had to devote myself completely to the heavenly will as a very lonely individual. Everybody was trying to capture me and kill me. Wherever I traveled in the nation, north or south, I walked this kind of path. When I held the Holy Wedding in 1960, I was being investigated by the

court. Just as Jesus' 12 disciples deserted him, with Judas even betraying him, members leaving the Unification Church conspired with our opponents and appealed to the court to stop our church. I conducted the Blessing during this time of judicial investigation. Nobody knows that fact.

The government at that time had enlisted the aid of five top administration officials in order to eradicate the Unification Church. They tried to have me arrested and killed. And what happened to those families?

In the course of history, who would ever have imagined that a man called Mr. Moon -- who at one time was presumed dead and his body thrown out with the trash -- would accomplish what he has! Who enabled me to do so? God and the principle of restoration by indemnity. Using this very strategy of gaining the victory by being beaten, I have accomplished God's will.

You shouldn't feel downcast and humiliated when you are beaten for standing on the side of goodness. Know that the time of blessing will come, from all possible directions, because of the indemnity you paid. That is my standard of life. In the past, when I was in prison I was confronted with all possible persecution and opposition. But the more I was beaten the stronger I became. When the nation and the church oppose you, be stronger than they. I fought against the satanic world, and being this kind of person, I overcame it.

### ***Mother's course***

Then the time came for Mother's seven-year course. Every woman has to go this path. Women of the early Unification Church wanted to love me at the risk of their lives, coming to see me even late at night. So people gossiped about us. These women didn't even know why they made such visits to a man who they knew remained centered on God.

And when the Holy Wedding came, every woman, even the elderly widows, wanted to be able to stand in the position of Mother. Some women even claimed to be the True Mother, their eyes shining with confidence. An old lady of 70 years said she would become my wife and bear 10 children! Of course, she didn't know why she was saying such things. Women with daughters prayed to God with deep sincerity and said they received revelations that their daughters would become the True Mother. They were excited, as if it were a matter of life and death.

But the woman who would become True Mother appeared unexpectedly. She was a person whom few of them had met. Probably no more than a third of the members even knew her. Yet this unforeseen person was chosen.

I was 40 and about to marry a 17 year old girl. If this were not God's will, who could be crazier than I? Just imagine, from that time on Mother's great responsibility was to carry all the burdens of the Unification Church. Many wonderful college educated women were lining up and listing their qualifications, but I shook off all of them and chose an innocent, 17 year old girl as Mother. What a surprise it was! Old ladies and mothers exclaimed and rolled their eyes.

I had no choice but to live separately from her for three years. The task of restoration proceeds from outside to inside. Many female members of the church, even old ladies, were jealous of Mother in the beginning, but when they saw her situation they thought, "Isn't Father being too severe? He should live with Mother since he married her, but what is he doing?" Because I put Mother away from me, living a separated life, old ladies sympathized with Mother and restored the things they had complained about. Women of all ages sided with her. Then Mother could take her position. This is an example of Mother's course of restoration by indemnity.

During this period, how anguished Mother's heart was! One woman received a revelation from the spirit world telling her she should be the Mother. She wanted me to give up Mother and take her instead. There were many other incidents. Spirit world taught strange things, and Mother had to undergo all sorts of trials like this. Mother is very patient, and all this was merely training for her to become much stronger and greater. It continued for seven years. But the most admirable point about Mother was that she believed in me more than in her own father, grandfather or elder brother. She believed in me 100 percent. Thus she overcame all the obstacles and established a firm position.

Since a man got the victory, a woman also had to gain the victory. Mother confronted the society and nation which opposed her and over-came everything during that seven-year period. During this period I set up Parents' Day, Children's Day, World Day and God's Day. What does God's Day mean in reference to Mother's course? Mother's mission was to have unshakable confidence in her husband, regardless of the circumstance and in spite of all opposition. Whatever happened, even if she should die, she had to keep an unchangeable attitude toward her husband. That must be her commitment even if the nation opposes her. Eve fell into a position

Heaven could not trust, and because Eve had Adam fall, Adam could not believe 100 percent in a woman. Therefore, Mother had to maintain a firm position in which heaven, God and her husband could have 100 percent confidence.

For the first time in history, when God and man could believe in a woman 100 percent, God's Day could be established. Do you understand? That was Jan. 1, 1968. In order to restore the standard of restoration by indemnity for both men and women, Eve had to go through the completion stage from the top of the growth stage. Upon entering the eighth year, after completing her seven-year course, Mother and I could obtain God's seal as a true, perfected family, and we could take our position on the earth. Then we could set forth to the world, leading our family and nation. Upon this foundation I could come to the United States with Mother.

There has been so much persecution in the United States against the Unification Church, centered upon my own family. Not only my wife and I but also my sons and daughters have been mistreated. My children are ridiculed as Moonies in school. They are also quite famous in school. Teachers watch them with special concern. They have a lot of talent in art and music. They study well.

Centering on the United States government and people, established Christianity and Judaism and all religions have opposed us. The communists oppose us, the U.S. Congress and even the White House have taken a stand against us. We had to overcome a seven-year course of tribulation. The fiercest battle was in 1976, but even though the world opposed us, we did not go backward. We overcame, and the Day of Heavenly Victory was set on Oct. 4, 1976. There will not be any worse antagonism than at that time.

By being beaten, we can regain everything. If a man is beaten as an individual he may recover things even on the national level. A woman cannot claim the victory that a man gets; she has to gain one herself. Children also have their own course of indemnity to overcome. That is the course of restoration through indemnity. Because the True Parents have won the victory on all three stages, our family, who represents the Abel core of the democratic world, received the total attack of the Cain side. We have survived this situation and can now raise the flag of the new world of Unification.

In order to broaden that position to the people of the entire world, I sent out missionaries to 75 nations in 1975. Throughout the world the Unification Church, centering upon the blessed families, has been battered but never defeated. We have now finished the 21-year course.

### ***Taking the offensive***

The period since 1977 has been the era of taking the offensive. That means we have to go to the people and teach them the truth. We can do this on campuses and in society. From now on, conditions will change. After 1977 I have done many things to change our position from the defensive to the offensive.

Originally, if President Nixon had listened to me, our situation would have been different. But because he did not, his position was passed down to Ford, Carter and Reagan. Four generations had to be restored because God's will, which was supposed to start centering upon the president of the United States, went the wrong way. Our members supported Reagan, who is the fourth president from Nixon, and gave great spiritual help for his election. If I had not prayed for him, giving my support from behind the scenes, he might have already died. In any normal circumstance, he would not have survived the assassination attempt.

No American president had previously recovered from a gunshot wound. A 70 year old president received a bullet wound seven centimeters deep on his 70th day in office. Everything revolved around the number seven. We can see it as formation, growth and completion. Everything fits into the principle -- 40th president, 444 days until the liberation of the American hostages in Iran -- all are principled numbers. People have not realized it, but God has planned everything with certain mathematical conditions, and we are going over this historical turning point based on such conditions. Now the American president has to listen to me.

The president of Korea cannot guarantee Korean survival by himself. Japan and the United States have to be mobilized. I am teaching and paving the way for South and North to unite. I do this. not for my own sake. I do it to revive the world. I am responsible to give life to the world and educate the present world.

Koreans should not think of themselves as a miserable race. Korea has been invaded from the outside and has fought wars with Japan, the Soviet Union and Red China. Korea underwent all these trials as training. Its history has been a history of training.

Why did the Korean people have to pass through such a course? Because they have the capacity to assimilate the different traditions of four major civilizations and four different ideologies. Do you understand? South Korea should be able to digest North Korea, Japan, the United States, and even the communist world. We should not regard anyone as our enemies. Therefore, your accomplishments as members of the Unification Church have to exceed those of anybody in the Communist Party, the Soviet Union or the United States. You have to pass through such training.

Why do we have to become a people able to absorb four major civilizations: North, South, East and West? In order for the East to go to the center, it must spiral around to the South, West, North and, finally, the center. Nothing can reach the center by centrifugal force, only by centripetal force. Do you understand?

The Unification Church is the nucleus for all four directions and can control them by taking the subject position.

I find the figure 8 really interesting. When we write it we use both clockwise and counter clockwise movements. The number 8 is the number of a new beginning, but it is always drawn in opposite directions. That is how the course of restoration, the way of Principle, the way of recreation, operates. A paradoxical course is in the end the most reasonable. You have to understand this very well.

Therefore, my life does not follow the normal, reasonable way. It began as a figure 8 on an individual level. My wife went through the course of a figure 8, and my sons and daughters followed the same course on the family level.

The next level is the clan level. The 777 Couple Blessing of 1970 began to form the clan era, including various races and centering upon all the families of world history. There are many clans throughout the satanic world, but we created one new clan. When it exceeds the 60 million people in Korea, Korea will begin to follow us. From a principled view, if the Unification Church gains 70 million people, helping them centering upon Korea, don't you think Korea will follow us?

Therefore, we will advance to the worldwide level in many aspects, and the Unification Church will take the ruling seat. In the past 27 years, I have become quite famous. My fame has gone beyond the imagination of most Koreans. They had thought that the man called Moon would float off somewhere and disappear. But what happened?

Centered on Mother, the Unification Church restored through indemnity the individual and family. Then the work of restoring the world through indemnity was taken up by sons and daughters. Now the Unification Church has spread throughout 127 nations, in the position of a clan. In some nations there are so many members that people have become worried.

### ***Be proud of ourselves***

The time has come when you can be truly proud of yourselves. In your place, I have been passing through the indemnity course by receiving persecution, opening the tribal level for you. Furthermore, the foundation has been laid for the world to welcome you.

If you do your best, with utmost sincerity in this course of tradition, I will give you my endorsement. With that endorsement, you can go anywhere you want. In the United States and in church centers throughout the world, there are rooms set aside for me and my wife. In England and Germany, every center has these special rooms. If I give you my endorsement and tell them to let you sleep in my room and eat the food prepared for me, they will do it. That is true around the world. Don't you want to be treated like that?

The other day I took 12 Japanese members who had achieved certain things to the United States and let them travel around. The American members looked at them and understood them. They came to me and reported that the Japanese members are working above the secular standards. From the Principle point of view it is natural for the spirit world to assist those who transcend their limits rather than those who stay within them.

Members of the Unification Church who work by their own power cannot witness very well. Do you know why? How many woman are there who invest everything they have in their children, excel in serving their husbands, or do their best to prepare for the coming of the Lord? When the Unification Church members witness, they have to surpass the standards of the secular world. If you do so, heaven will always help you.

You may think God is not very united with you. But when you say "Heavenly Father," He doesn't answer from far away but from right behind you. That is the kind of Heavenly Father you have. God has been protecting you; heaven embraces you and gives you sweet sleep when you fall down in fatigue; when you raise your hand, light comes from it. These surprising facts are the truth.

Today, on our 27th anniversary, what should we do? I have accomplished everything and set the standard of tradition for all peoples of the world. You should do the same. Not only you, but your sons

and daughters and thousands of generations of descendants must inherit this Unification Church tradition. Therefore, even if the leaders walk out, even if I go away, as long as our descendants remain, the Unification Church will never perish. The tradition of the Unification Church will shine throughout thousands and thousands of years.

Suppose two factions appear in the Unification Church. You don't have to give yourself a headache trying to choose the right one. The criterion is who works the hardest for God's will. The person who sacrifices himself for the sake of God's will and tries to give himself for the sake of the world more than others is the one to follow. The most valuable person is the one who works for the sake of the unity of the world, even at the sacrifice of his parents, spouse and children. He is the one who is closest to the tradition of heart. Thus, denominationalism will never arise in the Unification Church.

If the president of the church is self-centered, he is not a true person. But if he labors day and night for the sake of God and for the nation and world, laying a foundation of blood, sweat and tears, heaven will work through him. Any such members of the Unification movement, either man or woman, who can love others with tears is the example for everyone. Heaven will create a new history of goodness through that kind of person.

In this way, the heavenly tradition has already been established in the Unification Church. My successor among my sons and daughters will be determined in the same way: the one who sacrifices himself the most for the sake of God's will, the one who best exemplifies the principle of loyalty and filial piety. Everything is measured against that tradition -- in the family or in the church. We cannot appoint a person to a position simply because he has money or power. He must be able to give deep inspiration and heartistic love to other people, even though he might not be a university professor or hold a doctoral degree. He may be humble and unknown, but when he prays, his words come from his inmost self and create explosions in people's hearts. Wherever such a person is found, church activities will center upon him or her. The Unification movement will follow that person's standard.

From this point of view, you can clearly understand whether you are on the correct course of tradition. You know what kind of standard you have, don't you? You don't need explanations. Your mind is trying to follow the heavenly side, but your body inclines to the satanic side. Taking the easy way leads to internal struggle between your mind and body. To end that conflict, you must reach God's love by going the way of hardship. Once you set out with strong determination, all the battles between mind and body will eventually come to an end.

### ***Love and beauty***

You women may be thinking, "I am the right age for getting married. I am good looking and I have a very attractive body. Any man will like me. Therefore, my husband will have to be a very handsome man." Instead, you should think this way: "I was born such a beautiful person because of the grace of God's love, which is focused on solving all the resentment of humanity. So I don't mind even if my husband is ugly or a cripple. Please let me be able to live my whole life in loyalty to him. It would be so wonderful if I could become that kind of woman." If you think like that, heaven will come to you.

I have striven for this kind of attitude. I have confidence that I am a better than average Korean man, but I did not expect to marry such a beautiful person as Mother. I looked for a woman who could be loyal to God's will and who could sacrifice herself for the sake of her husband. There are many careless women, so I asked God not to give me a wife who would destroy the Unification family. I knew my marriage should be for the sake of the Unification Church, the nation, and the world. I found many promising women, but none who could sacrifice themselves with a pure heart and bring the seed of love horizontally to their husband. Such women leave God sooner or later. Finally I found beautiful Mother and educated her.

These days Mother has a higher reputation than I do. They say she has not only Oriental beauty but Western beauty. Therefore, I have learned many things from her I received a great deal of Oriental training, but not so much Western training. For example, when I eat, I stuff a lot of food into my mouth at once. I don't eat gracefully, I just think of enjoying the food. But Mother wipes my mouth each time I make a mess.

People say we are a very loving couple. Mother never stands on my right side, always on my left. Wherever we go, she walks beside me holding my hand. She takes my hand first. We do that in America, but it is not so natural to hold hands in Korea. The culture is different here.

Have you ever walked hand in hand with your wife? Probably you were shy. It is not evil to hold your wife's hand. If you want to walk hand in hand with her, go ahead! If you want to carry her on your back, you can do that too! It is the same East or West. If you ask God, "Father, do You want to see Your beloved sons and daughters kissing their wife or husband?" of course He will say yes. So even if you kiss until heaven and earth tremble with excitement, it is not a sin. You can do that with your beloved wife or husband, of course, but not with another man or woman.

### ***The true standard***

Even if I die, the tradition of the Unification movement will never be destroyed. A different tradition cannot appear in the movement; even if it did, it would soon rejoin the mainstream. It is easy to tell who is true and who is false. Someone who speaks only for himself is false; if he speaks for others and the world, he is true. A son of filial piety will serve the whole family. A loyal man will serve the whole nation. A saint will serve all people. Someday the angels and all people in heaven and earth should be able to welcome you as a son or daughter of God, based on your standard of love.

Which Unification Church member is going the more traditional way, the one who is out witnessing at a local center or the one resting at headquarters? Members who are working hard don't put on makeup and they may smell sweaty. If you compare this person to someone perfumed and well dressed, who is more beautiful to God? It is the sweating person, ridiculed by hostile people, but still faithfully loving the nation. It is the person who says he will go on, even when told to rest.

When I speak at night, almost everybody dozes off. By midnight eight out of 10 people drop off, but I continue to talk. Even though I become sleepy, I fight the urge to stop, and I continue to speak -- all for your benefit. So who is serving the most, you or I? It appears that I am serving you even more than you are serving yourselves. When you see me overcoming the desire to sleep, preaching on and on, you probably think I am a man of steel. I am not like that naturally; only because I know the Principle did I become like a man of steel.

Because I know the Principle and pursue the fallen world with all the yearning love of God, I don't like to take the winding path of restoration. I want to build a straight highway, like a bridge of love. Therefore, people from all over the world will seek me out. Even if I build my house on the summit of a mountain, they will search me out, perhaps even with the aid of professional mountaineers. Someone who thinks this way must be crazy! However, by going the way of hardships, we can unite the world into one.

Very few relatives of church members have welcomed the idea of a mass wedding. Before the Blessing of the 36 Couples, for example, I sent invitations to our members' parents inviting them to their child's wedding ceremony. But I told them they needed white ceremonial garments in order to attend. People thought this was a reckless violation of the time honored tradition of parents arranging their children's marriages and wedding ceremonies. Therefore, everyone spoke ill of me. However,

many of those same parents have recently come to me and thanked me for having given them such a wonderful son-in-law or daughter-in-law.

Soon we will no longer need to witness for the Unification Church. Then what will we do? Perhaps I will buy an airplane and take all the members who worked so hard for rides! From now on, we will not witness in the old style but through videotapes. Already there are videotape sets for seven-day and 21-day workshops, and a 40-day Victory Over Communism (VOC) lecture series. All you have to do is push the button. You can educate people while you relax. Then if I go on national television and speak for 40 days, the world will completely change. If that happens, why should we need to witness?

People under Satan's dominion act based on their personal desires. We, on the other hand, live for the family, clan, race, nation, world and God; We love God first, and then the world, nation, race, clan and family, in that order. Then we can understand the power and value of love and be able to love ourselves. In this world, people have usually thought first about themselves. This tendency will be reversed.

### ***Your course is shorter***

Your hard course will be shortened from now on. If it took me 60 years to fulfill something, you will be able to do it in six months. So elderly people need not be discouraged. The Unification Church is not for young people alone. Older people can work together with young members.

I encourage you to work hard in the Unification Church so you can work on a worldwide level in the future. Therefore, toil hard and go the suffering way. Go out to society at large. Do good deeds and be sacrificial. You must understand that this is ultimately the only reasonable way to go.

Today is May 1. From today, the second 21-year course will start. So how about becoming more responsible? Until now, you lived depending upon me. What will you do if I die? I want to have some free time now. Will you allow me to have it? I have fulfilled all my responsibility over the past seven years, and the time is coming for me to visit members around the world as I wish.

Up until the present, because I was guiding the restoration providence, it seemed that the whole history of restoration would fail if I died. However, I have fulfilled everything that was required. I have no regrets. Even if I am killed, I can die joyfully. Now you also have to learn how to conduct the restoration providence. That is why I am urging you to improve yourselves in every way.

Who cleans the glass doors of this headquarters building? Do you assign somebody to the task, or do people clean them on their own? You should never use somebody who does not want to do the job. If there is nobody to clean them, do it yourself. The person who lovingly, joyfully, humbly cleans the glass doors will be the victor in the spirit world. Don't force someone to clean the building's doors. I would rather not work with people who don't want to work. I work only with those who are willing to give their lives for the world because they understand the situation of history.

In the years leading up to this 27th anniversary, my own course of restoration through indemnity was fulfilled, as well as those of Mother and True Children. Upon this foundation I built the family and clan indemnity foundation of the Unification movement. Therefore, in order to inherit this, you have to accomplish your five percent responsibility. So if you understand this and determine to work vigorously for the next seven years, the world will be transformed.

We must have a successful rally in Moscow. I want to do this before I die. The Soviet leaders, however, are quick to mock me when they hear this. But who believed me 21 years ago when I described what our church would be like after my 21-year course? I said there would be cars and

houses everywhere in the Unification Church and that members would have spread throughout the world. Before beginning my 21-year course, I promised this to the Unification Church members in Korea. Many must have thought I was crazy, but I was not.

Now you have gotten a glimpse of what will soon happen. Some key Americans will declare that only Reverend Moon can bring a significant change in the world. Patriotic people will rush to help us with their economic, academic and social foundations. But because I am so busy, I cannot yet handle all the work that would entail. Therefore, if there are people in the Unification Church who can do my job, I will let them.

We must fly like an eagle, becoming God's right and left wings, God's right and left eyes, God's hands and legs.

Well, do you want to follow this way? Then work hard at the risk of your life. The Japanese and American church members are working 18 hours a day. But when I come to Korea, you seem to be taking it easy in this spring season! Please work hard and tirelessly for the next seven years and establish a good tradition in Korea. I deeply hope you will build with dignity and tradition, as the subject and fatherland of faith, and as an example to Japan, America and the whole world. Thank you very much. Let us pray.

Beloved Heavenly Father,

We know very well how painful our history has been for You throughout the course of restoration. You persisted through thousands of years to build foundations of indemnity on the individual, family, clan, and racial levels, always acting on the principle that servant-of-servant humility brings success. Finally, You were able to lay the national foundation in Israel, making possible the appearance of the Messiah on the worldwide stage. Yet when he finally came, he was not accepted and thus could not complete the restoration.

The result was that during the next 2,000 years, You had to witness a history of terrible suffering. America was born on the foundation of the heartbreaking tradition of martyrdom and constant bloodshed, and has become the center of the free world in the Last Days of the worldwide level of the dispensation. You expected America to assume the task of protecting the victorious worldwide godly foundation and offering it to You by fulfilling Your will, especially during and after World War II. But again this did not take place.

I also know how anguished and heartbroken You are when You see people turning away from accomplishing their responsibility. Today, America cannot lose her link with South Korea. The destined age for the spiritual leaders and the providential nations to unite has come. Reverend Moon, who was born in Korea and who represents the internal subjective position, and the Reagan Administration, which represents the external position, must be so united.

Even: at this moment, worldwide communism with all its tremendous power is making maneuvers designed to overthrow the Reagan Administration. The time has come for the administration to be strong and bold. The time has also come for Korea to be strong and bold. Also, now is the time when even the Korean people must be strong and bold.

Heavenly Father, we have learned that Your will is for the free world to help the communist world, both spiritually and physically, upon the complete foundation of unity between Korean Christianity and the Unification Church, and between American Christianity and the Unification Church. I sincerely ask You to provide Unification members, who are striving to accomplish Your will, with a strong and bold

determination, so that they can strengthen the free world and give it the boldness to take the subject position over the communist world both spiritually and physically.

This is the road toward immortality, and Unification members have learned that this is the road to Your presence. Therefore, I humbly pray that You can bless them to be lights in the world of darkness, shining like the brightest suns, brave and strong like victorious generals. Even though the arrow of persecution may be strong, Heavenly Father, please let them be stronger still, so they can never be penetrated and brought to surrender. I humbly pray and wish to give them the Blessing, so that they can become the ones who can stand in the position to inherit the foundation of True Parents' family and represent the heavenly family -- by practicing and mastering the principle of servant, adopted son, and son. Also, I pray that they can be protected on all sides by the shield of love, and learn to walk the path of tradition as they march toward the Kingdom of Heaven and become the representatives of heavenly love.

I thank You that we can have such a time and day as today. Now we have understood what the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity is and the role religions played in the development of tradition. The path I have trodden until now has been to gather the different races from all over the world. They are not even from the same lineages. The success of this has been due to Your love. When this foundation develops from the national to the world level, then naturally we can embrace the world and absorb all cultures and historical traditions. We know such a day is at hand. I pray for the Unification members to be strong and bold so they can march forward, overcoming all things through love.

I respectfully pray and wish for them to have great confidence that victory is waiting for them, and that failure can be banished. I thank You for allowing me to return to Korea for this anniversary day.

I sincerely pray for unity among the leaders and all the members. I pray that they all will defend heavenly tradition to the death and live in accordance with this way of love. A unity of all races, with its blazing fire of love, is being offered to You, Father. With this love and unity, centering on the nation of South Korea, we can gain the power to master North Korea. I pray that members will make effort day and night without rest to achieve this goal.

I hope that one day soon we can establish far and wide this tradition of unity and love, and that all mankind can soon measure up to it. We know this is Your desire and will. I pray we can be determined to be the ever victorious heavenly army. By making such a determination, I respectfully pray and desire for members to become better sons and daughters, who can come closer to You each day. Centering on love, they can become the group that prepares the way for the restored nation and family.

I pray all these things in the name of the True Parents. Amen.

## **Chapter 35**

### **Total Indemnity**

#### **April 3, 1983 -- Korea**

Today, let me speak about total indemnity. Total indemnity involves religion, history, and the human race in general. It includes not only the physical world, but the spiritual world as well.

God's original ideal for the world was simple. He envisioned a world which would be completed when Adam, Eve, God and the angelic world became totally one. The ideal came from God and was supposed to be passed on to our first ancestors as the True Parents of all humanity. Starting from

that original point, the ideal should have extended horizontally to the entire world, to form a totally united universe.

At the center of everything is God's love. God needs love, man needs love, and the angelic world also needs love. If the world had been centered upon God's love from the beginning, it would have been not only an ideal beginning, but the direction and the final results would have also been ideal. God, man and the angelic world would have formed one perfect world, freely communicating with each other centering upon God's love.

Accordingly, man becomes perfect not by being rich or by acquiring secular power or knowledge, but by love. This love is not secularized love as in the fallen world, but original love. Everything is completed and perfected by this love.

We have five senses that enable us to see, hear, smell, feel, and taste. These would have been used centering upon perfect love, and eyes, ears, nose, hands, and mouth, each with their senses, would have all become perfected by centering on love. To experience things with our five senses centering on love is an exquisite state. It is like a state of intoxication, only with love. You feel intoxicated by the environment, experiencing a reciprocal relationship with every other being. One never feels alone. Every being reaches to eternity, and each being expresses itself in a unique way. The intense beauty of the ideal world would be found through the reciprocal relationships developed among all the things of creation.

The power of true love can be extended to infinity, and at the same time can be condensed into one infinitesimal speck. This is heavenly love. Therefore if we look through the eyes of love, everything has value. In a small thing the value is condensed, and in a big thing it is enlarged. God wanted to create such an ideal world of love. He wanted to be in the position of ruling everything by making love the center of all things. Love is the realm through which God can control the universe beyond time and space. Accordingly, to be in control of the universe, God Himself absolutely needs this love. By thinking in this way, we can see that no being has value without true love.

God's ideal was lost by the fall. How did mankind fall? Through love. The beginning point of love is not the eye or the mouth, but is the sexual parts of man and woman. The connecting point of love is the place where all the sensations come together. The real standard of love was lost at this point, so the male and female relationship was the cause of all the problems of the entire universe.

Because of this, everything has to be restored or recreated. How can we do this? One major result of the fall is that we came under two lords, or two subjects. If we had only one subject and one lord, it would not be such a problem to restore everything and return to the original state. If God were still the only subject, every creature could become harmonized with Him and there would be nothing to oppose such harmony. But there is another subject, whose direction is totally the opposite of God's. That being took the subjective position by rejecting God. As a result of the fall, the opposing power of love that pulls man away from God became much stronger than the power that leads man back to his original source. Thus, the power of love came to be divided into opposing camps of internal and external. Satan is connected to the world of love centering upon external power and God is connected to love centering on internal power. So two subjects came to stand over one object, man. Satan became the external subject, while God became the internal subject.

Each of them is in a plus position -- internal or external -- therefore, they repel each other. This is manifested in the struggle between the physical needs and the conscience of fallen man. They are supposed to be united but they are repelling each other. Man is pulled in two different directions as if he had two repellent bodies. Thus man became a being of lost direction. Sometimes he drifts to the external side and sometimes to the internal side. Since man fluctuates, everything around him is

affected. Adam and Eve became such a man and woman. The children they bore also inherited such a nature. If there are 10 people, they have 10 different directions; they are scattered. The world became a world of confusion as the consequence of the fall.

### ***Why Satan must be denied***

Where is the world of God's original ideal? We have to search for the original ideal and rearrange the fallen world. This is not easy. To do this, Adam has to deny himself and Eve has to deny herself. If there are 10 members in a family, and all 10 of them try to make unity by asserting themselves, unity is impossible. If there are 10 members in a family, all 10 must deny themselves. Before anything else, God must ask for self-denial in the fallen human world. Before He seeks for the ideal, He must seek the denial, the denial of the fall. Man has no foundation to assert himself. This is God's viewpoint.

Then what is the order of such denial? It is from the external to the internal. In the fallen realm, there is the external world of nation, race, and clan, as well as family. Also there is the couple -- man and woman together. We must deny ourselves beginning from the outside, from the external side. The point we finally arrive at is the denial of our own body and our thinking. We cannot but go this far. We live in the fallen world, so to seek God's will, to seek the point of self affirmation on earth, we must deny the fallen world completely. The new starting point begins only after setting this standard. This is logical.

Why do we need the indemnity taught by the Unification movement? We must know the reason clearly. None of you in the Unification movement understands clearly the meaning of individual indemnity, family indemnity, clan, race, and national indemnity. Why do we have to do such a thing? This is a serious matter.

For God to make a new start, He must clean up everything. There must be no other subject being, no Satan. God must be the absolute and only subject. God cannot set His new starting point unless Satan's position is completely removed. For man to deny himself is not that much of a problem. The problem is to deny Satan who controls man. Accordingly, after man completely denies himself, God has to set the standard that completely denies Satan. Otherwise there still remain two subjects. Even if man denies himself, still Satan remains. If an alien subject, who is centered upon the false love, remains in the presence of God and the universe, there are two standards, and the starting step for perfection cannot be made. How can we deny Satan? This is an absolutely necessary condition in order to make a new starting point on the earth for God and humanity. We must see the denial of the false god. God Himself can stand as the subject only when He stands on the foundation of that denial and is able to take His position as the subject of love. Do you understand?

### ***Condition of absolute denial***

Then how is this condition made? The fall began with one individual, Adam. Since the individual is the center of the whole, in order to restore this fallen world, we must move forward step by step; it cannot be done all at once. The problem of sin has expanded through eight stages: from the individual, family, clan, race (or people), nation, world, cosmos, and God. Man, who is seeking for the ideal world, cannot find his way back to God, the original subject of love, unless he solves these problems. If one stage is reached, man has control below that level, but he cannot reach the ideal world beyond that level or completely unite with the absolute God. If an individual reaches a certain stage, people in spirit world who have reached a corresponding level of growth can assist him, and he can communicate with them; however, it is difficult for him to communicate with the original God. How can the environment be enlarged so that an individual can communicate with God? This point is the worry of God Himself, as well as the concern of man who is in the fallen sphere. These two worries are

made more difficult by fallen man himself. Fallen man is dominated by the archangel; it is absolutely impossible to change this by the process of affirmation but only through denial.

Then, what is restoration through indemnity? One who desires to reach the absolute unique subject must fulfill the condition of absolute denial in relation to everything in one's environment. For this, absolute denial is required. Then at what place does restoration through indemnity become fulfilled? Even one iota of a condition for self affirmation cannot remain. It must be completely in the realm of the denial. The condition of indemnity is paid by fulfilling the condition of absolute denial. When this standard is fulfilled in all eight stages, from the individual, family, clan and so on, one can reach the ideal world at the consummation of human history. You must necessarily go through the process at each of the eight stages. Otherwise one cannot reach the ideal where he can communicate with God.

God is working out the reality of the fallen world, trying to create one model first, rather than working to restore the whole. To reproduce on a large scale, we create the pattern first. On the individual level, we create the pattern for the individual. Then we should create the family pattern for the family level. From clan, society, to nation, we should think in the same way. According to the principle of creation, we must go through the three stages of formation, growth and perfection through human history in order to create the pattern for the individual. We must create the environment and set the reciprocal standard of love. The center of this reciprocal realm is man, and the center of man is love. Man must first indemnify himself on the individual level. To set the standard for the individual is not easy.

Throughout history up until now, why have women been excluded from full participation in the religious world? So far, the dispensation of the God of love was carried out centered upon men, and women were largely excluded. Why was this so? To create the model of the perfect individual, the pattern of the creation was this: first Adam was created, and afterwards, Eve. This was the pattern. But the model for perfection is not complete by man alone. The angelic world participated with God in the creation of the original pattern of man, centered upon heart. Therefore, God is the center of heart and the center of the spiritual world. Man can stand in the position of model only when he can digest the entire sphere of all things and be absorbed together with God.

The attitude of the life of a truly religious person is one in which he is completely absorbed; It is perfect obedience; therefore he cannot assert his will or his opinion above God's. He must follow God's will absolutely. It is the sphere of perfect self denial, but also he must be completely absorbed by God. If man claims his subjectivity he takes a plus position before God, which repels God. This leaves a person within the sphere of the subject which is opposed to God, who is Satan. That means he becomes Satan's possession. Accordingly, he can never reach the ideal sphere of God.

At this point in the religious world, absolute obedience is necessary. European members must understand this point clearly. Why is obedience needed? To follow your own thinking leads you to stand in the position of having a second subject. The second subject is Satan, so you become Satan's object. If you insist on your own thinking as your foundation, it sets the condition for Satan to dominate you. God and Satan are in opposing camps, struggling for dominion over the fallen human world. The original purpose of human existence as well as the original purpose of the archangel is for the sake of the perfection of the ideal. Satan knows this as well

### ***The sphere of denial through persecution***

God originally created us with the ideal of perfection as His goal. Satan knows this and he does not deny it. To establish the complete condition that will enable us to reach the ideal of perfection is not easy. It requires the state of absolute self denial. We cannot do this if we insist on our own viewpoint.

Looking at the world, where can we find an attitude of self denial? It is difficult to find it in the Western mentality, which is characterized by the love of freedom. The ultimate result of such freedom is that only the self remains. Husbands and wives live together, but both claim their own ways. In that case, there are two claims for freedom. If there are four people together, they have four individual demands. If there are 10 people, there are the claims of 10 people for their freedom. In the end, they go their own way and become isolated and scattered. There can be no unity within families, or nations. Although a person strives to enjoy his original nature through freedom, in reality he loses everything and falls to the depths of despair. Finding that he cannot satisfy his individual desires and ideals, he gives up on himself. This is the reality for many in the free world today! particularly in America. But despair is not a part of God's will. In such a world, there is no standard of perfection which God desires.

For this reason, Oriental thinking, rather than Western, holds a possibility for God. Within Oriental thinking, there is the principle of absolute attendance to the parents, and at the same time the idea of following one's elder brothers and sisters. When this idea of attendance is expanded, it can reach to the clan leader, the society leader, or the representative of the nation. Thus we can gain the foundation based on the perfect system of attendance. Otherwise, we can never have a family, clan, society, nation, or world that God desires. You must understand this clearly.

Then how can God create this kind of environment? He cannot do it by saying, "You religious people must achieve self denial all by yourselves!" No, we can't do it that way. The standard of self denial must be created within reciprocal relationships. If you are pushed into the position of being denied by somebody else, it is the same as self denial. Since we cannot create the sphere of denial by ourselves,

God Himself creates it. Therefore, a religious person will be opposed by everybody. This is the deeper meaning of persecution. When one believes in God and in religion, often those who are closest to him, such as his parents or loved ones, will oppose him. In such a case, Satan, as the second subject, is attacking the first subject God. When someone strikes a righteous person unjustly, it sets a condition that must be repaid. Because of this repayment, the development of religion is secured. Do you understand why persecution occurs?

Within the sphere of religion, God must enlarge the practice of self denial from the individual level to the family, clan, society, nation, and world. People cannot do this by themselves. In restoration through indemnity, a person tends to think that the standard of individual self denial is enough, but that is not true. The standard of individual indemnity must be directed to the indemnity on the world level; that foundation of self denial must be created. Man himself has not realized this, but God and Satan know it.

People do not know the full standard of denial; therefore, Satan, who does understand it, attacks man to prevent any denial of the individual that is directed to the world level. Religions developed in the course of history until now precisely because they practiced self denial and received persecution. This was so, although nobody knew the reason why. Now I am telling you the reason. Since one cannot practice self denial alone, God allows Satan himself to deny man instead. And if man gains victory in the realm of denial, then he can claim victory over Satan. He can belong to the true subject, namely God. As the result of persecution, or absolute self denial in front of God, man can enter the sphere of reciprocal relationship with God. Thus God can intervene for him. This is why religion has developed the most through persecution.

For this reason, a person cannot find religious perfection by leaving this world and going up into the mountains to meditate. One can achieve perfection only by standing in the midst of the world and

taking on all the persecution from Satan. But in order to achieve oneness with God, a person must overcome Satan's attacks. He cannot be crushed in the persecution.

Accordingly, God has tried to work through many people throughout history yet had to give them up in the end. God may have used some people in His dispensation for decades or even centuries. Yet in the end, they had to stand in the sphere of persecution. If someone gains individual victory over persecution, the individual victory can remain. Yet if he cannot go over the sphere of family persecution, he will be crushed. In that case, God must find another with whom to proceed in His dispensation. If someone is crushed, there is nothing God can do for him. God is forced to find someone else; this was the miserable course of the history of religion until now.

By understanding these general things, you can also understand how to proceed with restoration through indemnity. You cannot deny yourself all alone. Accordingly, you must endure the condition of denial through persecution. Therefore, persecution is absolutely necessary in God's religious dispensation and there is no way to go back to God without passing through that course of persecution. There is no exception to this rule. The world religions, such as Christianity, Buddhism, and Confucianism have all passed through this kind of course. That is why they are standing on the level of world development. The religions themselves have not understood this reason until now. They could not explain why religious people had to go through suffering or persecution, but now you have understood this point.

It is the logical conclusion that the total perfection of which I am speaking is not achieved without total indemnity. To guide everything into the perfection realm, we must go through the process of total indemnity. This is absolutely necessary in the history of religion. Therefore, it is wrong to think that one will have an easy life by following religion.

### ***Who is the Messiah?***

Within Christianity, there is the belief in the Second Coming of the Messiah. Who is the Messiah? The Messiah is the one whom God loves most. Which position is most loved by God? There are many people who are standing in front of God as representatives, for example, of the nation, the society, or some other organization. What kind of a person is the Messiah? The Messiah is the first person who has the same mind of love and the same direction of love as God. The Messiah is the first born son of God. Jesus was God's only son, His only child. To be an only child means to receive the parent's total love, from the beginning to the end. God is the absolute subject and the Messiah stands in God's sphere. Their relationship is the relationship of parent and child. He is the one who is born as God's first son and receives the fullness of God's love given to the individual, family, clan, society, nation, and the world. He is qualified to receive the love transcending all these spheres. This is the Messiah. He is God's beloved child.

But what can he do all by himself? The beloved must find his spouse. And where can he find her? He can't get her from the heavens. Since man has been lost as a result of the fall on the earth, he must be recreated on the earth. What does religion do? Heaven is in the plus position and the earth is in the minus position. People desire the Messiah, who knows heaven. This human world deeply desires its proper subject of love and this yearning is the Messianic yearning. The Messiah must be welcomed on the world level, beyond the individual, clan and even national levels. The entire world will be able to be united with a man of God's love, as the absolute subject. There will be no reason to oppose him; there can be only absolute attendance. Self-centeredness cannot exist anymore. To create the environment so that one exists only for the sake of the Lord was the mission of the Old Testament age and of the New Testament age. The mission of both of these ages was also to create an Eve, a spouse, for the Messiah. Once Eve absolutely follows the Messiah and that sphere of obedience is expanded, opposition to the Messiah will diminish. In this environment, the entire world

will be automatically connected to the subject of love at one point. To create such an environment on the world level was the mission of the Old Testament age and of the New Testament age. Accordingly, present day Christianity and Judaism must completely follow the Messiah.

Christians and believers of Judaism who have been keeping their faith are supposed to offer everything when the Messiah comes. Their faith teaches perfect obedience to the Messiah. Yet what is the reality of today's Christians? What about Judaism today? Instead of the spirit which God desires, they are completely opposed -- 180 degrees. If a religion desires only its own success on the earth, and disregards the returning Messiah and blocks the victorious completion of God's dispensation, it will be a total failure. Any religion with this kind of attitude will be completely broken in the Last Days, as if hit by God's heavenly hammer.

In this period of the Last Days, Christians in the world are looking for the Second Coming, but if we analyze the motivation of their desire, it is usually, "I want to be saved:" There is no concern for God's victory on the world level. They may say, "I want to go to the Heavenly Kingdom, and I want my family and my country to be saved." The furthest limit is usually the country. But they must go beyond the country to the end of the world; they must enlarge their concern to the spiritual world. Yet most cannot go beyond their own self and this is a success for Satan. As long as this standard remains, God's world cannot be born.

### ***What is the Unification movement?***

Now we must begin a new movement on the earth which divides the world into two sides. We must complete God's will for the perfection of the world and enlarge it to the entire cosmos. If a religious movement with this ideal doesn't appear, God's dispensation cannot be fulfilled. It would be the same as if God did not exist. Therefore, if God exists and if He is trying to accomplish His will, such a movement must be created on the earth. This conclusion is logical. What is this movement? It is truly the Unification movement. The Unification movement must have the ideals and motivation which I have just mentioned. First of all, it must enlarge self denial from the individual to the world level. When the Messiah comes, if Christianity completely follows him and perfectly unites with him, it has achieved its goal. When the Messiah comes and proclaims himself, then everybody must unite with him. But they cannot do so until he comes. Therefore, God has been prolonging His dispensation through the fallen history of hundreds of thousands of years up until now.

God exists, yet so does persecution. Why did God allow the early Christians to be persecuted for 400 years in ancient Rome? Reviewing the Principle, we know that persecution continued until the standard which was applicable throughout the world appeared. Accordingly, Christianity came to this level after 400 years. Centering upon the foundation laid by Christianity, the Unification Church appeared on the earth after World War II.

Christianity must listen to the word of the Messiah viewed from the total perspective of God's dispensation. Whether or not they will listen to him is a matter of life or death for Christians. If one believes in the Messiah's words, he can find spiritual survival; for this purpose, one must deny oneself. One must be able to deny everything: his own past history, his own family and his own past standard of faith, as well. If he can see that the Messiah is the person he had been looking for, as viewed through the eyeglasses of biblical history, there is no problem. But for many, their eyeglasses do not fit. They are looking at things through individualistic eyeglasses, therefore they do not know the Messiah when they see him. The Messiah comes on the cosmic scale; therefore one cannot measure him by one's own scale. If you only listen to or see the Messiah with your personal point of view, you cannot understand the contents of his message. The Messiah deals with things on the eternal level, discussing events perhaps 20 or 30 years ahead.

If a small point of view predominates among Christians, when the Lord of the Second Advent comes, they will oppose him. If they do oppose him, they will automatically fall within Satan's sphere. The Messiah is the one who is born as the substance of God's eternal love on this plane called earth. The one who leads the opposition to God is Satan. Anyone who takes the other subject's position, namely by opposing the Messiah, will become a part of Satan's sphere at once. Although there may be large numbers of people there, it is still Satan's sphere.

Those who were supposed to create the foundation for the acceptance of the Messiah, on the contrary turned their guns on him and are now standing at the front of Satan's army. They have come to deny Christ himself. Immediately after World War II, the Christian cultural sphere of the world, centering upon the nation of America, had gained its greatest strength. There has been only one time in history when the world was completely leaning toward the religious sphere; that was the time right after World War II. A small portion went to the side of the Soviets, while the rest of the world became a part of the democratic sphere, the Christian cultural sphere, completely centering upon America. If America herself, who was the subject of the external world, completely followed the Messiah, what would have happened to the world? The world could have easily become God's world. But what would happen if that didn't occur? The world would again return to the satanic sphere and as a result they would make a total attack on the central person of God's dispensation.

### ***Perfection of the restoration through indemnity***

From heaven's point of view, what is my mission? I have received ceaseless persecution from the individual level to the family, clan, society, nation, world, and cosmos. There has been nothing else like this in history. Who has received the worst and the greatest persecution in the history of religion? Your answer is not because you are members of the Unification Church; even those who do not belong to the Unification Church reply that it is Reverend Moon. The people in power in America would certainly answer in the same way. Even communists would answer in the same way.: If we ask Buddhists, Christians, or any religious person, "In the history of religious leaders, who was persecuted the most in his lifetime, from the individual level up to the world level?" they will certainly answer that it is Reverend Moon. How many years will this continue? Sixty years? I will go the way of indemnity in the condensed manner for 40 years.

God is looking for a person who speaks the truth about Satan, the world, and God, not for his own sake but for the sake of the world and God, a person who can take responsibility for leading the world and for teaching the way of sacrifice. If there is such a person, he must certainly take responsibility for the course of God's dispensation and the course of indemnity. We cannot speak about individual perfection without the perfection of indemnity, since individual perfection cannot be achieved within the realm of Satan. Once we can accomplish this, it is the end of the satanic world.

Within the idea of perfection, the perfection of indemnity is automatically included. Perfection of the individual must involve the perfection of indemnity. No one in this fallen world can achieve the perfection of personality. From God's point of view, the perfection of indemnity is the perfection of restoration. Therefore, restoration is accomplished through indemnity. So indemnity becomes an adjective that defines restoration and vice-versa.

A person who does not appreciate restoration through indemnity is the king of satans even if he is a member of the Unification Church. How about you? As you have been going through the course of restoration together with me you may have said, "Oh Father, we have gone the course of restoration through indemnity, and more restoration through indemnity. How many years, must it continue? It has gone on for 10 years, and then another 20 years and now after 40 years, we still face another 20 years!" That is true. If we are not successful in entering into the sphere of perfection at once, our own course is prolonged three times. That's the teaching of the Principle. If we can't do it in seven years,

our course becomes 21 years. Those 21 years were divided into nine stages. Why is that? If we approached it all at one time and we were defeated, then we would lose everything. But if we go step by step, from one stage progressively to another, then we cannot lose everything at once. We can connect them and if we gain victory on each stage, we can go up to the next level. We have been following this strategy so even though the process may look confused, God's dispensation is relentlessly moving forward toward its consummation.

Satan is very wise and his ways are deceptive. Because he's smart, he can manipulate God's methods to put himself at the center. There are many people who manipulate situations centering upon their own desire. That kind of person does the worst damage within a religion. The starting point of all the church's activity is God, and such a person will speak about the purpose of the nation or God, yet he will disregard that and do things for his own benefit. Anyone who collects someone else's money for the public purpose and uses that money unscrupulously for himself is a thief. The same applies to anyone who claims public things as his own belongings without getting permission. That kind of person will be destroyed from within.

Please understand clearly that restoration is accomplished through indemnity and that this is the road to perfection. How about you, the members of the Unification Church? I always speak in a public manner and I may chastise a church leader during a speech. That is an example of restoration through indemnity. When I chastise that person in public, he is representing the world, and if he listens to me and accepts what I say, he is able to overcome the problem. When I do such a thing, certainly the problem becomes apparent. That sort of public chastisement is the best example of restoration through indemnity. What is the purpose of indemnity? It is for the sake of perfection -- perfection of the self, perfection of the family, the clan, the nation, the world and the cosmos. And what is the result of the perfection of the cosmos? The ultimate result is the liberation of God.

### ***Tradition for those who follow God's will***

Because I understood this, I have totally focused on pioneering the path of restoration through indemnity. My way of life has been to disregard the snow, the wind or seasonal changes; my life can be summed up in one word -- misery. I am walking a path which nobody except God can understand. When you pray sincerely about me and the will of God, you cannot help crying again and again. If you ask heaven who I am, you will cry out and a storm of tears will flow over your face. You will feel such a pain in your heart -- a pain which causes that kind of water to flow. But why is this? Originally I was supposed to stand in such a different position. If the Christian cultural sphere had welcomed me, within seven years -- during my 30s -- I could have returned the world to God's domain. The things I am teaching now did not begin recently; I started along this path by uncovering the very origin of this truth. I laid the foundation then, and have been bringing accomplishments throughout my life until this point now when I am teaching you these things. This is not just an abstract idea. I have actually done what I am teaching you now. I could not speak to you before I had done this, or you would be led to Satan's world.

You Japanese members must now reflect upon your lives. You have been working hard up to this time, following me, and months, years -- in some cases 10 or 20 years -- have passed. When you look back upon your life of faith, what do you find? I have been climbing up the summit of indemnity, higher than the Himalayas, a more difficult ascent than any other in man's history. Now I am throwing down a rope from Japan to the rest of the world. All of us are doing tremendously hard work. If possible, you who are in the position to do so should pull the rope with me and help me so that you can loosen the tension of that rope. But have you ever tightened that rope instead? Haven't you complained centering upon yourself, and criticized, saying such things as, "Father is just the Father of Korea"? If I only thought about Korea, what would have happened? I would have been taken into the spiritual world a long time ago. Such a person is of no use to this world. Only after the restoration of

the whole world through indemnity, after you have cleaned everything up, can you return to your original point and think about your children, your family or your own nation. This is the only way for a person who has decided to go the way of God. This is from the dispensational point of view. If you think about things centering only upon yourself, your family or your nation, you will not be able to help the world.

Can you truly be proud of yourself in front of God? I have been leading this way as the world pioneer of restoration. What has been your standard in relation to me? Unless you can see yourself clearly and are able to change today, you cannot be the standard bearers for tomorrow's victory. On the national level, Japan is standing in the position of the Eve nation in relation to the Adam nation. This being the case, you should not have even a bit of doubt or worry, or give any difficulty to me. If we remember that the true historical tradition was destroyed by the fallen Eve, you must not give the slightest pain to the True Father's heart. You are representing the world and the totality of humanity; that's the position of Japan as Eve's nation. Do you understand? My message to you is that you should not complain but should witness and stand on the front line of God's will.

Even if we cannot achieve the standard of perfection at this moment. in time, we can guarantee that in the future we will be able to accomplish it, because we have this Principle. And what about you? Do you want to accomplish this sometime in the distant future, or would you prefer to achieve perfection during the age when I am living? To do so you must work at the risk of your life. Those who were born in the past and believed in religion cannot be born again in this modern time, even though they want to be. Therefore, they are anxiously waiting and watching from the spiritual world, knowing that this is the most precious time in history, not replaceable by any other age. When you understand this point, you must be very grateful for the fact that you are receiving words directly from me on the earth. You are receiving education directly from me and are accomplishing God's will;

### ***The summit of persecution***

The final and highest peak on the world level of persecution was in 1976. We reached the summit during the time of the Washington Monument rally. Since I understood this point, I sent missionaries to the entire world in 1975. If all of the missionaries had been Japanese, they would have been a strictly Oriental team. If they had been all Americans, they would have been a strictly Western team. Therefore, I organized them so that they could represent the entire world. To each mission country, I sent a Japanese missionary who represented the Orient, a German who represented Europe, and an American who represented North and South America. Then they were representatives of the world, as well as of Reverend Moon of Korea. Japanese, Americans and Germans all shared a common environment and all three were called Moonies.

If there were no direction from me, no doubt they would have fought and separated. The Japanese missionary might have said, "Japan received the blessing first, so I'm in the Abel position." The American might have said, "America is the leading nation of the democratic world, so from the cultural point of view, I am the best." Then the German might have said, "Nonsense! Germans are the smartest. We are the best organized, we are analytic and intellectual." Each of them would claim that he was the best and therefore the subject. Therefore, the policy had to be that there was no subject. If no one claimed his own subjectivity, then God could certainly assist them. So I clearly said, "If the three of you are totally united, God will absolutely help you and you will develop. If you fight, you will never make progress." And the situation showed exactly what I said. According to the reports from the itinerant workers, that was exactly so. There is no mistake in the: Principle. The missionaries have gone to the whole world and the Principle sphere was enlarged to 130 nations. So persecution has spread over the entire world. like an umbrella; many Americans were calling for the deportation of Reverend Moon before the Washington Monument rally, but it didn't happen. I fought and gained the

victory. In 1976, the peak time of historical persecution against me, the world welcomed a new era. Then on Feb. 23, 1977, centering upon True Parents' birthday, I declared the new era.

How can I say this? It is because at the summit of world persecution, I accepted suffering and marched forward for the sake of heaven and for the sake of the world. Then the communist world became divided. Five years from that time, Japan advanced to the world level. When Eve is lifted up, Adam is also saved in the same way. God was wise to elevate Japan first.

### ***The mission of Japan as the Eve nation***

When God looks around Japan to find some people to whom He can give responsibility, He notices the ones who are so humble looking, the ones who seem useless to the other Japanese. Those are the Moonies. When we get to know them, we see that they are very honest and they are internally very noble. They offer everything and work with each other for the sake of the nation and the world, yet they never ask for recompense. So people begin to feel that they are indeed precious.

The mother must take her providential responsibility. Japan is Eve, and Eve must feed her children. To whom did fallen Eve give her milk first? First to Cain and then to Abel. Her daughters were not mentioned. Although women existed, they were treated as if they did not exist and up until now they could not complain. Those children who grew up on the milk of Eve fought with each other because they had conflicting natures. In the restoration through indemnity, Jacob and Esau fought within their mother's womb. The Cain-Abel relationship must go back to the mother's womb and be restored from that point again. Therefore in the course of restoration, when a woman in a dispensational position was pregnant with twins, they were not supposed fight within the womb, but rather embrace each other. After they are born, one should not try to get milk first. They each should say, "You go first." When they take turns to receive milk many times a day, they should love each other without complaint. Eve must give birth to such children.

By setting this condition within Eve's nation, the conditions for restoration on the world level can be set. Both the Cain and Abel types among the Japanese listen to my words very well. The ones who listen the least are the Germans. In the past, Germany was the subject over Japan. When the elder brother is pushed into the object position, he doesn't like it. The ones who most resist being objective are the Germans. Furthermore, in the Abel camp, the one who has the most problems, who claims his freedom while calling out for God, and has the most spiritual ups and downs, is the American. Who represents the world? The Germans and Americans who stand in the twin's position are not really very friendly. In fact, they are traditional enemies and their mutual histories have been histories of conflict. In this sense America and Germany fit the Principle view of being enemies. Adam's nation, Eve's nation and the archangel's nations are also enemies. All of them were divided at the point when they were supposed to become one. To rearrange them once again, we must start from a similar situation. Korea, the Adam nation, was the enemy of Japan, the Eve nation. Japan and America were enemies; America and Germany were enemies -- all of them were enemies. I gathered these historical enemies and told them to unite into one by receiving one mother's milk, centering on the power of love! You Americans, Germans and Japanese cannot go back to Adam's position unless the three of you become one. This is the Principle view according to the restoration through indemnity.

Through the fall, God, Adam and Eve became enemies. Adam and Eve became enemies and Cain and Abel became enemies -- father, mother, and children, all became enemies. When the realm of each of these enemies expanded, they produced the same fruit. What eventually happened was that an Adam nation appeared in the satanic world, as well as an Eve nation, and an archangelic nation. In opposition to them were the Adam nation on God's side, as well as an Eve nation, and an archangelic nation. Those two camps fought each other in a world-level conflict during the Second World War as the Axis powers and the Allied powers.

The Axis powers on the satanic side initiated that war. Japan, who was the satanic Eve nation, occupied the Orient, specifically Korea. The idea of the Great East Asian Co-prosperity Sphere came out, preceding God's ideal, as a challenge to God's original ideal by the satanic side. Japan's Shinto religion recognizes the "eight million deities," but the founding deity of this Eve nation is Amaterasu-Ominokami, a female deity.

On God's side, England was the Eve nation. America was born from England, so America is a child of Eve, and always follows her. But if America continues to follow England all the time, it is not good. An example was the war in the Falkland Islands. America should go her way independently of England. In the future she must stand up as the Adam nation centered upon the heavenly standard.

In World War II, the restored Eve nation was England and the restored archangelic nation was France. Against this, there was the satanic Adam nation of Germany, the Eve nation of Japan, and the archangelic nation of Italy. Together the three of them formed a four position foundation centered upon Satan's ideal in the top position, while the Allies formed a four position foundation centered on God. The Second World War was the decisive battle on the world level. After the heavenly side gained the victory, the satanic world could be returned to the heavenly side. In the final stage of the satanic side on the world level, communism came to exist.

What is communism? Communism is Satan's attempt to mimic the ideal of the Lord of the Second Advent, before God can establish His world. When we look at what Stalin did, we can clearly understand this point. He tried to unify the entire world. But communism has now gone through eight generations, from Marx, to Lenin, Stalin, Malenkov, Bulganin, Khrushchev, Brezhnev, and Andropov, who is the eighth generation. They have reached the end; from the point of eight, all they can do is decline. The Lord of the Second Advent brings the spiritual ideal for the unification of the entire world, while communism, based on materialism, presents the goal of unification of the world on the level of flesh.

According to the Principle, if Christianity becomes one with the Lord of the Second Advent and if the spiritual world and the physical world are united, the basis for Satan to exist will disappear. God will control the subjective and the objective spheres, so there will be no reciprocal sphere for Satan to control. Communism will eventually be flushed away completely.

If the democratic world had followed the Lord of the Second Advent after 1945, the world could have been united within seven years. But they did not unite with the Messiah and opposed him instead. Therefore they stood at the front of the satanic opposition to God's will. For this reason all the world, including communism, democracy, Christianity, Judaism, Buddhism, and so forth, opposed the Messiah on the individual level, family level, clan level, racial level, national level and on the world level. All of them opposed him. Now we have the battle in court between the American government and Reverend Moon. The plaintiff is America, which represents the entire free world, while Reverend Moon is one person. Who will win? Now is the time of decisive battle, the time of victory or defeat. We have come to the summit on the last stage of battle.

### ***Four important providential nations***

Today is April 3, the third day of the fourth month. From the Principle view, the number 4 represents the earth and the number 3 represents the three stages of formation, growth and completion. April 3 is a wonderful day. And 1983 totals the number 21, namely,  $1 + 9 + 8 + 3 = 21$ . Therefore, on this day I cannot help but speak on the topic of total indemnity, the total perfection. Since I have taught you these things, it is your responsibility to go this path; if you do not want to go, then don't go.

Where is the center of my activity? Is it Korean Christianity? No, it is America, which is basically a Protestant country. In the Christian world, the Protestants are Abels. At the time of the Reformation, the Catholic Church persecuted the Protestants. Later, many Protestants were driven out of Europe. Finally the country of the independent Protestant spirit was created in America. That was 200 years ago. Counting from 1776, 1985 is exactly the 210th year. A decisive battle must be won, centering upon the 40th president, President Reagan.

At this historical time, I have given a new order of mobilization. Our movement is not a destructive one but a movement for uniting and pulling together the whole world. Therefore, at this point we must accomplish not only the unification of the races, but also the unification of religions of the East and West. All the nations' histories are focused toward this one point. This is the year 4318 in Korean history. Number 18 is 3 times 6, and 6 is the number for Satan. God is a scientist and also a numerical being. Therefore, the restoration through indemnity has proceeded through certain numerical conditions. Indemnity requires a certain time period, a central person, and conditional offerings. Within this 40 year time period, the Unification movement has to make a condition of three great offerings. Through the True Father, conditions must be offered through the Adam nation, the Eve nation, and the archangelic nation. At this point we must make holy offerings on the world level to God. We must restore all the world by getting the signature of victory. Who must give this signature of victory? God does not do this and the Messiah doesn't do it either. Satan is the one who does this.

Four great nations were chosen by God to represent all the nations of the world. Korea is the Adam nation and Japan is the Eve nation. If it had not been for the failure of established Christianity to follow me, England would have been the Eve nation. At the time of World War II, the Adam nation on God's side was America, the Eve nation was England, and the archangelic nation was France. But Satan invaded the sphere of Christian civilization.

On Satan's side, Germany was Adam and Japan was Eve during World War II. In Korea, because of the rebellion of established Christianity against God, North Korea, where my home town is, was invaded by Satan. Thus, the head was invaded by Satan, but the tail -- South Korea -- was saved.

Satan is now holding the head of Adam and the tail of the archangel. These are North Korea and East Germany. Korea is divided into north and south, or latitudinally, and Germany into east and west, or longitudinally. Satan is holding North Korea centered on Pyongyang and East Germany centered on Berlin. If the problem of communism is solved in Korea, then it will automatically wither away in Germany. This way, global communism will begin dying out.

In North Korea, Kim Il Sung is called "Father," but in the Unification Church in South Korea, the True Parent is the real Father; thus, at this time there are two fathers and two subjects. This aberration will be rectified if indemnity is paid for the entire world; then the world will become one automatically. If all humanity unites with God and strives to be self sacrificial and serving of others, then the problem of world conflict will be solved. That way the world as it is now will end. In this respect, America is also near the end, as well as England and Germany and other nations.

Buddhism, Islam, Christianity, and all religions are reaching a limit, too. All systems, whether economic or political, even families, have become chaotic. The fallen order of love, in which people love themselves more than God and others, has become self-destructive; thus the evil of the world is being destroyed. Therefore, at this time we must establish a new order of love. Indemnity conditions and loyalty must bring forth unity, both in heaven and earth. After the center of love is established, the God-centered order of love is expanded until it reaches the worldwide level. This way the new Heavenly Kingdom is going to be completed on the earth.

The Unification movement has identified central nations which Satan covets most and is striving the hardest to control. From the point of view of world affairs today, Korea is the most important nation in Asia. Japan is the most important oceanic nation. Those countries that are located on the Pacific and wish to be a power on the ocean need Japan. Western civilization must go to the Asian continent through the Pacific Ocean, and therefore they need a relationship with Japan, which is their route to the Asian continent; Therefore, Japan must be respected. Also, Japan as the Eve nation must educate people from the rest of the world. This is the reason why in the last 30 to 40 years Japan was so abundantly blessed, materially.

To go to the Asian continent, one can also go through the Korean peninsula, but it is not easy to reach the entire peninsula by ship.

Hence the project of making a tunnel and a highway throughout Asia. In Korea, therefore, the Unification movement has become more and more necessary and important both for world problems and for domestic problems.

An interesting time has come. Perfection will not be realized without total restoration through indemnity, and that is accomplished through unity. The perfection of the whole comes from indemnity paid by the whole. Therefore, we must conclude that indemnity is paid by achieving unity among enemies.

### ***The end of religion***

If enemies unite, and if they offer their unity to God and God accepts them, then the purpose of religion will be completed. Thus far, only those who were on God's side have been offered on the altar. But today, through the unity of enemies, those who are on Satan's side are also being offered on the altar. Once they are accepted by God, the purpose of religion will be fulfilled. Religion itself will be necessary no longer. Religion exists to accomplish man's separation from Satan, but with perfect unity and love between enemies that need will no longer exist. Therefore, when any such offerings are made to God, He will accept them. We have to do that on the worldwide level.

That is why I must start from the point of loving my enemies. That is the Principle. The foundation for the Heavenly Kingdom should spring from the very domain of Satan. To accomplish that, you must be persecuted by those on Satan's side, and you must love them in return so that they will surrender to you naturally. If they strike you who are righteous, then they must pay for it. That is the rule of the universe. Through such payment, you can ultimately restore relationships. But if you hit back in the same way as Satan, then relationships cannot be restored. When you are struck, you must accept the blow completely. By restoring this way externally, you can restore the most important element inside Satan. Thus, what you sow will definitely be reaped. It is the mission of the master to separate evil from good, and to put what's evil into an evil warehouse and what's good into a good warehouse. On this earth, two seeds were sown, a bad one and a good one. The good seed will go to the heavenly warehouse, but the bad seed will be consumed by fire.

Now is the time of the harvest, and the satanic world is in chaos. Therefore, we must bring forth unity out of the chaos and must unite the people of all races. The fallen world is a world of individualism. There is no unity among parents, children, societies or nations. But the Unification movement is uniting people on all levels. Our movement is going the opposite way of the world. So far in the world, marriage partners have generally come from the same nation and race, but in the Unification Church, just the opposite often occurs. A Japanese would never have dreamt of marrying a Korean or a black, but we are doing that without hesitation. What are we doing that for? To unite the world, and bring back to God the satanic world of disunity, which would otherwise be destroyed.

In this process, who will pay the indemnity? It is the Unification movement and those people who are in its mainstream. I am the spearhead of that movement, and am walking the path of indemnity on behalf of the world. When I pay indemnity on the individual-level, I am doing so on behalf of all mankind. I have started a heartistic movement in which men feel like welcoming even the most ugly woman in the world as their wife.

Unless you pay indemnity by starting from such a humble heart, you can never establish the ideal of perfection as an individual male. Unless all women, including old women, young women, and women in the spirit world, purely love you, then you can never establish the ideal of individual male perfection. You may be hearing such a thing for the first time.

You Japanese women loved me like a father or brother or even like a heavenly husband before you married, didn't you? That is a spiritual phenomenon. Through the spirit world, you could experience walking hand in hand with me. This is because one man has to restore and unify three different loves; namely, a mother's love, a wife's love, and a sister's love. All of these were lost through the fall of Adam; therefore, they all have to be sanctified. Through one purified Adam, the historical indemnity conditions to restore individual perfection must be established on the worldwide level. Therefore, all different kinds of women must come to purely love him in order for Satan to be dominated. The pure Adam must guide all women correctly. He must even reform prostitutes by teaching them the true path. He must be welcomed by them as a true man. Although he may be tempted, he must not give in; he must instead triumph over that. No matter how beautiful a woman may be or how hard she may try to seduce him, he must not fall. He must establish that kind of tradition. Otherwise, he can never achieve the ideal of a perfected individual man.

### ***Creating individual perfection***

After Adam's individual perfection is realized, Eve should be recreated, because Eve was originally created after the model of Adam. Because Adam was not able to fulfill his responsibility when Eve was falling away, Satan was able to succeed in corrupting her. A restored Adam must now take Eve back from Satan. God prepared the earthly foundation for that. The new Eve had to be less than 20 years old, just as was the original Eve. Therefore, True Mother was an innocent 17 year old when we were blessed.

The first seven years of our marriage were the period of Mother's absolute obedience. In every way, she had to obey me. Through this process, Parents' Day, Day of All Things, and God's Day could be established. Until God's Day was installed, the True Parents had to be afflicted by all kinds of internal problems and had to pay indemnity to overcome Satan's accusation. God's Day meant the start of a perfected Adam and

In 1968, based on the foundation of God's Day, the Unification Church sent all couples up to the 124 Couples to every corner of South Korea for three years, and they were intensely persecuted. I ordered all the families to go to the front line to proselytize for three years. This was family indemnity on the national level. Some children had to be sent to orphanages, and others were sent to the homes of members' parents. Centering on this three-year indemnity and on the perfection of the foundation of the family on the national level in Korea, I was able to come to America.

This period was initiated in order to indemnify all the family problems of the past. Because of this, I was persecuted, even by families within the Unification Church. They said, "We have just begun to live a married life. We have managed to get a small house and gathered a few pots and pans, spoons and chopsticks and furniture, even though they are not very good ones; but you are going to destroy it all. Why are you chasing us out this way?" This kind of complaint arose, but I responded, "Go out." Why was I so harsh? Because of the Principle. Unless you pay indemnity on the society level, you

can never establish the foundation for a family. And unless you lay the foundation for the family you can never lay the foundation for individual perfection. Unless you pay indemnity on a higher level, you can never live comfortably as an individual. That is an iron rule.

After the three-year period was over, I blessed the 777 Couples in order to connect the foundation made by the families to the entire world. After that connection, I was able to come to America. Satan knew well that those foundations had been laid. After leaving Korea by air, I stopped in three nations - Japan, Canada, and America -- which, together with Korea, made a four position foundation. I arrived in America on Dec. 18, 1971. At that time, the Little Angels were playing at Carnegie Hall. No one knew me; and no one but God and myself knew I would go to America. Even President Kim [Young Whi Kim, who was president of the Korean Unification Church at that time] did not know. However, if you read my sermons given at that time, you can see I gave hints of leaving.

I had to restore the suffering path of Jesus. Within 3 1/2 years in America, I made a nationwide speaking tour aimed at reviving Christianity. In 1974, I was warmly welcomed; I was given some 1,200 citations and awards, including keys to many cities. Christianity in Korea had rebelled against me, but Christianity in the United States welcomed me, thus paying indemnity for that earlier failure. The Christian churches of America welcomed me in my tours.

After such a welcome, what did I do? On April 1, 1975, I sent IOWCs from the West to Korea. These IOWCs started their activities in Pusan. Two thousand years ago, Rome and official Judaism got together to kill Jesus. But now the reverse has occurred. America and Korea got together to unite with the Unification Church. Restoration through indemnity took place in Korea. In the Yoido Island rally, 1.2 million people gathered together. On this foundation, we held the Yankee Stadium and Washington Monument rallies in 1976.

### ***America: in need of help***

At those two rallies, I said that America must listen to me. I said that America is on fire and needs a fire fighter; someone from outside the nation must save it, and that person is Reverend Moon. Likewise, when a person gets sick, he needs a physician. In order to cure America's disease, the ministrations of the Unification Church and Reverend Moon must be received. Because I said this directly, Americans didn't feel comfortable; they even got angry. Hence came the period of attacking Reverend Moon. Thus, the activities of the Fraser Committee began [the U.S. House Subcommittee on International Organizations, chaired by Rep. Donald Fraser, a Minnesota Democrat, in 1977 and 1978]. From 1977 on, a period of intense activity by the Communist Party began, as well as the Fraser Committee, which was fought by Bo Hi Pak. He had been married before his Blessing so he was in the archangel position. His was also one of the Adam families, one of the first blessed families. Someone in his position had to bring forth victory. The hearing was truly a war. He was fighting directly with Fraser and the Carter Administration. No such fight took place before in human history.

During the four years of the Carter Administration, my sermons always attacked President Carter's programs, saying that he was selling out the democratic world and advancing the cause of communism. The Carter period was a hard one. That administration accused me of being nothing but a secular political activist and a foe of America. As a result of this, Unification Church members throughout the world were denied visas. This happened in Japan and Germany but within three years that will change.

The Unification movement brings a very strong ideology. College professors and other foremost intellectuals are now rallying to my support, while communist movements working on university campuses are largely in chaos. Even during the hectic time of the court case, I mobilized support from the media, economists, and lawyers on the basis of the power of Unification thought. You throw

a net to cover thousands of fish and you let the rope go, and when the time comes you wind it in with a winch. The rope with which you pull is the philosophy of the Unification movement. All the fish are pulled in by that rope. The goal, of course, is to lead all the fish back to God.

This is the period of throwing out the net, so on March 1, 1983, the command was given in America for total mobilization. That was the beginning of the three-year period of training before entering the land of Canaan. These three years are equivalent to the three days in Egypt when the Israelite people were allowed by the Pharaoh to go into the wilderness in order to sacrifice to Yahweh. During this three-year period you should work in a serious, intense way. And just as the Israelite people were seeking to express their loyalty to God for three days, you must live your three-year period with dedication and love.

In the wilderness, 600,000 people of the first generation died, after becoming the prey of Satan, but the second generation entered Canaan. Today in America and in Japan, the first generation has opposed the Unification movement, but the second generation may not oppose us. We will educate the second generation.

We are now in the three-year period in the wilderness. Even though our environment is hostile to the point of our being killed, we must love our nation, we must love our fatherland; we must overcome all hostility. We must have the passion and conviction to do that. That is the purpose of the three-year period. Without their training through hardships in the wilderness, the Israelite people would have had no possibility of overcoming the seven tribes of Canaan. In the same way, unless we are trained, we will not be able to overcome communism. We members of the Unification movement must wear the helmet of heavenly heart in the wilderness in order to conquer evil. We must become soldiers who can battle unrighteousness in these three years.

Therefore, wherever you are in the world, always fly the flag of victory 24 hours a day. Run it up in every town, every city, every province, every village, and every house. You must be victorious. You must fulfill your mission in accordance with the will of God. Otherwise we cannot fulfill this providential course we are walking which is parallel to that of the Israelites. You must clearly declare to the whole world that the Unification movement is on the path to the land of Canaan, and that I, the leader of the Unification movement, am in the position of Moses today. Within these three years, we have to overcome all opposition and offer ourselves totally to God and to the world. We have no nation yet, and we have no secure environment for the blessed families yet, in spite of the fact that there are many nations and families in the world. Therefore we must entrust everything to the will of God, and we have to listen intently to Him. We have to offer everything for the sake of God and His ideal and for the sake of loving all of humanity. Through absolute attendance, we must become one, transcending national allegiance, and march forward to Jericho. This is what is meant by the period of the three years.

### ***Toward the explosion of heart***

So you must never hesitate. Invest everything. If you have any energy, exert it all. You have to be ready to give your life for God's love. You have to empty yourself, with the conviction that a loving heart is eternal. Each of us must understand that we are standing a hair's breadth away from the ultimate destination of God's providence. In this situation, we must never be defeated. To be vanquished would be tragic. Members of the Unification movement of East and West must be kindled and explode together in heart throughout the world. Such a heartistic explosion will bring about the resurrection of the world. Even God Himself will be resurrected because His heart will be liberated.

We are like soldiers marching forward to achieve the restoration through indemnity. We must clearly know that. We also have the goal of unifying world religions. This year we are sponsoring the third

annual God Conference. We are guiding youthful future leaders of all religions toward unity. The Unification movement is a global movement; it is inter-religious as well as interdenominational. It is also an interracial movement, as we can see in our marriages. Furthermore, the Unification movement is an interdisciplinary movement, sponsoring conferences that combine various academic disciplines. Because of such activities as these, many intellectuals are realizing that Reverend Moon is the only person thinking and acting on the worldwide level. Many people are coming to recognize that only Reverend Moon can handle all the problems of the world.

If we can fulfill our missions in these three years and establish victorious foundations which God can support, then the media will reverse their way of writing about us. That's my belief. If that is the case, the period of persecution which requires restoration through indemnity will evaporate, and wherever we go, we will be welcomed with great applause that will reach all the way to heaven. If that is the case, then we will have established the heavenly tradition, based on the foundation of the family. The purpose of our work is to establish the world of unity, the world that has one sovereignty, one land, one culture, as is written in "My Pledge." It is one lineage centering upon the one couple of the True Parents. We become ideal successors of that tradition, fulfilling "My Pledge."

We are going to fulfill the words "love your enemy" in the Bible. Christians have believed that one's enemy is simply an individual person, but that is not entirely true. The Unification movement teaches that one's enemy could be a nation or even the world, which you should then love. Our enemy countries become the starting point of our Heavenly Kingdom. Unless our kingdom starts from within the enemy nation, then the Heavenly Kingdom will never be realized. If we establish our tradition this way, then throughout the future no greater ideology will arise. This will be the consummate ideology.

Four great enemy nations must begin the Heavenly Kingdom out of this victorious heavenly tradition, creating a worldwide foundation of love. If that succeeds, then the Heavenly Kingdom on the earth can start. Therefore, we are now in the three-year period in which a complete foundation of indemnity must be made. Unless we are successful within these three years, the work will be extended another three years. We have six years in which to do the job, but a complete foundation of indemnity should ideally be established within three years. We are pursuing restoration through indemnity, and what are we trying to restore? Perfection on many levels. Adam's individual perfection is the basis of the perfection of the family, clan, nation, and world. After I pay all the indemnity necessary to gain victory from Satan on the broadest level, then you, together with all humanity, must also establish the victory in more localized ways. That is the purpose of your home church activity. Through it, you will be able to claim part of the restored land of Canaan as your own.

Where is the Canaan of today? It is the entire earth. We are already accomplishing the conditions for the success of God's providence on this earth; the expansion of home church activity transcends nationalities and ideologies. We are even working in communist countries. Through home church activity, we restore Canaan, and we "inherit" a part of the world by claiming credit for having substantially restored a neighborhood. If the fall of man had not taken place, each person would have had the right to be an owner of the universe. Your home church will become the conditional object whereby you can possess the cosmos all things, all people, the parents, and God -- by establishing a foundation of love. Therefore, without home church you cannot establish the foundation to become one with the True Parents and with God. You cannot go to the -- Heavenly Kingdom without succeeding in your home church.

### ***Full indemnity and home church***

In my life I accomplished full indemnity and established a victorious foundation. On this basis I announced the beginning of home church activities. This is the best of all possible good news for mankind. From home church, the Heavenly Kingdom on earth, the liberation of God, the ideal nation,

and all ideals will be realized. We inherit home church as our daily life. God has given you such a precious thing, but you are reluctant to go to your home church areas. There are even people who have no areas. Unless you have your own home church area, which is your own Cain-type tribe, you can never restore your Abel-like tribe. Before you can restore your Abel-type family, you have to restore Cain first. No one has ever understood this point so far.

It's important to love your enemy. Why did God make efforts to teach us that loving our enemy is important? Satan says to God, "In order for You to be God, You must always maintain the standard of ideal, eternal love." God replies, "Yes, that is true." Then Satan says, "God, when You made me the archangel, did You do so just in order to love me temporarily, or to love me forever?" And God says, "Forever." If God loved only temporarily, then He would be like Satan. By the same token, if one has no standard of loving forever, he cannot show God's dignity to Satan. In order for God to be God, He must love Satan no matter how much Satan is opposed to Him.

Satan says, "I fell and became evil, but You who are good can never change, and You can never do the things I do. I enjoy attacking and fighting, but you hate fighting. You must be silent even if You are beaten." Hence, God cannot forcibly resist Satan's aggression. Why? God cannot crush Satan just like that. He must love him unchangingly so that Satan will finally come to say, "Oh, indeed You are God. I surrender to You." No matter how much suffering you may have to experience, you have to love the archangel until the ideal of heaven is completely established in this world. God's hands are tied by that demand. As you go on your way to the Heavenly Kingdom, Satan will test you. Just as God must love Satan and let Satan surrender to Him in that way! so God's children must love the archangel if they want to go to the Heavenly Kingdom.

How much love would that take? Even though you are persecuted by all of this world, which is the realm of the enemy, you must love the evildoer with your whole heart. That is the condition you have to fulfill. God is most concerned about that condition, so those people who are striving to be God's children should also be most concerned about it. This standard of loving might appear simple, but it is the very boundary line between God and Satan. No one has fully understood this before. In order to go beyond this boundary, God cannot even regard His enemy as an enemy, and He must not take revenge.

The conclusion for us is to love our enemy. When Jesus prayed for those people who were killing him, it was the greatest victory. If he had hated his enemies when he was about to die, then the providence of God would not have been successful. But as Jesus overcame his difficulties through love, Satan began surrendering, and Jesus obtained the qualification of God's perfected child. You have to come to the point where you are able to say, "Satan, don't you agree that I am a child of God?" and have Satan concede, "Yes, that's true." You must be able to say confidently, "I'm following God's direction, expanding His sphere of love from the individual level through the family, clan and nation, to the worldwide level. You have no objection to that. Right, Satan?" And Satan must say, "I have to agree with you because it's the Principle."

This is the way God has proceeded with His dispensation, centering upon Christianity. It has been the path of sacrifice and martyrdom and, through its bloody history, Christianity has been a movement to expand God's love to the family level, the societal level, the national level, all the way to the worldwide level. Through the standard of Christian love, which loves the enemy, enemy nations can be conquered; Cain is won over. By following this way, the Unification movement has spread worldwide.

### ***Love and the Japanese people***

From a secular point of view, Japanese people ought to be my enemies. They subjugated Korea and did many evil things to the Korean people, killing thousands from 1905 to 1945. Nevertheless, I love the Japanese people. When Japan surrendered in World War II, I loved my defeated enemies. This is the reason young Japanese members are now following me at the risk of their lives; it is in accordance with the principle of cause and effect. It is because I established the foundation of heart by loving the enemy nation, Japan, with God's heart, beyond nationalism. The Japanese policemen who beat me nearly to death would have been executed later if I had implicated them. But I forgave them and sent them off to Japan with their luggage.

Moreover, it is a great thing that Japanese members are now shedding tears, sweat, and blood to save the United States, once Japan's enemy. In this way, Satan is being forced to relinquish his territory on the worldwide level. Young Japanese members are now working hard at the risk of their lives for the United States, the enemy country of just 37 years ago, in order to save it and unite it with heaven. This is a wonderful event, something never seen before in history.

For what purpose are the Japanese members doing this? They are working not for the United States alone, but for the world. Thus American people should not live in accordance with selfish traditions. I clearly told an American Unification Church leader recently that all American members have their own traditional way of thinking. With such an attitude, you cannot accomplish world-scale activity. Instead, you should sacrifice yourselves with the object of saving the world. You should realize that you can establish the worldwide tradition of love only when you have overcome your self-centered desires. You should work harder than the Japanese members, your former enemies. It is to your shame that your ex-enemies are serving you more. You should not be defeated in love by the Japanese.

The European members, especially Germans, who are blessed with American members should all come to the United States, because America is the gateway to the world. The United States is not a nation for itself; it represents the democratic world. Therefore, I am now mobilizing members all around the world for the sake of the United States in order to make this country the center of the new God-centered culture and the center of the Unification movement in the future.

Even if Japan became a spiritual desert, you could survive if the United States lives. Therefore, you should devote yourselves to spiritually developing the United States. I have brought here some Korean traditions, based on purity and morality, in order to save this country. I have been doing this in accordance with the Principle, developing the Unification movement thereby.

The Eve nation, Japan, should be united with the Adam nation, South Korea, after teaching the Cain and Abel nations the traditions of heaven. In other words, you must teach the Germans and Americans, respectively. This is in accordance with the Principle. If you fail, you cannot unite with heaven. The Soviet Union and China have their eyes fixed on the Eve nation. From this point of view, the defense of Korea is a critical problem for the defense of Japan. This is the conclusion from the providential point of view. In order to unite Korea and Japan -- both physically and heartistically -- one idea is to construct an undersea tunnel between them.

We have now entered an extraordinarily important period. What I am now working on is the ultimate historical task, the terminal point of history. I am now gathering and uniting the four major providential nations, offering their unity to God as an enormous indemnity condition for restoring the world. When such a unity is realized, the Kingdom of Heaven will start, so this is the beginning and at the same time the end of God's providence. If we continue such a movement toward unity for the next three years, no one will oppose our work.

In South America, people are already saying, "Welcome, Reverend Moon." It is the same in Africa and Asia, as well as in the Japanese and Chinese communities in the United States. If such

minorities are completely united, the majority will become the minority. Then their resentment of many years against white Americans must be used not for revenge but should be transformed into love to save the "enemy." That is the attitude based on God's love. If you work with such an attitude, you can establish the complete indemnity condition. Establishing the complete indemnity condition means complete restoration. Then, where does complete restoration lead? It leads to complete perfection.

### ***The four providential nations***

If we can restore the four major providential nations, we can offer to God the fundamental elements that have been Satan's. These four providential nations bring together all of these fundamental elements. What does Korea have? Spirit and the jewel of thought. Japan has beauty, the United States has power and Germany has technique and expertise. These four nations together have all the things which can bring unity throughout the world.

Starting with the individual level, going through the family, clan, society! and national levels, we have now come to the level of making world-level indemnity conditions. Four major nations which were once enemies are now becoming united centering on the heavenly tradition. Accordingly, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth is not far away. It is very near.

Realizing this, you should pull out all the stops, working gratefully even at the risk of your lives. Therefore, you members who are going back to Japan should try to work three times harder than American members. Even if you drop on the street like a toppled tree, you shouldn't complain. You should try to work with such a tireless spirit of urgency for these three years, even with just one meal a day. This is a turning point of history. I'm asking you to feverishly witness throughout the country for three years. To bolster the witnessing, I am thinking of using radio broadcasting. If we also use satellite technology, we could witness to the majority of humankind in a week! Three years are not really necessary to accomplish the mission of the Unification movement. We have to erect a movement so strong that world communism cannot ignore it. This is not just a story; it is an actual fact.

If we can build such a movement, you can mobilize and liberate 70 generations or even 120 generations of your ancestors. People in the spirit world are eager to help the earth. If you mobilize your ancestors, you can attract 70 disciples and then 120 disciples centering on your clan. This is a momentous event. The reason you joined the Unification movement is not that you have such great personal merit or strong faith. You could join because of your ancestors, the thousands of generations of your ancestors' sacrifice, service, and goodness for the sake of God. Therefore, what will become of you if you do not follow me and work for the nation and world? Your ancestors will be angry and accuse you of being irresponsible when you go to the spirit world; you'll have no place to go. But if you accomplish your mission and then go to spirit world, you'll be welcomed and served by your ancestors. Remember that you came here not based on your own greatness; you've been mobilized by the spirit realm.

I came here in order to accomplish a historic task, and God prepared the environment for me. It is in accordance with the principle of creation that the environment is prepared; everything in the world must go through a period of growth. Accordingly, spirit world mobilized you when I came. Therefore, you should not lead an easy life. You should discard your habitual ways of thinking and you should set your mind on goodness; work with all your heart, remembering the standard of spirit which you received from me today.

You should work from now in a different way than you used to. For example, you should make your wife work on the front line and you should dedicate your children to this cause as well. Indeed, you cannot love your children without first loving all other people. Otherwise, Satan can accuse you. You

should strive to receive a certificate from Satan, declaring that you love all the people under his dominion. Then you are qualified to go back to your home and freely love your children, your family, your clan, and your nation.

This is the principle that I myself have been living. I have not focused on caring for my children. I have not personally educated my children, even while living at East Garden. After all, who educated Adam? The archangel did. God, the Father of Adam and Eve, did not directly educate them. Therefore, who should educate my children? The 36 Couples, who stand in the position of the archangel. Such a traditional, principled way of education has not yet been established in the Unification Church. If there are members among the 36 Couples who complain about my children, it is indeed a problem. I must resolve such complaints.

You must love Cain on the family level; then you can love Cain on the individual level. But you first need to love Cain on the societal level and on the national level. This is the principle of restoration. Therefore, individual happiness should be sacrificed for the sake of the nation's happiness. Nations should be sacrificed for the sake of the world. I have sacrificed all things for the sake of restoring the world. To this end, I have been devoting myself and the substance of the Unification movement to building up the United States.

After you have made the indemnity condition of love and sacrifice on the worldwide level, then you can return home and give your children greater love than you gave to Cain. The heavenly Abel family and the Cain family must be united in love on the horizontal level. You should love the Japanese people and my children, and after both the Japanese people and my children commend you, you can love your own children. This is the Principle.

If my children went through painful times due to neglect by the 36 Couples, I didn't complain. It was an indemnity condition. I cannot discard the 36 Couples. With the hope that they will come to attend my family in the proper way, I have always embraced them with love. You should not be critical of them, for Satan tries to attack in that way.

If you can surpass the national level of heart and exhibit the love which Satan must surrender to, then everything will be completed. I have asked a famous scholar of the U.S. Constitution to make a draft of a Constitution for the Heavenly Kingdom. Such a time is now at hand.

Because we are so close to the realization of God's providence, you should understand how important and precious your position is; this is the moment you should correct your way of life. In our lives from now on, we must not repeat the failures of the past, but should press forward successfully to fulfill God's will. That is my hope. Now let us pray, raising our hearts to heaven.

Beloved, precious Father in heaven,

Throughout eons of history, You have established many religions in order to liberate Your grieving heart. By sacrificing many faithful central figures, You have been proceeding toward the ultimate victory of Your love. When I contemplate this history and how much indemnity was paid and how many people suffered, I feel very sorry for heaven.

You have prepared things so that we can welcome the new era. Let this Unification movement flourish on the earth. You made it possible, Heavenly Father, for Reverend Moon to come on the earth and disclose to us today these crucial words. Let us understand this message. We are grateful for You, and for this great world, and we show it by raising both our hands. We have pledged and we pledge again to march forward at the risk of our lives on any battlefield for the sake of Your will. We sincerely ask You, Father, to receive this, our resolution, with joy.

Here, representatives of many nations have gathered, beyond their own nationalities. Please guide and govern those here. You made us unite centering upon heavenly love, and You have melted together natural enemies and have been developing the sphere of love. Now we understand all these things. So we have pledged to You not to take any action which opposes the tradition of Your will, no matter what circumstances we are put in. We are grateful for the fact that we could pledge this. And please continue to encourage us so that we can become people who press on despite any persecution. We pledge to go forward effectively using our time remaining until we usher in the ideal world of Your will.

I sincerely ask You to guide us in the direction of Your will so that we can follow it unerringly. I sincerely ask this, and offer this prayer in the name of True Parents. Amen.

## **Chapter 36**

### **Three Spiritual Children as a Foundation for a Family**

**May 13, 1983 -- Korea**

One thing I am really concerned about today is the decline in religious life. Such a decline tends to occur when practical matters become more important for you. I worry very much about that. If you focus only on external activities, your religious life weakens. If your religious life declines, then you will have absolutely no assistance from the spirit world, and eventually, you will have no relationship with the spirit world, either. It is essential for you to seek spiritual assistance whenever you gather together.

According to the principle of creation, the relationship between the spirit world and the physical world is like the relationship between parents and children. This is true of me, also. Living such a life as this, I always go to a quiet place to prepare myself internally. In this way we are training to return to the course of the original mind at any time in a 24-hour day. Whenever I catch a big fish, I assume that the fish was from God and I immediately offer it to Him. I am always setting such conditions. This is the essence of the religious life.

We are fighting against Satan. We must constantly be equipping our- selves in this fight by checking our original motivation. You need - time to pray and practice correcting the original motivation. One thing is very clear, whether from the viewpoint of the Principle or traditional religious reasoning: we are all fallen people. Therefore, the Hegelian dialectic is wrong. Hegel, seeing the conflict between the conscience and the ego centered or physical mind, concluded that such a "struggle" existed from the very beginning. He assumed that from the beginning, there was struggle in God's created world. He never understood the concept of the fall.

This became the fundamental problem: The Hegelian dialectic never presupposed an original humanity existing before the fall. But the reality is that the conflict between the conscience and physical mind came about because of the fall, and therefore, the fall was the origin of struggle. In the beginning, there was no contradictory nature within humankind. After the fall, however, it has become essential for us to lead a religious life in order to maintain the course of the original mind and attain the original standard of God. You must remember the concept of the fall.

Within each individual the conscience and the physical mind constantly struggle. The ultimate extension of these two struggling powers is the free world and the communistic world, and also spiritualism and materialism.

Since human history began with the fall, we must return to the standard of the original person who has perfect unity between mind and body. Only with such absolute and eternal unity can the spiritual world unite completely with the earthly world.

From the standpoint of the Principle, mankind originally was supposed to stand at the center of God's heart, with 'absolute unity between mind and body. Once you are in the core' of God's heart there can be no deviation' or disunity between mind and body. Therefore, you need to remember the concept of the fall, and you have to realize that you are living in the midst of the fallen realm. Then, when the time is right, you have to separate from the fallen realm, starting at the individual level, advancing to the level of the family, the clan, the race, the nation, and eventually the world. By separating from the fallen world at each level, each one of you must establish this absolute foundation as a tradition. Otherwise, you will encounter big problems in the future.

Because this world is the fallen realm, we cannot reach God through a worldly lifestyle. More than 80 percent of our lives is a reflection of the satanic way of life. In order to return to the original position, we must realize what our nature is and examine to what degree we have become accustomed to that fallen way of life. Then, we must deny the fallen way of life. Otherwise, we may face the destruction of our own life. Do you follow me?

In this world, all relationships -- such as relationships among brothers and sisters, parents and children, and among nations -- have been established as a result of the fall. Relationships among children, having been established on the foundation of the fallen lineage, have expanded to family relationships and then to clan, tribe and nation. This is why we must think about spiritual children.

### ***The absolute necessity of three spiritual children***

What is the meaning of "spiritual children"? They signify the three supporting archangels.

Since Adam and Eve could not gain the cooperation and support from the three archangels, Lucifer, Michael and Gabriel, the human fall took place. We must indemnify this failure. Accordingly, three spiritual children symbolize the three archangels. They must be in the position to serve Adam even at the risk of their lives. You are in the position of Adam and Eve toward your spiritual children. Spiritual children should create a realm of heart and love in which they could even give their lives, without regret, for the spiritual parent. They should be educated so they can establish such a relationship.

The three archangels were created to educate Adam and Eve until these children of God were heartistically mature enough to become a family. Following the marriage of Adam and Eve, the archangels could have been given permission to marry. However, the archangel known as Lucifer fell before that happened and brought about the destruction of God's ideal.

In order to indemnify Adam's failure to unite with the three archangels, you must first secure a position above that from which heavenly law was violated, and then gain three spiritual children who can give their lives for you. Only in this way, can restoration of heart be completed. Do you understand?

It is because of this restoration process that three disciples of Jesus should have been ready to die for Jesus' sake. Jesus was like their parent; they were like his three spiritual children or archangels.

An archangel has no right to have children, but, because of the fall, man came to be a child of archangelic lineage, inseparable from Satan. Therefore, in order to regain the original position, heaven allows man to have spiritual children, even though he is in the position of archangelic son. This is known as Abel's course.

So, first of all, three archangels need to maintain a standard of unity with you, and support you in preparation for your Blessing. This is why you cannot conduct your life in the Unification Church without three spiritual children. Do you follow me?

Without three spiritual children, you cannot stand in the position of having complete support from three archangels; your position remains in the fallen realm and you are liable to Satan's claim at any moment. Also, the three archangels should attend Adam and Eve for three years, in such total unity that they would sacrifice everything to see the day of your Blessing. When that three-year period is over, Adam should receive God's approval and say to the archangels, with God's heart, "Please let me receive the Blessing with my spouse-to-be, since I have grown to maturity." This is the principle of the Unification Church. It is logical that you cannot receive the Blessing without three spiritual children; it is absolutely impermissible. Whoever becomes married without three spiritual children will remain in the fallen realm.

Good times have come. You can witness even by giving things of the creation to people. When Jacob came back to Esau, he gave money, things of the creation -- everything -- and then he subjugated Esau. So we, too, can subjugate people and lead them to heaven, using things of the creation horizontally. For this reason, we will be materially blessed. The Unification Church will receive such blessings that it will become the richest in the world. If you only try to become the richest person in Japan, for example, the spiritual world will not help you at all. But if you are convinced of this theory, and practice it to bring many people to heaven, you will become the richest person in the world! Unless this theory is mistaken, you will become, regardless of any opposition, the best. in the world. Whatever I do is in the practice of the standards of this principle.

Therefore, is it absolutely necessary to have spiritual children, or not? In the future, opposition and persecution will be over; grandfathers will become grandsons, fathers will be sons, sons will be fathers. Everything will be completely reversed. Different people will be masters. Satan, who was always pulling humankind to his side, will be separated from humankind forever. Instead, people will turn to God and enter His Kingdom.

In order to see this accomplished, you have to undergo the reverse course, which is called indemnity, and establish an impenetrable wall of heavenly logic to protect you and separate you from Satan. After that you can force Satan to retreat. This is the truth in the course of restoration; Therefore, without three spiritual children you cannot receive the Blessing and conduct your life. If this is not fulfilled yet, you must correct your situation right away; you must do it within seven years.

After you are married, three archangels will want to support you as a couple; Up to that point, the three archangels, spiritual children, have been supporting an individual, but not a couple or a family. To create a foundation for that support, a three-year period is necessary. Do you follow me?

### ***The seven-year period for establishing a family***

After you establish that foundation, a couple can become one, so that the three spiritual children of each spouse also become as one. This creates a foundation of eight people. The people in the position of archangels can thus fulfill the condition whereby they become one with the parents. On this foundation, the eight members of Adam's family (Adam and Eve and their three sons with their wives) will restore the tradition of Adam's direct lineage.

A man and a woman who have spiritual children are matched, and achieve the standard of being one in true love. Then they should reach a position free of any spirit of rebellion against God, even though their lives might have to be sacrificed for God. Reaching such a position, they can enter the true realm of life with God, and the three archangels will enter the realm of God's adopted children.

The eight members of Adam's family fell into Satan's realm as his direct sons. Therefore, all fallen people have had the wrong blood lineage, and cannot be accepted as children in God's lineage. They can reach only the position of adopted child. Children in the realm of adoption must unite with their parents at the top of the growth stage, and have to climb up from there for seven years. You have not reached the level of perfection, yet. To enter God's direct dominion, you must pass through the level of perfection; this is the teaching of the Principle. Adam's family fell from the top of the growth stage; therefore, you should climb beyond that level as a family. This has become the seven-year period for setting up your family.

How can you become an adopted child? First, you should become absolutely one with Adam and Eve, and not rebel against the Principle. Then, you must establish the standard of giving the whole value of your existence to Adam and Eve. That is how you enter the realm of adopted child and, at the same time, secure the realm of husband and wife before the fall. Do you follow me?

Because Adam's family fell, the entire world also fell. For this reason, you should make a family which is united with spiritual parents and which lives for the sake of world restoration. The fall involved a family of eight, which were taken by Satan into a realm outside of the Principle. When spiritual parents and spiritual children become one and climb back up on the reverse course, the descendants of the fallen archangel will be separated from the descendants of archangels in the position of adopted children. The former will decline and the latter will prosper.

These eight people must become one. This is the Principle. Do you understand?

Having become one, you should not decline but should go the way of sacrifice for the sake of world restoration. Satan fell by sacrificing others around him for his own sake; but you should sacrifice yourselves for the sake of world salvation. Satan fell, centering around himself, and destroyed the world. Therefore, you should sacrifice yourselves and save the world instead. It is logical, isn't it? Do you follow me? This principle is unshakable and unchangeable. As the family of eight members is reorganized, the world will be divided into two: the world of fallen families and the world of restored families.

### ***How to attend a child***

After that, what should these spiritual children anticipate? They should long for the coming of the baby of their spiritual parents, as if they were waiting for the Lord of the Second Coming. Do you understand? These spiritual children should not be worried about anything. The only thing they should long for is that their spiritual parents will bear and deliver a child. They should respect and revere the true child even while it is still in the mother's womb. Archangels were created to respect, inform and support Adam and Eve. From the time the child is conceived, spiritual children should love and revere it more than their own life, longing for the day of its birth with the highest standard and greatest hope of their lives.

In addition, after the birth, unless the spiritual children dedicate all their resources to the child and serve the child, archangel-level ownership cannot be restored. Why did three wise men from the East visit Jesus at his birth? As the minimum condition for Jesus to be connected with the standard of the world, men of high spirit came and offered gifts to him. These wise men were the ones who had longed for the Savior even before Jesus was conceived. Once they found out about his birth, they sacrificed everything and traveled any distance so that they could attend him. Thus, the appearance of the three wise men from the East is in accordance with the Principle.

Even Jesus, who was followed by three main disciples, had to walk this path, regardless of life or death, because of this principle of spiritual children. Since people have not comprehended this

principle so far, Satan has been dominating this world, bringing all things of creation into disgrace. Thus, the archangel who did not properly love Adam and Eve and never loved any child of theirs is Satan himself. In order to restore an archangelic realm, spiritual children should love Adam and Eve, who are spiritual parents, and their child, even when it is still in the mother's womb. After the baby is born, the spiritual children should continue being responsible to Adam and Eve's children until the day of their own marriage. This is the way of the Principle. For example, in my own family, it is not I who should educate my children. Three families should take care of my children.

The birth of the child of your spiritual parents carries a great joy and hope worth more than the entire universe. You should welcome the event with as much joy as you ever felt at any success you ever had. As the years go by, you should watch that child grow up and be married, and then help him or her to settle. By fulfilling all these conditions, you will be completely separated from Satan, centered on the standard of perfection, because you are fulfilling the condition that the archangel could not fulfill, namely, to truly love Adam and to love Cain and Abel. There is no other way to make Satan turn around.

You always talk about restoration through indemnity, but when will you have achieved that restoration? Only by following the principle centered on the family level which I have just explained. Therefore, spiritual children are absolutely necessary. Do you follow me? For this principle, I have given my life. I have been fighting to make the spirit of our tradition reach the standard of national tradition and even beyond. I have been fighting to implant this tradition in all nations of the world. This is what I was doing in the third seven-year course. Do you follow me?

Since I have completed the Blessing of 6,000 Couples, Satan cannot oppose the Unification Church in the world. From the spiritual viewpoint, ancestors of all nations surely went through great difficulties to arrive at this point where so many could have been blessed. However, some who received the Blessing may think, "I hope that I can get married and have a family so that I can enjoy a happy life." But I tell you, it can never happen this way. There still remain the evil and tragic foundations and traditions which Satan has established throughout human history. Racial discrimination, family breakdown, separation between parents and children, vandalism -- these are among the many problems you have to digest.

You yourselves should establish a new tradition in Africa and other parts of the world as missionaries from the Eve nation of Japan. These are not merely my own words. It conforms to the viewpoint of the Principle. Setting new traditions cannot be done by one person; a nation representing Eve's position is necessary. Even though you are fulfilling important missions right now, it is wrong for you to think you are great. You cannot be arrogant about the help you receive from the spiritual world. Rather, you should be grateful. You should work to fulfill the condition that the Eve nation must meet, with the attitude of a little girl. Regardless of the persecution and tribulation you encounter along the way as long as you uphold the spirit of this tradition, any nation that opposes you will be divided. Everything that faces you will be divided into a Cain side and an Abel side, because God is working directly with you.

The United States is no exception; it is now divided over me. The world is divided into two parts as well. One is standing for me and the other against me. Sooner or later, the satanic side will decline and God's side will prosper.

### ***Don't think of ownership***

We can surpass the level from which Adam and Eve fell, centered on the fallen archangel, by serving and uniting with true children. This involves passing through seven years to reach the realm of heavenly direct dominion. During this period you must work. But even when that level is surpassed,

Adam and Eve still have to restore the individual, the family, the clan, the race, the nation and the world, as one connected body of spiritual children. In this way, each blessed family restores the world. Until each family restores the world, they must continue to sacrifice.

During my third seven-year course I expanded the realm of restoration for all of you to family, clan, race, nation and world, creating a representative, worldwide foundation for total indemnification. By faithfully serving and uniting with True Parents, as our adopted spiritual children, you have to persevere until you reach the worldwide level. When the world stops opposing us, we can surpass the completion stage at the worldwide level. Until then, you cannot settle down. You cannot avoid involvement in the wilderness course we are going through. Now is not the time to settle in Canaan, with our own nation. In this sense, we must have no concept of ownership.

Every single thing in the world must be authorized by God before anyone can own it. First God owns it, then it is bequeathed to the True Parents, and after that, you may inherit it from the True Parents

We have not yet restored one nation. We are wandering like unified soldiers in search of one nation. Unless this goal is achieved, there is no such thing as individual property or individual right of ownership.

Take the Israelites as an example. Until all 12 tribes gained the foundation to restore Canaan, they could not claim any portions of land. In the realm of restoration through indemnity, the side of Cain has been developed by sacrificing Abel. But now it is Cain who must sacrifice, to enable the realm of Abel to be established. In other words, the realm of Cain has to support the realm of Abel. This is a different era.

In this manner you must support the elder Korean families. As they receive support, they can support me. You cannot bring everything directly to me. The Israelites first brought all their disputes for Moses to settle directly. When it became too much, he chose elders to assist him. It is a heavenly rule: the way of the Principle is to serve me by serving the elder Korean families. Accordingly, I sent many of the 36 Couples to the United States so that everybody in the world could inherit the heavenly tradition through them. From now on you must establish new heavenly traditions in the United States.

The blessed couples with spiritual children have to set up the standard of indemnity for the world. You have to do this by yourselves as your five percent portion of responsibility.

### ***Home church is our link***

I have already become a living plant connecting everything from the root through the trunk to the tips of the stems. Therefore, the seedling will quickly grow into a tree. Although similar trees are in the vicinity of this original living tree, we need a system to link all those trees from the one original root through the trunk to the tips of the branches. We call such an organization home church. In this sense, without home church, we cannot be connected to the original tree. Anyone unable to connect to the original tree cannot be connected to the Kingdom of Heaven. Through this reasoning, we reach the conclusion that without home church, we cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

I have spent my whole life setting up this indemnity condition for the world. I have already paid 95 percent. As you pay your five percent, the parent-child relationship is set up. Only at this stage can your names be entered into the register of the Kingdom of Heaven; after you go to the spiritual world is not the time to do it.

Admission into the registry of the Kingdom of Heaven should be decided centered on Adam's completed tribe on the earth. No foundation for that registration has yet been established. Therefore,

we have to prepare quickly the foundation for registration into the Kingdom of Heaven on the global level. Otherwise the world will be destroyed. Have you registered already? From now on I must establish the heavenly constitution precisely. Many problems still remain, so I am struggling internally for the world and I have no time to rest.

The purpose of the underground tunnel which I have proposed to link Korea and Japan is to connect the fortune of Japan to an eternal, unlimited course. Otherwise Japan cannot transcend the limitations of being an island nation. If we connect Japan to the Korean peninsula, Japan can be united with the continent. One might call it the marriage of Asia.

Three Asian archangels need to become like brothers and sisters centered on parents in the Asian area. It is obvious that Western civilization is following the Oriental. After the Western nations become like three united brothers under their parents, the worldwide family of eight, the ideal foundation for the Messiah, will be firmly established. At last we will finish the course, and Adam's utopia, the ultimate ideal on the earth, will be one with the heart of Heavenly Father.

Everything needed to be done on earth will be accomplished and will connect directly to the Kingdom of Heaven, developing into the ideal Kingdom of Heaven on the earth. We must go this way, even at the sacrifice of everything. If you have any concept of preference for any one nation or race you cannot do anything. You have to offer to Heavenly Father all the results of your direct fight against Satan.

When did you say goodbye to Satan? When did you commit yourself in every sense to the building of the ideal family? You did not think spiritual children were so important, did you? From now on you have to love your spiritual children more than your real children.

## **Chapter 37**

### **Parents, Children and the World Centered Upon Oneself**

**June 5, 1983 -- Tarrytown, New York**

There are many people living on the earth and many kinds of relationships among them. There are many nations, but there is no true unity among them. There are many people within each nation, but they have not united. You don't see total unity within your family, and even within yourself there is not total oneness. This is the present reality that we face. No matter where we look, we see that unity is lacking.

Oneness is a difficult goal to achieve. Distrust, disobedience and disharmony surround us. There is both good and evil in our fluctuating, volatile environment.

However, it is undeniable that each person is pursuing something higher than merely staying alive. There is a drive in people's hearts to pursue their original mind's goal and reach some ideal state. What is that ultimate destination toward which we all strive?

Let us look at ourselves first. Within each individual there is a battle raging between his mind and his body. Where in this universe can we find something solid and reliable? We depend upon certain things, such as our family and nation, our friends and loved ones, but ultimately we find a certain inability to trust. The self cannot completely rely even on its mind and body. The nation and world are far away from the self; even parents, husband and wife are far away from the self. The basic problem of one's life can only be solved within oneself. The solution to world harmony and unity must be sought within the self first. That is the closest place to start.

The goal of the world is to move from the present situation of disharmony to a world of harmony and unity. Likewise, the goal of each nation is also harmony and unity. Every different level in the universe is seeking after that point of harmony, which can be established only through the individual. Therefore, each individual is ultimately the key to the harmony and unity of the universe. Without this key, any discussion about unity is just wishful thinking and empty talk.

In order to measure things, we need an established scale, one which was created from an original standard. Likewise, as individuals, we need some original scale to measure ourselves. No matter how proud a person may be of himself, if he does not conform to the true model, he is not within the true standard. This scale should have universal meaning and apply everywhere. Is there such a standard for mankind?

Is it easy to control and discipline yourself? Your mind usually wants to go in a direction different from your body. There is an Oriental saying that a mountain remains forever but the human mind changes from morning to night. If the human mind fluctuates so much, where can we find a point of unity? There can be no single stationary position if everyone is moving around constantly.

### ***Holy men are human***

Let us consider the holy men of history, such as Jesus, or Buddha or Confucius. What kind of personalities did they have? These people had a certain stability of mind and body, while ordinary people were always divided.

But even a saint is never absolutely immobile or stationary. People may think that Jesus was a rock who never moved, but Jesus was a human being. As a man, was he totally indifferent to the attraction between men and women? There is always the force of electricity pulling plus and minus toward each other. Do you think Jesus felt some sensation when he looked at a woman? Jesus' feet were firmly anchored but I'm sure his body was turning toward that attraction! However, he was never affected so much that he moved his feet from their right foundation. When an ordinary person feels temptation he usually just jumps into it, but the saints are different. Although a saint may be pulled around somewhat, his feet never budge.

However holy a person may be, he is always bound by his human character and vulnerability. All the saints, including Jesus, began with certain principles. During their own period of instability, they learned to deal with temptation and reasoned out their standards, until finally they had rock-like foundations within themselves. A saint recognizes himself as a human being but he shapes his human character inside the palace of the universe. It is only within that most holy and precious palace that a man and woman should meet in love.

The American way is very practical and easy, but can a man and woman meet there according to the original standard? Every day there are millions of people kissing enthusiastically, but what is a true kiss? Do you think we need the model of a true kiss? Saints are the people who give the world the model of loving and kissing, and the rest of the world should measure themselves against their standard. But people of the fallen world never even think about such a standard. We must come to the conclusion, however, that in order to achieve the ideal world of which all people dream, there must be some standard or scale to guide us.

No individual is capable of achieving such a standard all alone. Therefore, God, who is the Creator and the first cause, must be able to send such a standard to the earth. This is His responsibility. It has been God's plan to send an absolute standard to mankind; thus, throughout history, people have shared the expectation of a Messiah figure. This model man must come from God and raise up a

model woman, and together they can show to the world. a model love. When you think of it in this fashion, the concept of a Messiah becomes easy to relate to.

Even if a man and woman think they have ideal love, they are still acting according to their own thinking and standards. Will that fit into God's standard of model love? God's desire is for every man and woman on earth to love each other according to His original pattern of true love. If God's desire were fulfilled, that pattern would become the: central love of the universe. Certainly, every man and woman desire to achieve true love, and God's desire for them is the same. So, there must be one central love which is the scale or model for all people.

There can be no true love between people alone; God must also play a role in it. Can you women declare that you have a true woman's love? Can any of you men declare you have a true man's love? Whether you live a religious way of life or not, if you are living with true love, then you have already achieved the highest goal of any religion. If any two people with such love join together centered upon God, then that couple is a perfectly consummated couple. Such a man and woman can go anywhere in the universe without limitation.

### ***True love is the point***

Although people speak of becoming holy and noble, everything good comes down to the achievement of true love. Once that happens, all the problems of the world are solved. It is a rather dramatic declaration to say that the only thing we need is for men and women to achieve true love. Can this be more important than worship and religion? Ask God whether or not this is correct. He would reply that He is ecstatic over such a declaration and that no greater sermon could be given to you.

A noble man and woman are necessary for the sake of making a noble couple. We need a noble couple in order to achieve God's noble love. What good is God's love to you? When you achieve God's love, you become the center of God's universe. Every line must go through the center, so everything in the universe would be connected to the person connected with God.

Should money have the central role in the universe? Should authority, or knowledge? The greatest tragedy we can witness in the world today is people selling love to acquire money, power or knowledge. Could you buy the love of God even if you owned the whole universe? Would you like to buy the love of God if it were for sale? The essential point here is that what people are pursuing is actually the love of God, and they would go all out to obtain it. The true teaching must emphasize not the trappings of religion but the love of God; thus, the ultimate pursuit of people is the love of God.

Why do we seek religion, then? It is because religion is the only avenue we have to find the love of God. You did not join the Unification Church to pursue religion per se, but to reach the love of God. What kind of unification are we talking about here? We are pursuing unity of men and women, centered upon and grafted into the love of God. We are talking about the unification of love, and that is the highest possible religion we can pursue. With such a goal, there is nothing we cannot sacrifice to get there. Whatever difficulty we encounter, we will not be stopped.

Men and women seek each other for the same purpose -- they are seeking the love of God. Let us logically organize our thinking: our goal in life is not a family, or even a nation or world. Our goal is to go beyond all of those things and reach the love of God. Has your mind been unwavering and firmly fixed on that goal, or were you unsure? Are you men and women of such perfection?

### ***Mind-body unity***

Unity of mind and body is always the fundamental necessity, and only the power of love can achieve it. When you understand that true love is your goal and you focus everything in pursuit of it, then at that point mind and body are working together.

Especially in the teenage years, the mind and body are looking for one thing -- love. When you have a love nose, it picks up the mysterious smell of love. Love has a special taste in your mouth, and love ears want to hear the fascinating sound of love all the time. When you have a love hand, you want to touch love forever. Love power alone lasts for eternity. A teenager in love is dreamy eyed; he or she wants to interpret everything about the loved one in a good way. Everything in love is tasty and turns into joy. Love can digest any ugliness or tastelessness. Love is brave and mysterious and wonderful. All the adjectives in the dictionary cannot describe love. Men and women are always shooting bullets of love at one another. With love bullets, not only the bullets but also the rifle is moving into the heart of the target! Have you ever seen such a gun?

Love, particularly your first love, has a wonderful power. Your first impression when you open your eyes of love can never be erased. So in that sense, your first love should be your most sacred and holy experience. The person who can achieve true love as his first love can truly understand heaven. It is most important that young people fit their first love into God's model love.

The Unification movement has the goal of conforming to the model love of God, and in that spirit our marriages become absolutely important. The sacrificial love of international marriage crystallizes this attitude toward love. While we are pursuing that goal, the world thinks we are crazy people. But only model love will continue eternally.

Evaluate yourself in this light and see how imperfect you are. Your mind and body are always trying to deceive each other, so before you can ask God for salvation, you have to clean up yourself. You must bring your mind and body together, Should you achieve that unity centering upon your mind or your body? Even though your mind may fluctuate, the mind must become subject over the body. It is the only way you can become an ideal man or woman. Only an ideal man or woman can be a bridge to reach out to God.

Thus, you can say that for this purpose you can give up anything. Does it sound reasonable? Would you follow this road only because I say so, or is your original mind already telling you this is the way to go?

We must understand why the mind and body are separated in the first place. We were not born out of our own will; our lives were simply given to us by our Creator, We may ask God, "Why couldn't You ensure that mind and body would become one when we came to the world?" Since Almighty God created us, how could this separation come about? It is clear that some accident occurred before men could reach their goal.

### ***Discipline your heart***

Why do men and women have to wait and discipline themselves instead of just jumping into love whenever they feel like it? We know that the creation goes through a certain period of growth. Therefore, a child's love cannot be consummated as soon as he is born; he must grow into the fullest realization of love.

Some accident occurred during the period of growth, an accident of love. We have an explanation of the whole process of that accident of love. We know that love is the supreme power, and therefore, the consequences of any accident with it would have been very grave. God gave man and woman a commandment during their growth period, specifying that they should not do certain things. Was it a

commandment for eternity, or only for a certain period of time? If the commandment applied for eternity, then the purpose of creation would have been nullified, but this was not the case.

In unlocking the problems of the universe, I realized that the greatest discovery was the truth about the fall of man. If the forbidden fruit was a literal apple or pear which God placed right in the middle of the Garden of Eden, then God's plan must have been imperfect. This was not the case. Rather, I have brought a revolutionary declaration to the world that the forbidden "fruit" was a symbol of love between man and woman. From love can spring either good fruit or evil fruit; therefore, the tree was described as one. of the knowledge of good and evil.

Love is the point of judgment for humankind. What is the love that God can relate to? God wanted Adam and Eve to grow into the full sensation of love -- for Adam to discover all of a sudden that Eve was not just a sister but a woman; and for Eve to discover that Adam was not just a brother but a man. In the sensation of love, Adam and Eve's separate mind and bodies could work together and experience the electricity of touching each other.

Once Adam and Eve realized the explosion of their love, the entire universe would have been like one beautiful, fragrant flower garden. They would feel everything echoing their love. When that electrifying sensation came to God, then He would be pulled to them and His entire creation would have been activated with love. God was supposed to be the matchmaker, bringing Adam and Eve together in the explosion of love.

In the ensuing explosion of love all three of them would be consumed! The important thing is that there be no foreign element there -- that men and women be pure when they consummate their first love. Then they become the core of the universe. This core would be so powerful that everything else would be pulled into it, and even God would be a prisoner. Children would be multiplied from that core and it would continue to grow and grow. From a family the core would grow into a tribe, then a nation and a world. How wonderful a world it is, when the universe echoes the love of the core. That is the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. That is the true world.

### ***The misuse of love***

At this time in history 1, Reverend Moon, am declaring to the world that the fall of man was a misuse of love. This is the greatest of all declarations because it hits the core of evil. It is also a most logical and correct diagnosis, making possible the correct prescription for treatment. Analyzing an event from 6,000 years ago was not easy, and it had to be done step by step. In the events of the fall, the love core was not achieved. Instead, the opposite, evil result came into being, bringing division and perverted love. This resulted in not only denial of God, but denial of parents, of men and women. Human civilization sunk below the level of animals. In this world, there has been no ideal because no individual has had the correct diagnosis and could not find the proper prescription to achieve a cure for sin. People have lived in great confusion, and many even think that God is dead. Thus, they think it is futile to think about life after death or any ideal human society. This world is like a jungle, where all sense of direction disappears.

The only way to see the problem clearly is to step out of the confusion and look at it from the position of God. Many past saints sought answers but still got lost in the labyrinth, unable to find solutions. This world needs a declaration from a higher level, where the true perspective can be found.

Original love is far greater than worldly love. In this world, one man has stood up and said, "Love me more than you love anyone else in the world." Anyone who could make such a statement must be the most extraordinary man in history. What that man is actually saying is that you must remove yourself from this world and find God's viewpoint in order to make a new beginning. If you tell God that you

want to make a new start from the original point and make a new world, then He will say, "Welcome, my child! I have been waiting for you. I need that kind of solution for this world." So God would gladly respond to such a person. But of all the saints and holy people, only one man made that bold declaration. Jesus knew God as a personal God of heart, and he represented that love to the world, saying, "Love me more than anyone or anything else." Jesus' position was absolutely extraordinary. God welcomed Jesus' entry into the world, but Satan held him back.

There is a certain logic to Satan's ways. He claimed before God, "What Jesus says is correct, but I am originally Your creation, too, and I deserve Your love. You cannot completely deny me because I occupy a certain position in the universe, too. Regardless of right or wrong, I loved this world first so I have a certain right to claim it. Anyone who wants to take this world away from me must first love me more than I have loved this world." Satan will also point out that all the children of the world are born in his lineage, so that anyone who wants to take the world back must create a new lineage.

### ***Jesus' lineage unstained***

Why was Jesus' family tree described in detail in the Bible? It is important to reveal God's effort to create an unstained lineage out of which Jesus could be born. God separated Cain and Abel to purify the blood lineage. The struggle of Esau and Jacob, and the special situation of Tamar are all significant. The Bible records some things which seem to be irregular, but it was necessary so that the satanic lineage could be liquidated, allowing a new ancestor to emerge

It is nearly impossible to sort out all this mixed up history. Only in the Unification theology can you find an explanation of all these tangled events, as well as a solution. You' are most fortunate to be able to inherit such a truth, one that penetrates to the core of the world's problems.

In order to consummate our love, we must deny the world and love God and the True Parents more than anything. Even though you want to do this, Satan will be trying to hold you back, so you have to know how to separate from him. The Abels who are going to pioneer a new history must set the standard of loving the fallen archangel with selflessness; otherwise he will not release you.

This world needs the Messiah to bring it life; he must come to eliminate all fallen situations. Judaism began the task of preparing the world to receive the Messiah; in fact, the central teaching of Judaism is the coming of the Messiah. God carved out a chosen people within the world -- the place where the Messiah was supposed to come. When the chosen people of Israel united completely with the Messiah, that core was supposed to move into another part of the world -- Rome. The Israelites were expected to digest Rome with God's love. Jesus' role as the Messiah was to embrace and digest the chosen people with love.

The Messiah came as a man. According to the Bible, Eve was made out of Adam's rib, meaning after the pattern of Adam. In the same manner, the Messiah was to have selected one woman from the fallen women of the world and recreate her as the original Eve. Until such a day, no woman could be truly eligible to be married. That is why the Bible implies that all women are being prepared for the position of a bride.

The Messiah and his bride were to be united as a God-centered couple. Where was that supposed to happen? Within the chosen nation. Did that occur in Israel? It was the chief priests who persecuted Jesus the most, instead of helping him to find his bride.

The crucifixion prevented God from accomplishing all these things, so now everything must be reenacted on the foundation of Christianity. The central expectation of Christianity has been the coming of the Messiah. As a Christian nation, America's power after World War II was so great that it

could affect the entire world. That was a unique historical time, but unaware of what God was offering them, Americans lost the opportunity to block the development of communism. The years after World War 11 should have seen the end of the satanic era and the manifestation of the Messiah in the Orient.

### ***We should have been accepted***

The relationship of Rome and Israel has been reenacted in the 20th century between America and Korea. Two thousand years ago, Rome was outside the sphere of the chosen people, but America's position today is within the sphere of the chosen people of Christianity. If the Unification Church had been accepted by the chosen people, the communist world could have been conquered long ago. But, like Moses in the past, the Unification Church was rejected by the chosen people -- Christianity. It had to go through the wilderness for 40 years and then return to Christianity, which is Canaan. This is precisely the history of the Unification Church.

From that wilderness, we have come to the United States because this is where the victory must finally be won. Even though Satan has claimed so much territory in this country, we must turn it around. We must restore this nation by love. Even though other Christians have treated us as their enemies, we must love them more than anyone ever has. Eventually that love will win out.

Now we are in the 37th year, with three more to go. The world situation is becoming so desperate that people are starting to realize that only the Unification movement has any answers. At first they persecuted us, but now people realize that we have a vision and devotion and they are beginning to rediscover us. Furthermore, the Unification movement has such a complete understanding and world view that even the communist world knows it cannot surpass it. The free world, looking for answers, has rejected communism; they are looking at the Unification Church now.

American young people have tried all kinds of things -- free sex, drugs, the hippie culture, even homosexuality -- looking for true joy, but they have not been able to find what they were searching for. Now this one funny group called Moonies is emerging, made of people who don't use drugs or practice free sex, who don't have many luxuries. These Moonies are not confused or depressed but are happy. They have a clear goal and are working hard.

### ***Our marriages work***

In American society where people pick their own spouses, half of the marriages end in divorce. The Moonies, on the other hand, may have husbands or wives who don't even speak the same language, but they have happy marriages. When people compare modern youth with the couples of the Unification Church, they see a tremendous difference. You are not primarily pursuing fun for yourselves but are living a sacrificial life for the sake of other people -- helping your elders and trying to create harmonious societies in your home church areas.

They are looking at you and thinking, "Such strange people." Then it hits them that, according to the standards of the world, the strangest person is God; therefore, you strange people must be God's people.

It is only a matter of time before Americans realize that they have to turn to the Unification movement for answers. Young people will come in an avalanche to support me and apologize for their parents' opposition to me. They will quote the Divine Principle and protest that I am responsible to lead them into Canaan; they will point out that even though one generation of Israelites failed God in the wilderness, He still took the second generation into Canaan. I will have to surrender to such protests. Before such a situation occurs, however, let us go out and help everyone to come in. If you wait until

the avalanche descends, people will accuse the Moonies of not doing enough and being weak; they will kick you out and help me themselves. You cannot stand still as a small handful of people; everyone must grow and develop God's nation and world. Then latecomers will have no foundation to accuse you. You have to deserve the blessing that I have reserved for you. In the future, even if you long to do the fund raising and witnessing that you avoid now, those who come later will do them in your place.

Dr. Durst reported to me that in his recent travels around the country, the media and officials seemed to have changed and are much more receptive to learning about our movement. However, those people have not actually changed; the difference is that while they used to wear blinders when looking at us, they are now looking more clearly. They have thrown away those blinders and can see who is espousing good and who is evil; all of a sudden the Moonies seem to look very good.

The world is a very muddy place now and people of good conscience are like fish searching for a home in cleaner water. The only clean environment they will find is within the Unification movement. Therefore, it is inevitable that the conscientious, thoughtful young people of America will come to our doors in an avalanche. You can grab any good looking, successful man on the street and confront him, "Do you have true confidence about such confidence. Only the Moonies have that confidence in themselves, their families, their nation and the future.

I never give directions to you blindly. I always pay great attention to timing, and our offensive has begun. The spiritual weapons we are using are not weak, but powerful. This is a most exciting time.

### ***The providential year of 1948***

A great dawn is coming to the world. The most precious opportunity God gave to the world was the period from 1945-1948. In 1948 Korea regained its independence; it was God's plan that the Unification movement also achieve independence in that year. In 1948, Israel became independent as well. Providentially, America's awakening should also have been complete in that year so that dispensational events could have spread like a forest fire all over the world. Since the True Parents have appeared, all people and all nations have the right to be brothers and sisters.

Unprecedented things happened after World War II. The victorious nations became almost like servants to the conquered nations. History never witnessed the way the United States helped to rebuild Germany and Japan. Today they are leading nations, surpassing even many' of their victors in World War II.

America has become more self-centered and has been declining. Its European allies have been doing the same. If Japan and Germany turn toward self-serving ways, they, too, will start to decline. All the powerful nations are declining according to this principle, but there is one group of people that is rising up. Moonies are rising up because our ideology stresses unselfishness. Our goal is not even one united world on earth, but one united cosmos of earth and spirit world. This is why the spirit world is working so hard to assist us.

We have become a tower of strength within the Christian world, pushing communism out of the planet. The free world never liked me in the past, but God is smart. Communism is becoming so strong that the people of the free world are desperate to find an answer and will have to accept me. Because their survival is clearly at stake, they have to follow the Principle. This may have seemed like a dream, but it is actually happening now.

The Unification movement has not only the hope but the power to digest both the communist and Christian worlds. That is why we are most feared by the world. For the first time in 6,000 years, Satan

is trembling, so God must be feeling good, jumping up and down with joy. If Satan tries to sabotage us, God will say, "No sir! This is my property."

The first generation may oppose me, but the second generation will be on God's side. Even children of the communist leaders will eventually rebel against their parents and support me. One thing I know is God, and He and the Moonies will make it.

### ***The Alpha and the Omega***

Human history was mixed up by a man and woman; therefore, the new history will be consummated by men and women. This is the alpha and omega -- men and women. So far, God has not been able to take His true position. True men, true women and true God will consummate their love within the family; this is Unification idealism.

Every individual needs the original condition, which was God, the archangel, Adam, Eve and the world of all things. All these elements existed for the purpose of love. An individual man needs Eve. A woman needs Adam. Would you devote your life to looking for a man or woman, or would you just expect to receive one?

You are the citizens of a nation and part of the world. The problem is that all these elements are linked by Satan-centered love.

Why do we need at least three spiritual children? Finding them is the equivalent of restoring the three archangels. Actually, a family of eight members began the fallen world -- Adam, Eve, three sons and three daughters. You must restore that number through your spiritual children. Three spiritual children represent three sons, and you must elevate them from fallen love to God's love.

Also, you must set a condition to restore all things, which were lost to Satan. Fund raising fulfills that condition. Until we bring the creation from satanic domination to God's side we cannot restore ourselves, since God made the creation before He made Adam and Eve. Because Satan is reluctant to release what he has, it is only by fighting him -- by confronting persecution and rejection -- that we can bring all things to their true owner. Ownership is determined by love. Satan enslaved all things instead of loving them; so, when we love all things we have a right to claim them. Our love must be more intense than Satan's.

We are declaring to Satan that we love mankind and all things more than he does. To demonstrate this, we don't need to bring every single thing back to God's world, but representative seeds. A condition is a seed. To restore yourselves, you need the foundation of all things. If you love all things from the position of original man and woman, then you are elevating yourselves to the position of original Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve failed to love their original archangel; they fell instead. Love should have been initiated by Adam and Eve, not by the archangel. Since the archangel became Satan and claimed Adam and Eve and their posterity, all their descendants are archangelic children. In that sense, when we restore spiritual children, we are restoring the archangel.

### ***Go the formula course***

You must spend three and a half years restoring all things, and three and a half years restoring spiritual children. That is your seven-year course. Unless we fulfill the original formula of loving all things and loving the archangel, we cannot love God. If you resist fund raising, you are resisting the foundation upon which your own body can be recreated. Unless you find your three spiritual children, you are not in a position to say you have loved the archangel. Because you are trying to restore yourself to the original state of man before the fall, you must do all these things.

The ideal is for you to restore a spiritual family of eight members in place of the fallen family of Adam and Eve. Under those circumstances you can be elevated to God's realm. At this point you are not yet outside the physical realm of Satan. Even though you have your family, you must grow into a tribe and nation. You don't know about those areas, so you need the Messiah to guide you to the end;

In 1976, virtually every element in the world was opposing our movement. That situation could be overcome only by love and the desire for their salvation, not by revenge. We created the movie *Inchon* centered on General MacArthur to help revive the spirit of patriotism in America. Likewise, *The Washington Times* was created to help in America's salvation. In these ways we loved the enemies that were persecuting us. Japan was an enemy to Korea and to America. America was an enemy to Germany. We are bringing these enemy nations together centering on love. They are uniting and loving even the greatest enemy of the world, which is communism.

I have penetrated this world, and all my followers should be able to go beyond this secular world, but it cannot be done without setting sufficient conditions. We cannot go this course alone. Before leaving this world, we have to bring members of our Cain family with us. Cain is the elder brother. He was born before you, so you should let him receive the benefit first. Without Cain, you cannot be born.

If your three spiritual children truly support and love you, then you finally have the foundation to be born as true Adam and true Eve. Since the disunity between Adam, Eve and the archangel initiated the fall, your archangels must be united in loving Adam and Eve. There is a certain indemnity price to be paid before I can lead people out of this fallen world. I came out of the fallen world, but had to return and become the center of that world.

### ***Home church is the way***

Our central headquarters rests upon the foundation of the 360-family home church providence. Once you overcome the fallen state, you must return to the fallen world and become master of it through the home church system. When you are successful in four directions in your home church, God will regard it as a complete success that can be expanded onto a worldwide basis. In my era, I did it in the midst of persecution, but times are changing and you will do it in the midst of welcome. After these three years are over, the atmosphere of the world will totally change. Therefore in these three years, we must concretely establish the home church providence. Even though we are doing much mobile work, home church must not be ignored. This is just a special task force mobilization; home church is our land of settlement.

Mobile teams are to hasten the providence by proclaiming the successful foundation of the Unification movement, but ultimately we must gain the victory in the home church providence. I spent 60 years coming to this period, but you are going to do it in seven years or less. My goal is to consummate the home church providence by 1988. When public opinion changes and Americans feel that they need Reverend Moon's guidance for this country, every problem will be solved.

Three spiritual children are essential for several reasons: First of all, you must set a condition to restore the archangel and to love the creation. In this way, you can restore your position as original Adam and Eve. Furthermore, you set a condition of loving the Cain world, including the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament eras. The Old Testament era is that of the tribe; the New Testament era is that of the nation; and our era, the Completed Testament era, is the era of the world.

Moses brought 600,000 Israelites from Egypt to Canaan and Jesus was to bring the chosen people from the nation of Israel to the world, which was Rome. The Unification movement today must bring the world to the universe and spirit world.

In the Old Testament God was called the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. That also signifies the first Adam, second Adam and third Adam. All these are restored by gaining three spiritual children. Without them you cannot consummate your family, even though you receive the Blessing. For that reason Jesus needed three primary disciples. I chose three disciples and blessed them first -- Young Whi Kim, Won Pil Kim and the late Hyo Won Eu. Those three were expanded into 12, covering all directions. Jesus also needed a foundation of 12 which would protect the central home.

It would have been ideal for Jesus to have 12 families surrounding his own central family. This particular process is the same, for you or me. We have to enter the Kingdom of Heaven together with those on the Cain side. Out of the Cain world we pick representatives to fulfill the condition, allowing God to grant us heavenly rights.

This is the restoration process, starting with the parents, children, tribe, society, nation, world and cosmos -- seven stages. This format was horizontally expressed in the chosen nation of Israel. The Messiah was to come to that center, so he would have total freedom within the Jewish cultural sphere. If this foundation had been available for Jesus, within seven years the providence of God would have been consummated. When God's nation was completely established like a rock, then Rome would have crumbled all by itself. Since this did not happen at the time of Jesus, the world level had to be added on to the foundation for the Second Coming of the Lord.

The Messiah has been long awaited by the Christian world and he was meant to have complete freedom of movement in and out of that sphere. Then only seven years would have been needed to reach the goal -- 1945 plus seven makes 1952. By 1952 all the dispensation should have been consummated. However, the Messiah was not accepted by the Christian world, so he moved out of that sphere and created his own circle. Centering on me, seven layers were created independent of Christendom. The Unification Church created them without relying on the assistance of Judaism or Christianity. We can prevail because the Unification movement is the consummation of Judaism, and the consummation of Christian culture, and the consummation of America. We have the capability to defeat Satan.

Having consummated the heavenly world, now I will spend the next three years to save the Christian world. Since I have created an Abel world, I will embrace the Cain world with love. When the Abel world becomes one with Christianity, our next goal will be Moscow. Any sovereignty that unites with this dispensation will be saved and prosper, and together we can liberate the communist world.

### ***Mankind needs True Parents***

The fall of man can be condensed into one sentence: Human beings lost their parents. Therefore, the history of man has been a search for parents. The day people meet their True Parents is their greatest day because, until then, everyone is like an orphan living in an orphanage. You have no place to call true home. Only with parental love can the problems of the world be solved.

People must receive love from their parents; then centered upon that love, men and women can love each other and be blessed in marriage. When they give birth to children, they are creating their own heavenly four positions. You are the center -- of the parents, children, and all things. That means you are going to play the prime role; even if the True Parents are here, it is you who initiates the unity between the True Parents and yourself. Therefore, you are your best friend and also your own worst enemy. The biggest problem is your body's tendency to separate from your mind. But upon the foundation of unity between your mind and body, then you seek True Parents, true children, all things.

True love is the factor that brings mind and body together. True love must bring men and women together to have children. True love is the ultimate value. Therefore we feel that. more than spouse.

children or anyone, God comes first. You must practice that attitude in your daily life -- your children may not need it, but you do. "God first" is the absolute credo of our movement.

The conclusion of the Principle is that you must make up your own mind to love True Parents more than your own' self, spouse, or children.

You need the kind of spiritual children who will be the three archangels to love you and help support your children. Your three spiritual children are not a part of the heavenly lineage, so they need to unite with your own children in order to be saved themselves. They must love your children more than they love themselves. Your children will petition you, "My dear parents, please love your spiritual children the way you love us!"

The True Parents' family is an example of this rule. The earliest blessed couples, the 36 Couples, loved True Parents' children more than they loved themselves, their own children and spouses. Because of that, my own children petitioned me, "Please promote those people to the highest place in heaven. They are wonderful people." That kind of petition had to come from my own children.

This is the tradition we are building. Once our church has crystallized this tradition, no power under the sun can ever take it away. That tradition must go to every level. For example, your own children must plead with you for the sake of your spiritual children. By the same token, when you love the True Parents' children, they will petition on your behalf. It makes no difference how many families there are. All will want to follow this central tradition and reach the same goal.

Therefore, the Unification families are always moving toward the center -- not the East, West, North or South -- because the center is where life lies. Regardless of how many people there are -- 4 billion, 400 billion it doesn't change the tradition. All families will want to align themselves with that center. This will create incredible order and discipline.

You will receive the church blessing; then you will receive the national blessing, and the world blessing. I have always said that each person must go through three blessings in order to totally enjoy freedom. Even when you receive total freedom, you will not lose your connection with the center. Just like a compass, you will be constantly aligned with the center.

Ultimately, the True Father is the axis around which all children and posterity are centered. But until you have received all three blessings, the entire True Family is the center. Once all those blessings are spread throughout all levels, then the True Father will be the eternal center for all people. There will always be a physical representative of the True Father here on earth, from one generation to another; there will be that axis on which the earth will turn. Therefore, all of you here on earth and all the people in the generations to come will be centered upon the same axis.

### ***You need spiritual children***

No matter how you look at the whole picture, the problem is always the self, the individual. Your children will not require spiritual children, but for you it is essential. That is because you came out of the satanic world and then received the Blessing in the heavenly world. Do you follow? This is an absolute. Without having spiritual children, it is not right to want to go on with your family life. Is all of this clear to you?

Those who have received the Blessing are always in the most crucial position. Even the 36 Couples have not fulfilled the ultimate standard of loving True Parents' children. My children are in the position to be educated by those couples -- the way Adam and Eve should have been educated by the

archangel in wisdom. The three primary blessed couples, and also the entire 36 Couple Blessing, were supposed to take that position to the True Children.

The children can take the position of parents only when they understand the love of parents. The parents' position is a loving position. My own children are also bound by this truth. They must look at the True Parents as more than just "Daddy and Mommy." They must listen to the 36 Couples. I have always lived totally by the Principle, and some of my children have complained -- but there is no reason for that. This is the tradition of the Principle.

We certainly must consider our own family members -- spouse, parents, children, etc. -- but the most important person is the archangel or spiritual children. Children of blessed couples cannot marry unblessed children. For blessed couples to abandon their Blessing and marry somebody else is the worst kind of thing. The re-indemnity that has to be established is not an easy path, and you will have to continue that path even after going to spirit world.

When you receive the Blessing and reject it, you are doing something worse than what Satan did: you came into the direct dominion and control of God, then fell again. You may not realize it deeply, but an incredible heavenly principle is at work.

Setting the right tradition is so important. You spend your blessed life on earth inheriting and living the God-centered, True Parent-centered tradition, then you enter into heaven.

Three countries must be centered upon the True Father -- an Adam nation, Eve nation and archangel nation. In addition, he needs a Cain and Abel nation. How can God harvest these nations in these last days?

Do you understand now that spiritual children are absolutely necessary?

So far, you have received the Unification Church Blessing -- not yet the national blessing. That will come in the future, when your deeds will be evaluated by your children, your spouse, your parents and your brethren. Your environment will evaluate you. If you don't pass that evaluation, you will not be able to participate in the national blessing. Then you will be given a special dispensational period to pay the indemnity to be restored, beyond the wilderness period of 40 years. This wilderness period is the most painful period, filled with uncertainty and hostility from the world. All kinds of dangers surround us, including both physical and spiritual attacks.

When you are elevated to the national blessing, each one of you will have become a tribe. Your tribe will prepare a report on you, which will determine whether you pass the worldwide level of blessing. Then you may apply to register as an eternal citizen of the Heavenly Kingdom. Do you follow?

Until you become registered as a citizen in the Kingdom of Heaven for eternity, you must unite with the whole family of the True Parents. The family of the True Parents will hold a meeting and will discuss and decide if you are eligible to become a citizen. Who will be eligible? Those who are more loving, giving and sacrificial. After that registration is done, True Father will appoint his successor. That successor must be known to all the Unification Church, all the blessed couples and the True Parents' family. They must all unanimously accept him. Once that successor is determined, the law or constitution of the Heavenly Kingdom shall be laid down to guide all activities. The law will guide heavenly citizens here on earth and into the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven.

***You are the problem and the solution***

I want you to understand the seriousness of being a blessed couple. If you have not realized this before, you must know how important it is for you to uphold your responsibility. You are in the most crucial position -- you are the problem and you are also the solution. When I am not here, you will automatically seek guidance from my children. You have reached your own consensus of who among my children are the most Abel-like. Even though you may not have direct contact with them, you should know their names, their character, their behavior, and so forth, so that you can learn how to harmonize with them.

Those who were born as blessed children should not feel they are privileged. They face a difficult and challenging path. It is most important that they unite with their parents. Here in America, there is a tendency for blessed children to mingle with children of the secular world -- but that is very disheartening and also very dangerous.

Thus each person is his own key to success or failure. Your mind and body must become one, centered upon true love, and you must come totally over to God's side.

Today is a special sermon in which I am teaching you the most important standard. Unless you maintain this standard, you will be unable to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Nobody will push you along this road - you must voluntarily perfect yourself. You should not wait for someone to send you out to a mobile team; you should volunteer, even before you hear the word from me. Husbands and wives should push each other to go out.

We are just like the Israelites moving through the wilderness, or troops on the march. Those who have babies must send them to the nursery so that they can return to the front lines where they are needed. If someone wanders around on the battlefield, clutching her baby to her breast, both will be killed in the fierce fighting. It is good to love your husband or wife, but in the time of war, God and mission must take precedence in your mind.

Before loving the Unification Church, we must love the Unification nation. We are building that nation now. You are the ones who will determine the success or failure of this venture. Whenever I look at Mother, I wonder, "Am I loving her with a united mind and body?" Mother has the same attitude.

We are going into the land of Canaan and the journey is not easy. To get there, we must pass through the wilderness. We are facing the worst situations now -- you don't know what will happen. I am the only person who really knows what is going to happen. Mother is clinging to me and following me wherever I go. Of course, she is busy caring for the children and has different duties than I do. Ideally, all the children, as well as Mother, should look toward me for direction, eager to dash out to fulfill it. I tell my own children not to control our actions. Therefore, Mother and I should be the focal point of your attentions as well.

Night and day, asleep or awake, my mind focuses on one thing: God's world here on the earth. You are going to be citizens of that world; therefore, you are responsible to become worthy of it. Should you fail to become a citizen of that kingdom when you go to spirit world, you will have to wait a thousand or perhaps even a million years.

I cannot always remain here and speak to you at Belvedere because I cannot remain in one place forever. Unless all America welcomes me, I must leave it for a country which recognizes it needs me and welcomes me on the national level, regardless of how large or small it may be. Many nations are more prepared than the United States to receive the True Parents.

However, I still have hope for this country. That is why I am pushing everyone for the next three years to invest every ounce of energy and heart to consummate the mission here. We want America to

receive the blessing -- to accept God, welcome Him and ask for His guidance. That is the purpose of these three years.

In the meantime, while I am concentrating so strongly on the United States, you should realize that the rest of the world is suffering. I could leave this country easily. It would be much easier working with a country which is eager to welcome me. But that is not what the rest of the world needs. The world needs a country such as the United States to become a God-centered nation. Therefore, even though it is very difficult, I will continue on this road.

Korea and the United States are linked. If anything damaged that link, I would return immediately to Korea.

I am asking each one of you today to assume the role and responsibility which I have been carrying. Whoever desires that and participates in his mission with that heart, will have God with him. That is the rule of heaven. When you are completely united with the True Father in your heart, God is with you.

Blessed couples should be doubly strong, because husband and wife should both concentrate on how to inherit my spirit. That will produce even greater miracles. Centering upon your blessed family, you are moving toward the national foundation. Offer your family for that purpose.

Would you do this and follow my direction? God's blessing be with you. Thank you.

## **Chapter 38**

### **The Necessity for the Day of Victory of Love**

#### **January 15, 1984 -- Tarrytown, New York**

The Unification Movement has not only a horizontal connection with the world but also a vertical connection. The term "fall of man" denotes a falling down from the original state; therefore, the work of God has been the work of trying to bring people back up to their formerly high level of existence.

Because of an illicit relationship of love the fall occurred. The Last Days predicted by the Bible will be the culmination of selfish, individualistic love. When most people live solely for themselves, it must be the Last Days, because that is the completion stage of the fallen act. Such a world scorns anything other than individualistic love. There is no room for the love of country, love of humanity, and certainly no room for the love of God.

Such a trend began among adults, but it has now come down to the realm of teenagers. This is the so called "me generation" in today's society. Thus you know that we have arrived at the end of this world. There is virtually no way of restraining the immorality and promiscuity of many of today's young people. Parents cannot control them, teachers are powerless, and society can do nothing either. Certainly the nation and the world have no power to control them.

Why does Satan lead the world to such an extreme? God, in His will for restoration, has been promoting altruistic, unselfish love starting from the individual, family, nation, and moving toward the worldwide level. Thus Satan has become desperate. He knows that he

is being defeated, so he takes the opposite direction, the position farthest away from God, trying to hold mankind on his side.

Satan's ultimate goal is to destroy any ideal form of love. God is leading mankind toward the ideal, wholesome form of love. Those who are the most susceptible to Satan's temptations are Americans. The central nation for the Christian culture, the United States has become morally degraded, particularly in love. There is a certain biblical basis for this, because Jesus said that those closest to us can be our worst enemies. Thus, within the Christian culture, in what is supposedly the central nation for accomplishing God's will, the worst enemy can creep in. So Satan has grounds to create the worst possible evils in this Christian nation.

### ***The decline of America***

The 40 years after World War II are a wilderness period, from God's dispensational point of view. America was supposed to have taken responsibility to lead the world toward the land of Canaan. But no such idealism predominated; instead most Americans simply sought to have fun and forget the war, plunging into self-indulgence.

The victory of the Allied side in World War II was not an end in itself; From the providential point of view, it had the purpose of preparing America and the world for the Second Coming of the Messiah.

After World War II, the United States was supposed to center upon God and realize that the world was moving toward the "great and terrible day to the Lord." There should have been a prevailing attitude within this country that the greatest goal was to love not only oneself or even one's own nation, but to embrace the world and to serve God. People should have been inspired to pioneer the coming great era. The United States was supposed to propagate such a vision through the world. People would have recognized it as a favorable sign of the Last Days and could have started preparing for that time. Such an awakening after World War II would have prevented the current tragic situation in America.

What has happened? The United States did not grasp such a vision. For 40 years, this country has been drifting down the path of self-indulgence, fun, and destruction. Drugs have infiltrated the whole country; young people have been corrupted and turn more and more toward delinquency; free sex has become a way of life. But this has not been limited to the United States. As the leader of the free world, the United States has infected the world with its ills. As Americans try to make light of everything, wanting merely to have fun in life, their attitudes have spread around the world.

Unless something stops this trend, this nation and the whole world are destined to collapse. Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed by God's judgment for their immorality and pursuit of luxury. Rome was in the same situation. It did not collapse from external invasion but from the weight of its own corruption.

The most important substance is not life itself; it is love. A society permeated by pure, strong and altruistic love will prosper no matter what. But when people do not practice love for humanity, for country, and for their fellow man, that society will eventually fall. Unfortunately, the United States is following the historical pattern of decline. Red danger lights are blinking all over America today. This is the reality.

### ***God's new tradition***

What is God doing about this? God must be working for restoration, trying to create a turning point to pull this nation from its current situation and move it toward His ideal. The fundamental block is man's relationship with Satan; unless we can resolve this, no other problems of society can be permanently solved. The basic relationship between people and Satan rests on the illicit love relationship -- self-centered love. Such immoral love always shatters people and separates them from any ideal.

The love of God is exactly the opposite; it is pure, it creates unity, and it uplifts people and allows them to transcend selfishness. Love is the key element over which Satan and God have been struggling. So far, God has appeared to be losing the battle. Satan has become very arrogant, taunting God. "Even you have no have no power to stop my love. It will take over the whole world, so why don't you surrender?"

When people live with satanic, self-centered love here on earth, can they possibly go to spirit world with the capacity to love God? Self-centered individuals have created a spirit world full of division and disintegration. The original spirit world is one of genuine, altruistic love; thus the elements of selfish love found on earth are foreign to the spirit world. This earth has produced such an unmanageable product and has sent it up to spirit world. Now the spirit world is a mess, divided into multitudes of compartments each trying to repel anything which differs from it.

The same phenomenon happens in the physical world. It is full of divisions. People have their own little compartments, striving to preserve their own indulgent way of life. Satan is very proudly mocking God, "Can you handle this world? I have divided people thoroughly. You have guided all the major religions to bring the world into your ideal, but look at them. They are infiltrated by my ultimate satanic power, communism. Your Christian churches have become houses for bingo and disco; they are like supper clubs now. Can you make yourself at home, God, in those churches?"

Satan is also challenging God: "Where can you find any champion, someone whom you can claim and who can take charge of the world? God, you promised the world that you would send your Messiah. Where is he? The Messiah is supposed to bring unity to the whole world, including all races, and all cultures. But even you, God, have not been able to promote such unity. How could any human being do such a thing, even if he is the Messiah?"

There is only one answer to this problem. A new religious movement must emerge which centers on love and nothing else; it must bring a revolution by totally redirecting man's love to become altruistic and centered upon God. Only by bringing a strong, unifying love,

starting with the individual, family, society and expanding up to the world level, can God do something about this world today. Satan has known that God needs to do this and that He would send His Messiah to accomplish it. Satan himself correctly understands what the Messiah's task is.

Why are you here? What is your mission? You are the very group of people who are going to set the new tradition of love, centered upon God rather than on the self. You are going to bring purity of love to the world. You will sacrifice anything and everything in order to build that new tradition of love, as a way of life.

### ***Sandbag of love***

When a person trains to become a boxer, he has to spend many hours throwing punches at a big sandbag. Our way of life is similar. It is as if God gave us a big sandbag which says, "Go ahead and hit me. Everybody is hitting me but so far nobody has been able to: really knock me to the ceiling." The sandbag is looking for a true champion who will throw it around in a 360 degree circle, up to the ceiling. The sandbag will be most inspired if someone comes along who can hit it hard enough to break its chain and knock it loose. It will say, "I surrender to my master!"

That sandbag from heaven has been waiting for the ultimate heavenly boxer, whom we call the Messiah. God has been expecting that at least one person could gain the victory over that sandbag, knocking it loose from its chain. Because of Satan's dominion, no one even attempted to hit it before. No one had ever discovered God's love sandbag; the only sandbag of love ever seen had been Satan's.

How can you hit that sandbag of God's love? You can hit it only with the love club. Only then will the sandbag feel anything. Those who love their families, nation, world and humanity can come with the club of love and hit that sandbag. You might assume that God's sandbag of love will come looking for you, so you are waiting for it to find you. Will some angel bring it to you? The Principle teaches that such a thing will never just come to you. You must go after it, reaching out to that love sandbag.

There are many strings behind you that Satan can pull on. Old strings, new strings, strings from your past, from dating -- all kinds of junk that Satan can draw on. Does anyone here think he has absolutely no satanic strings attached? Then how can anyone speak with true pride in himself? Perhaps you have a Ph.D. degree, but that wouldn't confer any greater value on you in this sense. You must make enormous effort to cut off those strings from Satan and cross over the boundary into the new area.

The true Unification members are those who have declared war against satanic love, from the individual to the family, tribal, racial, national, and worldwide levels. This is Satan's greatest fear. We shall be the ones who conquer satanic love and win heavenly love. That is what the Unification Church is all about.

Perhaps if I hit this person here, she would think to herself, "Why did Father hit me?" Without even knowing the reason, she might get angry. That is the way society is. You

should search for the reason or motivation behind something; after learning the reason if you have some justification, then you may get angry about it. Satan is always trying to inspire you to reject God's true love out of rashness and thoughtlessness.

All of mankind needs to be completely shaken up. Individuals must totally deny all the love which has come from Satan on all the different levels of living -- family, society, nation, etc. God has allowed such persecution to come to you. He permits it as shock treatment.

In the face of persecution, many people have retreated. Now they are hanging from a cliff and crying out. Some say, "Mom and Dad, please come and get me. Save me from this!" Others are saying, "God and my Messiah, I'm trying to remain on your side so please help me and pull me into your domain!" Which cry have you made? What kind of cry are you making through the deeds of your own life?

There is only one crazy man who is trying to shake up the entire world and clear it of satanic love. That one man is Reverend Sun Myung Moon. All the powers of Satan, from family, society, tribe, world levels are mobilized to push me off the cliff and finish me. However, I have one big secret. While everyone is trying to push me over the brink, I am holding onto that sandbag of God's love. Therefore, when people push me they are also pushing against that sandbag.

What is happening? This no ordinary sandbag; it is an incredible magnet with tremendous pulling power. Thus any decent, conscientious young people who touch it and feel its goodness are automatically stuck, holding on for dear life. Young people are like little pieces of metal floating around freely. They are subjected to the magnetism of their families, their society and all the enticements therein. But the sandbag of God has an enormous power to pull them and young people are following. The power from that sandbag can attract people anywhere.

I have always been fighting through that sandbag on every level and winning victory step by step. I have come to the final level now.

The North Pole and the South Pole are two extremes, yet they are like lovers, constantly pulling each other. The magnetic field connecting the two poles is like a love field. Magnetism creates an electric wave flowing from one pole to the other, enveloping and affecting everybody who comes within its field. Just like magnetism, love can penetrate anywhere. Let's say the love of God is like the North Pole and the love of man like the South Pole, connected by the magnetic field of love. Once they achieve vertical unity, horizontal unity automatically results, just as there are lines of both latitude and longitude on the globe.

Satanic love is like winter while God's love is like spring. When springtime comes, people can feel comfortable and take off their heavy clothing. They feel like opening up their whole bodies to spring. But in winter, we have to protect ourselves and cover up completely, wearing heavy zippered coats. In the same kind of spiritual situation, the love of God cannot be received.

The situation of the world today is like the severest winter. The Unification Church is trying to bring spring weather to the universe -- warmth and thawing of the ground. The battle between your parents and your allegiance to the church is something like this. Your society is telling you, "Stay home!" but you protest, "No, it's like winter here -- too cold! I want to go where I can take off my jacket and coat, to the Unification Church." When they hear you saying such things, however, they can only label it "brainwashing." From the viewpoint of God, we are righteous, healthy and happy people, but from Satan's point of view, we seem to be crazy.

Although you are standing on God's side now, you are not quite godly men and women yet. Perhaps you are standing with only one foot on the borderline, yet you want to say, "I am on the side of God!" Where are you standing? Are both of your feet securely planted within God's side? If you still feel nostalgia for what you loved before hearing the Principle, then you automatically have one foot still on the side of Satan.

There are many different types of members. Some people are always complaining, "Why does the church keep urging me to go out and do things?" Others think, "I can't stand that person. It's impossible to think of him as my director!" At such a point you are really straddling the line between God and Satan.

Today you may admit you are only 70 percent on God's side. Or on Sunday you might record, "Today I was 90 percent because I went to Belvedere." Some of you might feel like completely turning your back on the boundary line and marching directly toward the center point of the Unification ideal. You will claim that you are 100 percent on God's side.

Those of you who keep a diary should record your positions each day. Be completely honest with yourself and record how you do.

Each person knows where he is standing in relationship to God's side and Satan's side. That ability to know is a most important aspect of human beings. Even though you are immersed in the fallen world, each person has that element of God's influence within him. Because of that element within, each person can travel back to God, guided by his own internal compass.

Where do you want to be, on the side of God or Satan? How fast would you want to travel to God's side? You must gain victory over the satanic world. Only after you have scored some points over the satanic world can you move completely to the side of God, no matter how much you may desire to be with God. Have you won those points yet?

### ***The spiritual Super Bowl***

The Washington Redskins are playing in the Super Bowl again this year. How do you think they got to where they are -- by just declaring that they wanted to be there? Suppose they had refused to fight any lesser contest but had claimed the right to fight in the Super Bowl. Would anybody accept such a thing? No, people would say, "You have to win the victory, step by step, in order to qualify for the Super Bowl!" That means they have to win one

game after another, defeating one team after another. Is that an easy way? No, it is most difficult, even miserable.

Many people say, "We only live once, so why shouldn't we enjoy life, eating and sleeping at will? Why shouldn't we just cheat when it's expedient and make life easy?" Is the Unification Church wrong in living a sacrificial life? I have declared war against Satan on every level, moving up step by step. Now I am declaring, "Let the worldwide Satan come forward and meet me in the spiritual Super Bowl!"

I have confronted the champions of satanic power on every level, from the individual to the national, and now we are at the worldwide level. I am at the level where the democratic world as well as the communist world is confronting me, along with the world of Christianity and religion. But I am absolutely sure that nobody can ever take away my sandbag of God's love. Anybody who wants to challenge me for that sandbag, please come forward.

I will hit that sandbag and it will fly around, 360 degrees. There is no resistance to the motion of true love, just as everything moves freely in a vacuum. Therefore, once the motion of God's love has been initiated, that motion will continue. That sandbag will hit Moscow and continue to circle.

I have engaged and married people of all five different colors of skin. You don't realize how great you are. Marriage is the most supreme and important event in a person's life. Nowhere else in this society will men and women let somebody else take care of their marriage. They won't give that right to their parents, their country, or anybody. Everyone feels, "I must be the one to decide." Yet you people are giving that right to me. Why is that? You trust that you can connect yourself to the love of God that way. You have that uncompromising faith because you are smart enough to understand the importance of God's love.

The means and speed of travel in spirit world are very different from here on earth. Each individual enters the spirit world with a different level of accomplishment in love, a different love record. Thus each has a different quality of power in his movements. Do you want to be able to travel with me in spirit world? How will you be able to do that? You must inherit the same love vibration as mine; your love vibration must be the same height and depth in order to travel with me.

Although the distances between the stars and planets in the universe are vast, you can still traverse them within one second, if you are moving at God's speed. It is the power of God's love that enables Him to move so rapidly. Beyond this world and beyond all human limits, people pursue the world of love. That is the greatest gift which God has devised for people; there is nothing better.

When I travel, I am constantly confronted by opposition from earthly powers. In North Korea, I was confronted by the communist regime. The government of South Korea confronted me as well. The same has been true here in America. Internationally, the leader of the Soviet Union is confronting me in the ultimate battle. The communist world

knows me better than the free world does. They know me as their greatest threat, a menace they never expected.

Changes have come to the free world. The news media as well as the religious world are seeing that my fight is one which also involves them. They are announcing that they want to help us because they recognize a threat to their own freedom.

Who are the Moonies? You are smart people because you are sensitive to original love; you recognize true love when you see it. You have gained an understanding of the world situation that enables you to make sense out of the chaotic things going on every day.

Renowned scholars and theologians are lamenting the loss of vision in the United States. Although America is materially well off, spiritually it is poverty stricken. People here are seeking any kind of spiritual nourishment they can find. This nation is like a parched desert, without even a blade of grass. But there is an oasis in the middle of that desert where people are finding shade, water, and green grass. That oasis is the Unification movement.

Some might say, "That's only the opinion of Reverend Moon. Since he's the leader of the Unification movement, he has to say good things about it." But now, you can tell me. Do you agree with my opinion? When spiritually hungry people come to you, don't you have water and nourishment to give to them? Or are you a spiritually hungry person yourself, with nothing to share?

Spring water needs to have great strength to gush out of the ground. Sometimes it has to push its way through a big rock. Do you have that kind of power? Spring water is never blocked or stopped. It can always find a way to come out of the ground. That kind of water truly gives life to people.

Why do you like to come to Belvedere? What if I were not here to speak to you? As long as you have your own spring, it shouldn't matter. Individually you must become a person who has plenty of spring water - - enough to nourish yourself and enough left over to give away to others. No matter where I go, people are following after me as if they wanted to connect a hose to the spring water within me.

### ***The most serious war***

We must be victorious over the world's challenges in order to cross the boundary line to God's side. How does World War II compare to world restoration? In size and seriousness, bringing the world back to God is a larger war. Millions of people died on the Allied side in order to win World

War II. Today we are engaged in the largest and most serious war in all of history -- against the entire satanic realm. In this final war, our commander-in-chief is God Himself.

God has been preparing an army to fight this war, namely the forces of Christianity. When the Messiah appeared, he was to mobilize those forces and win God's war. However, at

that time organized Christianity opposed the will of God. Even at this time, many people are opposing the Unification Church. Thus I erected my own foundation, without the help of Christian leaders. Starting from the individual and family level I have been waging war against Satan and gaining the victory.

At the same time, God has been manipulating the situation of the world. The United States has lost confidence and lacks a solution for its problems. Likewise, the communist world is virtually at a stalemate. There is no group within the United States that has the confidence to say, "Let's save the country," nor any such group within the communist bloc. Although there is a proliferation of religious organizations, none has the confidence to take a true leadership role in the world.

However, there is one group of people who are saying, "We can lead this nation and world toward salvation." Ironically, they are the accused and persecuted Moonies. I have two special capabilities. The first is that I have come to the world representing God and loving the world. The second is that I can even love Satan and liberate him. Within the satanic realm, no such phrase as "love everyone" exists. Only within the realm of God's love is such an achievement possible.

My own native land of Korea has opposed me. Japan, too, has declared me an enemy. Therefore, I might consider them my enemies as well. However, I have reciprocated with an attitude of love toward them. Our movement invested a tremendous amount of money in the production of the movie Incheon. We did that for the sake of this country. Therefore, the United States is indebted to the world because our movement used money raised from other countries to educate young people toward greater patriotism and love of God.

We created The Washington Times for the purpose of serving this nation's capital. We certainly did not have a lot of money to throw away on a gamble. Even though this is such a difficult time financially, we will use more money for the purpose of projects dedicated to this nation. We must commit ourselves wherever necessary. Because average people are always striving to gain something for themselves, they look at me and accuse me of trying to exploit others or take money away from this nation. On the contrary, I have been bringing in millions of dollars for the sake of this country. Although this is supposedly the richest country on earth, our movement in the United States has been supported by millions of dollars from other countries. The idea that I would try to cheat this country out of \$50,000 in taxes is mind boggling to those who understand the truth.

When young people learn the truth, they will explode in righteousness. You are that kind of young people. Therefore, you must go out into the world and save others, bringing them back to life. You can't let them remain in misery.

Many people believe that the election of even one misguided president would bring an end to this country. My goal is to secure God's world; therefore, no one worries more about this country than me. Can you Moonies just sit back and expect something good to happen? No, you must get down to work. You must not be weak skeletons but people of

flesh and bone who get out and fight God's fight. Don't just talk but show God what you can do.

### ***The champion for mankind***

No one is capable of leaving the realm of Satan on his own power. Therefore, mankind needs a champion to lead the way across the boundary. As that champion crosses, the rest of the people can support him and follow him. How about you blessed couples, what realm are you in -- the fallen realm or God's realm? You are not completely out of the fallen realm because you don't have your own sovereign nation. We have a church and church tradition, but no national tradition. This is why I declared the "Creation and Building of the Fatherland" as our motto for this year.

The sole purpose of the worldwide foundation of Judaism and Christianity was to accept the Messiah. The victory of World War II was to prepare the foundation for the work of the Messiah on the earth. After that time, the United States was in the position to lead the world. Korea was completely united with America. Under such circumstances, if Christianity had accepted the Messiah, great victory would have come. The sovereign government of Korea at that time was Christian. Don't you think the creation and building of the fatherland could have occurred then? We were very close to such a spectacular victory, but the officials of several Christian Korean universities rejected God's will.

At that time, God wanted to see the Christian world grafted totally into the Messiah. But the messianic world was rejected and thrown out of the Christian world and had to begin anew in a far distant position, rebuilding the necessary foundation. At that time, I went voluntarily to North Korea and ended up in prison. There is nothing lower or more miserable. Everyone thought I would die because it was virtually impossible to survive such conditions. Thus it was a crucifixion for me, one which I wanted to go through without dying. Instead of losing my disciples during that time, I gained them. Jesus' public life lasted two years and eight months. I spent the same time period in prison, gaining rather than losing disciples.

Upon the victory of my prison experience, I can claim the foundation for the fatherland. After being liberated by United Nations forces, I carried Mr. Chun Hwa Pak 600 miles from North to South Korea. Most people aren't even able to go beyond their own needs, but I showed the example of serving others by carrying Mr. Pak for that distance.

From the earliest days, people have accused me and even tried to kill me. At the same time, I was helping many people. I was always hungry because I was always giving my food and money to others -- for their school expenses, for hospital bills, and so forth. That is how I started, from the tribal and national level.

Because they failed to accept the Messiah, the Christian world was surpassed and even encompassed by satanic forces; this is why they declined. Now the Unification Church is rebuilding the Christian foundation, moving to the worldwide level. Satan would never give up his domain easily. I knew that every level of victory over Satan would have to be paid for with incredible sacrifice. The Unification Church took the Abel position within

Christianity. The younger brother is always a source of discomfort to the older brother. Although we started on the smallest level, no one can deny that the Unification Church is now operating on the worldwide level.

### ***The ideological offensive***

Now Unificationism or Godism is gaining a more prominent ideological position than any other understanding. It is taking the ideological offensive, not only against communism but also against every other way of thought within the democratic world. Last year I knew that this international foundation, which extended to 130 countries, had to be linked with Korea. Since that is where the movement began, Korea must be connected with the world. The Korean people are in the Cain position to me. Korean Christianity opposed me and the Korean government did the same, but once the Korean nation welcomes me, those who formerly rejected me will join in.

The court battle will be over this year, so this is a crucial year. The relationship between Korea, Japan, the United States and Germany. will crystallize and be clarified during this year. Once the United States has vindicated my name, there will be an irresistible avalanche of positivity on the international level. The young people will be the ones most awakened to the goodness of Reverend Moon and the Unification movement. First, they will see that we are truly patriotic, second, that we are adamantly opposing communism, and third, that we have confidence that the ideal world is going to happen: we are optimistic about the future.

The International One World Crusade (IOWC) is going everywhere to disseminate this optimism and patriotism. That is your purpose in meeting mayors and governors. Instead of being influenced by them, we will influence those leaders in a positive way. Scholars will be affected as well. Americans will wonder how Reverend Moon and his movement could have possibly survived these past 10 years of constant attacks from the media and others. But they will see that not only have I survived, I look stronger than ever. All the blows we have been receiving only served to make us more resolved.

I knew that thinking American people would eventually come to our movement, asking for guidance and seeking to be a part of us. Wherever they look throughout this country, people cannot find true guidance in any other quarter. They are telling me that our movement is the only hope for America. People are flabbergasted to see that I will lend my support to projects which they designed to help this nation and world.

Some of you may be thinking, "Father is really a great performer," and you don't really take me seriously. But I want you to understand that you have the opportunity to hear me speak every Sunday not because you are worthy, but because it is my providential duty to come here. Whether or not you understand and appreciate my value, I come here every week for the sake of posterity, history and mankind. Do you follow?

### ***The turning point***

We have come this far and now we can cross over. The nation of Korea is in the most crucial position in the worldwide fight against communism. Panmunjom is the small village where the representative forces of North and South Korea, including the United Nations forces, meet every day to trade verbal abuses. Written in Chinese characters, Panmunjom signifies a place where enemies meet and try to hurt each other. By changing one character, Bun Munjom, you signify a place where people meet and reconcile, respecting each other. There is no other place in the world such as Panmunjom, where the communists and the free world speak to each other every day.

Kim Il Sung's name signifies the following: Kim means gold, Il means sun, and Sung means success. The people of North Korea call him Father. When the name Sun Myung Moon is written in Chinese characters, Moon represents truth, or the word; Sun means beauty or clarity; Myung means light. My name is prophetic.

No other nation is divided between north and south, each side with a key figure people call Father. Do you think mankind can have two fathers? No, only one father is the true one; the other must be a false father. Am I afraid of Kim Il Sung? On the contrary, he is afraid of me because he knows deep inside that his rule is based on lies, and he knows that the truth will expose him. This is the real reason why communism hates and fears me. I have been exposing the lies and deceptions which they have been spreading under the cover of darkness. But once the light comes and exposes them, they will have no more power over men.

### ***The sovereignty of heaven***

So far, America has misunderstood and mistrusted me, but once that changes, they will come to truly respect and love me. That turning point will bring in the final stage. The time will come when American people will feel, "I cannot trust politicians or other people in power; but I know I can trust that man, Reverend Moon." The sovereignty of any president can last eight years at the most, but when people align themselves with me they can enjoy the sovereignty of heaven for eternity.

People are beginning to change their perspective, looking for higher values than before. Don't you think my teaching can inspire people to become better lawmakers and leaders for this country? Ultimately, there is no reason why someone with the understanding of the Principle couldn't become president. For the same reason, I have been working with the academic community for many years, seeking to inspire scholars in this country toward righteousness.

After listening to me, you feel like running out to do your work. The wise American sitting here today might think, "I want to figure out what Father will do in the future. Since he will be going to Moscow soon, I want to go there now to prepare and lay a foundation for him." However, be careful. Don't call me "Father" in Moscow; you'd better just say "Mr. Moon!"

Since the free world and established Christianity opposed me, indemnity must be paid. Who shall be responsible for the debt incurred in rejecting the Messiah? America or

Christianity? The Unification Church must take responsibility because you are in the Abel position. Abel must pay the indemnity.

This is the reason why those in the second position within the Unification Church are always in the sacrificial position. Mr. Hyo Won Eu, the late president of the Korean Unification Church, was the second of the first three couples in the 36 Blessed Couples. He died in a hospital, not in his own home, about 13 years ago. At that time, our church was facing tremendous opposition from other Korean Christian churches, as well as from the government.

As you know, our second son, Heung Jin, died recently in a car accident. In True Parents' family there was another daughter named Hye Jin, who died in 1964. She was the second daughter. Heung Jin was born right after Hye Jin.

. I want you to understand that this is the Principle way of the dispensation.. This has been true throughout history and for our movement as well. Likewise, it is true for the True Parents' family. You can see for yourself that the Principle is not just something I made up, but it is the true principle which has guided history.

For last year's Victory Over Communism (VOC) rallies in Korea, I invited distinguished scholars and leaders of the academic communities in 72 different countries. The 72 heads of the Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA), representing the 72 disciples of Jesus, were asked to come to Korea, but were not given a clear explanation why. So they came on faith, knowing that when they got there, they would find out the reason. That's a very unusual way to treat scholars.

Those scholars had attended the recent International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences in Chicago. They had all left Chicago by Nov. 29 and were returning to their countries. As I was leaving for Korea, I asked that all the chairmen of the PWPA be called to join me before the rallies started on Dec. 14. One-third of those professors had not even arrived home by then; when they heard about the invitation en route, they turned around and went to Korea. Just as I found disciples in the North Korean prison, I was able to find faithful scholars who would come to join me in Korea.

When those scholars arrived at the airport in Seoul, the first question they asked was, "Why did I come here?" The answer they were given was, "You came because Reverend Moon wanted you to." That was a very busy time in the academic community; December is normally a time for taking care of many duties. Yet they came; disregarding their own feelings, because they were motivated by somebody else.

There had never been such a rally in Korea during December. With Christmas on the way and so much to do, people are not usually interested in rallies. Thus, even the leaders of the church told me, "This is a mistake. Let's hold the rallies in 1984." There was only one person -- me -- who believed it would work. Therefore, the Unification Church members failed to have faith in me. Korean leaders and members tried to tell me all the reasons why it should not be held in December, but I silenced them all. I pulled out my little notebook

and said, "I have written down right here that this rally is a mandate from God, and therefore it will be a success."

The rallies in Korea were of worldwide importance because they turned the battle against communism in a totally new direction. The Christian churches in Korea have always been quick to oppose me. However, when they heard that I was sponsoring rallies for VOC they were put on the spot. If they tried to oppose me, people would ask, "Are you pro-communist?" They couldn't say anything against me at that time! The Korean government was laughing at me, too, thinking, "Reverend Moon is making a colossal mistake. He's going to rent those gymnasiums and they will be half empty. He will lose his shirt!"

But what happened? The rallies were a success. The Korean government was completely taken aback. They felt that instead of the Chun Do Hwan government wielding authority, many people were listening to Reverend Moon. Forty million Korean people came to believe that only I am able to defeat the North Korean communists and restore health and prosperity to their country.

### ***Surprise attack on Satan***

Our goal is 7 million VOC members, both in Korea and Japan. This is a heavy blow to Satan, an unexpected, surprise attack. The Korean government knows that they cannot do anything to me himself, since I have become an international figure.

Kwangju was the eighth city for the rallies, the final opportunity for Satan to strike. Satan desperately wanted to stop me from having success in Korea, but I had already set all the conditions for our victory. While I was in Korea, the attention of Japan as well as the United States focused there. Since the satanic forces had absolutely no room to attack me or the rallies, they struck my family. Our children are on a level with the Unification Church, a different level from the True Parents. One child, Heung Jin, was the target for the satanic attack. At the very same hour as our rally, 11:10 a.m. Kwangju time, Satan hit Heung Jin.

Kwangju has been a very liberal city, with a lot of communist infiltrators. I had been warned by many people that my life would be in danger there. However the gymnasium was completely filled one hour before the rally. Five thousand people had to stand outside. Often when terrorists want to attack someone they will hide in crowds. Therefore, they will never come too early to a gathering because they might stand out. But when they came to Kwangju, there wasn't even one seat available.

Heung Jin's sacrifice came at the most crucial moment of human history. Even though he had to sacrifice his life, God could resurrect him. You should know the result of the passing of Heung Jin.

These Korean rallies symbolized the total victory on the national level. From here, we can move to the worldwide level. Dec. 18 was a very historical day. That day 72 scholars pledged in front of Mother and me to dedicate themselves to the fight against communism under our leadership. This is precisely as if Jesus had been able to enter the Roman

Empire with his disciples and had stood up and declared war against that empire. In the name of 72 nations, I declared war against international communism.

It was most important that I be treated like a head of state at these rallies. There are certain requirements of Korean protocol, among them that no man except the president is allowed to have his wife with him on the stage during a rally. Mother and I were always on the stage together. Also, the preparations for the rallies were made by both Eastern and Western members, not just Koreans. The level of participation was worldwide because of the representatives from 72 nations.

I have built this foundation under incredibly adverse circumstances. I have gained a reputation among the American people for accomplishing whatever I say I will. I was able to achieve many valuable things, even while going to the courtroom every day. I told the court that I was going to Korea for the rally and they said, "Oh, of course. Please go ahead." It's almost as if Jesus had been able to go to Rome, walk up the steps of their Capitol Hill and say, "I'm going to build the Kingdom of God here on earth, and all the elders had responded, "Of course, please go ahead and do it!"

In 10 days, I traveled to eight Korean cities and completely awoke the population. Even though the Korean government was reluctant to see my success, the lower level bureaucrats realized that I was a winner. Many of them came to me in private and said, "Please remember me." The Minister of the Interior, who is responsible for the national police, issued a private memorandum to his forces saying, "Don't help Reverend Moon or send him escorts." However, all the lower echelon police commanders were competing with each other to send me the best quality escorts. They told me, "You deserve it."

Imagine how Satan felt to see such a success! Don't you think he felt more than a little jealous? He saw clearly that the era of God is dawning and his own 6,000 year reign on earth is collapsing.

I have gained the respect and trust of people all over Korea. The Koreans were upset by the recent Korean Airline massacre as well as the bombing in Rangoon, Burma, which killed their leaders. Demoralized by such terrible events, they felt they could do nothing, since they were just a small helpless nation. But then I showed up and gave them a basis for hope and a promise for the future.

### ***Heung Jin's sacrifice***

The Soviet Union is the subject and North Korea its object. The Korean Airline incident was carried out by the subject nation, while the Rangoon bombing was carried out by the object nation. Together they were hitting South Korea, hoping for a total demoralization. But what happened? I showed up with new energy, and within 10 days the national morale was restored to its highest level. The communist bloc also suffered a humiliating setback in the Western Hemisphere through the Grenada invasion. No month was more hot, hectic and important than December 1983.

Last year was the first year of the final three years' wilderness period. That is why I went to Korea during that year. Our slogan for 1983 was "Home Church Is Our Land of Settlement." That land of settlement is Korea. This year, we have gone one step further with our slogan. "The Creation and Building of the Fatherland." This is an historical turning point.

At Jesus' crucifixion, two thieves were hung on crosses, one on Jesus' left and one on his right. By the Principle, we know that the one on the right symbolized the free world to come and the one on the left symbolized the communist world. The one on the left mocked Jesus and said, "If you are really the son of God, why don't you come down from there and save all of us?"

At the time of Heung Jin's accident, two other blessed children were with him. They survived and are now in good condition. As Heung Jin was driving, a big truck approached, traveling in the opposite lane. The driver of the truck hit his brakes to avoid a patch of ice, but his trailer jack-knifed into their lane. Normally the person in the front passenger's seat would have been hurt the worst. But Heung Jin had just enough time to turn the car so that he took the brunt of the impact. When his two friends, Jin Bok and Jin Gil, got out of the hospital, they testified in tears that Heung Jin had died on their behalf. He could easily have turned the other way to protect himself, but they reported that he deliberately took the impact to save them.

Heung Jin was truly born to save others, which he did even at the moment of his death. Thus his sacrifice for the others represents a sacrifice for the sake of the world. The position of Abel is always a sacrifice, and Heung Jin never feared that possibility; in fact he virtually volunteered for it.

Jesus and the two thieves were all crucified; but in the case of Heung Jin, he died and the two representatives of the world survived, healthy and strong. Jin Bok and Jin Gil had often testified that Heung Jin was always saying, "I love my father and he is in danger. I am in a position to protect him, and I am ready to die to do that." These two boys lost their own father many years ago; because of that, Heung Jin always loved them very much and felt a fatherly heart toward them.

Because Heung Jin paved the way, the door is wide open to save the communist and the free worlds. He sacrificed himself on the national foundation level to bring unity between the democratic and communist worlds. The accident occurred in the Western world, but he was buried in Korea; thus his body is linked to both worlds. His body was returned to his homeland, signifying the national foundation, yet he died for the sake of the world. Since he lived and died on the victorious national foundation, he will be able to travel back and forth in spirit world. He will be able to work here in America on the national level and move on to the worldwide level.

We have a far greater foundation for the land of settlement than at the time of Jesus. The door of salvation for humanity has been opened far wider because of Heung Jin's sacrifice. Even Jesus did not establish the national level, because he had not established

the True Parents' position. But Heung Jin had True Parents, who laid the national foundation for him to inherit.

Heung Jin's sacrifice echoed the situation of the two thieves crucified beside Jesus -- it was their resurrection. Even though many sacrifices have been made by our church elders in the past, such as Mr. Eu and Mr. Lee, and also by my other child who died, they were sacrifices only on the church level. Heung Jin made the first sacrifice on the national level. This is the reason why he can become a commander-in-chief in the spirit world and the physical world, moving freely back and forth.

Since Heung Jin was unmarried, his death has another significance. The spirit world is still an unmarried realm and will remain so until the True Parents go there. He has become the commander-in-chief of all those unmarried men and women in spirit world. For that reason, I told Heung Jin not to worry about being unmarried. I will provide him with an adopted son here on earth. That means he shall receive the Blessing as well.

Heung Jin took on all the blame for the Unification Church; by dying for that purpose, he has freed everybody else. Therefore, his contribution touches not only our church but also the free world and the communist world. All those people will come to love Heung Jin. He loved the world and proved it by becoming the conditional sacrifice for the world. For that reason, the rest of the Unification Church must also love the world.

He died in my place. Therefore, your love for him must manifest itself in your love for me. Before this, spirit world has had no way to connect to True Parents; but because Heung Jin is a direct representative, they can now connect. Also, they can connect themselves to the Unification Church because he died for you, too.

Here on earth, Heung Jin showed the example of loving his fellow man unto his life. Likewise, out of love for his father, he died. for the sake of the world, knowing that his father could continue to live for the sake of the world. By loving Heung Jin, those men and women in spirit world can connect with the True Parents on earth. Therefore, his entry into that world was a great and joyful day; he came as the messiah of love for the spirit world.

Heung Jin set the example for martyrdom in our church. The spirit world and the physical world must love him. The True Parents' position has been that of willingness and joyfulness to contribute their beloved son for the great benefit of the spirit world and physical world.

God lost the chance to love Adam and Eve, who fell as teenagers. Now this pure, unmarried teenage son has been lifted up into spirit world. This is the first time such a gift could be given to God -- an unstained child whom He could love. Therefore, I told God that I would not feel sad for myself but rather repent that when I was a teenager I could not love Korea enough and that there wasn't enough foundation at that time. By the sacrificing of my son for the world,; I have now fulfilled my responsibility to the nation of Korea and to the world. What I myself could not do in the past can now be received by God through Heung Jin's sacrifice.

The spirit world, the physical world, and the True Parents are loving Heung Jin. Upon the total sacrifice Heung Jin made for the sake of those two passengers in his car, who symbolize the free and communist worlds, I am proclaiming that he obtained the victory of love. I will now physically save the free world and the communist world. Furthermore, I am declaring the resurrection of love. In this way, the realm of death has no more power.

### ***The Day of the Victory of Love***

That is why I declared that the funeral of Heung Jin should be entirely different from any other. It was to be a joyful celebration, even like a wedding day. Furthermore, I declared the Day of the Victory of Love. I never had the time to think in terms of my own son's death but rather of how this victory would benefit God and hurt Satan's realm. Thus I concentrated upon making many conditions to be able to declare that Day of Victory of Love.

Instead of thinking in terms of our departed son, Mother and I were centered upon the dispensation of God. In the hospital, I held the Unification Ceremony to bring universal benefit. I pledged to God that the True Parents would remain regally proud and that the entire spirit world and physical world would recognize the True Parents and praise them for this victory of love. The entire world will proclaim to the True Parents, "You are the true center of God's love."

On the Day of Victory of Love the True Parents have reached a new level and are marching forward upon the foundation of Heung Jin's sacrifice. Therefore I said to Mother, "This is not the time to shed tears. This is actually a moment of glory for God and humanity. Particularly during the funeral time, you are not in the position to shed tears." I admonished her not to shed tears in public; privately, as a loving mother, she will shed many tears.

At 4 a.m. on Jan. 3, 1984, I declared the Day of Victory of Love. The number represented by that time is significant -- four plus one (the first month) plus three equals eight, the number for renewal. Heung Jin has been given a new mission. He is a truly free man now! able to travel between the spirit world and physical world. So his mission is to lead young people in both realms! cleansing them by the power of love.

We have maintained Heung Jin's room in East Garden just as it was. His brothers and sisters have all wanted to go in there to sleep and study since he has passed on; they feel a powerful attraction in that room. Thus the power and magnetism that Heung Jin has for young people is already being manifested.

I have begun a special dispensation in Korea. Members of our church throughout the world will be given an identification card with my picture on it. Those who are loyal and carry this card with them all the time will inevitably be affected by good spirit world. But there are conditions to be met in order to hold that card. You cannot be focused on selfish interests of

for a certain time before you qualify. After meeting that spiritual condition you will gain the blessing of True Parents and good things will truly happen to you.

The Day of Victory of Love is the most significant day in our movement. You too must manifest the true love of God in your deeds. Without a truly loving spirit, you cannot be worthy of this special day. I did not shed any tears over the loss of Heung Jin through the whole time of the funeral. It was only when Col. Pak came back from Korea and reported about the victorious proceedings there that I finally shed tears for my son. I am a public man and therefore must be stern with myself.

I always preached to Mother, "You are like a tree with new leaves at the top. When a storm comes, the leaves will blow and the branches will sway. But never forget that the leaves are attached to the branches, and the branches are attached to the trunk, which is attached to the root. You will never be separated from your root, no matter how turbulent the emotional storms are that shake you. You must not be broken."

Through this event, the Unification Church will never be weakened but will leap forward. This greatest sacrifice will bring about greater victories. From now on, centering on the True Parents and upon the declaration of the Day of Victory of Love, vindication will come to us. As long as you love the True Parents more than you love anyone or anything else, you will overcome Satan. The power of love will be your vindication, because Heung Jin died for all of us and he opened the door so that everyone can be entitled to the privilege of love.

Now your duty is to love the True Parents even more than Heung Jin did. If you have that as your criterion, death will hold no power and Satan will retreat. Satan used to be able to conquer and control love, but from now on love shall be governed by God. This is a great, great day.

Basically I am telling you that our power of love is now able to conquer the power of death. Upon this foundation, I declared the Day of Victory of Love. The satanic world will crumble faster now, but you will determine the rate of decay. The faster you move, the faster it will crumble. That is your responsibility. Now is the time for you to be running day and night doing God's work. Even though you may feel you are about to die during these three years, don't worry. If you die to yourself, you will not die physically but will see resurrection come to this nation and even the world in these three years.

National resurrection After his three year mission, Jesus gained individual resurrection. We are now bringing national resurrection and we shall move forward to that goal and achieve the great victory.

Amen! Of course, everyone will die physically some day, but you won't have to die in the satanic realm; you will die in the heavenly realm. Our new tradition for funeral and burial is different from that of the secular world and even the Christian world.

Now you know the importance of the Day of Victory of Love. Your determination must be to gain inspiration from Heung Jin and even go beyond his accomplishment. He will be

with you, helping you. If you tell him, "Heung Jin, I am going to surpass even your standard," he will be pleased. He will say, "Go right ahead." That is a very difficult standard to surpass, but that must be your goal. Heung Jin will thank you for that. Spirit world is right here with us, so Heung Jin is here, as well.

By the declaration of the Day of Victory of Love, even Jesus Christ has gained greater freedom to come down to this world on the national level. The entire Christian world has been liberated as well. There are many theologians, professors, and other people who have come to know me, and they have a good feeling about me. You will see that as the International One World Crusade (IOWC) moves around the country, their situations will be changing. Right now, they are doing everything out of their vans. But soon they will be invited to live in church buildings.

Due to the Day of Victory of Love, Esau is freed to love Jacob; Cain can love Abel. Previously, Cain had to pay great indemnity in order to love Abel. Cain was never in a position to love Abel, even though he might have wanted to, because satanic forces were always dictating to Cain whom he could love. But now the love of God has come down and Cain can freely love Abel. In other words, Satan's power over love has been greatly diminished.

The world is changing. You can feel it and you can see it, even in the news media. Great changes are coming; the springtime of love is upon us. When spring comes, most people think about having a picnic, but conscientious farmers will use the time to sprinkle their seeds. That is what we are going to do. Because we are different from the secular world, we are going to work in the springtime to plant the seeds of God's love in the hearts of men.

These next three years will be our time for planting God's love. Everywhere we go, we will keep that consciousness. Shall we do it?